

GOVERNMENT OF INDIA

DEPARTMENT OF ARCHAEOLOGY

**CENTRAL ARCHAEOLOGICAL
LIBRARY**

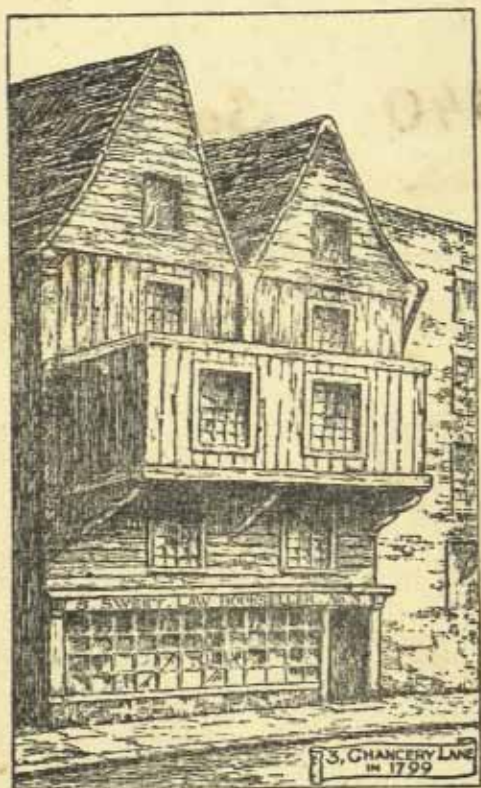
CALL NO.

340

Sal-Wil

D.G.A. 79.

c/9



Ex Libris



JURISPRUDENCE

AUSTRALIA

The Law Book Co. of Australasia Pty Ltd.
Sydney : Melbourne : Brisbane

CANADA AND U.S.A.

The Carswell Company Ltd.
Toronto

INDIA

N. M. Tripathi Private Ltd.
Bombay

NEW ZEALAND

Legal Publications Ltd.
Wellington

PAKISTAN

Pakistan Law House
Karachi

SALMOND

ON

JURISPRUDENCE

ELEVENTH EDITION

BY

GLANVILLE WILLIAMS, LL.D.

OF THE MIDDLE TEMPLE, BARRISTER-AT-LAW;
FELLOW OF JESUS COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE

15280

Special Edition for India

Rs. 27-50

N. M. Tripathi Ltd: Bombay, 2.

340
Sal/Wil



LONDON

SWEET & MAXWELL, LIMITED
2 & 3 CHANCERY LANE

1957

First Edition	(1902)	}	By Sir John Salmond
Second Edition	(1907)				
Third Edition	(1910)				
Fourth Edition	(1913)				
Fifth Edition	(1916)				
Sixth Edition	(1920)	}	By C. A. W. Manning
Seventh Edition	(1924)				
Eighth Edition	(1930)	}	By J. L. Parker
Ninth Edition	(1937)				
Tenth Edition	(1947)	}	By Glanville Williams
Eleventh Edition	(1957)				

**CENTRAL ARCHAEOLOGICAL
LIBRARY, NEW DELHI.**

Acc. No. 15280
 Date. 1.4.58
 Call No. 340/Sal/Wil

151 58
DEDICATION OF SEVENTH EDITION

[By the Author]

TO THE MEMORY OF

MY SON

WILLIAM GUTHRIE SALMOND

A CAPTAIN IN THE NEW ZEALAND ARMY,

WHO IN FRANCE ON THE 9TH DAY OF JULY, 1918,

GAVE UP HIS LIFE

IN THE TWENTY-SIXTH YEAR OF HIS AGE.

Memorial Book

PREFACE

THE major change in this edition is a full study of the doctrine of precedent in relation to the hierarchy of the courts (Chapters 7 and 8). The remarks on this subject in previous editions were brief, but the growing precision and difficulty of the rules has made an extended treatment very desirable. I have also added substantially to the treatment of the interpretation of statutes. In order not to increase the length of the book I have compensated by eliminating most of the former Chapter 5, entitled "The State." This was a discussion of the nature and essential functions of the State, the membership of the State, its constitution and government, the classification of States into independent and dependent, unitary and composite, and the British Dominions. It was impossible to bring the chapter up to date without adding considerably to its length and complexity, particularly in view of the subtlety into which the former conception of British nationality has fallen, and the awkward existence of "republics within the Commonwealth." Yet a detailed discussion would generally be regarded as passing from jurisprudence proper to constitutional and international law and political philosophy. Of the whole chapter, therefore, I have retained only the specifically jurisprudential discussion of the nature of constitutional law, which I have added to the end of Chapter 3 in the present edition.

The policy of treating Salmond on *Jurisprudence* as a textbook of living thought rather than as a dead classic has generally commended itself. But as necessary changes take the text farther from the one left by the author, it becomes more difficult and less useful to attempt to chronicle all the changes. Occasionally I have mentioned, in a footnote, that

the author held an opinion different from the one now expressed in the text, and have indicated the reason for the change. But otherwise I have given up the effort which I made in the previous edition to catalogue my additions, omissions and alterations. My thanks are due to the reviewers of the last edition for some suggestions, and particularly to Professor A. H. Campbell for additional comments which he privately communicated to me.

GLANVILLE WILLIAMS.

February, 1957.

CONTENTS

<i>Table of Cases</i>	page xv
<i>Table of Statutes</i>	xxi
<i>Authorities</i>	xxiii

INTRODUCTION

THE SCIENCE OF JURISPRUDENCE

SECTION	PAGE
1. Jurisprudence as the Science of Civil Law	1
2. Theoretical or General Jurisprudence	2
3. Analytical, Historical, and Ethical Jurisprudence	3
4. English and Foreign Jurisprudence	7
5. The Sociology of Law	14

BOOK I

THE NATURE AND SOURCES OF LAW

1. THE KINDS OF LAW

6. Law in General	20
7. Imperative Law	21
8. Physical or Scientific Law	24
9. Natural or Moral Law	26
10. Conventional Law	31
11. Customary Law	31
12. Practical or Technical Law	32
13. International Law	32
14. Civil Law	34

2. CIVIL LAW

15. The Term Law	36
16. The Generality of Law	38
17. The Definition of Law	41
18. Justice According to Law	43
19. The Imperative Theory of Law	53
20. The Authority of Law	58
21. Justice	60

SECTION	3. CIVIL LAW (CONTINUED)	PAGE
22.	Law and Fact	66
23.	The Territorial Nature of Law	74
24.	Law and Equity	81
25.	General Law and Special Law	87
26.	The Common Law	95
27.	Constitutional Law	99
4. THE ADMINISTRATION OF JUSTICE		
28.	Necessity for the Administration of Justice	105
29.	Origin of the Administration of Justice	107
30.	Civil and Criminal Justice	109
31.	The Purposes of Criminal Justice: Deterrent and Preventive Punishment	115
32.	Reformative Punishment	116
33.	Retributive Punishment	120
34.	Civil Justice: Primary and Sanctioning Rights	124
35.	A Table of Judicial Remedies	127
36.	Penal and Remedial Proceedings	128
37.	Secondary Functions of Courts of Law	129
5. THE SOURCES OF LAW		
38.	Legal and Historical Sources	133
39.	The Legal Sources of English Law	135
40.	Sources of Law and Sources of Rights	136
41.	Ultimate Legal Principles	137
6. LEGISLATION		
42.	The Nature of Legislation	139
43.	Supreme Legislation	141
44.	Subordinate Legislation	142
45.	Relation of Legislation to other Sources	145
46.	Codification	150
47.	The Interpretation of Enacted Law: Literal Interpretation	151
48.	Logical Defects	154
49.	The Golden Rule for Avoiding Absurdity	157
50.	The Mischief Rule	159
7. PRECEDENT		
51.	The Authority of Precedents	162
52.	The Declaratory Theory of the Judicial Function	163
53.	Authoritative and Persuasive Precedents	165
54.	The Effect of Disregarding a Precedent	167
55.	The Hierarchy of Authority	168
56.	Precedents in the House of Lords	175

SECTION	PAGE
57. Precedents in the Court of Appeal	188
58. Precedents in the Court of Criminal Appeal	192
59. Precedents in the Divisional Court	195

8. PRECEDENT (CONTINUED)

60. Circumstances Destroying the Binding Force of Precedent ..	199
61. Circumstances Justifying Overruling or Refusal to Follow	217
62. The Ratio Decidendi of a Case	222
63. The Sources of Judicial Principles	225
64. Respective Functions of Judges and Juries	226
65. The Value of the Doctrine of Precedent	228

9. CUSTOM

66. The Early Importance of Customary Law	232
67. Reasons for the Reception of Customary Law	233
68. Kinds of Custom	235
69. Conventional Custom	236
70. Local Custom	241
71. Custom and Prescription	246
72. The General Custom of the Realm	247

BOOK II

ELEMENTS OF THE LAW

10. LEGAL RIGHTS

73. Wrongs	259
74. Duties	260
75. Rights	261
76. The Characteristics of a Legal Right	265
77. Legal Rights in a Wider Sense of the Term	269
78. Liberties and No-rights	271
79. Powers and Subjections	273
80. Immunities and Disabilities	276

11. THE KINDS OF LEGAL RIGHTS

81. Perfect and Imperfect Rights	280
82. The Legal Nature of Rights against the State	282
83. Positive and Negative Rights	283
84. Rights <i>In Rem</i> and Rights <i>In Personam</i>	284
85. Proprietary and Personal Rights	289
86. Rights <i>in re propria</i> and Rights <i>in re aliena</i>	293
87. Principal and Accessory Rights	297
88. Legal and Equitable Rights	297

SECTION	12. OWNERSHIP	PAGE
89.	Incorporeal Ownership	300
90.	Corporeal Ownership	301
91.	Corporeal and Incorporeal Things	304
92.	Sole Ownership and Co-ownership	306
93.	Trust and Beneficial Ownership	307
94.	Legal and Equitable Ownership	310
95.	Vested and Contingent Ownership	313

13. POSSESSION

96.	Introduction	317
97.	Possession in Fact and in Law	318
98.	Corporeal and Incorporeal Possession	320
99.	Corporeal Possession	321
100.	The Animus Possidendi	322
101.	The Corpus of Possession	325
102.	Relation of the Possessor to Other Persons	326
103.	Relation of the Possessor to the Thing Possessed	331

14. POSSESSION (CONTINUED)

104.	Immediate and Mediate Possession	332
105.	Concurrent Possession	336
106.	The Acquisition of Possession	337
107.	The Commencement and Continuance of Possession	339
108.	Incorporeal Possession	340
109.	Relation between Possession and Ownership	343
110.	Possessory Remedies	345

15. PERSONS

111.	The Nature of Personality	350
112.	The Legal Status of the Lower Animals	351
113.	The Legal Status of Dead Men	352
114.	The Legal Status of Unborn Persons	354
115.	Double Capacity and Double Personality	356
116.	Legal Persons	357
117.	Corporations	359
118.	The Agents, Beneficiaries, and Members of a Corporation	363
119.	The Acts and Liabilities of a Corporation	364
120.	The Uses and Purposes of Incorporation	368
121.	The Creation and Extinction of Corporations	371
122.	The State as a Corporation	372

SECTION	16. TITLES	PAGE
123.	Vestitive Facts	378
124.	Acts in the Law	380
125.	Agreements	383
126.	The Classes of Agreements	385
127.	Void and Voidable Agreements	387

17. LIABILITY

128.	The Nature and Kinds of Liability	396
129.	The Theory of Remedial Liability	396
130.	The Theory of Penal Liability	397
131.	Acts	399
132.	Two Classes of Wrongful Acts	403
133.	<i>Damnum Sine Injuria</i>	404
134.	The Place and Time of an Act	405
135.	<i>Mens Rea</i>	407

18. INTENTION AND NEGLIGENCE

136.	The Nature of Intention	411
137.	Intention and Motive	414
138.	Malice	415
139.	Relevance and Irrelevance of Motives	417
140.	Other Exceptions to the Irrelevance of Motives	418
141.	<i>Jus Necessitatis</i>	419
142.	Negligence: Advertent and Inadvertent	421
143.	The Duty of Care	423
144.	The Standard of Care	424
145.	Degrees of Negligence	427
146.	The Subjective and Objective Theories of Negligence	429

19. LIABILITY (CONTINUED)

147.	The Theory of Strict Liability	433
148.	The Extent of Strict Liability	434
149.	Mistake of Law	435
150.	Mistake of Fact	437
151.	Accident	438
152.	Vicarious Responsibility	440
153.	The Measure of Criminal Liability	444
154.	The Measure of Civil Liability	449

20. THE LAW OF PROPERTY

155.	Meanings of the Term Property	451
156.	Kinds of Property	453
157.	The Ownership of Material Things	453
158.	Movable and Immovable Property	456

SECTION	PAGE
159. Real and Personal Property	460
160. Rights <i>in re propria</i> in Immaterial Things	461
161. Leases	463
162. Servitudes	466
163. Securities	468
164. Modes of Acquisition: Possession	472
165. Prescription	474
166. Agreement	478
167. Inheritance	482

21. THE LAW OF OBLIGATIONS

168. The Nature of Obligations	488
169. Solidary Obligations	490
170. The Sources of Obligations	493
171. Obligations Arising from Contracts	493
172. Obligations Arising from Torts	494
173. Obligations Arising from Quasi-Contracts	498
174. Innominate Obligations	501

22. THE LAW OF PROCEDURE

175. Substantive Law and the Law of Procedure	503
176. Evidence	506
177. The Valuation of Evidence	509
178. The Production of Evidence	513

APPENDICES

I. The Theory of Sovereignty	517
II. The Maxims of the Law	525
III. The Divisions of the Law	532
IV. The Fallibility of the House of Lords	538
<i>Index</i>	541

TABLE OF CASES

	PAGE		PAGE
Admiralty Commissioners v. S.S. Amerika (1917)	218, 538	Bourhill v. Young (1943)	185
— v. Valverde (Owners) (1938) ..	218	Bourne v. Keane (1919)	219
Allen v. Flood (1898)	219, 272, 416, 417	Bradford Corporation v. Pickles (1895)	417
— v. Waters (1935)	281	Bradley v. Carritt (1903)	178
Ancona v. Rogers (1876)	333	Bradley-Hole v. Cusen (1953) ..	213
Andrews v. Styrup (1872)	169	Brandao v. Barnett (1846)	238
Ankin v. L. N. E. R. (1930) ..	213	Bretherton v. U. K. Totalisator Co., Ltd. (1945)	170
Armory v. Delamirie (1922) ...	345, 474	Bridges v. Hawkesworth (1851) ..	329, 330, 331
Armstrong v. Strain (1951) ..	169, 207	Bright v. Hutton (1852)	175
Asher v. Whitlock (1865) ..	345, 474, 475	British Coal Corporation v. R. (1935)	160
Assam Railways and Trading Co. v. I. R. Comrs. (1935) ..	160	Bromage v. Prosser (1825)	416
Atlantic Smoke Shops, Ltd. v. Conlon (1943)	153	Browbridge, Re (1942)	485
Att.-Gen. v. Bradlaugh (1885) ..	216	Brown v. Brash (1948)	325
— v. Dimond (1831)	459	— v. Burdett (1882)	485
— v. Edison Telephone Co. (1881)	154	Bryant v. Foot (1868)	246
— v. Great Southern and Western Railway of Ireland (1925)	376	Bryers v. Canadian Pacific Steamships, Ltd. (1956) ..	169, 213
— v. Radloff (1854)	216	Burton's Settlement, Re (1955) ..	169
— v. Valle-Jones (1935)	224	Bushford v. Falco (1954)	325
Backhouse v. Bonomi (1861) ...	407	Cackett v. Cackett	201, 202
Baker v. Archer-Shee (1927) ...	313	Cain v. Moon (1896)	338
Bank of Ireland v. Evans' Charities Trustees (1855)	538	Calvin's Case (1608)	374
Battersby v. Anglo-American Oil Co. Ltd. (1945)	207, 208, 210	Candler v. Crane, Christmas & Co. (1951)	423
Beamish v. Beamish (1861) ..	176, 216	Carr v. Mercantile Produce Co., Ltd. (1949)	172
Beard v. Beard (1946)	160	Cartwright v. Green (1803)	324
Beardman v. Wilson (1868)	465	Castro v. R. (1881)	165
Bechuanaland Exploration Co. v. London Trading Bank (1898) ..	252	Central London Property Trust, Ltd. v. High Trees House, Ltd. (1947)	179
Benham v. Gambling (1941) ...	178	Chandler v. Webster (1904) ..	179, 182
Berkeley v. Papadoyannis (1954) ..	189	Chandris v. Isbrandtsen-Moller Co. Inc. (1951)	170, 171
Birtwhistle v. Vardill (1840) ...	175	Chapman v. Kirke (1948)	154
Bischoffsheim, Re (1948)	180	Cheese v. Lovejoy (1877)	159
Blades v. Higgs (1865)	538	Chichester Diocesan Fund v. Simpson (1944)	539
Blundell v. Catterall (1821)	248	Chisholm v. Doulton (1889) ..	434, 440
Blyth v. Birmingham Water Works (1856)	425	City of Westminster v. Southern Ry. (1936)	220
Board of Commerce, Re (1920) ..	215	Clark, Re (1904)	459
Bonham's Case (1610)	141	Clarke v. Grant (1950)	171
Bonnington Castings, Ltd. v. Wardlaw (1956)	191	Cochrane v. Moore (1890)	479
Bonsor v. Musicians' Union (1954)	201, 358	Cohen, Re (1955)	331
		Colman v. Croft (1947)	202
		Colonial Bank v. Whinney (1885-6)	363, 490

	PAGE		PAGE
Colquhoun v. Brooks (1888)	155	Eldon (Lord) v. Hedley Bros. (1935)	158
Commissioner of Stamps v. Hope (1891)	459	Ellen Street Estates, Ltd. v. Minister of Health (1934)	523
Commissioners of Inland Revenue v. Walker (1915)	216	Ellerman Lines, Ltd. v. Murray (1931)	160
Consett, etc., Society v. Consett Iron Co. (1922)	190, 201	Elliott v. Joicey (1935)	539
Consolidated Co. v. Curtis (1892) ..	437	Ellis v. Kerr (1910)	356
Cornford v. Carlton Bank (1899) ..	366	— v. Loftus Iron Co. (1874) ..	439, 457
Cory v. Burr (1882)	165	Elmore v. Stone (1809)	334
Cowan v. O'Connor (1888)	406	Elwes v. Brigg Gas Co. (1886) ..	329
Crofter Hand Woven Harris Tweed Co. v. Veitch (1942) ..	415	English Hopgrowers v. Dering (1928)	219
Crouch v. Crédit Foncier (1873) ..	240, 250, 251, 252, 253, 254, 255	English, Scottish and Australian Bank v. I. R. (1932)	204
Cundy v. Lindsay (1878)	390	Eric R. R. v. Tompkins (1938) ..	80
Curtis Moffat, Ltd. v. Wheeler (1929)	203	Exall v. Partridge (1799)	499
Dalton v. Fitzgerald (1897)	476	Fairman's Case (1923)	538
Danubian Sugar Factories v. Commissioners of I. R. (1901) ..	459	Fay v. Prentice (1845)	456
Darley Main Collieries Co. v. Mitchell (1886)	176, 407	Fender v. Mildmay (1938)	165
Davis v. Davis (1950)	209	Fibrosa Case (1943)	178, 179, 182, 220
Dean, Re (1889)	213, 214, 352, 354	Filburn v. Aquarium Co. (1890) ..	439
Dean v. Wiesengrund (1955) ...	155	Fisher v. Ruislip-Northwood U.D.C. (1945) ..	205, 207, 208, 210
Derrick v. Williams (1939)	168	Fitch v. Rawling (1795)	241
Derry v. Peek (1889)	413	Fitzsimmons v. Ford Motor Co. (1946)	201, 205, 208
Devoe v. Long (1951)	538	Fitzwilliam's (Earl) Wentworth Estates v. Minister of Town and Country Planning (1951) ..	142, 160
D. P. P. v. Beard (1920)	538	Flitcroft's Case (1882)	360
Donoghue v. Stevenson (1932) ..	165, 185, 186, 187, 219	Foakes v. Beer (1884)	179, 218
Doorman v. Jenkins (1834)	427	Foley's Charity Trustees v. Dudley (1910)	247
Dority v. Ottawa Trustees (1930) ..	201	Ford v. L. and S. W. Ry. (1862)	425, 426
Dransfield v. B. I. Cables, Ltd. (1937)	169	Poster v. Dodd (1867)	353
Duncan v. Cammell, Laird & Co. (1942)	539	Freeman v. Pope (1870)	413
Dutch West India Co. v. Van Moses (1724)	372	French Marine v. Compagnie Napolitaine (1921) ..	179, 182, 218
Earl v. Lubbock (1906)	187	Galloway v. Galloway (1954) ..	153, 215
Eastern Counties Building Soc. v. Russell (1947)	237	Gambart v. Bell (1863)	153
Eastman Photographic Materials Co. v. Comptroller-General of Patents (1898)	160	George and Richard, The (1871) ..	355
Edelstein v. Schuler (1902)	252	Gerard v. Worth of Paris, Ltd. (1936)	212
Edgington v. Swindon Corpn. (1939)	179	Gibaud v. G. E. Ry. (1921)	218
Edie v. East India Co. (1761) ..	240	Gibson v. South American Stores, Ltd. (1950)	189, 213
Edmundson v. Render (1905) ..	407	Ginesi v. Ginesi (1948)	209
Edwards v. Jones (1947) ...	196, 214	Glasgow Corporation v. Central Land Board (1956)	186, 539
Elderton v. U. K. Totalisator Co., Ltd. (1945)	170		

TABLE OF CASES

xvii

	PAGE		PAGE
Goodman v. Mayor of Saltash (1882)	178	Howell v. Falmouth Boat Construction, Ltd. (1951)	539
Goodwin v. Robarts (1875) .. 240, 251, 252, 254, 255		Hulbert v. Dale (1909)	247
Gordon v. Harper (1796)	335	Hulton v. Jones (1910)	180
Government of Gibraltar v. Kenney (1956)	375	Hurst v. Picture Theatres, Ltd. (1915)	274
Gower v. Gower (1950) 200, 203, 209, 215		I. R. Commissioners v. Anti-Vivisection Society (1945)	169
Gozney v. Bristol Trade and Provident Society (1909)	218	— v. Muller's Margarine, Ltd. (1901)	459
Grange v. Silcock (1897)	159	Jacobs v. L.C.C. (1950) 225, 538	
Grant v. Easton (1883) 498, 499		Jeffery v. Johnson (1952)	197
G. E. Ry. v. Turner (1872)	360	Johnson v. Clark (1908)	242
Green v. Hertzog (1954)	362	Jones v. Evans (1944)	159
Greenhalgh v. Mallard (1943) ..	221	Jordan v. Money (1854)	538
Greenwell v. Low Beechburn Colliery Co. (1897)	407	Kemphorne, <i>Re</i> , Charles v. Kemphorne (1930)	147
Gregory v. Fearn (1953)	159	Kerrison v. Smith (1897)	274
Griffiths v. Fleming (1909)	203	Kettlewell v. Watson (1882) .. 422, 428	
Grill v. General Iron Screw Colliery Co. (1866)	421, 427	Khediye, <i>The</i> (1882)	538
Grocock v. Grocock (1920)	215	King v. King (1943)	189, 210
Hack v. London Provident Building Society (1883)	202	— v. Smith (1900)	390
Haig v. West (1893)	334	Knott v. L.C.C. (1934)	182
Haines, <i>Re</i> (1952)	214	Kreglinger's Case (1914)	178
Hall v. Duke of Norfolk (1900) ..	407	Lancaster Motor Co. (London), Ltd. v. Bremith, Ltd. (1941) .. 203, 212, 213	
— v. Nottingham (1875)	241	Lawrence v. Hitch (1868)	246
Hallet, <i>Re</i> (1879)	223	Leask v. Scott (1877)	165
Hanlon v. Port of Liverpool Stevedoring Co. (1937)	203	Ledwith v. Roberts (1937)	173
Hannah v. Peel (1945)	330	Le Lievre v. Gould (1893)	428
Hardie (Hardie) & Lane, Ltd. v. Chilton (1928)	174	Lee v. Bude, etc., Ry. Co. (1871) ..	141
Harris v. Minister of the Interior (1952)	176	Lemon v. Lardeur (1946)	207
Hawke v. Mackenzie (1902)	173	Lightly v. Clouston (1808)	500
Haynes v. Harwood (1935)	165	Lindsey C.C. v. Marshall (1937) ..	213
Henderson v. Folkestone Waterworks Co. (1885)	168	Lissenden v. C.A.V. Bosch, Ltd. (1940)	220
Herd v. Herd (1936)	200	Liversidge v. Anderson (1942) ..	179
Herschthal v. Stewart & Ardern, Ltd. (1940)	169	London and Midland Bank v. Mitchell (1899)	281
Heydon's Case (1584)	160	London Graving Dock Co. v. Horton (1951)	539
Heyman v. Darwins, Ltd. (1942) .. 178, 185, 187		London Street Tramways Co. v. L.C.C. (1893) .. 181, 184, 187, 188	
Hill, <i>Ex p.</i> (1883)	415	Lord Strathcona S.S. Co. v. Dominion Coal Co. (1926)	467
Hill v. Aldershot Corp. (1933) ..	191	Lys v. Stepney B.C. (1941) ...	204
Hillas-Drake, <i>Re</i> (1944)	169	McCormick v. Lord Advocate (1953)	142
Hinton v. Dibbin (1842)	427	Machado v. Fontes (1897)	77
Hoare v. Osborne (1866)	353		
Hogan v. Bentinek, etc., Collieries (1948)	208		
Hollins v. Fowler (1874)	437		

	PAGE		PAGE
Mallott v. Wilson (1903)	382	Nizam of Hyderabad v. Jung (1956)	320
Marczuk v. Marczuk (1956)	155	Noble v. Kenneway (1780)	239
Markham v. Markham (1946) ..	206	— v. Southern Railway (1940) ..	201, 205
Markwald v. Att.-Gen. (1920) ..	150	Nokes v. Doncaster Amalgamated Collieries, Ltd. (1940) ..	158
Marvin v. Wallace (1856)	334	Northey Stone Co. v. Gidney (1894)	407
Mason v. Clarke (1955)	320	North-Western Utilities Co. v. London Guarantee and Accident Co. (1936)	433
Mattison v. Hart (1854)	157	Nyali, Ltd. v. Att.-Gen. (1956) ..	155
Mercantile Bank of India v. Central Bank of India (1938) ..	166	Olympia Oil Cake Co. v. Produce Brokers Co., Ltd. (1915)	190
Mercer, <i>Ex p.</i> (1886)	413	Osborne v. Bowlett (1880)	223
Mercer v. Denne (1905)	241	O'Shea v. O'Shea & Parnell (1890)	213
Merry v. Green (1841)	324, 325	Otto v. Bolton & Norris, Ltd. (1936)	169
Mersey Docks and Harbour Board v. Gibbs (1866)	373	Ozzard-Low v. Ozzard-Low and Wonham (1953)	169
Metropolitan Asylums District v. Hill (1881)	179	Parker v. Alder (1899)	440
Metropolitan Ry. v. Jackson (1877)	176	Parsons, <i>Re</i> (1890)	165
Middleton v. Pollock (1876)	383	Perpetual Executors and Trustees Assn. of Australia, Ltd. v. Commr. of Taxes (1954) ...	182
Midland Ry. v. Wright (1901) ..	458	Perrin v. Morgan (1943)	220
Midleton's Settlement, <i>Re</i> (1949) ..	80	Perry v. Glissold (1907)	474
Miller v. Race (1758)	253	Phillips v. Brooks, Ltd. (1919) ..	390
Mills v. Armstrong, The <i>Bernina</i> (1888)	219	— v. Homfray (1883)	500
— v. Jennings (1880)	190	Pickard v. Smith (1861)	439
Minister of Pensions v. Higham (1948)	174	Pickering v. Budd (1815)	456
Missouri, <i>Re</i> (1888)	165	Plunkett v. Alker (1954)	191
Mogul S.S. Co. v. McGregor, Gow & Co. (1889)	419	Podar Trading Co., Ltd. v. Tagher (1949)	170
Monti v. Barnes (1901)	457	Police Authority for Huddersfield v. Watson (1947) ...	170, 195, 196
Moore v. Hewitt (1947)	197	Powell v. Apollo Candle Co. (1885)	143
Morelle, Ltd. v. The King (1955) ..	189	Pramatha Nath Mullick v. Pradyumna Kumar Mullick (1925)	350
— v. Wakeling (1955) ...	201, 215	Pratt, <i>Re</i> (1950)	213
Morris v. Robinson (1824)	493	Prescott v. Birmingham Corp. (1955)	538
Mortensen v. Peters (1906)	79	Pugh v. Golden Valley Ry. (1880)	219
Moses v. Macferlan (1760)	499	Queen v. Edwards (1884)	218
Mucklow (A. & J.), Ltd. v. I. R. Commrs. (1954)	201	R. v. Armstrong (1875)	406
Muller & Co.'s Margarine, Ltd. v. I. R. Commissioners (1900) ..	406	— v. Birmingham and Gloucester Ry. (1842)	366
Musgrove v. Toy (1891)	272		
Nakkuda Ali v. Jayaratne (1951) ..	179		
Napier v. Williams (1911)	356		
Nash v. Tamplin & Sons, Ltd. (1952)	184		
National Anti-Vivisection Society v. I. R. (1928)	352		
National Phonograph Co. v. Menck (1911)	467		
Ndlwana v. Hofmeyr N. O. (1937)	142		
Neale v. Turton (1827)	356		
Newby v. Van Oppen (1872) ...	372		
Nicholas v. Penny (1956) ..	211, 214		
Nisbet and Potts' Contract, <i>Re</i> (1906)	312, 476		

TABLE OF CASES

xix

	PAGE		PAGE
R. v. Cade (1914)	192	Roberts v. Hopwood (1925)	538
— v. Coombes (1786)	406	Robinson Bros. (Brewers), Ltd.	
— v. Cory Bros. (1927)	366	v. Houghton Assistance Com-	
— v. de Gray (1900)	206	mittee (1937)	220
— v. Denyer (1926)	174	Rose v. Ford (1937)	158, 178
— v. Dudley (1884)	421	Rothwell v. Caverswall Stone	
— v. Ellis (1899)	406	Co. (1944)	210
— v. Ettridge (1909)	193, 214	Royal Crown Derby Porcelain	
— v. Fulham, etc., Rent		Co., Ltd. v. Russell (1949) ..	204
Tribunal, ex p. Zarek		Russell v. Russell (1924)	180
(1951)	206	Rylands v. Fletcher (1868) .	178, 439
— v. G. N. Ry. (1846)	366		
— v. Harvey (1823)	413	Sagar v. H. Ridehalgh & Son	
— v. Hudson (1943)	324, 325	(1931)	221
— v. I.C.R. Haulage, Ltd.		Salisbury v. Gilmore (1942)	538
(1944)	366	Salomon v. Salomon & Co., Ltd.	
— v. Jackson (1891)	219	(1897)	360
— v. Jolliffe (1823)	246	Sanders v. Maclean (1883)	338
— v. Joyce (1946)	77	Savory v. Bayley (1922)	207
— v. Keyn (1876)	33, 406	Scaramanga v. Stamp (1880) ..	165
— v. Labouchere (1884)	354	Seaman v. Burley (1896)	110
— v. Latimer (1886)	413	Searle v. Wallbank (1947)	539
— v. McGrowther (1746)	421	Seymour, Re (1937)	169
— v. Manley (1933)	148	Sharp v. Jackson (1899)	383
— v. Minister of Health, ex p.		Shaw v. Gould (1868)	180
Yaffé (1931)	185	Sheddon v. Goodrich (1803)	217
— v. Moore (1861)	329, 330	Sheil, Ex p. (1877)	281
— v. Mucklow (1827)	324	Shelfer v. City of London	
— v. Norman (1924)	193, 214	Electric Lighting Co. (1895) ..	125
— v. Northumberland Com-		Sigley v. Hale (1938)	188
pensation Appeal Tri-		Sigsworth, Re (1935)	158
bunal (1951) .	171, 204, 207	Simpson v. Wells (1872)	245
— v. Pemberton (1874)	414	Sinclair v. Brougham (1914) ...	538
— v. Porter (1949)	202	Sloman v. Government of New	
— v. Power (1919)	206	Zealand (1876)	375
— v. Price (1884)	353	Smallwood, Re (1951)	156
— v. Prince (1875)	434, 438	Smelting Co. of Australia v.	
— v. Senior (1832)	355	Commissioners of L. R. (1897)	459
— v. Stewart (1840)	353	Smith v. Baker (1873)	500
— v. Taylor (1950)	172, 173,	— v. Hughes (1871)	391
193, 194, 199		— v. Keal (1882)	218
— v. Thurborn (1849)	340	— v. Lambeth Assessment	
— v. Tolson (1873)	434	Committee (1882) ..	188
— v. Warner (1661)	213	Sodeman v. The King (1936) ...	200
— v. Watson, ex p. Brether-		Solicitor, Re (1944)	215
ton (1945)	170	South Staffs. Waterworks v.	
Race v. Ward (1855)	241	Sharman (1896)	329, 330
Radcliffe v. Ribble Motor		Southgate Borough Council v.	
Services (1939)	177	Park Estates (Southgate), Ltd.	
Raffles v. Wichelhaus (1864) ...	390	(1953)	196
Ratkinskey v. Jacobs (1929)	171	Speculand, Ex p. (1946)	169
Read v. Lyons (1947)	213, 424	S.S. Singleton Abbey v. S.S.	
Receiver for the Metropolitan		Paludina (1927)	539
Police District v. Croydon		Starey v. Graham (1899)	272
Corporation (1956)	169	Swift v. Tyson (1842)	80
Rhondda's Claim, Viscountess		Sydney Municipal Council v.	
(1922)	158, 160, 176	The Commonwealth (1904) ..	376
Richer v. Voyer (1874)	338		
Ridsdale v. Clifton (1877)	218		

	PAGE		PAGE
Tancred v. Delagoa Bay Ry. (1889)	211	Ward v. Turner (1751)	337
Tanistry, Case of (1608)	242	Warrender v. Warrender (1835)	185
Taylor, <i>Ex p.</i> (1886)	415	Weld-Blundell v. Stephens (1920)	179, 218
Tharsis Sulphur & Copper Co. v. Loftus (1873)	423	West Ham Union v. Edmonton Union (1908)	220
Thomas v. Greenslade (1954) ..	325	West Rand Gold Mining Co. v. R. (1905)	33
Thompson v. L.C.C. (1899)	492	Wheatley v. Wheatley (1950) ..	201
Thomson v. St. Catherine's College, Cambridge (1919) ...	168	Williams v. Glasbrook Bros., Ltd. (1947)	205, 208
Thorne v. Motor Trade Association. (1937)	174, 221	— v. Howarth (1905)	375
Thorogood v. Brian (1849)	219	— v. Williams (1882)	353
Tichborne v. Weir (1892)	476	Wilson v. Brett (1843)	427
Transferred Civil Servants (Ireland) Compensation, <i>Re</i> (1929) ..	166	— v. Chatterton (1946)	204
Transport and General Credit Corporation v. Morgan (1939) ..	160	Winter v. Winter (1861)	338
Tubantia, <i>The</i> (1924)	325	Wolstanton, Ltd. v. Newcastle-under-Lyme Corp'n. (1940) ..	221, 242
Udny v. Udny (1869)	185	Wood v. Leadbitter (1845)	274
Usher's Wiltshire Brewery, Ltd. v. Bruce (1915)	184, 216	Wood Green U.D.C. v. Joseph (1908)	180
		Wurzad v. Dowker (1954)	206
		Wynne-Finch v. Chaytor (1903) ..	189
Vaughan, <i>Re</i> (1886)	353	Yelland v. Powell Duffryn Collieries (1941)	213
— v. Menlove (1837)	425	Young v. Bristol Aeroplane Co. (1944)	189, 190, 191, 194, 201, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 210, 211, 215, 216
Veley v. Burder (1841)	248	— v. Sealey (1949)	213
Village Main Reef, etc., Ltd. v. Stearns (1900)	170	Younghusband v. Luftig (1949) ..	195, 197, 202, 204
Walker v. G. N. Ry. of Ireland (1890)	355	Zamora, <i>The</i> (1916)	37, 94
Wallis, <i>Re</i> (1890)	218	Zeidman v. Owen (1950)	200
Wandsworth Board of Works v. United Telegraph Co. (1884) ..	456		
Ward v. National Bank (1883) ..	492		

TABLE OF STATUTES

	PAGE		PAGE
1275 Statute of Westminster I (3 Edw. 1)	245	1911 Parliament Act (1 & 2 Geo. 5, c. 13)	519
1289 Statute of Quo Warranto (18 Edw. 1)	245	1920 Increase of Rent and Mortgage Interest (Res- trictions) Act (10 & 11 Geo. 5, c. 17)	51, 147
1535 Statute of Uses (27 Hen. 8, c. 10)	324, 356	Air Navigation Act (10 & 11 Geo. 5, c. 80)	457
1677 Sunday Observance Act (29 Car. 2, c. 7)	159	1923 Rent and Mortgage In- terest Restrictions Act (13 & 14 Geo. 5, c. 32)	51, 147
1734 Engraving Copyright Act (8 Geo. 2, c. 13)	153	1925 Land Charges Act (15 & 16 Geo. 5, c. 22) ..	296, 298
1832 Anatomy Act (2 & 3 Will. 4, c. 75)	353	Law of Property Act (15 & 16 Geo. 5, c. 20) ..	296, 298, 356, 468-470
1845 Real Property Act (8 & 9 Vict. c. 105)	479	Land Registration Act (15 & 16 Geo. 5, c. 21) ..	281
1846 Fatal Accidents Act (9 & 10 Vict. c. 93)	355	Administration of Estates Act (15 & 16 Geo. 5, c. 23)	267, 456, 483
1855 Ordnance Board Transfer Act (18 & 19 Vict. c. 117)	360	1929 Companies Act (19 & 20 Geo. 5, c. 23)	361, 371
1863 Telegraph Act (26 & 27 Vict. c. 112)	153	1930 Road Traffic Act (20 & 21 Geo. 5, c. 43)	404
1867 British North America Act (30 & 31 Vict. c. 3) ..	153	1933 Rent and Mortgage Interest Restrictions (Amendment) Act (23 & 24 Geo. 5, c. 32) ..	51, 147
1870 Limited Owners Resi- dences Act (33 & 34 Vict. c. 56)	302	1934 County Courts Act (24 & 25 Geo. 5, c. 53)	500
1873 Supreme Court of Judica- ture (36 & 37 Vict. c. 66)	82, 298	Law Reform (Miscella- neous Provisions) Act (24 & 25 Geo. 5, c. 41) ..	482
1876 Treasury Solicitor Act (39 & 40 Vict. c. 18) ..	360	1935 Increase of Rent and Mortgage Interest (Res- trictions) Act (25 & 26 Geo. 5, c. 13)	51, 147
1877 Limited Owners Reservoirs and Water Supply Further Facilities (40 & 41 Vict. c. 31)	302	Law Reform (Married Women and Tortfeasors) Act (25 & 26 Geo. 5, c. 30)	500
1882 Bills of Exchange Act (45 & 46 Vict. c. 61) ..	238	1938 Increase of Rent and Mortgage Interest (Restrictions) Act (1 & 2 Geo. 6, c. 26)	51, 147
1889 Factors Act (52 & 53 Vict. c. 45)	481	Evidence Act (1 & 2 Geo. 6, c. 28)	52
Interpretation Act (52 & 53 Vict. c. 63)	168	Inheritance (Family Pro- vision) Act (1 & 2 Geo. 6, c. 45)	52, 381, 485
1890 Partnership Act (53 & 54 Vict. c. 39)	493	Hire-Purchase Act (1 & 2 Geo. 6, c. 53)	52
1891 Stamp Act (54 & 55 Vict. c. 39)	459		
1893 Sale of Goods Act (56 & 57 Vict. c. 71) ..	67, 337, 339		
1906 Marine Insurance Act (6 Edw. 7, c. 41)	238		
1908 Post Office Act (8 Edw. 7, c. 48)	360		
1911 Commonwealth Bank Act (Australia)	359		

	PAGE		PAGE
1939	Limitation Act (2 & 3 Geo. 6, c. 21)	281, 336, 478	
	Rent and Mortgage Inter- est Restrictions Act (2 & 3 Geo. 6, c. 71)	51, 147	
1943	Minister of Town and Country Planning Act (6 & 7 Geo. 6, c. 5) ..	360	
1944	Education Act (7 & 8 Geo. 6, c. 31)	360	
1946	National Insurance Act (9 & 10 Geo. 6, c. 67)	41	
1947	Crown Proceedings Act (10 & 11 Geo. 6, c. 44)	282	
1949	Civil Aviation Act (12, 13 & 14 Geo. 6, c. 67)	457	
1951	Common Informers (14 & 15 Geo. 6, c. 39)	111	
1956	Restrictive Trade Practices Act (4 & 5 Eliz. 2, c. 68)	42	

AUTHORITIES

THE chief purpose of this bibliography is to supply an explanation of the references contained in this work to the literature of jurisprudence. It has no claim to be regarded as a comprehensive guide to that literature. The editions mentioned are usually those to which the references relate, and are not necessarily the latest.

Ahrens.—Cours de Droit Naturel, ou de Philosophie du Droit. 8th ed. Paris, 1892.

Allen, C. K.—Legal Duties, Oxford, 1931.
Law in the Making. 3rd ed.

Amos.—The Science of Jurisprudence, 1872.

Aquinas, St. Thomas.—Tractatus de Legibus and Tractatus de Justitia et Jure, included in his Summa Theologiae.

(The scholastic philosophy of the Middle Ages included within its scope the theory of law and justice, and the legal and ethical doctrines of the Schoolmen found their most authoritative expression in this work of Aquinas in the thirteenth century. A new translation entitled *Basic Writings of St. Thomas Aquinas*, by A. C. Pegis, was published in 1945.)

Arndts.—Juristische Encyklopädie and Methodologie. 9th ed. Stuttgart, 1895.

Austin.—Lectures on Jurisprudence or the Philosophy of Positive Law. 3rd ed. 1869.

Abridgment by Campbell for the use of Students. 9th ed. 1895.

The Austinian Theory of Law, by W. Jethro Brown. 1906.

(An edition of the more important portions of Austin's work, with notes and excursus by the editor.)

Baudry-Lacantinerie.—Traité Théorique et Pratique de Droit Civil. Paris, 1895.

(A series of Commentaries on French Law by various writers.)

Bentham.—The Principles of Morals and Legislation. Clarendon Press ed. 1879.

Theory of Legislation. Translated from the French of Dumont, by Hildreth. 8th ed. 1894.

A Fragment on Government. Ed. by Montague. Oxford, 1891.

Collected Works. Edited by Bowring. 11 vols. 1843.

Berolzheimer.—The World's Legal Philosophies. English translation in Modern Legal Philosophy Series. Boston, 1912.

Bierling.—Juristische Prinzipienlehre. 1894.

Blackstone, Sir William.—Commentaries on the Laws of England. 4 vols. 1765-1769 (19th ed. 1836).

- Bodenheimer, Edgar.*—Jurisprudence. New York and London, 1940.
- Bodin.*—*De la République*, 1576. Latin version, *De Republica*, 1586.
(A work of great influence and celebrity in its day. Bodin may be regarded as one of the founders of the political science of modern times.)
- Bracton.*—*De Legibus Angliæ*. New ed. by Woodbine. 4 vols. New Haven and London, 1915-42.
(One of the earliest of English legal treatises, dating from the reign of Henry III.)
- Brown.*—*The Austinian Theory of Law*. 1906.
- Bruns.*—*Das Recht des Besitzes im Mittelalter und in der Gegenwart*. Tübingen, 1848.
- Bryce, Lord.*—*Studies in History and Jurisprudence*. 2 vols., Oxford, 1901.
- Buckland, W. W., and McNair, A. D.*—*Roman Law and Common Law*. 2nd ed. Cambridge.
- Burlamaqui.*—*Principes du Droit de la Nature et des Gens*. 1766. Edited by Dupin, 5 vols., Paris, 1820. Translated by Nugent, Philadelphia, 1830.
- C.*—*The Code of the Emperor Justinian*.
(A collection of the statute-law of the Roman Empire, made by order of Justinian, A.D. 534, and forming one portion of the *Corpus Juris Civilis*.)
- Can. Bar Rev.*—*Canadian Bar Review*.
- Cardozo, B. N.*—*The Nature of the Judicial Process*. 1921.
The Growth of the Law. New Haven, 1924.
The Paradoxes of Legal Science. New York, 1928.
- Clark.*—*Practical Jurisprudence; a Comment on Austin*. Cambridge, 1883. *Analysis of Criminal Liability*. Cambridge, 1880.
- C. L. J.*—*Cambridge Law Journal*.
- Co. Litt.*—*Coke's Commentary upon Littleton*.
- Col. L. Rev.*—*Columbia Law Review*.
- D.*—*The Digest or Pandects of the Emperor Justinian*.
(A compilation of extracts from the writings of the chief Roman lawyers, made by order of Justinian, A.D. 533, as part of the *Corpus Juris Civilis*.)
- Dernburg.*—*Pandekten*. 3 vols. 6th ed. Berlin, 1900.
(This is one of the best examples of the German works on *Pandektenrecht*, that is to say, the modern Roman Law which was in force as the common law of Germany until superseded by the recent Codes.)
Das bürgerliche Recht des Deutschen Reichs. 3 vols. 1901.

Eastwood and Keeton.—The Austinian Theories of Law and Sovereignty. London, 1929.

Ehrlich, Eugen.—Fundamental Principles of the Sociology of Law. Tr. Moll. Cambridge, Mass., 1936.

Frank, Jerome.—Law and the Modern Mind. New York, 1930.

Gaius.—Institutiones.

(An institutional compendium of Roman Law by a lawyer of the second century of the Christian era. It is of great value as the chief source of our knowledge of the earlier law of Rome.)

Gareis.—Rechts-Encyklopädie. 2nd ed. Giessen, 1900.

(English translation by Kocourek, Introduction to the Science of Law. Boston, 1911.)

German Civil Code.—Das bürgerliche Gesetzbuch.

(A codification of the civil law of the German Empire, which came into force in 1900. French translation by Grasserie, Code Civil Allemand, Paris, 1901.)

German Criminal Code.—Das Strafgesetzbuch für das Deutsche Reich, 1872. Annotated edition by Oppenhoff, Berlin, 1896.

Gierke.—Deutsches Privatrecht. Leipzig, 1895-1905.

(The first Book or General Part of this work contains an admirable exposition of the first principles of legal theory.)

Natural Law and the Theory of Society, 1500-1800. Translated by Ernest Barker. Cambridge, 1934.

Girard.—Manuel Élémentaire de Droit Romain. 2nd ed. Paris, 1898.

Goadby.—Introduction to the Study of the Law. 3rd ed. 1921.

Goodhart.—Essays in Jurisprudence and the Common Law. Cambridge, 1931.

Gray.—The Nature and Sources of the Law. New York, 1909.

Grotius.—De Jure Belli ac Pacis, 1625. Edited, with English translation, by Whewell. 3 vols., Cambridge, 1853.

(Grotius confines his attention for the most part to international law, of which he was one of the founders. This work, however, is not without importance with respect to the theory of civil law also.)

Haines, C. G.—The Revival of Natural Law Concepts. Cambridge, Mass., 1930.

Hall, Jerome.—Readings in Jurisprudence. Indianapolis, 1938.

Harvard Legal Essays.—Cambridge, Mass., 1934.

Hearn.—The Theory of Legal Duties and Rights. Melbourne, 1883.

H. L. R.—Harvard Law Review.

- Hobbes*.—*Leviathan*; or the Matter, Form, and Power of a Commonwealth, Ecclesiastical and Civil. 1651. (English Works, edited by Molesworth, vol. iii. Published separately, Cambridge University Press, 1904.)
De Cive. 1642. (Latin Works, edited by Molesworth, vol. ii.)
- Hohfeld*.—*Fundamental Legal Conceptions*. New Haven and London, 1923.
- Holdsworth*.—*History of English Law*. 3rd ed. 1922.
- Holland*.—*Elements of Jurisprudence*. 13th ed., Oxford, 1924.
- Holmes*.—*The Common Law*. 1887.
(A collection of Essays on English Law from the standpoint of analytical and historical jurisprudence.)
Collected Legal Papers. New York, 1920.
- Hooker*.—*Ecclesiastical Polity*. Book I. 1594. (Works in 3 vols. Oxford, 1888.)
(Remarkable as one of the earliest presentations in the English language of the general theory of law. Hooker's doctrine is essentially that of scholastic philosophy.)
- Ihering*.—*Geist des römischen Rechts*. 3 vols. 5th ed. Leipzig, 1891.
(French translation by Meulenaere, *L'Esprit du Droit Romain*, 4 vols. 1877.)
Der Zweck im Recht. 2 vols. 3rd ed. Leipzig, 1893.
(French translation by Meulenaere, *L'Evolution du Droit*, 1901. English translation of volume I by Husik. Boston, 1913, *Modern Legal Philosophy Series*.)
Grund des Besitzschutzes. 2nd ed. Jena, 1869.
Der Besitzwille. Jena, 1889.
- Inst. Just.*—*The Institutes of the Emperor Justinian*.
(A text-book of Roman Law for the use of students, compiled by order of Justinian, A.D. 529, and forming part of the *Corpus Juris Civilis*.)
- Italian Civil Code*—French trans. by Prudhomme. Paris, 1896.
- Italian Penal Code*.—French trans. by Turrel. Paris, 1890.
- J.C.L.*—*Journal of the Society of Comparative Legislation*.
- Jellinek*.—*Allgemeine Staatslehre*. Berlin, 1900. (The first volume of *Das Recht des modernen Staates*.)
- Jenks, Edward*.—*The New Jurisprudence*. London, 1933.
- Jones, J. W.*—*Historical Introduction to the Theory of Law*. Oxford, 1940.
- Kant*.—*Rechtslehre*. 1796. (English translation by Hastie, *Kant's Philosophy of Law*, 1887.)
- Keeton, G. W.*—*Elementary Principles of Jurisprudence*. London, 1930.

- Kocourek*.—Introduction to the Science of Law. Boston, 1930.
Jural Relations. 2nd ed. Indianapolis, 1928.
- Kohler*.—Lehrbuch der Rechtsphilosophie. Berlin, 1909. (English translation, The Philosophy of Law, in the Modern Legal Philosophy Series. Boston, 1914.)
- Korkunov*.—The General Theory of Law. (Translated from the Russian by W. G. Hastings. Boston, 1909.)
- L.Q.R.*—Law Quarterly Review.
- L. R.*—The Law Reports from 1865 onwards.
- Q. B. or K. B.—Reports of cases decided in the former Court of Queen's Bench or the Queen's (or King's) Bench Division of the High Court of Justice.
- Ch. D.—Reports of cases in the Chancery Division of the High Court.
- A. C.—Appeal Cases, i.e. reports of cases in the House of Lords and Privy Council.
- C. P. or C. P. D.—Reports of cases in the former Court of Common Pleas, or the former Common Pleas Division of the High Court.
- Ex. or Ex. D.—Reports of cases in the former Court of Exchequer, or the former Exchequer Division of the High Court.
- (The Reports prior to 1865 are usually referred to by the names of their editors: thus 2 Ad. & El. means the second volume of the reports of Adolphus & Ellis.)
- Lightwood*.—The Nature of Positive Law. 1883.
- Lindley, Lord*.—An Introduction to the Study of Jurisprudence. 1855.
(A translation, with copious notes, of the General Part of Thibaut's Pandektenrecht.)
- Locke*.—Two Treatises on Civil Government. 1690.
- Lorimer*.—The Institutes of Law; a Treatise of the Principles of Jurisprudence as determined by Nature. 2nd ed. 1880.
- Maine, Sir Henry*.—Ancient Law. 1861; edited with introduction and Notes by Sir F. Pollock. 1906.
The Early History of Institutions. 1875.
Early Law and Custom. 1883.
(Sir Henry Maine was a leading representative in England of the scientific treatment of legal conceptions in respect of their origin and historical development.)
- Maitland, F. W.*—Collected Papers. 3 vols. Cambridge, 1911.
Selected Essays. Ed. Hazeltine, Lapsley and Winfield. Cambridge, 1936.
- Markby, Sir W.*—Elements of Law. 6th ed. 1905. Oxford.
(A treatise of analytical jurisprudence.)
- Merkel*.—Lehrbuch des Deutschen Strafrechts. Stuttgart, 1889.
- Miller*.—The Data of Jurisprudence. Edinburgh, 1903.

M. L. R.—Modern Law Review.

Modern Approach to Criminal Law, The.—Ed. Radzinowicz and Turner. Cambridge, 1945.

Modern Theories of Law.—London, 1933.

Paton, G. W.—A Text-Book of Jurisprudence. Oxford, 1946.

Pollock, Sir Frederick.—First Book of Jurisprudence. 6th ed. 1929.
Essays in Jurisprudence and Ethics. London, 1882.

Oxford Lectures and Other Discourses. London, 1890.

Essays in the Law. London, 1922.

Pollock and Maitland.—The History of English Law before the Time of Edward I. 2 vols. Cambridge, 1895. 2nd ed. 1898.

Pollock and Wright.—Possession in the Common Law. 1888.

Pothier.—Works. 10 vols. ed. by Bugnet. 3rd ed. Paris, 1890.

(Pothier, ob. 1772, is one of the most celebrated of French lawyers. His admirably lucid and methodical expositions of Roman-French law are the source of great part of the Codes prepared in France at the beginning of the nineteenth century and still in force there.)

Pound, Roscoe.—An Introduction to the Philosophy of Law. 1922.

Interpretations of Legal History. Cambridge, 1923.
Law and Morals. 2nd ed. 1926.

Puchta.—Cursus der Institutionen. 2 vols. 10th ed. Leipzig, 1893.

(A treatise of Roman law. The introductory portion of this work is of importance as setting forth the theory of law as understood by the so-called historical school of German Jurisprudence. This portion is translated by Hastie, Outlines of the Science of Jurisprudence. Edinburgh, 1887.)

Pufendorf.—De Jure Naturae et Gentium. 1672. (English trans. by Kennet, 1729:—The Law of Nature and Nations.)

De Officiis Hominis et Civis. 1673.

Pulzsky.—The Theory of Law and Civil Society. London, 1888.

Radbruch.—Rechtsphilosophie. 3rd ed. 1932.

Rattigan, Sir W. H.—The Science of Jurisprudence. 3rd ed. 1909.

Rickaby.—Moral Philosophy or Ethics and Natural Law. 3rd ed. 1892.

Savigny.—System des heutigen römischen Rechts. 1840-1849. (French translation by Guenoux, Traité de Droit Romain. 3 vols.)

Das Recht des Besitzes. 1803. (English translation by Perry, Von Savigny's Treatise on Possession, 1848.)

Science of Legal Method, The.—Boston, 1917.

Select Essays in Anglo-American Legal History.—By various authors. Edited by a committee of the Association of American Law Schools. 3 vols. 1907-1909.

- Sidgwick, H.*—Elements of Politics. 2nd ed. 1897.
- Spencer, Herbert.*—Principles of Sociology. 3rd ed. 1893.
Principles of Ethics. 1892-1893.
- Spinoza.*—Tractatus Politicus. 1677, posthumous.
(Works edited by Van Vloten and Land. 3 vols. English translation by Elwes. 2nd ed. 1889.)
- S.S.*—Selden Society series.
- Street.*—Foundations of Legal Liability. 3 vols. New York, 1906.
- Suarez.*—De Legibus et de Deo Legislatore. 1613.
(Suarez was a Spanish Jesuit of the sixteenth century. In this work he sums up, with the greatest completeness and elaboration, the scholastic doctrine of the law.)
- Tarde.*—La Philosophie Penale. 5th ed. Paris, 1900.
- Terry.*—Leading Principles of Anglo-American Law. Philadelphia, 1884.
(A book of general jurisprudence.)
- Thomas.*—A treatise of Universal Jurisprudence. 2nd ed. 1829.
- Thomasius.*—Institutionum Jurisprudentiæ Divinæ Libri Tres. 1687.
Fundamenta Juris Naturæ et Gentium. 1705.
- Univ. of Tor. L.J.*—University of Toronto Law Journal.
- Vangerow.*—Lehrbuch der Pandekten. 3 vols. 7th ed. Leipzig, 1876.
- Vinogradoff, Sir Paul.*—Outlines of Historical Jurisprudence. 2 vols. 1920-1922.
Common Sense in Law. London, 1913.
Collected Papers. 2 vols. Oxford, 1928.
- Windscheid.*—Lehrbuch des Pandektenrechts. 3 vols. 8th ed. Frankfurt, 1900.
(Windscheid was one of the most distinguished of the German exponents of modern Roman law, and this work is an admirable example of the scientific study of a legal system.)
- Y. B.*—The Year Books, viz., the early Law Reports from the reign of Edward I to that of Henry VIII.
(The Year Books of Edward I and some others are published with a translation in the Rolls Series; others by the Selden Society. The rest are to be found in a black-letter folio edition of 1678.)

JURISPRUDENCE

INTRODUCTION

THE SCIENCE OF JURISPRUDENCE

§ 1. Jurisprudence as the Science of Civil Law

In a generic and primary sense jurisprudence includes the entire body of legal doctrine. It is *jurisprudentia*—the knowledge of law—and in this sense all law books are books of jurisprudence. By law in this connection is meant exclusively the civil law, the law of the land, as opposed to those other bodies of rules to which the name of law has been extended by analogy. If we use the term “science” in its widest permissible sense, as including the systematised knowledge of any subject of intellectual inquiry, we may define jurisprudence as the science of civil law.

Of jurisprudence in this sense there are three kinds—namely, (1) legal exposition, (2) legal history, and (3) the science of legislation. The purpose of the first is to set forth the contents of an actual legal system as existing at any time, whether past or present. The purpose of the second is to set forth the historical process whereby any legal system came to be what it is or was. The purpose of the third is to set forth the law, not as it is or has been, but as it ought to be. It deals not with the past or present of any legal system, but with its ideal future, and with the purposes for which it exists. The complete scientific treatment of any body of law involves the adoption of each of these three methods. The law must be dealt with systematically or dogmatically in respect of its contents, historically in respect of the process of its development,

and critically in respect of its conformity with justice and the public interest. The first of these methods is that of expository or systematic jurisprudence; the second is that of legal history; while the third pertains to that branch of legal science which, for want of a better name, is commonly termed the science of legislation.

§ 2. Theoretical or General Jurisprudence

From jurisprudence in its generic sense, as including the entire body of legal doctrine, it is necessary to distinguish jurisprudence in a more specific sense, in which it means a particular department of such doctrine exclusively. In this limited significance it may be termed theoretical or general jurisprudence to distinguish it from the more practical and special departments of legal study (*a*). It is with this only that the present treatise is concerned. How, then, shall we define it; and how distinguish it from the residue of legal science? It is the science of the first principles of the civil law. It is not possible, indeed, to draw any hard line of logical division between those first principles and the remaining portions of the law. The distinction is one of degree rather than of kind. Nevertheless, it is expedient to set apart, as the subject-matter of a special department of study, those more fundamental conceptions and principles which serve as the basis of the concrete details of the law. This introductory and general portion of legal doctrine, cut off for reasons of practical convenience from the special portions which come after it, constitutes the subject-matter of this treatise. The fact that its boundaries are not capable of being traced with logical precision detracts in no degree from the advantages to be derived from its recognition and separate treatment as a distinct department of scientific inquiry.

It must not be supposed that the object of this branch of legal science is an elementary outline of the concrete

(*a*) For the history of the word in this meaning see A. H. Campbell, "A Note on the Word 'Jurisprudence,'" (1942) 58 L. Q. R. 334.

legal system. It deals not with the outlines of the law, but with its ultimate conceptions. Theoretical jurisprudence is not elementary law, any more than metaphysics is elementary science.

This introductory portion of legal doctrine goes by divers names. It is called theoretical jurisprudence, as being concerned with the theory of the law—that is to say, its fundamental principles and conceptions—rather than its practical and concrete details. It is also, and for the same reason, known as general jurisprudence (*jurisprudentia generalis* or *universalis*). It is also called the philosophy of law (*Rechtsphilosophie*; *philosophie du droit*), the term “philosophy” being here used, not in the sense of metaphysics—though it is true that much of the Continental literature of jurisprudence has a metaphysical aspect very alien to English modes of legal thought—but in the sense of an inquiry into the first principles of any department of thought. It is also known as jurisprudence *simpliciter*, without any qualifying adjective to distinguish it from the residue of legal doctrine. This specialised use of the generic term cannot be justified from the point of view of philology; but it is of practical convenience, and may be regarded as well established in modern English speech. Indeed, it would be an improvement in legal nomenclature if the term “jurisprudence” were used exclusively in this specific sense as meaning the theory or philosophy of law, the use of the term in its original and generic sense, as meaning legal doctrine in general, being discontinued (b).

§ 3. Analytical, Historical and Ethical Jurisprudence

Jurisprudence, in its specific sense as the theory or philosophy of law, is divisible into three branches, which may be distinguished as analytical, historical, and ethical.

(b) The term “general jurisprudence” involves the misleading suggestion that this branch of legal science is that which relates not to any single system of law, but to those conceptions and principles that are to be found in all developed legal systems, and which are therefore in this sense general. It is true that a great part of the matter with which it is concerned is common to all mature systems of law. All of these have the same essential nature and purposes, and therefore agree to a large extent in their first principles. But it is not because of universal reception that any principles pertain to the theory or philosophy of law. For this purpose such reception is neither sufficient nor necessary. Even if no system in the world save that of England recognised the legislative efficacy of judicial precedents, the theory of case-law would none the less be a fit and proper subject of general jurisprudence. *Jurisprudentia generalis* is not the study of legal systems in general, but the study of the general or fundamental elements of a particular legal system. For an opposite view see C. K. Allen, *Legal Duties* (1931) 6.

This distinction corresponds to that which has been already indicated as existing within the sphere of legal science in general—namely, the distinction between legal exposition, legal history, and the science of legislation. The philosophy of law, being the introductory portion of legal science in general, involves the same tripartite division. Analytical jurisprudence is the general or philosophical part of systematic legal exposition, historical jurisprudence is the general or philosophical part of legal history, and ethical jurisprudence is the general or philosophical part of the science of legislation.

These three aspects of the law—dogmatic, historical, and ethical—are so involved with each other that the isolated treatment of any one of them is necessarily inadequate. A complete treatise of jurisprudence would deal fully with all three branches of the subject. In fact, however, most treatises pertain primarily and essentially to one or other of them, and deal with the others only incidentally, and only so far as may be necessary to render adequate and intelligible the treatment of the central theme. It is not difficult, therefore, to classify most books of jurisprudence or legal philosophy as pertaining primarily either to the analytical, or to the historical, or to the ethical branch of the subject.

Analytical Jurisprudence.—The purpose of analytical jurisprudence is to analyse, without reference either to their historical origin or development or to their ethical significance or validity, the first principles of the law. Since the distinction between jurisprudence and the practical exposition of a concrete legal system is merely one of degree, opinions may well differ to some extent as to the matters which deserve a place in the former department of legal science. Speaking generally, however, a book of analytical jurisprudence will deal appropriately with such subjects as the following:—

- (1) An analysis of the conception of civil law;

- (2) An examination of the relations between civil law and other forms of law;
- (3) An analysis of the various constituent ideas of which the complex idea of law is made up—for example, those of the state, of sovereignty, and of the administration of justice;
- (4) An account of the legal (as opposed to the merely historical) sources from which the law proceeds, together with an investigation of the theory of legislation, judicial precedents, and customary law;
- (5) An inquiry into the scientific arrangement of the law—that is to say, the logical division of the *corpus juris* into distinct departments, together with an analysis of the distinctions on which this division is based.
- (6) An analysis of the conception of legal rights, together with the division of rights into various classes, and the general theory of the creation, transfer, and extinction of rights.
- (7) An investigation of the theory of legal liability, civil and criminal.
- (8) An examination of any other legal conceptions which, by reason of their theoretical interest, significance, or difficulty, deserve special attention from the philosophical point of view: such as property, possession, obligations, contracts, trusts, personality, incorporation, acts, causation, intention, motive, negligence, and many others.

Historical Jurisprudence.—That branch of legal philosophy which is termed historical jurisprudence is the general portion of legal history. It bears the same relation to legal history at large as analytical jurisprudence bears to the systematic exposition of the legal system. It deals in the first place with the general principles governing the origin and development of law, and with the influences that affect the law. It deals in the second place with the origin and development of those legal conceptions and principles which

are so essential in their nature as to deserve a place in the philosophy of law—the same conceptions and principles, that is to say, which are dealt with in another manner and from another point of view by analytical jurisprudence. Historical jurisprudence is the history of the first principles and conceptions of the legal system.

Ethical Jurisprudence.—Ethical jurisprudence deals with the law from the point of view of its ethical significance and adequacy. It is concerned not with the intellectual content of the legal system or with its historical development, but with the purpose for which it exists and the measure and manner in which that purpose is fulfilled. Now the purpose and end of the law may be said generally to be the maintenance of justice within a political community by means of the physical force of the state. Ethical jurisprudence is concerned, therefore, with the theory of justice in its relation to law. It is the meeting-point and common ground of moral and legal philosophy—of ethics and jurisprudence. Justice in its general aspect and relations pertains to ethics or moral philosophy. Justice in its special aspect, as the final cause of civil law, pertains to that branch of legal philosophy which we have distinguished as ethical jurisprudence.

A book of ethical jurisprudence, therefore, may concern itself with all or any of the following matters:—

- (1) The conception of justice.
- (2) The relation between law and justice.
- (3) The manner in which law fulfils its purpose of maintaining justice.
- (4) The distinction, if any such there be, between the sphere of justice as the subject-matter of law, and those other branches of right with which the law is not concerned and which pertains to morals exclusively.
- (5) The ethical significance and validity of those legal conceptions and principles which are so funda-

mental in their nature as to be the proper subject-matter of analytical jurisprudence.

Further than this the proper scope of ethical jurisprudence does not extend. So far as any book goes beyond this general theory of justice in its relation to law, it passes over either into the sphere of moral philosophy itself, or else into the sphere of that detailed criticism of the actual legal system, or that detailed construction of an ideal legal system, which pertains not to jurisprudence or legal philosophy but to the science of legislation.

The present treatise is primarily and essentially a book of analytical jurisprudence. In this respect it endeavours to follow the main current of English legal philosophy rather than that which prevails upon the Continent of Europe, and which, to a large extent, is primarily ethical in its scope and method. But although the essential purpose of this book is an analysis of the first principles of the actual legal system, this purpose is not pursued to the total exclusion and neglect of the ethical and historical aspects of the matter. For the total disregard of the ethical implications of the law would tend to reduce analytical jurisprudence to a system of rather arid formalism; and the total disregard of historical origins and development would be inconsistent with the adequate explanation of those principles and conceptions with which it is the business of this science to deal (c).

§ 4. English and Foreign Jurisprudence

When an English lawyer with any knowledge of the terminology of Roman law comes to the study of a practical

(c) What is known as comparative jurisprudence—namely, the study of the resemblances and differences between different legal systems—is not a separate branch of jurisprudence co-ordinate with the analytical, historical, and ethical, but is merely a particular method of that science in all its branches. We compare English law with Roman law either for the purpose of analytical jurisprudence, in order the better to comprehend the conceptions and principles of each of those systems; or for the purpose of historical jurisprudence, in order that we may better understand the course of development of each system; or for the purpose of ethical jurisprudence, in order

law-book of France or Germany he finds himself on ground not wholly unfamiliar. If, however, he ventures into the region of Continental legal philosophy, he finds himself a stranger in a strange land where men speak to him in an unknown tongue. For this divergence between the juristic thought and literature of England and that of the Continent there is more than one reason, but the most far-reaching cause of it is to be found in a certain difference in legal nomenclature. The English word "law" means law and nothing else; but the corresponding terms in Continental languages are ambiguous, and mean not only law but also right or justice. *Recht*, *droit*, and *diritto* all have this double signification (*d*). An English lawyer is helped to an understanding of this ambiguity, if he reflects that a similar double meaning is possessed in England by the term "equity", which means either natural justice or that particular branch of English law which was developed and applied by the Court of Chancery. The union of these two distinct though related meanings in the same words in Continental speech, while there is in general no such union in English speech, has been partly responsible for important divergences between the juristic thought and literature of England and that of the Continent (*e*).

that we may better judge the practical merits and demerits of each of them. Apart from such purposes the comparative study of law would be merely futile.

(*d*) So also with the Latin *jus*. For *jus* in the sense of justice see D. 1. 1. 11.: *Id quod semper aequum ac bonum est jus dicitur*. D. 1. 1. 10. 2: *Juris prudentia est . . . justi atque injusti scientia*. D. 1. 1. 1. 1.: *Jus est ars boni et aequi*. Grotius, *De Jure Belli ac Pacis*, 1. 1. 3: *Jus hic nihil aliud quam quod justum est significat*.

(*e*) It must not be thought, however, that the difference between English and Continental legal theory is due entirely to differences of language. Indeed, the view has been expressed that "the fact that writers in Europe give a great deal more attention to legal speculations and that the schools of *droit naturel* or *Naturrecht* have produced elaborate and influential treatises is due rather to a different approach to philosophy and to speculative thought than to variation in terms": Haines, *The Revival of Natural Law Concepts* (1930) 47. Pound has attributed the difference of approach not only to the linguistic difference but to the absence of University teaching of Anglo-American law until comparatively recent times: (1943) 5 *Univ. of Tor. L. J.* 1 at 4.

Another distinction between English and foreign usage is that the use of the term "jurisprudence" to denote exclusively that special branch of legal doctrine which we have termed theoretical or general jurisprudence is a peculiarity of English nomenclature. In German literature jurisprudence includes the whole of legal knowledge, and is not used in this specific and limited signification. In French literature it refers to judicial precedents.

The foreign works which correspond most accurately to the English literature of this subject are of the following kinds:—

1. Works devoted to the subject known as legal *encyclopedia*—that is to say, the general introductory treatment of the legal system, preparatory to the practical study of the *corpus juris* itself.

2. The introductory and more general portions of books of *Pandektenrecht*—that is to say, modern Roman law. German lawyers have devoted great acumen to the analysis and exposition of the law of the Pandekts in that modern form in which it was received in Germany until superseded by legislation. Much of the work so done bears too special a reference to the details of the Roman system to be in point with respect to the theory of English law. The more general portions, however, are admirable examples of the scientific analysis of fundamental legal conceptions. Special mention may be made of the unfinished *System of Modern Roman Law* by Savigny, and of the similar works of Windscheid and Dernburg (*i*).

3. The introductory and general portions of the systematic treatises devoted to those codes of law which in modern times have superseded Roman law throughout the Continent of Europe. The better sort of such treatises are distinguished from the ordinary type of English law-book

(i) In 1855 Lord Lindley published, under the title of *An Introduction to the Science of Jurisprudence*, an annotated translation of the General Part of Thibaut's *Pandektenrecht*.

by a careful analysis of first principles, such as is commonly left in England to the labours of writers on theoretical jurisprudence (*k*).

4. Books of *Rechtsphilosophie* or *philosophie du droit*. All of these, however divergent *inter se* in their philosophic standpoints or their methods, are essentially and generically of one and the same nature, as contrasted with the normal type of English analytical jurisprudence. They are primarily books of ethical jurisprudence. Their central subject-matter is not, as with English jurisprudence, the theory of civil law in itself, but the theory of justice treated with special reference to the civil law. They deal primarily with *droit* or *Recht* in the sense of right (*droit naturel*, *Naturrecht*), and only in a secondary manner with *droit* or *Recht* in the sense of positive or civil law (*l*).

The history of this Continental literature of *Rechtsphilosophie* may be regarded as divided into two distinct periods. The earlier period is that of the *jurisprudentia naturalis* of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries. The later is that in which, under the influence of Kant, jurisprudence and ethics were annexed as part of the domain of metaphysics. The earlier period is represented by such writers as Grotius, Pufendorf, Wolff, Thomasius, and Burlamaqui (*m*). This celebrated and influential literature was devoted to the theory and principles of natural justice

(*k*) See, for example, Gierke's *Deutsches Privatrecht* (1895), which contains an admirable exposition of the first principles of legal theory. Also von Tuhr, *Allgemeiner Teil des Deutschen Bürgerlichen Rechts* (3 vols. 1910); von Tuhr, *Allgemeiner Teil des Schweizerischen Obligationenrechts* (2 vols. 1924).

(*l*) In the words of Ahrens, a noted representative of this school of ethical and legal speculation (*Cours de droit naturel ou de philosophie du droit* (1st ed. 1837; 8th ed. 1892), vol. I, p. 1). "La philosophie du droit ou le droit naturel, est la science qui expose les premiers principes du droit conçus par la raison et fondés dans la nature de l'homme, considérée en elle-même et dans ses rapports avec l'ordre universel des choses".

(*m*) Grotius, *De Jure Belli ac Pacis* (1625); Pufendorf, *De Jure Naturae et Gentium* (1672); *De Officiis Hominis et Civis* (1673); *Elementa Juris Universalis* (1660); Thomasius, *Fundamenta Juris Naturae et Gentium* (1705); *Institutiones Jurisprudentiae Divinae* (1702); Wolff, *Jus Naturae*, (1740-1748, 8 vols.); Burlamaqui, *Principes du droit de la Nature et des Gens* (1766).

conceived as a body of rules authoritatively laid down by natural law (*lex naturae*), just as civil justice consists of the rules authoritatively imposed by civil law. The commencement of the second and metaphysical period in the history of the Continental philosophy of law may be regarded with sufficient accuracy as commencing with the publication in 1796 of Kant's *Metaphysical First Principles of Jurisprudence* (n). Since that date there has developed on the Continent a literature of this subject, formidable both in bulk and character. It is represented by typical examples translated and published in America by the Association of American Law Schools under the title of *The Modern Legal Philosophy Series*, and by the Harvard University Press under the title of *The Twentieth Century Legal Philosophy Series*. An historical and critical account of it is to be found in one of the volumes of that series, being a translation of a work of Berolzheimer under the title of *The World's Legal Philosophies*. Notable examples, contained in the same series, of this type of ethical-juristic speculation are *The General Theory of Law*, by Korkunov, and *The Philosophy of Law*, by Kohler (o). Most of this literature is remote from the main current of English legal thought. It is for the most part so far devoted to metaphysics rather than to science, and to ethics rather than to law, and condescends so little to the facts of the concrete legal system, as to have little direct bearing on the task and problems to which the traditional jurisprudence of England has been devoted. *Rechtsphilosophie* of this type, however, is not wholly unrepresented even in English literature. A notable example is the work of Lorimer called *The Institutes of Law—a Treatise of the Principles of Jurisprudence as determined by Nature*, of which a

(n) *Metaphysische Anfangsgründe der Rechtslehre*; translated by Hastie under the title of *The Philosophy of Law* (1887).

(o) A modern example is Radhruch, *Rechtsphilosophie* (3rd ed. 1932). For a summary of Continental legal philosophy see Claude du Pasquier, *Introduction à la théorie générale et à la philosophie du droit* (1937). See also *Modern Theories of Law* (Oxford University Press, 1933).

second edition was published in 1880 (p). There has also of late years been a certain revival of interest in Continental speculation, as is shown by some chapters in such works as *Modern Theories of Law* (1933); J. W. Jones's *Historical Introduction to the Theory of Law* (1940); Bodenheimer's *Jurisprudence* (1940); and Friedmann's *Legal Theory* (3rd ed., 1953). The United States has developed its own type of philosophical writing, much less abstruse than the Continental type, which is represented chiefly by the works of Dean Pound (q).

It should also be said that the earlier Continental literature of natural law in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries may fairly be regarded as one of the sources from which, in the nineteenth century, English analytical jurisprudence was derived. The theory of natural law and natural justice, as developed by Pufendorf and others of that school, is so connected with the theory of civil law and civil justice that *jurisprudentia naturalis* of this type is readily transmuted into *jurisprudentia civilis*. Indeed the very term *jurisprudentia generalis* or *universalis*, by which English analytical jurisprudence is distinguished, was originally a synonym of *jurisprudentia naturalis* itself.

The main current of modern English analytical jurisprudence may be said to have its source in the work of

(p) See on Lorimer and the Scottish school generally, S. G. Kermack, "Jurisprudence and Philosophy of Law" in *Sources and Literature of Scots Law* (1936) 438 ff. Other English examples are:—Miller, *Lectures on the Philosophy of Law* (1884); Watt, *An Outline of Legal Philosophy* (1893); Stirling, *Lectures on the Philosophy of Law* (1873); Pulszky, *The Theory of Law and Civil Society* (1888).

(q) Among his many works there may be mentioned *Introduction to the Philosophy of Law* (1922; revised ed. 1954); *Interpretations of Legal History* (1923); *Law and Morals* (2nd ed. 1926); *Contemporary Juristic Theory* (1940); *Social Control Through Law* (1942); *The Task of Law* (1944); *Justice According to Law* (1951); "The End of Law as Developed in Legal Rules and Doctrines" (1914) 27 H. L. R. 195; "The End of Law as Developed in Juristic Thought" (1914) 27 H. L. R. 605; (1917) 30 *ibid.* 201; "Twentieth-Century Ideas as to the End of Law" in *Harvard Legal Essays* (1934) 357 ff. See also Cardozo, *The Paradoxes of Legal Science* (1928); *The Growth of the Law* (1924); also *The Nature of the Judicial Process* (1921); M. R. Cohen, *Law and the Social Order* (1933); F. S. Cohen, *Ethical Systems and Legal Ideals* (1933). For a general review, M. R. Cohen, "A Critical Sketch of Philosophy in America," in *Law, A Century of Progress* (1937), II. 266.

John Austin, who occupied the chair of Jurisprudence in the then recently established University of London, and who published in 1832 a work entitled *The Province of Jurisprudence Determined*. After his death this book was incorporated in a larger work including his unpublished manuscripts, and entitled *Lectures on Jurisprudence, or the Philosophy of Positive Law* (1863). In this work Austin definitely departs from the earlier tradition of *jurisprudentia naturalis* and accepts the first principles of the civil law itself as the proper subject of scientific or philosophical investigation (r), (s).

(r) The last complete edition of Austin was the fifth, by Robert Campbell, in 1885. Campbell also produced an abridged edition for students. The *Province of Jurisprudence Determined* was reprinted with an introduction by H. L. A. Hart in 1954. Selected chapters, with notes, will also be found in Brown, *The Austinian Theory of Law* (1906). A short account of Austin's theory is Eastwood and Keeton, *The Austinian Theories of Law and Sovereignty* (1929). See generally on Austin, Leslie Stephen, *The English Utilitarians* (1900) III, 317 ff.; C. A. W. Manning in *Modern Theories of Law* (1933) 180 ff.; A. B. Schwartz, "Austin and the German Jurisprudence of his Time" (1934) *Politica* 178; Kocourek, "The Century of Analytic Jurisprudence since John Austin" in *Law, a Century of Progress* (1937) II. 194 ff.

The doctrine so established by Austin of a science of analytical jurisprudence distinct from historical or ethical jurisprudence has been followed since his day by a series of English writers, including the following: Markby, *Elements of Law* (6th ed. 1905); Holland, *Elements of Jurisprudence* (13th ed. 1924); Hearn, *The Theory of Legal Duties and Rights* (1883); Amos, *The Science of Jurisprudence* (1872); Lightwood, *The Nature of Positive Law* (1883); Rattigan, *The Science of Jurisprudence* (2nd ed. 1891); Sir Frederick Pollock, *First Book of Jurisprudence* (6th ed. 1929); Gray, *The Nature and Sources of the Law* (2nd ed. 1921); Terry *Leading Principles of Anglo-American Law* (1884); Goadby, *Introduction to the Study of Law* (3rd ed. 1921); Vinogradoff, *Common Sense in Law* (1913); Hohfeld, *Fundamental Legal Conceptions* (1923); Kocourek, *Jural Relations* (2nd ed. 1928); same, *An Introduction to the Science of Law* (1930); G. W. Keeton, *The Elementary Principles of Jurisprudence* (1930; 2nd ed. 1949); W. N. Hibbert, *Jurisprudence* (1932); Jenks, *The New Jurisprudence* (1933); G. W. Paton, *A Text-Book of Jurisprudence* (1946; 2nd ed. 1951).

(s) A good account of the various schools of jurisprudence is to be found in a series of articles by Dean Roscoe Pound in the *Harvard Law Review*: "The Scope and Purpose of Sociological Jurisprudence" (1911) 24 H. L. R. 591, (1912) 25 *ibid.* 140, 489. See also the same writer's *Introduction to the Philosophy of Law* (1922), and article "Fifty Years of Jurisprudence" (1937) 50 H. L. R. 556, (1938) 51 *ibid.* 444, 777; Bryce, *Studies*, II. 172 ff.; Pollock, *Essays in Jurisprudence and Ethics* (1882) 1 ff.; same, *Oxford Lectures* (1890) 1 ff.; Buckland, "Difficulties of Abstract Jurisprudence" (1890) 6 L. Q. R. 436; Vinogradoff, *Outlines of Historical Jurisprudence* (1920) vol. I. Introduction; H. C. Dowdall, "The Present State of Analytical Jurisprudence" (1926) 42 L. Q. R. 451; M. S. Amos, "Some Reflections on the Philosophy of Law" (1927) 3 C. L. J. 31;

§ 5. The Sociology of Law

The growth of a literature styling itself "the sociology of law" or "sociological jurisprudence" is comparatively modern, and its distinguishing features are not easy to determine. Before trying to determine them it will be well to consider what is meant by "sociology", and what a department of sociology devoted to legal phenomena might be expected to include.

The term "sociology" (*sociologie*) was invented at the beginning of the last century by the French philosopher Auguste Comte as a generic name for the social sciences, such as economics and anthropology. Sociology is, in brief, the study of man in society.

Among the phenomena studied by the sociologist is the law, but his attitude to it is rather different from the lawyer's. The lawyer in his professional capacity (*e.g.*, as advocate or judge) is concerned with the rules that men are expected to observe, *i.e.*, ought to observe. He is concerned with *the rules* as such. Except when he takes part in some action or prosecution, the lawyer is generally not much concerned to know whether and to what extent his rules actually govern the behaviour of the ordinary citizen. A text-book of the law of tort or contract, for instance, states the rules relating to torts and contracts, and does not state how often torts and breaches of contract are committed. Generally speaking the only persons in whose behaviour the lawyer is officially interested are those who are charged with the function of creating and enforcing the legal rules.

C. K. Allen, *Legal Duties* (1931) 1 ff.; Radbruch, "Anglo-American Jurisprudence through Continental Eyes" (1936) 52 L. Q. R. 530; Stone, "The Province of Jurisprudence Redetermined" (1944) 7 Modern L. Rev. 97, 177; Buckland, *Some Reflections on Jurisprudence* (1945); H. L. A. Hart, "Philosophy of Law and Jurisprudence in Britain" (1945-1952), (1953) 2 Am. Jnl. of Comp. Law 355. The student should perhaps be warned that some of this literature is rather difficult, and a reading of it, if undertaken, may well be postponed to the end of the subject.

Useful source-books on jurisprudence in general are Jerome Hall, *Readings in Jurisprudence* (1938); Simpson and Stone, *Law and Society* (3 vols. 1948); Orville C. Snyder, *Preface to Jurisprudence* (1954). A bibliography is Pound, *Outlines of Lectures on Jurisprudence* (5th ed. 1943).

Whereas the lawyer is concerned with what legally ought to be, the sociologist is concerned with what is. When, therefore, the sociologist turns his attention to law, he is concerned with it as a social phenomenon. He is interested to some extent in the legal "oughts", because these are views actually held as to desirable behaviour. But he is much more interested in actual behaviour than in views as to desirable behaviour, and thus his chief concern is not with the rules themselves but with the extent to which they are observed, the causes of non-observance, the extent to which the rules fulfil their purpose, and the human consequences of the working of the legal machinery. This, then, is the type of study that one might expect to find under the description of "sociology of law" or "legal sociology", and in fact a number of valuable monographs exist upon particular branches of it. Examples are Berle and Means, *The Modern Corporation and Private Property* (U.S.A., 1932), Josiah Wedgwood's *The Economics of Inheritance* (1929), Sir A. Wilson and G. J. Mackay on *Old Age Pensions* (1941), and a number of works on divorce, alcoholism, drugs, and imprisonment for debt. Also classifiable under this heading are the innumerable reports of royal commissions, parliamentary committees and other bodies on the working of legal rules preparatory to reform. The most important branch of legal sociology has acquired a name to itself, criminology. Criminology studies the causes of crime, the behaviour of criminals, and the effects of the different sorts of punishment upon criminals, particularly their effect in diminishing or increasing crime. Until recently judges and legislators had to gauge the effect of punishment in general, and also of such specific punishments as imprisonment and hanging, with no more help than was afforded them by popular opinion or private impressions. Now exact data are becoming available through the efforts of criminologists, who use scientific methods (case-work and statistics) to determine the actual effect of punishment upon the incidence of crime in the community, as well as the effect of other

methods of dealing with crime (t). Work of this kind is obviously of the first importance for law reform, which should be based upon an exact knowledge of how the existing law is working. Every law-reformer is necessarily interested in the sociology of law.

So far we have been speaking of monographs upon specific branches of the sociology of law, which are important and useful. When, however, one turns to the general works calling themselves by this name, or by the name of sociological jurisprudence, one finds the contents disappointing. The best known is Ehrlich's work, *Grundlegung der Soziologie des Rechts* (1913) (u). This is a plea for the study of the rules actually observed in society irrespective of whether they are formulated by lawyers and enforced by the courts. It does not itself formulate these rules, and so does not take one very far. The same remark applies to Dean Pound's article "The Scope and Purpose of Sociological Jurisprudence" (v). Dr. Timasheff's *Introduction to the Sociology of Law* (1939) is little more than a search for a definition of the word "law" from a particular point of view. Professor Gurvitch's *Sociology of Law* (1942) is largely a review of previous literature; otherwise it is chiefly a somewhat over-refined classification of types of law and society. The conclusion would seem to be that the time is not ripe for general works on the sociology of law; what we need are factual works on the various branches of it. It may be added that the study is not one for which the training of a lawyer is an adequate prepara-

(t) Among discussions of the scope and methods of criminology may be mentioned J. Michael and M. J. Adler, *Crime, Law and Social Science* (1933); Jerome Hall, *Prolegomena to a Science of Criminal Law* (1941) 89 Penna. L. Rev. 549; Radzinowicz and Turner, "The Meaning and Scope of Criminal Science" in *The Modern Approach to Criminal Law* (1945) 12; same, "The Language of Criminal Science" (1940), 7 C. L. J. 224.

(u) Translated under the title *Fundamental Principles of the Sociology of Law* (1936). Cf. the same writer's later article, "The Sociology of Law," in (1922) 36 H. L. R. 130. For a discussion, see Vinogradoff in C. P. ii 215, reprinted from (1920) 29 Yale L. J. 312.

(v) (1911) 24 H. L. R. 591; (1912) 25 *ibid.* 140, 489. Cf. the same writer in *The Social Sciences and their Interrelations*, ed. Ogburn and Goldenweiser (1927), and in (1943) 5 Univ. of Tor. L. J. 1.

tion, for the research worker must also have, at the least, a knowledge of statistics.

Some writers take "legal sociology" to mean the study of the influences that shape the law, such as economic conditions and moral ideas. It would seem, however, that a study of this kind would better be called historical jurisprudence, or, in so far as it involves a discussion of philosophical ethics, ethical jurisprudence or the science of legislation. The best representative of this type of writing is Roscoe Pound's *Interpretations of Legal History*.

BOOK I

THE NATURE AND SOURCES OF LAW

CHAPTER 1

THE KINDS OF LAW

§ 6. Law in General

IN its widest sense the term law includes any rule of action, that is to say, any standard or pattern to which actions (whether the acts of rational agents or the operations of nature) are or ought to be conformed. In the words of Hooker (a): "We term any kind of rule or canon whereby actions are framed a law." So Blackstone says (b): "Law in its most general and comprehensive sense signifies a rule of action, and is applied indiscriminately to all kinds of action whether animate or inanimate, rational or irrational. Thus we say, the laws of motion, of gravitation, of optics or mechanics, as well as the laws of nature and of nations."

Of law in this sense there are many kinds, and the following are sufficiently important and distinct to deserve separate mention and examination: (1) Imperative law; (2) Physical or Scientific law; (3) Natural or Moral law; (4) Conventional law; (5) Customary law; (6) Practical or Technical law; (7) International law or the law of Nations; (8) Civil law or the law of the state.

Before proceeding to analyse and distinguish these, there are the following introductory observations to be made:—

(1) This list is not based on any logical scheme of division or classification, but is a mere *simplex enumeratio* of the chief forms of law in the widest sense of that term.

(2) There is nothing to prevent the same rule from belonging to more than one of those classes. The same rule may possess more than one aspect or quality, by virtue of which it may belong concurrently to more than one species of law.

(3) It may be that some of those classes are merely sub-species of some other class. It is, for example, a widely

(a) *Ecclesiastical Polity*, I, 3, 1.

(b) *Comm.* I. 38.

received opinion that civil law is merely a particular kind of imperative law. So, also, international law is regarded variously by different authorities as a kind of conventional law or as a kind of customary law. However this may be, it is convenient to classify those forms of law as co-ordinate with the others, partly on account of their special importance, and partly because of the fact that opinions differ as to the generic form to which they really belong.

(4) Any discussion as to the rightful claims of any of those classes of rules to be called laws—any attempt to distinguish laws properly so called from laws improperly so called—would seem to be nothing more than a purposeless dispute about words. Our business is to recognise that they are in fact called laws, and to distinguish accurately between the different classes of rules that are thus known by the same name.

We proceed, accordingly, to deal briefly with each class in its order.

§ 7. Imperative Law

Imperative law means a precept or rule of action imposed upon men by some authority which enforces obedience to it. In other words, an imperative law is a command, or a rule in the form of a command (c), which is enforced by some superior power. The instrument of such enforcement is not necessarily physical force, but may consist in any other form of constraint or compulsion by which the actions of men may be determined. In the words of Pufendorf (d): *Lex est decretum quo superior sibi subjectum obligat, ut ad istius præscriptum actiones suas componat*. A rule the observance of

(c) Strictly speaking, it is not possible to say that imperative law is a command in the ordinary sense of the word. A "command" in the ordinary meaning of the word is an expression of a wish by a person or body as to the conduct of another person, communicated to that other person. But (1) in the case of the law there is no determinate person who as a matter of psychological fact commands all the law. We are all born into a community in which law already exists, and at no time in our lives do any of us command the whole law. The most that we do is to play our part in enforcing or altering particular portions of it. (2) Ignorance of the law is no excuse; thus a rule of law is binding even though not communicated to the subject of the law. See generally, Olivecrona, *Law as Fact* (1939).

(d) *De Officiis Hominis et Civis*. I, 2, 2

which is left to the good pleasure of those for whom it is laid down, is not a law in this sense.

Every organised community or society of men tends to develop imperative laws formulated by the governing authority of that community or society for the control of its members with intent to secure the purposes for which it exists. The state makes laws of this kind for its citizens for the purpose of securing peace, order, and good government within its territories. In the same way other forms of imperative law are developed within a church, an army, a school, a family, a ship's company, a social club, and any other institution so organised as to possess a governing body capable of imposing its will upon the members. Even in the absence of such a definite organisation, rules of conduct which are approved by the public opinion of the society, and the breach of which is visited by public censure, are regarded and spoken of as imperative laws imposed by the unorganised society upon its members. In this sense and in this aspect the rules of morality recognised by public opinion in any community are imperative laws standing side by side with the civil law of the state and fulfilling the same purposes. Law of this kind—the law of opinion or of reputation, as Locke (e) calls it—is commonly known as positive morality—the epithet positive being used to distinguish morality of this kind, so recognised and enforced by the public opinion of the community, from those ideal or absolute rules of right and wrong which are derived from reason and nature and are independent of recognition and acceptance by any human society. Rules of the latter kind constitute natural morality, as opposed to positive morality. The positive morality of a particular community may approve of polygamy or infanticide, while natural or ideal morality may disapprove of both.

Just as an individual state develops within itself a system of imperative law imposed by it upon its members, so the society of states develops a system of imperative law for the regulation

(e) "The laws that men generally refer their actions to, to judge of their rectitude or obliquity, seem to me to be these three: 1. The Divine Law; 2. The civil law; 3. The law of opinion or reputation, if I may so call it. By the relation they bear to the first of these, men judge whether their actions are sins or duties; by the second, whether they be criminal or innocent; and by the third, whether they be virtues or vices." Locke, *On the Human Understanding*, Bk. II. ch. 28, § 7.

of the conduct of those states towards each other. The law of nations or international law consists, in part at least and in one aspect, of rules imposed upon states by the society of states, and enforced partly by international opinion and partly by the threat of war.

Many writers are content to classify the civil law—the law of the state—as being essentially, and throughout its whole compass, nothing more than a particular form of imperative law. They consider it a sufficient analysis and definition of civil law to say that it consists of the general commands issued by the state to its subjects, and enforced, if necessary, by the physical power of the state. This may be termed the imperative, or, more accurately, the purely imperative, theory of civil law. “The civil laws,” says Hobbes (f), “are the command of him who is endued with supreme power in the city” (that is to say, the state, *civitas*) “concerning the future actions of his subjects.” Similar opinions are expressed by Bentham (g), and by Austin (h), and have been widely, though by no means universally, accepted by English writers. We shall have occasion later to consider fully this view as to the nature of civil law. It is sufficient to indicate here that though it falls short of an adequate analysis, it undoubtedly expresses a very important aspect of the truth. It rightly emphasises the central fact that the civil law is based on the will and physical force of the organised political community. Such law exists only as an incident of the administration of justice by the state, and this consists essentially in the imperative and coercive action of the state in imposing its will, by force if need be, upon the members of the body politic. “It is men and arms,” says Hobbes (i), “that make the force and power of the laws.” The civil law has its sole source, not in consent, or in custom, or in reason, but in the will and the power of him who in a commonwealth beareth not the sword in vain. In what respects this doctrine represents not the whole truth but merely one part and aspect

(f) *English Works*, II. 185.

(g) *Principles of Morals and Legislation*, 330, Clarendon Press ed.; *Works*, I. 151.

(h) *Jurisprudence*, Lecture 1.

(i) *Leviathan*, ch. 46.

of it, we shall consider at large and more appropriately at a later stage of this inquiry.

The instrument of coercion by which any system of imperative law is enforced is called a sanction, and any rule so enforced is said to be sanctioned. Thus physical force in the various methods of its application is the sanction applied by the state in the administration of justice. Censure, ridicule, and contempt are the sanctions by which society (as distinguished from the state) enforces the rules of positive morality. War is the last and most formidable of the sanctions which in the society of nations maintains the law of nations. Threatenings of evils to flow here or hereafter from Divine anger are the sanctions of religion, so far as religion assumes the form of a regulative or coercive system of imperative law (j).

A sanction is not necessarily a punishment or penalty. To punish law-breakers is an effective way of maintaining the law, but it is not the only way. The state enforces the law not only by imprisoning the thief, but by depriving him of his plunder and restoring it to the true owner; and each of these applications of the physical force of the state is equally a sanction. An examination and classification of the different forms of sanction by which the civil law is maintained will claim our attention later (k).

§ 8. Physical or Scientific Law

Physical laws or the laws of science are expressions of the uniformities of nature—general principles expressing the regularity and harmony observable in the activities and operations of the universe. It is in this sense that we speak of the law of gravitation, the laws of the tides, or the laws of chemical combination. Even the actions of human beings, so far as they are uniform, are the subject of law of this description: as, for

(j) The term "sanction" is derived from Roman law. The *sanctio* was originally that part of a statute which established a penalty or made other provisions for its enforcement. *Legum eas partes, quibus poenas, constituimus adversus eos qui contra leges fecerint, sanctiones vocamus.* Just. Inst. 2. 1. 10. *Sanctum est, quod ab injuriis hominum defensum atque munitum est.* D. 1. 8. 8. By an easy transition the term "sanction" has come to denote the penalty itself.

(k) See in particular § 34.

example, when we speak of the laws of psychology. These are rules expressing not what men ought to do but what they do.

Physical laws are also, and more commonly, called natural laws, or the laws of nature; but these latter terms are ambiguous, for they signify also the moral law; that is to say, the principles of natural right and wrong.

This use of the term "law" to connote nothing more than uniformity of action is derived from law in the sense of an imperative rule of action, by way of the theological conception of the universe as governed in all its operations (animate and inanimate, rational and irrational) by the will and command of God. The primary source of this conception is to be found in the Hebrew scriptures, and its secondary and immediate source in the scholasticism of the Middle Ages—a system of thought which was formed by a combination of the theology of the Hebrews with the philosophy of the Greeks. The Bible constantly speaks of the Deity as governing the universe, animate and inanimate, just as a ruler governs a society of men; and the order of the world is conceived as due to the obedience of all created things to the will and commands of their Creator. "He gave to the sea his decree, that the waters should not pass his commandment" (l). "He made a decree for the rain, and a way for the lightning of the thunder" (m). The Schoolmen made this same conception one of the first principles of their philosophic system. The *lex aeterna*, according to St. Thomas Aquinas, is the ordinance of the Divine wisdom, by which all things in heaven and earth are governed. "There is a certain eternal law, to wit, reason, existing in the mind of God and governing the whole universe. . . . For law is nothing else than the dictate of the practical reason in the ruler who governs a perfect community" (n). "Just as the reason of the Divine wisdom, inasmuch as by it all things were created, has the nature of a type or idea; so also, inasmuch as by this reason all things are directed to their proper ends, it may be said to have the nature of an eternal law. . . . And accordingly the law eternal is nothing else than the reason of the Divine wisdom regarded as regulative and directive of all actions and motions" (o).

This *lex aeterna* was divided by the Schoolmen into two parts. One of these was that which governed the actions of men: this is the moral law, the law of nature, or of reason. The other is that which governs the actions of all other created things: this is that which we now term physical law, or natural law in the modern and

(l) *Proverbs*, 8. 29.

(m) *Job*, 28. 26.

(n) *Summa*, 1. 2. q. 91. art. 1.

(o) *Summa*, 1. 2. q. 93. art. 1.

prevalent sense of that ambiguous term (*p*). This latter branch of the eternal law is perfectly and uniformly obeyed; for the irrational agents on which it is imposed can do no otherwise than obey the dictates of the Divine will. But the former branch—the moral law of reason—is obeyed only partially and imperfectly; for man by reason of his prerogative of freedom may turn aside from that will to follow his own desires. Physical law, therefore, is an expression of actions as they actually are; moral law, or the law of reason, is an expression of actions as they ought to be.

This scholastic theory of law finds eloquent expression in the writing of Hooker in the sixteenth century. "His commanding those things to be which are, and to be in such sort as they are, to keep that tenure and course which they do, importeth the establishment of nature's law. . . . Since the time that God did first proclaim the edicts of his law upon it, heaven and earth have hearkened unto his voice, and their labour hath been to do his will. . . . See we not plainly that the obedience of creatures unto the law of nature is the stay of the whole world" (*q*). "Of law there can be no less acknowledged, than that her seat is the bosom of God, her voice the harmony of the world, all things in heaven and earth do her homage" (*r*).

The modern use of the term law, in the sense of physical or natural law, to indicate the uniformities of nature, is directly derived from this scholastic theory of the *lex aeterna*; but the theological conception of Divine legislation on which it was originally based is now eliminated or disregarded. The relation between the physical law of inanimate nature and the moral or civil laws by which men are ruled has been reduced accordingly to one of remote analogy.

§ 9. Natural or Moral Law

By natural or moral law is meant the principles of natural right and wrong—the principles of natural justice, if we use the term justice in its widest sense to include all forms of rightful action. Right or justice is of two kinds, distinguished as natural and positive. Natural justice is justice as it is in deed and in truth—in its perfect idea. Positive justice is justice as it is conceived, recognised, and expressed, more or less incompletely and inaccurately, by the civil or some other form of human and positive law. Just as positive law, therefore, is

(*p*) Natural law, *lex naturae*, is either (1) the law of human nature, i.e., the moral law, or (2) the law of nature in the sense of the universe, i.e., physical law.

(*q*) *Ecc. Pol.* I. 3. 2.

(*r*) *Ecc. Pol.* I. 16. 8.

the expression of positive justice, so philosophers have recognised a natural law, which is the expression of natural justice (s).

This distinction between natural and positive justice, together with the corresponding and derivative distinction between natural and positive law, comes to us from Greek philosophy. Natural justice is *φυσικὸν δίκαιον*; positive justice is *νομικὸν δίκαιον*; and the natural law which expresses the principles of natural justice is *φυσικὸς νόμος*. When Greek philosophy passed from Athens to Rome, *φυσικὸν δίκαιον* appeared there as *justitia naturalis* and *φυσικὸς νόμος* as *lex naturae* or *jus naturale*.

This natural law was conceived by the Greeks as a body of imperative rules imposed upon mankind by Nature, the personified universe. The Stoics, more particularly, thought of Nature or the Universe as a living organism, of which the material world was the body, and of which the Deity or the Universal Reason was the pervading, animating, and governing soul; and natural law was the rule of conduct laid down by this Universal Reason for the direction of mankind.

Natural law has received many other names expressive of its divers qualities and aspects. It is Divine Law (*jus divinum*)—the command of God imposed upon men—this aspect of it being recognised in the pantheism of the Stoics, and coming into the forefront of the conception so soon as natural law obtained a place in the philosophical system of Christian writers. Natural law is also the Law of Reason, as being established by that Reason by which the world is governed, and also as being addressed to and perceived by the rational nature of man. It is also the Unwritten Law (*jus non scriptum*)—in one sense of the expression (t)—as being written not on brazen tablets or on pillars of stone, but solely by the finger of nature in the hearts of men. It is also the Universal or Common Law (*κοινὸς νόμος*, *jus commune*, *jus gentium*), as being of universal validity, the same in all places and binding on all peoples, and not one thing at Athens and another at Rome, as are the civil

(s) The term "positive" in this usage means established (*positum*) by some form of human authority. As to the term positive law see § 15, *infra*.

(t) More usually unwritten law, *jus non scriptum*, means a certain part of civil law, namely, customary- and case-law.

laws of states (*ἰδῖος νόμος*, *ius civile*). It is also the Eternal Law (*lex aeterna*), as having existed from the commencement of the world, uncreated and immutable. Lastly, in modern times we find it termed the Moral Law, as being the expression of the principles of morality.

The term natural law, in the sense with which we are here concerned, is now fallen almost wholly out of use in England, outside the circle of those particularly interested in philosophy (u). We speak of the principles of natural justice, or of the rules of natural morality, but seldom of the law of nature, and for this departure from the established usage of ancient and medieval speech there are at least two reasons. The first is that the term natural law has become equivocal; for it is now used to signify physical law—the expression of the uniformities of nature. The second is that the term law, as applied to the principles of natural justice, brings with it certain misleading associations—suggestions of command, imposition, external authority, legislation—which are not in harmony with the moral philosophy of the present day.

The following quotations illustrate sufficiently the ancient and medieval conceptions of the law of nature:—

Aristotle.—"Law is either universal (*κοινὸς νόμος*) or special (*ἰδῖος νόμος*). Special law consists of the written enactments by which men are governed. The universal law consists of those unwritten rules which are recognised among all men" (v). "Right and wrong have been defined by reference to two kinds of law. . . . Special law is that which is established by each people for itself. . . . The universal law is that which is conformable merely to Nature" (w).

Cicero.—"There is indeed a true law (*lex*), right reason, agreeing with nature, diffused among all men, unchanging, everlasting. . . . It is not allowable to alter this law, nor to derogate from it, nor can it be repealed. We cannot be released from this law, either by the praetor or by the people, nor is any person required to explain or interpret it. Nor is it one law at Rome and another at Athens, one law to-day and another hereafter; but the same law, everlasting and unchangeable, will bind all nations at all times; and there will

(u) For its revival on the Continent and in the United States see Haines, *The Revival of Natural Law Concepts* (1930).

(v) *Rhet.* I. 10.

(w) *Rhet.* I. 13.

be one common lord and ruler of all, even God the framer and proposer of this law" (x).

Philo Judaeus.—"The unerring law is right reason; not an ordinance made by this or that mortal, a corruptible and perishable law, a lifeless law written on lifeless parchment, or engraved on lifeless columns; but one imperishable, and impressed by immortal Nature on the immortal mind" (y).

Gaius.—"All peoples that are ruled by laws and customs observe partly law peculiar to themselves and partly law common to all mankind. That which any people has established for itself is called *jus civile*, as being law peculiar to that State (*jus proprium civitatis*). But that law which natural reason establishes among all mankind is observed equally by all peoples, and is for that reason called *jus gentium*" (z).

Justinian.—"Natural law (*jura naturalia*), which is observed equally in all nations, being established by divine providence, remains for ever settled and immutable; but that law which each State has established for itself is often changed, either by legislation or by the tacit consent of the people" (a).

Hooker.—"The law of reason or human nature is that which men by discourse of natural reason have rightly found out themselves to be all for ever bound unto in their actions" (b).

Christian Thomasius.—"Natural law is a divine law, written in the hearts of all men, obliging them to do those things which are necessarily consonant to the rational nature of mankind, and to refrain from those things which are repugnant to it" (c).

The association of ideas that causes natural law to be looked upon as "law" in the same sense as civil law has had three main consequences. In the first place, natural law, and its product "natural rights", were conceived as having sufficient legal force to render void a human law that was repugnant to them. In the second place, the idea of natural law as a kind of law helped judges to alter the civil law. At a time when the orthodox theory of the judicial function was that the judges were mere mechanical interpreters of the law, the idea that the law was necessarily in accord with "natural law" or (to use the alternative expression) "reason" was a useful cloak for the judicial development of the law under the pretence of

(x) *De Rep.* III. 22. 23.

(y) *Works*, III. 515 (Bohn's Ecc. Library). On the Virtuous being also Free.

(z) *Institutes*, I. 1.

(a) *Institutes*, I. 2. 11.

(b) *Ecc. Pol.* I. 1. 10. 1.

(c) *Inst. Jurisp. Div.* I. 2. 97.

applying it. In the third place, international lawyers seized upon the doctrine as seeming to give "legal" efficacy to international law, which was supposed to conform to natural law. This "legalistic" approach to natural law is now generally abandoned. On the first point, it has been clear law in England since the nineteenth century, if not before, that an Act of Parliament is not void for repugnance to natural law. The desirability of legislation is to be determined by Lords and Commons in the lobbies and by electors at the polls, not by judges in the course of litigation. In the United States the existence of a rigid constitution has given this aspect of the doctrine a longer life. On the second point, we have now come to recognise that since the law can never be completely certain the judge must be conceded to have the power of making new law in the course of deciding cases, and that in exercising this power he will naturally act in accordance with his moral ideas; we no longer pretend that these moral ideas are a pre-existing body of "law". On the third point, the terminology of natural law still wins considerable support among international lawyers; but it would seem that their difficulty over the question whether international law is really "law" is only a verbal one, and that it is not solved by purporting to deduce international law from morality dressed in the language of law (d).

(d) On the general subject see Nettleship, *Contributions to Latin Lexicography, sub voc. jus gentium*; Burle, *Essai historique sur le développement de la notion du droit naturel dans l'antiquité grecque*; Phillipson, *The International Law and Custom of Ancient Greece and Rome*, vol. I, ch. 2; Bryce, *Studies*, I, 112, II, 556; Pollock, *Essays in the Law*, 30, reprinted from (1900) 2 J. C. L. 418, (1901) 3 *ibid.* 204, and from (1901) 1 Col. L. Rev. 11; same, note E to his edition of Maine's *Ancient Law* (1930) 77; Clark, *Practical Jurisprudence*, ch. 13; Vinogradoff, *Historical Jurisprudence, Introduction*; same, *Common Sense in Law* (1913) ch. 9; same, *General Survey of Events, Sources, Persons, and Movements in Continental Legal History* (1912) 407 ff.; Gierke, *Natural Law and the Theory of Society, 1500-1800*, tr. Barker (1934); R. W. and A. J. Carlyle, *A History of Medieval Political Theory in the West* (1903); Holdsworth, *H. E. L.*, II, 602; Jolowicz, *Historical Introduction to the Study of Roman Law* (1932) 100 ff.; Robson, *Civilisation and the Growth of Law* (1935) Part II; *Encyclopedia of the Social Sciences* (1937), s.v.; Bodenheimer, *Jurisprudence* (1940) 103 ff.; Haines, *op. cit.*; R. A. Humphreys, "The Rule of Law and the American Revolution" (1937) 53 L. Q. R. 80; Seagle, *The Quest for Law* (1941) ch. 14, and bibliography therein at p. 433; Lauterpacht, *International Law and Human Rights* (1950); Hall, *Readings in Jurisprudence*, ch. 1; also literature cited *supra* pp. 10-12, especially J. W. Jones, *Historical Introduction to the Theory of Law*, ch. 6, and Friedmann, *Legal Theory*, Part II. The above represents

§ 10. Conventional Law

By conventional law is meant any rule or system of rules agreed upon by persons for the regulation of their conduct towards each other. Agreement is a law for the parties to it. Examples are the rules and regulations of a club or other voluntary society, and the laws of cricket, golf, or any other game. The laws of chess, for example, are the rules which the players have expressly or tacitly agreed to observe in their conduct of the game.

In many cases conventional law is also civil law; for the rules which persons by mutual agreement lay down for themselves are often enforced by the courts of justice of a state. But whether or not these conventional rules thus receive recognition and enforcement as part of the civil law, they constitute law in the generic sense of a rule of human action. That part of civil law which has its source in agreement may itself be termed conventional law—for example the regulations of an incorporated company—but such a use of the term must be distinguished from that which is here under consideration. Conventional law in the present sense is not a part of the civil law, but a different kind of law.

The most important branch of conventional law is the law of nations, which, as we shall see later, consists essentially, and in its most important aspect, of the rules which have been expressly or impliedly agreed upon by States as governing their conduct and relations to each other.

§ 11. Customary Law

By customary law is here meant any rule of action which is actually observed by men—any rule which is the expression of some actual uniformity of voluntary action. Custom is a law for those who observe it—a law or rule which they have set for themselves and to which they voluntarily conform their actions. Of this nature are the laws of dress, deportment, and etiquette. It is true that custom is very often obligatory—that is to say, its observance is very often enforced by some

only a part of the literature on this subject in English, with little attempt at reference to works in other languages. See further, *infra* § 21.

form of imperative law whether the civil law or the law of positive morality; but irrespective of any such enforcement, and by reason solely of its *de facto* observance, it is itself a law in that generic sense in which law includes any rule of action.

The operation of custom as one of the sources of civil law will be considered later. That portion of the civil law which has its source in custom is itself called customary law, but it is not in this sense that the term is here used. Customary law in the present sense is not a part of civil law, but a different kind of law in the generic sense.

§ 12. Practical or Technical Law

Yet another kind of law is that which consists of rules for the attainment of some practical end, and which, for want of a better name, we may term practical or technical law. These laws are the rules which guide us to the fulfilment of our purposes; which inform us as to what we ought to do, or must do, in order to attain a certain end. Examples of such are the laws of health, the laws of musical and poetical composition, the laws of style, the laws of architecture, and the rules for the efficient conduct of any art or business. The laws of a game are of two kinds—some are conventional, being the rules agreed upon by the players; others are practical or technical, being the rules for the successful playing of the game.

§ 13. International Law

International law, or the law of nations, consists of those rules which govern sovereign states in their relations and conduct towards each other. All men agree that such a body of law exists, and that states do in fact act in obedience to it; but there is a difference of opinion over its proper classification. According to some writers the law of nations is, or at least includes, a branch of natural law, namely, the rules of natural justice as applicable to the relations of states *inter se*. Others hold it to be a kind of customary law, namely, the rules actually observed by states in their relations to each other; or a kind of imperative law, namely, the rules enforced upon states by international opinion or by the threat or fear of war; or a kind of conventional law, having its source in international agree-

ment. It is the last view that has received most support from the courts of this country. Thus international law is defined by Lord Russell of Killowen (e) as "the aggregate of the rules to which nations have agreed to conform in their conduct towards one another". "The law of nations", says Lord Chief Justice Coleridge (f), "is that collection of usages which civilised states have agreed to observe in their dealings with each other." "The authorities seem to me", says Lord Esher (g), "to make it clear that the consent of nations is requisite to make any proposition part of the law of nations." "To be binding", says Lord Cockburn (h), "the law must have received the assent of the nations who are to be bound by it. This assent may be express, as by treaty or the acknowledged concurrence of Governments, or may be implied from established usage."

The solution of the dispute would seem to lie in the proposition already advanced, that the categories or kinds of law considered in this chapter are not mutually exclusive. There is nothing to prevent us from regarding international law as belonging, *in part*, to each of the four categories of natural law, customary law, imperative law, and conventional law. Further, it does not seem possible to say that international law falls *wholly* within any one of the categories. Of the four views the most plausible is the one that would place international law, as a whole, in the category of conventional law, but even this is open to objection. When a new state comes into existence, and is recognised by other states (i), it becomes subject to international law, and there is no necessity for any agreement on its part so to be bound. To say that a state's agreement to the rules of international law is "implied" from the mere fact of its statehood, or of its being recognised, is to introduce a fiction and in effect to abandon the theory of agreement. Moreover, even with regard to long-established states like France and Great Britain, it cannot be shown that they have

(e) (1896) 12 L. Q. R. 313. Adopted by Lord Alverstone, C.J., in *West Rand Gold Mining Co. v. R.*, [1905] 2 K. B., at p. 407.

(f) *R. v. Keyn* (1876) 2 Ex. D. p. 63.

(g) *Ibid.* at p. 131.

(h) *Ibid.* at p. 202.

(i) Whether or not recognition is required is disputed, and need not concern us here.

actually agreed, through their representatives, to all the rules of international law (k).

International law is divisible into two kinds, which may be distinguished as the common law of nations and the particular law of nations. The common law is that which prevails universally, or at least generally, among all civilised states, being based on their unanimous or general agreement, express or implied. The particular law is that which is in force solely between two or more states, by virtue of an agreement made between them alone, and derogating from the common law.

§ 14. Civil Law

Finally, we come to the consideration of that kind of law which is the special subject-matter of this treatise. This is the civil law, the law of the state or of the land, the law of lawyers and the law courts. This is law in the strictest and original sense of the term, all other applications of the term being derived from this by analogical extension. In the absence of any indication in the context of a different intention, the term law, when used *simpliciter*, means civil law and nothing else, and in this sense the term is used in future throughout this book.

The question of the true nature of civil law is one of so much difficulty and importance that it must be reserved for detailed consideration in the following chapter.

SUMMARY

Law in its most general sense—any rule of action.

Kinds of law in this sense:

1. Imperative law. Rules of action imposed on men by authority.

The imperative theory of civil law—partially true but incomplete and one-sided.

The sanctions of imperative law.

(k) For a further discussion see Lauterpacht, *Private Law Sources and Analogies of International Law* (1927) ch. 2; Brierly, *The Law of Nations* (5th ed. 1955), 42 ff.; Laake, *Studies in Law and Politics*, 264-5. Sir John Salmond took the view that international law was a species of conventional law; see 7th ed. § 12 and Appendix VI.

2. Physical or scientific law.
Rules formulating the uniformities of nature.
This conception of law derived from scholastic philosophy.
The *lex aeterna*.
3. Natural or moral law.
Rules formulating the principles of natural justice.
This conception of law derived from Greek philosophy and Roman law.
Two meanings of natural law:
 (a) Scientific or physical law.
 (b) Moral law.
Consequences of the idea that natural law is a type of law.
4. Conventional law—rules agreed upon by persons for the regulation of their conduct towards each other.
5. Customary law—rules of action embodied in custom.
6. Practical or technical law—rules of action for the attainment of practical ends.
7. International law—the rules which govern sovereign states in their relations towards each other.
8. Civil law—the law of the state as applied in the state's courts of justice.

CHAPTER 2

CIVIL LAW

§ 15. The Term Law

THE name civil law, though now fallen somewhat out of use in this sense, and though possessing certain other meanings, is the most proper and convenient title by which to distinguish the law of the land from other forms of law. Such law is termed civil, as being that of the *civitas* or state. The name is derived from the *jus civile* of the Romans. "Quod quisque populus ipse sibi jus constituit, id ipsius proprium civitatis est, vocaturque jus civile, quasi jus proprium ipsius civitatis" (a).

The other meanings of civil law are not such as to be likely to create confusion. It often means the law of Rome (*corpus juris civilis*) as opposed to the canon law (*corpus juris canonici*)—these being the two systems by which, in the Middle Ages, the State and the Church were respectively governed—or as opposed to the law of England, inasmuch as England, unlike the rest of Europe, refused to receive the Roman law and developed a system of its own. The term civil law is also used to signify, not the whole law of the land, but only the residue of it after deducting some particular portion having a special title of its own. Thus, civil law is opposed to criminal law or to military law (b).

The term civil law, as indicating the law of the land, has been partially superseded in recent times by the improper substitute, *positive* law. *Jus positivum* was a title invented by medieval jurists to denote law made or established (*positum*) by human authority, as opposed to the *jus naturale*, which was uncreated and immutable. It is from this contrast that the term positive derives all its point and significance. It is not permissible, therefore, to confine positive law to the law of the

(a) Just. Inst. I. 2. 1.

(b) In classical Roman law the term *jus civile* was used "sometimes to mark off the rest of the law from that made by the magistrates, *jus honorarium*, and sometimes to mark off the essentially Roman part of the law from that available also to peregrines, *jus gentium*": Buckland, *Text-Book of Roman Law*. 2nd ed. 53.

land. All law is positive that is not natural. International law, for example, is a kind of *jus positivum*, no less than the civil law itself (c).

The term municipal law is sometimes used instead of civil law (d). This usage, however, is inappropriate and should be discouraged, having regard to the modern connotation of the adjective municipal as relating to a municipality or borough. Its use as a synonym of civil is derived from *municipium* in the sense of a self-governing political community within the Roman Empire. *Civitas* and *municipium* were closely related in meaning and use. Both terms denoted a body politic or state. The name civil law is derived from one of them, and the name municipal law from the other.

The term law is used in two senses, which may be conveniently distinguished as the abstract and the concrete. In its abstract application we speak of the law of England, the law of libel, criminal law, and so forth. Similarly, we use the phrases law and order, law and justice, courts of law. In its concrete application, on the other hand, we say that Parliament has enacted or repealed a law; we speak of the by-laws of a railway company or municipality; we hear of the corn laws or the navigation laws. In the abstract sense we speak of law, or of the law; in the concrete sense we speak of a law, or of laws. The distinction demands attention for this reason, that the concrete term is not co-extensive and coincident with the abstract in its application. Law or the law does not consist of the total number of laws in force. The constituent elements of which the law is made up are not laws, but rules of law or legal principles. That a will requires two witnesses is not rightly spoken of as a law of England; it is a rule of English law. A law means a statute, enactment, ordinance, decree or other exercise of legislative authority. It is one of the sources of law in the abstract sense. A law produces statute law or some other form of enacted law, just as a judicial precedent produces case law. There is much law recognised, applied and enforced in the courts of justice which has not been enacted by any law.

This ambiguity is a peculiarity of English speech. All the chief Continental languages possess distinct words for the two meanings thus inherent in the English term law. Law in the concrete is *lex*, *loi*, *Gesetz*, *legge*. Law in the abstract is *jus*, *droit*, *Recht*, *diritto*. The law of Rome was not *lex civilis*, but *jus civile*. *Lex*, a statute,

(c) See Aquinas, *Summa*, 2. 2. q. 57 (De Jure). Art. 2: *Utrum jus convenienter dividatur in jus naturale et jus positivum*. See also Suarez, *De Legibus*, I. 3. 13.; (*Lex*) *positiva dicta est, quasi addita naturali legi*.

(d) See, for example, Blackstone I. 63; *The Zamora*, [1916] 2 A. C., at p. 91, per Lord Parker.

was one of the sources of *jus*. So in French with *droit* and *loi*, and in German with *Recht* and *Gesetz*. It is not the case, indeed, that the distinction between these two sets of terms is always rigidly maintained, for we occasionally find the concrete word used in the abstract sense. Medieval Latin, for example, frequently uses *lex* as equivalent to *jus*; we read of *lex naturalis* no less than of *jus naturale*; and the same usage is not uncommon in the case of the French *loi*. The fact remains that the Continental languages possess, and in general make use of, a method of avoiding the ambiguity inherent in the single English term.

Most English writers have, in defining law, defined it in the concrete instead of in the abstract sense. They have attempted to answer the question: What is a law? while the true inquiry is: What is law? The central idea of juridical theory is not *lex*, but *jus*, not *Gesetz*, but *Recht*. To this inverted and unnatural method of inquiry there are two objections. In the first place, it involves a useless and embarrassing conflict with legal usage. In the mouths of lawyers the concrete signification is quite unusual. They speak habitually of law, of the law, of rules of law, of questions of law, of legal principles, but rarely of a law or of the laws. When they have occasion to express the concrete idea, they avoid the generic expression, and speak of some particular species of laws—a statute, an Act of Parliament, a by-law, or a rule of court. In the second place, this consideration of laws instead of law, of *leges* instead of *jus*, tends almost necessarily to the conclusion that statute law is the type of all law, and the form to which all of it is reducible in the last analysis. It misleads inquirers by sending them to the legislature to discover the true nature and origin of law, instead of to the courts of justice. It is consequently responsible for much that is inadequate and untrue in the juridical theory of English writers (e).

§ 16. The Generality of Law

This discussion of the two senses of the term "law" brings us to what seems at first sight to be one of the most perplexing questions of jurisprudence—the question, namely, whether law is necessarily general. To put this question in other words, does the law consist exclusively of rules of conduct, or may it contain also precepts concerned with an individual case? An example of a general rule would be the general rule that judges may grant divorce on specified grounds. This is general both as to

(e) The plural term "laws" is sometimes used in a collective sense to mean the entire *corpus juris*—the law in its entirety; as in the case of the encyclopædia known as Halsbury's *Laws of England*. We do not speak, however, of the laws of contract or of torts.

persons and as to acts: that is to say, it applies to all married couples and to all acts (whenever committed) that suffice in law to give the court power to grant a divorce. An example of a precept concerned with an individual case would be an eighteenth-century private Act of Parliament divorcing a particular married couple. Some types of legal pronouncements are intermediate between these two extremes. For instance, a rule may be general as to acts though particular as to persons, or it may be general as to persons though particular as to acts. Various other elements of particularity in a rule may be imagined; thus, it may apply only to a narrow class of people, or within a narrowly defined geographical area, or for a short period of time (*e.g.* one day).

Now it is clear that "a law", in the sense of an act of the legislature, may be particular in the fullest sense of the word. A Divorce Act, for example, is none the less a statute and none the less a law because it applies only to a particular couple and lays down no rule of conduct even for them. It is not so obvious that "law", in the sense of the legal system, may be particular. A private Divorce Act is a law, but the passing of such an Act is not commonly thought of as changing the law of England. The law of England declares that divorces may be granted (1) by Act of Parliament; (2) by judicial decree. When a private Divorce Act is passed or a divorce decree is pronounced, this is an application of the law of England but not (it may be said) a change in it. The Act or the decree operates in the law but is not itself *part of* the law. Similarly it may be said that the former Acts of Attainder, whereby particular persons were sentenced to death or otherwise penalised, though "a law" (*sensu concreto*), did not create "law" (*sensu abstracto*) any more than does the sentence of a criminal court.

Thus the requirement that law should be general seems to be indicated by the ordinary usages of speech. A little further consideration, however, will show that the requirement is exceedingly difficult to maintain. For one thing, as we have seen, there are degrees of generality. Where exactly are we to draw the line? To take one illustration, some universities have power by statute to make regulations for their members. Are such regulations part of the law? What of the rules of a

yachting club, which are valid as a matter of contract between the members, or the rules in the articles of association of a company? All these rules are enforced by the courts, and have a certain degree of generality. Are we to refuse them the name "law"?

The question whether contract can create "law for the parties" has (or may seem to have) peculiar urgency for the international lawyer. In his view treaties are sources of international law. Yet they are so only if law need not be general, for normally treaties are binding only on those states that have ratified them. Thus the international lawyer who declares that a bilateral treaty makes law for the parties is implicitly declaring that law need not be general.

A second difficulty is that some particular precepts may concern especially important persons, such as the King. Are we to deny them the name "law"? Consider an Abdication Act, providing for the abdication of one monarch and the accession of another. It seems that such an Act must be accounted part of the law, if only because the personality of the King enters into other rules of law.

A third difficulty is that all particular precepts are exceptions to general rules, and therefore need to be stated in stating general rules. Thus an Act of Parliament divorcing two particular married persons is an exception to the general rule that people once lawfully married continued married until their deaths. Also, particular precepts often have an aspect of generality through the operation of general rules. A private Divorce Act is an implied permission to every unmarried person to go through a ceremony of marriage with one of the divorced parties without thereby incurring the penalties of bigamy.

Questions like the one now being considered are apt to appear insoluble, or at least extremely intricate, unless we realise that words often have untidy meanings, and that in stating their meanings we are not delving into any ultimate realities but are simply stating the haphazard significances given to words by men. The conclusion that emerges is that the words "law" and "the law" are not ordinarily used with perfect consistency. Although the phrase "the law" often connotes general rules, this is not always the case; and even if

it were to be confined by definition to general rules, it would be impossible to draw any firm line between generality and particularity. In the present book the term "law" is used to cover all rules enforced by the courts, however small the degree of their generality.

§ 17. The Definition of Law

All law is not made by the legislature. In England much of it is made by the law courts. But all law, however made, is recognised and administered by the courts, and no rules are recognised and administered by the courts which are not rules of law. It is, therefore, to the courts and not to the legislature that we must go in order to ascertain the true nature of the law.

The law may be defined (to expand the definition already given) as the body of principles recognised and applied by the state in the administration of justice. In other words, the law consists of the rules recognised and acted on by courts of justice.

The definition of the word "law" is the most discussed question in jurisprudence, and some supplementary observations are offered on the definition here suggested.

It will be remembered that the term "law" is now being used to mean the civil law exclusively (*f*). Consequently it is no objection to the definition that it does not cover international law, for it is not meant to do so. It is a definition of the civil law, that is to say, the law with which ordinary lawyers are professionally concerned.

For the ordinary lawyer the definition has the advantage of clearly separating conventions of the constitution, which are not regarded as law, from the law of the constitution. The definition does not solve all difficulties in the application of the word "law", but then no definition can. For instance, a question arises upon the meaning of the word "courts" in the definition. Does it include administrative tribunals? By the National Insurance Act, 1946, and regulations made thereunder, the decision of questions arising under the Act is entrusted, in the last resort, to a commissioner whose decision is final. Suppose that the commissioner lays down a rule that he intends to follow in exercising his discretion (*g*). Is this "law"? The

(*f*) *Supra*, § 14.

(*g*) For such rules see Safford in (1954) 17 M. L. R. 197.

only sensible answer to such a question is that it does not matter, except in the interpretation of a specific sentence, whether we say that it is "law" or not. Nearly all words have a central core of meaning that is relatively fixed, while they are somewhat hazy in their marginal meaning. The word "law" is no exception.

Some writers have suggested that the word "law" includes or should be used to include the principles acted upon by administrators pure and simple. Certainly these principles are sometimes important to the lawyer (*h*), and they are likely to become more important in the future.

There are other persons and bodies besides the law courts and administrators who enforce rules of conduct. If a member of the House of Commons affronts the House by interfering with the mace he is subject to disciplinary action; does this mean that there is a rule of law that no member must interfere with the mace? In the *Sheriff of Middlesex's* case (*i*), where the sheriff was imprisoned by order of the House of Commons for attempting to enforce the judgment of a court of law, the act done by the sheriff was in accordance with the law enforced by the law courts; could it be said to be against a system of law enforced by the House of Commons? Again, a manufacturer may require dealers in his products to observe his list prices under threat of being black-listed (*j*). Are such rules law? They are contractually binding and so are law in the sense of conventional law (*supra*, § 10); but suppose that they were not matters of contract: would enforcement by a private body make them "law"? Once more, the question is of no importance in the abstract; it is of importance only if it arises in the interpretation of the word "law" in a specific context; and the context of the word may help to provide the answer.

Definitions of the type above suggested are sometimes criticised on the ground that, though appropriate to case-law, they are not appropriate to statute-law. A statute, it is said, is law as soon as it is passed; it does not have to wait for recognition by the courts before becoming entitled to the name

(*h*) Cp. R. E. Megarry, "Administrative Quasi-Legislation", (1944) 60 L. Q. R. 125.

(*i*) (1840) 11 A. & E. 273.

(*j*) The Restrictive Trade Practices Act, 1956, makes this illegal for a trade association to do, but not for an individual manufacturer.

"law". The courts recognise a statute because it is law; it is not law merely because the courts recognise it. There is nothing in this objection. The courts are the organs of the community for declaring and enforcing the law and for creating a certain form of law (judge-made law). The legislature is an organ of the community for creating another form of law (statute law.) So long as the courts and legislature are working in harmony it does not matter whether we say that a statute is law because the courts recognise and apply it, or that the courts recognise and apply statutes because they are law. The statements are simply two aspects of a single truth. To make a practical issue of the objection under consideration, one would have to imagine that the legislature passes a statute which the courts subsequently declare to be void, and that a political conflict thereupon arises between the legislature and the courts. Is the statute then part of "the law"? No answer can be given to such a question in the abstract. The answer that a particular individual would give in a real situation would depend upon his sympathies. An impartial observer could not give an answer until one side or the other had triumphed so that harmony between courts and legislature was once more restored. As said before, no definition of a word can determine its application to marginal cases, as this one would be.

§ 18. Justice According to Law

In the modern state the administration of justice according to law is commonly taken to imply the recognition of fixed rules. It is, indeed, perfectly possible for the courts to function without fixed rules at all. Howsoever expedient it may be, howsoever usual it may be, it is not necessary that the courts of the state should act according to those fixed and predetermined principles which are called the law. A tribunal in which conscience and natural justice are excluded by no rigid and artificial rules, in which the judge does that which he deems just in the particular case, regardless of general principles, may not be an efficient or trustworthy tribunal, but is a perfectly possible one. It is a court of justice which is not also a court of law.

However, it must not be thought that a tribunal so acting

in accordance with the dictates of its own conscience would necessarily dispense abstract justice. Very often our notion of justice presupposes fixed rules, and is incompatible with a system of free judicial discretion. For instance, if criminal punishment were meted out at the untrammelled discretion of a judge, we should not call the result justice, for justice demands that a man should not be punished except for breach of a knowable rule. Again, justice is usually taken to require that people should be treated alike unless there is reason for treating them differently. If A and B have made a contract which the judge decides to enforce, and C and D have made a contract which the judge decides not to enforce, we should say that the difference of treatment is an injustice to one party or the other unless there is some good reason for it. Yet if the judge makes up his mind to enforce all contracts unless there is reason to the contrary, or not to enforce any contract unless there appears good reason to do so, he has already created a rule and is no longer exercising a perfectly untrammelled discretion. These examples show that justice is often directly dependent upon the establishment of fixed rules. On the other hand it cannot be denied that we have some notion of justice independently of legal rules; otherwise we should not be able to consider whether a particular legal rule is "just" or not.

Even when a system of fixed rules exists, the extent of it may vary indefinitely. The degree in which the free discretion of a judge is excluded by predetermined rules of law is capable of indefinite increase or diminution. The total exclusion of judicial discretion by legal principle is impossible in any system. However great is the encroachment of the law, there must remain some residuum of justice which is not according to law—some activities in respect of which the administration of justice cannot be defined or regarded as the enforcement of the law.

Nor must it be thought that the process of evolution has been uniformly from judicial discretion to fixed rules; often the reverse has been true. To go back to the beginnings, there probably was never a time when the discretion of a judge was completely unfettered. The importance of customary law in early society prevents us from supposing this. It seems clear that customary rules of great rigidity everywhere existed before

the institution of courts, just as they now do in primitive societies that have no regular courts. Moreover, we can see from primitive codes like those of the Anglo-Saxon kings (which are really codes of custom), that they often attempt to exclude judicial discretion where in modern times we recognise it, replacing it by fixed rule. In the matter of penalties, for example, these early codes "try to lay down a consequence which is to follow automatically as soon as judgment is given, without leaving anything to the discretion of the court" (k). That there must have been discretion in interpreting the codes we know from our own experience of the difficulties in interpreting documents; but the discretion was not intentionally conferred. Avowed discretion in the matter of penalties and compensation is therefore a later development. Conversely, there have been clear instances where a court, starting with a wide discretion, has limited itself by the development of case-law. Thus under Henry II and Henry III the king's courts wielded wide discretionary powers; yet during the fourteenth century they became limited by rules. The latitude so abandoned by the common-law courts was retained by the Council and passed from it to the Court of Chancery, which at the start of its existence had an almost unlimited discretion to interfere with the common law; now, that discretion has been partly canalised into definite channels and for the rest excluded by fixed rules. Then again the common-law courts, at the time when actions upon the case began to be allowed, opened up for themselves a wide field of new discretion; yet that, too, has now been largely changed into fixed rules. At the present day there is a tendency to restore judicial discretion in many departments where formerly it was absent. Thus the progress of law is not invariably from discretion to fixed rules, or *vice versa*; discretion and fixed rules are both permanent elements in the administration of justice, though their relative importance varies at different times.

No one can seriously doubt that it is on the whole expedient that fixed rules should grow up. Yet the elements of evil involved in their growth are too obvious and serious ever to have escaped recognition. Laws are in theory, as Hooker says,

(k) Jolowicz, "The Assessment of Penalties in Primitive Law", *Cambridge Legal Essays* (1926) at p. 208.

"the voices of right reason"; they are in theory the utterances of Justice speaking to men by the mouth of the state; but too often in reality they fall far short of this ideal. Too often they "turn judgment to wormwood", and make the administration of justice a reproach. Nor is this true merely of the earlier and ruder stages of legal development. At the present day our law has learnt, in a measure never before attained, to speak the language of sound reason and good sense, but it still retains in no slight degree the vices of its youth; nor is it to be expected that at any time we shall altogether escape from the perennial conflict between law and justice. It is needful, therefore, that the law (taking that term as implying fixed rule) should plead and prove the ground and justification of its existence.

The chief uses of the law are three in number. The first of these is that to a considerable extent it imparts uniformity and certainty to the administration of justice. It is vitally important not only that judicial decisions should be just, but also that people should be able, in most matters, to know beforehand the decision to which the courts of justice will come. This provision is impossible unless the course of justice is uniform, and the only effectual method of procuring uniformity is the observance of those fixed principles which constitute the law. It is often more important that a rule should be definite, certain, known, and permanent, than that it should be ideally just (1). Sometimes, indeed, the element of order and certainty is the only one which requires consideration, it being entirely indifferent what the rule is, so long as it exists and is adhered to. The rule of the road is the best and most familiar example of this, but there are many other instances in which justice seems dumb, and yet it is needful that a definite rule of some sort should be adopted and maintained.

(1) In recent years in the United States of America a so-called "realist" school of jurisprudence has grown up seeking to minimise the part played by legal rules in determining judicial decisions. See in particular Jerome Frank, *Law and the Modern Mind* (1935); Hall, *Readings*, chaps. 9 and 24. The corrective was applied by Cardozo, J., himself a distinguished American judge and sympathetic towards the "realist" approach, who expressed the opinion that even in the Supreme Court of the United States a majority of the cases were predetermined by the law, and that of the residue there was a considerable percentage where the law was clear and the application alone doubtful: *The Nature of the Judicial Process* (1921), 164. In a lower Court the proportion of "predetermined" cases would be higher still. See, generally, Goodhart, "Some American Interpretations of Law", in *Modern Theories of Law* (1933), 1.

This is one reason why it is that in no civilised community do the judges and magistrates, to whom is entrusted the duty of maintaining justice, exercise with a free hand the *virī boni arbitrium*. The more complex our civilisation becomes, the more needful is its regulation by law, and the less practicable the alternative method of judicial procedure. "Reason", says Jeremy Taylor (m), "is such a box of quicksilver that it abides no where; it dwells in no settled mansion; it is like a dove's neck; . . . and if we inquire after the law of nature" (that is to say, the principles of justice) "by the rules of our reason, we shall be as uncertain as the discourses of the people or the dreams of disturbed fancies."

It is to be observed, in the second place, that the necessity of conforming to publicly declared principles protects the administration of justice to a large extent from the disturbing influence of improper motives on the part of those entrusted with judicial functions. The law is necessarily impartial. It is made for no particular person, and for no individual case, and so admits of no respect of persons, and is deflected from the straight course by no irrelevant considerations peculiar to the special instance. Given a definite rule of law, a departure from it by a hairsbreadth is visible to all men, but within the sphere of individual judgment the differences of honest opinion are so manifold and serious that dishonest opinion can pass in great part unchallenged and undetected. Where the duty of the judicature is to execute justice in accordance with fixed and known principles, the whole force of the public conscience can be brought to the enforcement of that duty and the maintenance of those principles. But when courts of justice are left to do that which is right in their own eyes, this control becomes to a great extent impossible, public opinion being left without that definite guidance which is essential to its force and influence. So much is this so, that the administration of justice according to law is rightly regarded as one of the first principles of political liberty. "The legislative or supreme authority", says Locke (n), "cannot assume to itself a power to rule by extemporary, arbitrary decrees, but is bound to dispense justice,

(m) *Ductor Dubitantium* (Works XII, 309, Heber's ed.).

(n) *Treatise of Government*, II. 11. 136.

and to decide the rights of the subject by promulgated, standing laws, and known, authorised judges." So, in the words of Cicero (o): "We are the slaves of the law that we may be free."

It is to its impartiality, far more than to its wisdom (for this latter virtue it too often lacks), that are due the influence and reputation which the law has possessed at all times. Wise or foolish, it is the same for all, and to it, therefore, men have ever been willing to submit their quarrels, knowing, as Hooker says (p), that "the law doth speak with all indifferency; that the law hath no side-respect to their persons".

Finally, the law, to the extent that it excludes discretion, serves to protect the administration of justice from the errors of individual judgment. The establishment of the law is the substitution of the opinion and conscience of the community at large for those of the individuals to whom judicial functions are entrusted. The principles of justice are not always clearly legible by the light of nature. The problems offered for judicial solution are often dark and difficult, and there is great need of guidance from that experience and wisdom of the world at large of which the law is the record. The law is not always wise, but on the whole, and in the long run, it is wiser than those who administer it. It expresses the will and reason of the body politic, and claims by that title to overrule the will and reason of judges and magistrates, no less than those of private men. "To seek to be wiser than the laws", says Aristotle (q), "is the very thing which is by good laws forbidden."

These, then, are the chief advantages to be derived from the exclusion of individual judgment by fixed principles of law. Nevertheless, these benefits are not obtained save at a heavy cost. The law is without doubt a remedy for greater evils, yet it brings with it evils of its own. Some of them are inherent in its very nature, others are the outcome of tendencies which, however natural, are not beyond the reach of effective control.

The first defect of a legal system is its comparative rigidity. A general principle of law is the product of a process of abstraction. It results from the elimination and disregard of

(o) *Pro Cluentio*, 53. 146.

(p) *Ecclesiastical Polity*, I. 10. 7.

(q) *Rhetoric*, I. 15. See also Bacon, *De Augmentis* Lib. 8, Aph. 58: *Neminem oportere legibus esse sapientiores*.

the less material circumstances in the particular cases falling within its scope, and the concentration of attention upon the more essential elements which these cases have in common. We cannot be sure that, in applying a rule so obtained, the elements so disregarded may not be material in the particular instance; and if they are so, and we make no allowance for them, the result is error and injustice. This possibility is fully recognised in departments of practice other than the law. The principles of political economy are obtained by the elimination of every motive save the desire for wealth, but we do not apply them blindfold to individual cases without first taking account of the possibly disturbing influence of the eliminated elements. In law it is often otherwise, for here a principle is in many cases not a mere guide to the due exercise of a rational discretion, but a substitute for it. It is to be applied without any allowance for special circumstances, and without turning to the right hand or to the left. The result of this inflexibility is that, however, carefully and cunningly a legal rule may be framed, there will in all probability be some special instances in which it will work hardship and injustice, and prove a source of error instead of a guide to truth. So infinitely various are the affairs of men, that it is impossible to lay down general principles which will be true and just in every case. If we are to have general rules at all, we must be content to pay this price.

The time-honoured maxim, *Summum jus est summa injuria*, is an expression of the fact that few legal principles are so founded in truth that they can be pushed to their extremest logical conclusions without leading to injustice. The more general the principle, the greater is that elimination of immaterial elements of which it is the result, and the greater therefore is the chance that, in its rigid application, it may be found false. On the other hand, the more carefully the rule is qualified and limited, and the greater the number of exceptions and distinctions to which it is subject, the greater is the difficulty and uncertainty of its application. In attempting to escape from the evils which flow from the rigidity of the law, we incur those due to its complexity, and we do wisely if we discover the golden mean between the two extremes.

Analogous to the vice of rigidity is that of conservatism.

The former is the failure of the law to conform itself to the requirements of special instances and unforeseen classes of cases. The latter is its failure to conform itself to those changes in circumstances and in men's views of truth and justice which are inevitably brought about by the lapse of time. In the absence of law, the administration of justice would automatically adapt itself to the circumstances and opinions of the time, but fettered by rules of law, courts of justice do the bidding, not of the present, but of the times past in which those rules were fashioned. That which is true to-day may become false to-morrow by change of circumstances, and that which is taken to-day for wisdom may to-morrow be recognised as folly by the advance of knowledge. This being so, some method is requisite whereby the law, which is by nature stationary, may be kept in harmony with the circumstances and opinions of the time. If the law is to be a living organism, and not a mere petrification, it is necessary to adopt and to use with vigilance some effective instrument of legal development, and the quality of any legal system will depend on the efficiency of the means so taken to secure it against a fatal conservatism. The judges can do something to mould the law in the course of administering it, but the most efficient instrument of legal change is legislation. Even legislation, however, is incapable of completely counteracting the evil of legal conservatism. However perfect we may make our legislative machinery, the law will lag behind public opinion, and public opinion behind the needs of the time.

Another vice of the law is formalism. By this is meant the tendency to attribute more importance to technical requirements than to substantive rights and wrongs. The formalism of ancient law is too notorious to require illustration, but we are scarcely yet in a position to boast ourselves as above reproach in this matter. Much legal reform is requisite if the maxim *De minimis non curat lex* is to be accounted anything but irony.

The last defect that we shall consider is undue and needless complexity. It is not possible, indeed, for any fully developed body of law to be such that he who runs may read it. Being, as it is, the reflection within courts of justice of the complex facts of civilised existence, a very considerable degree of elaboration is inevitable. Nevertheless the gigantic bulk and

bewildering difficulties of our own labyrinthine system are far beyond anything that is called for by the necessities of the case. Partly through the methods of its historical development, and partly through the influence of that love of subtlety which has always been the besetting sin of the legal mind, our law is filled with needless distinctions, which add enormously to its bulk and nothing to its value, while they render a great part of it unintelligible to any but the expert. This tendency to excessive subtlety and elaboration is one that specially affects a system which, like our own, has been largely developed by way of judicial decisions. It is not altogether an unavoidable defect, and the codes which have in modern times been enacted in European countries prove the possibility of reducing the law in size and increasing its intelligibility (r).

From the foregoing considerations as to the advantages and disadvantages which are inherent in the administration of justice according to law, it becomes clear that we must guard against the excessive development of the legal system. If the benefits of law are great, the evils of too much law are not small. Bacon has said, after Aristotle (s): *Optima est lex quae minimum relinquit arbitrio judicis*. However true this may be in general, there are many departments of judicial practice to which no such principle is applicable. Much has been done in recent times to prune the law of morbid growths. In many departments judicial discretion has been freed from the bonds of legal principle. Forms of action have been abolished; rules of pleading have been relaxed; the credibility of witnesses has become a matter of fact, instead of as formerly one of law; a discretionary power of punishment has been substituted for the terrible legal uniformity which once disgraced the administration of criminal justice. In divorce cases, we give the judge a discretion to make a decree even though the petitioner has committed a matrimonial offence. Judges have now a wide discretion in the matter of costs, in the apportionment of loss between joint and concurrent tortfeasors and in cases of contributory negligence, in considering questions of reasonableness and hardship before making orders for possession of houses controlled by the Rent Restriction Acts, in adjusting the

(r) On codification, see *infra*, § 46.

(s) Bacon, *De Augmentis*, Lib. 8, Aph. 46; Aristotle's *Rhetoric*, I. 1.

rights of the parties to a hire-purchase agreement under section 12 of the Hire Purchase Act, 1938, and in decreeing maintenance under the Inheritance (Family Provision) Act, 1938 (t). There is no doubt that the future will see further reforms in the same direction.

We have hitherto taken it for granted that legal principles are necessarily inflexible—that they are essentially peremptory rules excluding judicial discretion so far as they extend—that they must of necessity be followed blindly by courts of justice even against their better judgment. There seems no reason, however, in the nature of things why the law should not, to a considerable extent, be flexible instead of rigid—should not aid, guide, and inform judicial discretion, instead of excluding it—should not be subject to such exceptions and qualifications as in special circumstances the courts of justice shall deem reasonable or requisite. There is no apparent reason why the law should say to the judicature: “Do this in all cases, whether you consider it reasonable or not,” instead of “Do this except in those cases in which you consider that there are special reasons for doing otherwise.” Such flexible principles are not unknown even at the present day, and it seems probable that in the more perfect system of the future much law that is now rigid and peremptory will lapse into the category of the conditional. It will always, indeed, be found needful to maintain great part of it on the higher level, but we have not yet realised to what an extent flexible principles are sufficient to attain all the good purposes of the law, while avoiding much of its attendant evil. It is probable, for instance, that the great bulk of the law of evidence should be of this nature. These rules should for the most part guide judicial discretion, instead of excluding it (u). In the former capacity, being in general founded on experience and good sense, they would be valuable

(t) In the foregoing paragraphs it has been assumed for convenience of exposition that “law” and “discretion” are mutually opposed. The reader should perhaps be warned that this is not an invariable usage of words. There is a sense in which law and discretion are not opposed, for it may be said that when a judge is given a discretion it is the law that gives him that discretion. On the other hand, if in a country under a dictatorship there were no rules except a rule that the dictator could do what he pleased, we should not say that such a country was under the rule of law. Whether we choose to contrast law and discretion or to recognise the existence of “legal discretion” is a matter of convenience depending on the circumstances.

(u) A reform in this direction is the Evidence Act, 1938, s. 1 (2).

aids to the discovery of truth; in the latter, they are too often the instruments of error (x).

It may finally be observed on this subject that even a system of fixed legal rules supposes that the facts are capable of being ascertained in order that the rules may be applied. We are becoming increasingly conscious that this assumption is often false, particularly where the facts under investigation were crowded into a few moments of time as in the case of an impulsive homicide or traffic accident. Quite apart from the chance that a witness may lie, there is the possibility of imperfect observation, of failure of memory, of unconscious bias, of fallacious "reasoning back"; there is also the possibility of having no witness at all. The decision may be helped by rules as to the burden of proof, but the uncomfortable fact remains that a substantial number of decisions proceed upon a totally false view of what happened. This is a risk that can never be totally eliminated from human justice (y).

§ 19. The Imperative Theory of Law

We have defined the law as consisting of the rules in accordance with which justice is administered by the judicial tribunals of the state. In a previous chapter we adverted to and partially considered a different doctrine which has received widespread acceptance, and which may be termed the imperative or purely imperative theory of law. According to this theory the civil law is essentially and throughout its whole compass nothing more than a particular variety of imperative law, and consists of the general commands issued by the state to its subjects and enforced through the agency of courts of law by the sanction of physical force. It is now necessary to consider this theory more fully.

(x) There has been much discussion on the Continent of the merits and demerits of free judicial discretion (*freie Rechtsfindung*, *libre recherche*). See the extracts in *The Science of Legal Method* (1921). In modern times the discussion of fixed rule v. discretion has been largely transferred to a discussion of judicial tribunals v. administrative (quasi-judicial) tribunals, it being assumed that the former are governed by fixed rule and the latter by free discretion, though neither assumption is anything like wholly true. See Jerome Frank, *If Men were Angels* (1942); Dickinson, *Administrative Justice and the Supremacy of Law* (1927); Sir C. K. Allen, *Administrative Jurisdiction* (1956).

(y) See Jerome Frank, *Courts on Trial* (1949); Glanville Williams, *The Proof of Guilt* (1955).

We have already seen that it contains an important element of truth. It rightly recognises the essential fact that civil law is the product of the state and depends for its existence on the physical force of the state exercised through the agency of judicial tribunals. Where there is no state which governs a community by the use of physical force, there can be no such thing as civil law. It is only if and so far as any rules are recognised by the state in the exercise of this function that these rules possess the essential nature of civil law.

This being so, there is no weight to be attributed to what may be termed the historical argument against the imperative theory of law. This argument may be formulated as follows: "Although the definition of law as the command of the state is plausible, and is at first sight sufficient, as applied to the developed political societies of modern times, it is inapplicable to more primitive communities. Early law is not the command of the state; it has its source in custom, religion or public opinion, and not in any authority vested in a political superior. It is not until a comparatively late stage of social evolution that law assumes its modern form and is recognised as a product of supreme power governing a body politic. Law is prior to, and independent of, political authority and enforcement. It is enforced by the state because it is already law, and not *vice versa* (a).

To this argument the advocates of the imperative theory can give a valid reply. If there are any rules prior to, and independent of the state, they may greatly resemble law; they may be the primeval substitutes for law; they may be the

(a) See, for example, Bryce, *Studies in History and Jurisprudence* (1901) Vol. II. 44 and 249: "Broadly speaking, there are in every community two authorities which can make law: the State, i.e., the ruling and directing power, whatever it may be, in which the government of the community resides, and the People, that is, the whole body of the community, regarded not as incorporated in the state, but as being merely so many persons who have commercial and social relations with one another. . . Law cannot be always and everywhere the creation of the state, because instances can be adduced where law existed in a community before there was any state." See also Pollock, *First Book of Jurisprudence* (6th ed. 1929) 24: "That imperative character of law, which in our modern experience is its constant attribute, is found to be wanting in societies which it would be rash to call barbarous, and false to call lawless. . . Not only law, but law with a good deal of formality, has existed before the state had any adequate means of compelling its observance, and indeed before there was any regular process of enforcement at all." See also Maine, *Early History of Institutions*, Lect. 12, p. 364, and Lect. 13, p. 380.

historical source from which law is developed and proceeds; but they are not themselves law. There may have been a time in the far past when a man was not distinguishable from the anthropoid ape, but that is no reason for now defining a man in such manner as to include an ape. To trace two different things to a common origin in the beginnings of their historical evolution is not to disprove the existence or the importance of an essential difference between them as they now stand. This is to confuse all boundary lines, to substitute the history of the past for the logic of the present, and to render all distinction and definition vain. The historical point of view is valuable as a supplement to the logical and analytical, but not as a substitute for it. It must be borne in mind that in the beginning the whole earth was without form and void, and that science is concerned not with chaos but with cosmos (b).

Yet, although the imperative theory contains this element of the truth, it is not the whole truth. It is one-sided and inadequate—the product of an incomplete analysis of juridical conceptions. In the first place it is defective inasmuch as it disregards that *ethical* element which is an essential con-

(b) The above passage had been left untouched by the present editor because it represents a well-known contribution to a historic controversy: but the editor may be allowed to express his own opinion that the controversy is verbal and that the present discussion is not (as it may appear to be) a factual argument but is merely a restatement of the definition of law already advanced by the learned author. It will be recalled that Sir John Salmond begins the book by enumerating a number of kinds of law (in the wide sense), including the uniformities of nature and international law, and makes upon them the following very sensible observation. "Any discussion as to the rightful claims of any of those classes of rules to be called laws—any attempt to distinguish laws properly so called from laws improperly so called—would seem to be nothing more than a purposeless dispute about words. Our business is to recognise that they are in fact called laws, and to distinguish accurately between the different classes of rules that are thus known by the same name" (*supra*, p. 21). Then at p. 34 he comes to the subject of municipal or civil law, and announces that "in the absence of any indication in the context of a different intention, the term law, when used *simpliciter*, means civil law and nothing else, and in this sense the term is used in future throughout this book". Thus when, in the above passage, the author declares that "if there are any rules prior to, and independent of the State, . . . they are not themselves law", he must mean by the last word, in accordance with his own previous statement, civil (i.e., State) law and nothing else. So read, his proposition that there is no (State) law independent of the State becomes a tautology. Thus the proposition is logically defensible, but at the same time it is, if left unexplained, misleading to the student, who is led to suppose that the author is advancing a factual proposition as to the so-called "nature" of law. See Williams, "International Law and the Controversy as to the Word 'Law'", 22 *British Year Book of International Law* 146, reprinted in *Philosophy, Politics and Society* (ed. Laslett 1956) 134.

stituent of the complete conception. As to any special relation between law and justice, this theory is silent and ignorant. It eliminates from the implication of the term law all elements save that of force. This is an illegitimate simplification, for the complete idea contains at least one other element which is equally essential and permanent. This is, right or justice. If rules of law are from one point of view commands issued by the state to its subjects, from another standpoint they appear as the principles of right and wrong so far as recognised and enforced by the state in the exercise of its essential function of administering justice. Law is not right alone, or might alone, but the perfect union of the two. It is justice speaking to men by the voice of the state. The established law, indeed, may be far from corresponding accurately with the true rule or right; nor is its legal validity in any way affected by any such imperfection. Nevertheless in *idea* law and justice are coincident. It is for the expression and realisation of justice that the law has been created, and, like every other work of men's hands, it must be defined by reference to its end and purpose. A purely imperative theory, therefore, is as one-sided as a purely ethical or non-imperative theory would be. It mistakes a part of the connotation of the term defined for the whole of it.

We should be sufficiently reminded of this ethical element by the usages of popular speech. The terms law and justice are familiar associates. Courts of law are also courts of justice, and the administration of justice is also the enforcement of law. Right, wrong, and duty are leading terms of law, as well as of morals. If we turn from our own to foreign languages, we find that law and right are usually called by the very same name. *Jus*, *droit*, *Recht*, *diritto*, have all a double meaning; they are all ethical, as well as juridical; they all include the rules of justice, as well as those of law. Are these facts, then, of no significance? Are we to look on them as nothing more than accidental and meaningless coincidences of speech? It is this that the advocates of the theory in question would have us believe. We may, on the contrary, assume with confidence that these relations between the names of things are but the outward manifestation of very real and intimate relations between the things named. A theory which regards the law

as the command of the state and nothing more, and which entirely ignores the aspect of law as a public declaration of the principles of justice, would lose all its plausibility if expressed in a language in which the term for law signifies justice also.

Even if we incorporate the missing ethical element in the definition, even if we define the law as the sum of the principles of justice recognised and enforced by the state, even if we say with Blackstone (c) that law is "a rule of civil conduct, prescribed by the supreme power in a state, commanding what is right and prohibiting what is wrong", we shall not reach the whole truth. For although the idea of command or enforcement is an essential implication of the law, in the sense that there can be no law where there is no coercive administration of justice by the state, it is not true that every legal principle assumes, or can be made to assume, the form of a command. Although the imperative rules of right and wrong, as recognised by the state, constitute a part, and, indeed, the most important part, of the law, they do not constitute the whole of it. The law includes the whole of the principles accepted and applied in the administration of justice, whether they are imperative principles or not. The only legal rules which conform to the imperative definition are those which create legal rights and duties, and no legal system consists exclusively of rules of this description. All well-developed bodies of law contain innumerable principles which have some other purpose and content than this, and so fall outside the scope of the imperative definition. These non-imperative legal principles are of various kinds. There are, for example, permissive rules of law—namely, those which declare certain acts not to be obligatory or not to be wrongful—a rule, for instance, declaring that witchcraft or heresy is no crime, or that damage done by competition in trade is no cause of action. It cannot be denied that these are rules of law as that term is ordinarily used, and it is plain that they fall within the definition of the law as the principles acted on by courts of justice. But in what sense are they enforced by the state? They are not commands, but permissions; they create liberties, not rights and duties. So, also, the innumerable rules of judicial procedure are largely non-imperative.

They are in no proper sense rules of conduct enforced by the state. Let us take, for example, the principles that hearsay is no evidence; that written evidence is superior to verbal; that a contract for the sale of land cannot be proved except by writing; that judicial notice will be taken of such and such facts; that matters once decided are decided once for all as between the same parties; that the interpretation of written documents is the office of the judge and not of the jury; that witnesses must be examined on oath or affirmation; that the verdict of a jury must be unanimous. Is it not plain that these are in their true nature rules in accordance with which judges administer justice to the exclusion of their personal judgment, and not rules of action appointed by the state for observance by its subjects and enforced by legal sanctions?

There are various other forms of non-imperative law, notably those which relate to the existence, application, and interpretation of other rules. The illustrations already given, however, should be sufficient to render evident the fact that the purely imperative theory not merely neglects an essential element in the idea of law, but also falls far short of the full application or denotation of the term. All legal principles are not commands of the state; and those which are such commands are at the same time, and in their essential nature, something more, of which the imperative theory takes no account.

§ 20. The Authority of Law

Some writers have endeavoured to avoid the foregoing objections to the purely imperative theory of law by regarding rules of procedure, and all other non-imperative principles, as being in reality the commands of the state addressed, not to the public at large, but to the judges. The rule, they say, that murder is a crime is a command addressed to all persons not to commit murder, and the rule that the punishment for murder is death is a command to the judges to inflict that punishment. Similarly, the rule that hearsay is not admissible in evidence is a command of the state to the judges not to admit evidence of that kind. By taking this view of the matter, it is endeavoured to bring the whole body of legal principles within the scope of the definition of law as the general commands of the state (d).

(d) See, for example, Bentham, *Principles of Morals and Legislation*, 330; *Works*, I. 151; Ihering, *Zweck im Recht* (3rd ed.), I. 334.

This contention brings us to the consideration of the true nature of the duty of courts of justice to recognise and apply those fixed principles which constitute the law. Hitherto we have spoken of the law as being authoritative within the courts of justice; we have spoken of those courts as being under a duty to observe the law in the exercise of their function of administering justice, instead of acting in accordance with their own views of right and wrong. It is now necessary to consider the nature of this authority and of this duty. In what sense and by what means is a judge bound, for example, in deciding a case to follow the precedents set in former cases, instead of following the dictates of his own reason?

It is clear, in the first place, that judges are under a moral duty to observe the law. This is the business for which they were appointed. This is the duty which they undertook by their judicial oaths, when they swore to administer justice according to law. The observance of this moral duty is secured and enforced by the pressure of public opinion, and more especially of that professional opinion of the bar which would be quick to notice and to censure any departure by the bench from the established principles of law. Moreover, the wilful refusal of a judge to apply the established law would amount to misconduct in his office, for which he could rightly be removed by the proper authority.

To this moral duty, is there superadded any legal duty? Is the duty of a court to administer justice according to law a legal duty enforceable as such by any form of judicial proceeding, and, if so, in what cases and in what manner? In the case of inferior courts which are subject to a superior court by way of appellate or superintending jurisdiction, the duty of the inferior court to observe the law is enforced as a legal duty by the superior court. If the lower court goes wrong in law, its judgment will be reversed and a correct judgment in accordance with law will be substituted. If the lower court refuses to exercise its lawful jurisdiction, or claims to exercise a jurisdiction beyond that which the law confers on it, the superintending jurisdiction of a higher court may be used to compel observance of the law. Legal control of an inferior court may go even further, for a system is readily conceivable in which a judicial officer who disregards the law may, in a higher court, be subject to criminal proceedings, or to actions for damages at the suit of persons so injured by him. So far as inferior courts of justice are concerned, therefore, there is no difficulty in recognising, not merely a moral, but also a legal duty to administer justice according to law. But in the case of a superior court of judicature (meaning thereby a court which is not subject to the appellate or superintending authority of any other court), such a legal duty is impossible. There is no other court in which any such obligation could be recognised or enforced. Moreover, the system of a hierarchy of courts, some of which possess jurisdiction over others, is not an essential part of the constitution of a state. A system

is possible in which the public justice of a state is administered by a single court, or by a series of co-ordinate courts, without the existence of any appellate or other controlling jurisdiction. In such cases there can be no legal duty imposed on the courts to observe the law. A legal duty is imposed by a rule of law, and there can be no rule of law unless there is a court having jurisdiction to declare, apply, and enforce it. To suppose, therefore, that every court is bound by a rule of law, and by a resulting legal duty to observe the system of law in force in that court, is clearly a fallacy. Observance of the law may be enforced on an inferior court by a superior, and upon that superior court by another superior to it, but the process must stop somewhere. The world, as has been determined by Eastern philosophy, may stand on an elephant, and the elephant on a tortoise, but the tortoise must be self-supporting. The High Court may enforce the law upon the County Courts; the Court of Appeal may enforce it upon the High Court; and the House of Lords upon the Court of Appeal. But this process cannot be endless. The duty of the final tribunal to administer justice according to law must be recognised as a moral duty merely. If the House of Lords were wilfully to misconstrue an Act of Parliament, the interpretation so placed on that Act would *ipso facto* be the law of England, for there is no other judicial tribunal with jurisdiction and authority to decide the contrary.

Since, therefore, the courts of justice cannot be universally under a legal duty to observe and apply the law, no such legal duty can be regarded as forming a part of the definition of law. Such a definition would amount to reasoning in a circle. Law is law, not because the courts are under any legal obligation to observe it, but because they do in fact observe it. No rule that is not thus in fact observed in accordance with the established practice of the courts is a rule of law, and, conversely, every rule that is thus in fact observed amounts to a rule of law. It is to the courts of justice, and to them alone, that we must have recourse if we wish to find out what rules are rules of law and what are not. In the last resort the authority of the law over the courts themselves has its source merely in the moral obligation of the judges to observe their judicial oaths, and fulfil their appointed functions, by administering justice according to law.

§ 21. Justice

We have defined the civil law by reference to the idea of justice. We have said that the law consists of the rules recognised and applied by the courts in the exercise of their function of enforcing and maintaining justice by means of the physical

force of the state. If this is so, right or justice comes first in the order of logical conceptions, and law comes second and is derivative. A complete analysis of the idea of law involves, therefore, an analysis of the ethical element so involved in it. This task pertains in its full compass to the science of ethics rather than to that of jurisprudence, but a partial examination of the question is necessary here in view of the intimate relation which exists between the theory of law and the theory of justice.

The significance of all human action depends, in law and morals, on its effect on human welfare. Acts that have no effect, whether for good or evil, on the interests of mankind have no significance either for ethics or for jurisprudence (e). In what then does human welfare—the good of mankind—consist? On this question philosophers have disputed in all ages, and with respect to it there are two predominant types of ethical theory. According to one of these human well-being—the *summum bonum*—consists in human perfection, and according to the other it consists in human happiness. Philosophers who hold the first of these opinions teach us that it is the business of a man to seek perfection—to attain the ideal form and nature of a man—and so to fulfil Nature's purposes in making him. They hold, accordingly, that everything is good which makes for such perfection, and everything evil which hinders it. Philosophers of the other school teach us that the business of men is to be happy; that everything is good so far as it produces happiness, and everything evil so far as it produces suffering and sorrow, and that nothing is either good or evil for any other reason. Rightly understood, however, these two different theories lead us to the same results. Men have no means of knowing the purpose for which Nature created them—if any such purpose there be—except by taking as their guide the instincts with which Nature has endowed them. In accordance with these instincts they desire certain things and seek them. In the satisfaction of these desires and the successful accomplishment of these endeavours they find life and happiness. In the frustration of these desires and the failure of these

(e) For the sake of simplicity of statement we leave out of account for the present the welfare and interests of the lower animals.

endeavours they find pain, sorrow, and death. The only perfection which man is capable of knowing lies in his capacity thus to do Nature's bidding and to attain the reward of his activities and the satisfaction of his desires. The only test of perfection, and the only *indicia* of conformity to the ideal type and final cause of human nature, are to be found in the conditions of human happiness. Let us say, therefore, that human well-being—the *summum bonum*—consists in the abolition, so far as may be, of suffering and sorrow and the increase, so far as may be, of all forms of desirable consciousness, so that men may lead happy lives enduring to length of days.

It is from its effect on human welfare, as so conceived, that all human action derives its practical significance, and by reference to this effect that it must be judged. Now this effect is twofold. An action may be considered either as to its effect on the well-being of the actor himself, or as to its effect on the well-being of mankind at large. Viewed solely in regard to the actor himself, his act is to be judged as being either wise or foolish—wise if it promotes his well-being, foolish if it diminishes it. Viewed, not merely in regard to the actor himself, but in regard to the general well-being, his act is to be judged as right or wrong, just or unjust. It is right and just if it promotes the public welfare; wrong and unjust if it diminishes it. The rule of wisdom—that is to say, self-regarding wisdom, the prudence of self-interest—instructs a man how he must act in order thereby to secure and promote his own welfare. The rule of justice instructs him how he must act in order to secure and promote the general welfare of mankind.

If the interests of each individual were in all respects coincident with the interests of mankind at large; if it were possible for every man to pursue his own desires and purposes and to seek his own good without thereby interfering with the similar activities of other men, there would be no need or place for the rule of justice. The rule of practical wisdom and of self-interest would serve all purposes. But this is not so. The world is so made that the good things in it are like bread in a besieged city. There is not enough and to spare for all. The good which is available must therefore be so apportioned

among those who seek it as to be put to the best use. To allow every man to take as much of it as he can get is to waste much of what there is. The rule of this apportionment is the rule of justice. Justice consists in giving to every man his own. The rule of justice determines the sphere of individual liberty in the pursuit of individual welfare, so as to confine that liberty within the limits which are consistent with the general welfare of mankind. Within the sphere of liberty so delimited for every man by the rule of justice, he is left free to seek his own interest in accordance with the rule of wisdom.

So far there is no question of compulsion, command, or authority. Neither the law of self-regarding wisdom nor the law of natural justice belongs to the class of laws imperative. They are practical laws in the sense in which that term has been defined in the preceding chapter of this book. They assume or presuppose a certain end or purpose, and lay down the rules of action by which that end or purpose is to be reached. The formula of every such law is not that of command, but that of advice: to reach that end, this is the way which you must take. The law of justice is in this respect of the same nature as the law of self-interest. If command is to be added to advice, and authority to doctrine, the additional element must be found in some regulative or coercive system of government, such as the administration of justice by the state or the control exercised by the pressure of public opinion in support of those rules which are recognised within any society as being the rules of right.

Both within the sphere of justice and within the sphere of the wisdom of self-interest, the conception involved in the word "ought" is of the same nature. The statement that a man ought to do a certain act presupposes some appointed end, and indicates that the act in question is the proper means to that end. That he ought to take care of his health and to practise temperance means that this is the way to his own welfare. That he ought to keep his promises and abstain from violence and fraud means that this is the way to the general welfare. But the conception of "ought" has no application to the end itself. The question why a man ought in the way of justice to seek the general welfare has no more meaning,

and therefore no more admits of an answer, than the question why he ought in the way of wisdom to seek his own.

We have, for the sake of simplicity, spoken of that general welfare, to which the rule of right and justice is directed, as if it was confined to the welfare of mankind. If, however, we accept the utilitarian view that the good means happiness and that evil means pain, it becomes clear that the welfare of the lower animals does not differ save in degree from the welfare of mankind, and must be counted as part of that general welfare which is under the guardianship of the rule of right. We owe moral duties to beasts as well as to men, and in the civil law of modern and civilised communities this part of natural justice has become a part of legal justice also. But the capacities and needs of beasts, in respect of their sentient and emotional life, are so immeasurably below those of men that the interests of beasts, as so recognised by the rules of natural and legal justice, are of little more than negligible importance as compared with the elements of human welfare. Indeed, the civil law, while punishing unjustifiable cruelty to beasts as a criminal offence, does not so far recognise their interests as to treat them as legal rights. All legal rights are the rights of men. It is practically sufficient, therefore, while recognising the subordinate claims of the lower animals, to deal with the theory of right and law as if it related to the general welfare of mankind alone. We may say with the Roman lawyers (f): *Hominum causa omne jus constitutum*.

SUMMARY

Origin of the term Civil Law.

Various meanings of the term:

1. The law of the land.
2. Roman law.
3. The residue of the law of the land after excepting a special part: *e.g.*, civil and criminal law, civil and military law.

Improper substitutes for the term civil law:

1. Positive law.
2. Municipal law.

(f) D. I. 5. 2. The legal status of the lower animals is further considered in a later chapter of this work. Ch. 15, § 112.

The concrete and abstract senses of the term law :

Law and a law.

Jus and *lex*.

Droit and *loi*.

Legal and ethical senses of *jus* and *drott*.

The generality of law.

Law defined as the rules applied by the courts in the administration of justice.

Justice and law.

Discretion and fixed rule.

The advantages of fixed rules.

Their defects.

The reversion to judicial discretion.

Perils in the ascertainment of fact.

The imperative theory of law.

Law as the command of the state.

The partial truth of this theory.

Its defects—

1. No recognition of the relation between law and justice.

2. No recognition of non-imperative rules of law.

The nature and sources of the authority of law over the law courts themselves.

1. Its legal authority.

2. Its ethical authority.

Natural justice defined:

The rule of justice—directed to the general good.

The rule of self-regarding wisdom—directed to one's own good.

CHAPTER 3

CIVIL LAW (continued)

§ 22. Law and Fact

It is commonly said that all questions which arise for consideration and determination in a court of justice are of two kinds, being either questions of law or questions of fact. In a sense this proposition is true, but it is one which requires careful examination, because both the term question of law and the term question of fact are ambiguous and possess more than one meaning.

The term question of law is used in three distinct though related senses. It means, in the first place, a question which the court is bound to answer in accordance with a rule of law—a question which the law itself has authoritatively answered, to the exclusion of the right of the court to answer the question as it thinks fit in accordance with what is considered to be the truth and justice of the matter. All other questions are questions of fact—using the term fact in its widest possible sense to include everything that is not law. In this sense, every question which has not been predetermined and authoritatively answered by the law is a question of fact—whether it is, or is not, one of fact in any narrower sense which may be possessed by that term. Thus the question as to what is the reasonable and proper punishment for murder is a question of law, individual judicial opinion being absolutely excluded by a fixed rule of law. But what is the proper and reasonable punishment for theft is (save so far as judicial discretion is limited by the statutory appointment of a fixed maximum) a question of fact on which the law has nothing to say. Whether a contractor has been guilty of unreasonable delay in building a house is a question of fact; the law contains no rule for its determination. But whether the holder of a bill of exchange has been guilty of unreasonable delay in giving notice of dishonour is a question of law to be determined in accordance with certain fixed principles laid down in the Bills

of Exchange Act. The question whether a child accused of crime has sufficient mental capacity to be criminally responsible for his acts is one of fact, if the accused is over the age of eight years, but one of law (to be answered in the negative) if he is under that age. The Sale of Goods Act provides (section 56) that "where, by this Act, any reference is made to a reasonable time, the question what is a reasonable time is a question of fact". This means that there is no rule of law laid down for its determination.

In a second and different signification, a question of law is a question as to what the law is. Thus, an appeal on a question of law means an appeal in which the question for argument and determination is what the true rule of law is on a certain matter. Questions of law in this sense arise, not out of the existence of law, but out of its uncertainty. If the whole law was definitely ascertained, there would be no questions of law in this sense; but all questions to be answered in accordance with that law would still be questions of law in the former sense. When a question first arises in a court of justice as to the meaning of an ambiguous statutory provision, the question is one of law in this second sense; it is a question as to what the law is. But it is not a question of law in the first sense, but a question of fact. The business of the court is to determine what, in its own judgment and in fact, is the true meaning of the words used by the legislature. But when this question has once been judicially determined, the authoritative answer to it becomes a judicial precedent which is law for all other cases in which the same statutory provision comes in question. The question as to the meaning of the enactment has been transformed from one of fact into one of law in the first sense; for it has in all future cases to be answered in accordance with the authoritative interpretation so judicially placed upon the enactment. The judicial interpretation of a statute, therefore, represents a progressive transformation of the various questions of fact as to the meaning of that statute into questions of law (in the first sense) to be answered in conformity with the body of interpretative case-law so developed.

There is still another and third sense in which the expression

question of law is used. This arises from the composite character of the typical English tribunal, at any rate until recent years, and the resulting division of judicial functions between a judge and a jury. The general rule is that questions of law (in both of the foregoing senses) are for the judge, but that questions of fact (that is to say, all other questions) are for the jury. This rule, however, is subject to numerous and important exceptions. Though there are no cases in which the law (in the sense, at least, of the general law of the land) is left to a jury, there are many questions of fact that are withdrawn from the cognisance of a jury and answered by the judge. The interpretation of a document, for example, may be, and very often is, a pure question of fact, and nevertheless falls within the province of a judge. So the question of reasonable and probable cause for a prosecution—which arises in actions for malicious prosecution—is one of fact and yet one for the judge himself. So it is the duty of the judge to decide whether there is any sufficient evidence to justify a verdict for the plaintiff; and if he decides that there is not, the case is withdrawn from the jury altogether; yet this is mere matter of fact, undetermined by any authoritative rule of law. By an illogical though convenient usage of speech, any question which is thus within the province of the judge instead of the jury is called a question of law, even though it may be in the proper sense a pure question of fact. It is called a question of law because it is committed to and answered by the authority which normally answers questions of law only.

We proceed now to consider more particularly the nature of questions of fact, already incidentally dealt with in connection with questions of law. The term question of fact has more than one meaning. In its most general sense it includes all questions which are not questions of law. Everything is matter of fact which is not matter of law. And, as the expression question of law has three distinct applications, it follows that a corresponding diversity exists in the application of the contrasted term. A question of fact, therefore, as opposed to a question of law, means either (1) any question which is not predetermined by a rule of law; or (2) any question except a

question as to what the law is; or (3) any question that is to be answered by the jury instead of by the judge.

There is, however, a narrower and more specific sense, in which the expression question of fact does not include all questions that are not questions of law, but only some of them. In this sense a question of fact is opposed to a question of judicial discretion. The sphere of judicial discretion includes all questions as to what is right, just, equitable, or reasonable—so far as not predetermined by authoritative rules of law but committed to the *liberum arbitrium* of the courts. A question of judicial discretion pertains to the sphere of right, as opposed to that of fact in its stricter sense. It is a question as to what ought to be, as opposed to a question of what is. Matters of fact are capable of proof, and are the subject of evidence adduced for that purpose. Matters of right and judicial discretion are not the subject of evidence and demonstration, but of argument, and are submitted to the reason and conscience of the court. In determining questions of fact the court is seeking to ascertain the truth of the matter; in determining questions of judicial discretion it seeks to discover the right or justice of the matter. Whether the accused has committed the criminal act with which he is charged, is a question of fact; but whether, if guilty, he should be punished by way of imprisonment or only by way of fine, is a question of judicial discretion or of right. The Companies Act empowers the court to make an order for the winding-up of a company if (*inter alia*) the company is unable to pay its debts or the court is of opinion that it is just and equitable that the company should be wound up. The first of these questions is one of pure fact, whereas the second is a question of judicial discretion. The Divorce Court is empowered to grant divorce for adultery, and to make such provision as it may deem just and proper with respect to the custody of the children of the marriage. The question of adultery is one of fact; but the question of custody is one of right and judicial discretion.

Doubtless, in the wider sense of the term fact, a question whether an act is right or just or reasonable is no less a question of fact than the question whether that act has been done. But it is not a question of demonstrable fact to be dealt

with by a purely intellectual process; it involves an exercise of the moral judgment, and it is therefore differentiated from questions of pure fact and separately classified (a).

Having regard to this distinction, all matters and questions which come before a court of justice are of three classes:—

(1) Matters and questions of law—that is to say, all that are determined by authoritative legal principles;

(2) Matters and questions of judicial discretion—that is to say, all matters and questions as to what is right, just, equitable, or reasonable, except so far as determined by law;

(3) Matters and questions of fact—that is to say, all other matters and questions whatever.

In matters of the first kind, the duty of the court is to ascertain the rule of law and to decide in accordance with it. In matters of the second kind, its duty is to exercise its moral judgment, in order to ascertain the right and justice of the case. In matters of the third kind, its duty is to exercise its intellectual judgment on the evidence submitted to it in order to ascertain the truth. On the trial of a person accused of theft, for example, the question whether the act alleged to have been done by him amounts to the criminal offence of theft is a question of law, to be answered by the application of the rules which determine the scope and nature of the offence of theft and distinguish it from other offences, such as that of obtaining goods by false pretences; the question whether he has done the act so alleged against him is a question of fact, to be determined in accordance with the evidence; and the question as to what is the just and reasonable punishment to

(a) It is worthy of observation that there is yet a third meaning of the expression question or matter of fact, in which it is contrasted with a question or matter of opinion. A question of fact is one capable of being answered by way of demonstration—a question of opinion is one that cannot be so answered—one the answer to which is a matter of speculation which cannot be proved by any available evidence to be right or wrong. The past history of a company's business is a matter of fact; but its prospects of successful business in the future is a matter of opinion. A prospectus which erroneously sets out the former, contains misrepresentations of fact; a prospectus which merely contains prophecies of future prosperity does not, for this is a matter of opinion, not of fact (except in so far as the statement of an opinion implies that as a matter of fact the person stating it does hold the opinion). This distinction between matters of fact and matters of opinion is doubtless in the ultimate analysis merely one of degree, but it is one of practical importance in the law for some purposes. The distinction between matters of fact and matters of right, on the other hand, is a logical distinction of kind

be imposed upon him for his offence is a question of right or judicial discretion, to be determined in accordance with the moral judgment of the court.

The existence and development of a legal system represents the transformation, to a greater or less extent, of questions of fact and of judicial discretion into questions of law, by the establishment of authoritative and predetermined answers to these questions. This process of transformation proceeds chiefly within the sphere of judicial discretion, and only to a smaller extent within the sphere of pure fact. In respect of questions as to what is just, right, and reasonable, the purpose and effect of a system of law is to exclude and supersede to a very large extent the individual moral judgment of the courts, and to compel them to determine these questions in accordance with fixed and authoritative principles which express the established and permanent moral judgment of the community at large. Natural or moral justice is to a very large extent transmuted into legal justice; *jus naturale* becomes *jus positivum*. The justice which courts of justice are appointed to administer becomes for the most part such justice as is recognised and approved by the law, and not such justice as commends itself to the courts themselves. The sphere of judicial discretion is merely such portion of the sphere of right as has not been thus encroached upon by the sphere of law (b).

To a lesser extent, even questions of pure fact are similarly transformed into questions of law. Even to such questions the law will, on occasion, supply predetermined and authoritative answers. The law does not scruple, if need be, to say that the fact must be deemed to be such and such, whether it be so in truth or not. The law is the theory of things, as received and acted upon within the courts of justice, and this theory may or may not conform to the reality of things outside. The eye of the law does not infallibly see things as they are. Partly by deliberate design and partly by the errors and accidents of historical development, law and fact, legal theory and the truth of things, may fail in complete coincidence. We have ever to

(b) It is not meant to suggest that the tendency is incapable of being reversed. Sometimes, by statute or judicial decision, binding rules of law are cut away and judicial discretion restored. See *supra*, p. 51.

distinguish that which exists in deed and in truth from that which exists in law. Fraud in law, for example, may not be fraud in fact, and *vice versa*. That is to say, when the law lays down a principle determining, in any class of cases, what shall be deemed fraud and what shall not, this principle may or may not be true, and so far as it is untrue the truth of things is excluded by the legal theory of things.

This discordance between law and fact may come about in more ways than one. Its most frequent cause is the establishment of legal presumptions, whereby one fact is recognised by law as sufficient proof of another fact, whether it is in truth sufficient for that purpose or not. Such legal presumptions—*presumptiones juris*—are of two kinds, being either conclusive or rebuttable. A presumption of the first kind, sometimes called a *praesumptio juris et de jure*, constrains the courts to infer the existence of one fact from the existence of another, even though this inference could be proved to be false. A presumption of the second kind requires the courts to draw such an inference even though there is no sufficient evidence to support it, provided only that there is no sufficient evidence to establish the contrary inference. Thus a negotiable instrument is presumed to be given for value, a person not heard of for seven years is sometimes presumed to be dead, and an accused person is presumed to be innocent (c). A fact which by virtue of a legal presumption is deemed by law to exist, whether it exists or not, is said in the technical language of the law to exist constructively or by construction of law. Constructive fraud or constructive notice, for example, means fraud or notice which is deemed to exist by virtue of an authoritative rule of law, whether it exists in truth or not.

Another method by which the law on occasion deliberately departs from the truth of things for sufficient or insufficient reasons, is the use of the device known as a legal fiction—*factio juris*. This was a device familiar to primitive legal systems, though mostly fallen out of use in modern law (d). An important legal fiction recognised by modern systems is that of the adoption of children—a fiction which played a great part

(c) For the distinction between rebuttable presumptions of law and presumptions of fact see § 177.

(d) See Maine, *Ancient Law*, ch. 2, and Pollock's note in his edition, p. 48.

in the law of primitive communities. An adoptive child is a child who is not in fact the child of its adopting parent, but is deemed to be such by a legal fiction, with much the same results in law as if this fictitious parentage was real (e).

The same question may be partly one of law and partly one of fact or judicial discretion. This is so in two senses. In the first place, the question may be in reality composite, consisting of two or more questions combined, and the several components may be of different natures in this respect. The question, for example, whether a partnership exists between A and B is partly one of fact (*viz.*, what agreement has been made between them) and partly one of law (*viz.*, whether such partnership). Similar composite questions are innumerable. In the second place, there are many cases in which the an agreement is sufficient to constitute the legal relation of freedom of judicial discretion on any point is not wholly taken away by a fixed rule of law, but is merely restrained and limited by such a rule, and is left to operate within the restricted sphere so allowed to it. In such a case the question to be determined by the court is one of law so far as the law goes, and one of fact or judicial discretion as to the rest. The proper penalty for an offence is usually a question of this nature. The law imposes a fixed maximum, but leaves the discretion of the court to operate within the limits so appointed. So, in many cases, judicial discretion, instead of being

(e) In early law the purpose of most legal fictions was to alter indirectly and covertly a legal system so rigid that it could not be effectively altered in this respect by the direct and open process of legislation. The practical effect of any rule of law depends on the nature of the rule and on the nature of the facts to which it is applied. If the rule cannot itself be altered, its effect may be altered by establishing a legal fiction as to the nature of the facts. This device was familiar both to the law of Rome and in older days to the law of England. It usually assumed the form of fictitious allegations made in the pleadings in an action and not suffered to be contradicted. In Roman law foreigners were admitted to certain of the exclusive legal rights of Roman citizens by a fictitious allegation of citizenship, and in English law the old rule that the jurisdiction of English courts was limited to causes of action which arose in England was evaded by fictitious and non-traversable allegations that the foreign place in which the cause of action arose was situated in England. He who desired to enforce in the English courts a bond executed in France was permitted in his pleadings to allege a bond executed "at a certain place called Bordeaux in France in Islington in the County of Middlesex". "Whether there be such a place in Islington or no, is not traversable in that case." Co. Litt. 261 b. For a discussion of legal fictions see J. W. Jones, *Historical Introduction to the Theory of Law*, ch. 6; Fuller, "Legal Fictions" (1931), 25 Ill. L. Rev. 363, 513, 877.

excluded, is merely limited and controlled by rules of law which determine the general considerations which are to be taken into account as relevant and material in the exercise of this discretion. The discretion of the court has not been taken away, but it must be exercised within the limits, in the manner, and upon the considerations thus authoritatively indicated by law.

§ 23. The Territorial Nature of Law

We have defined the law as consisting of the rules recognised and acted upon by the courts in administering justice. It is to the courts, therefore, that we must go in order to ascertain what the law is, and a system of law is the whole body of legal doctrine recognised and applied by one and the same court in the exercise of its judicial functions. If this were all—if this were a complete account of the matter—each system of law would be regarded and known as the law of the particular court to which it so belongs. We should speak of the law of the High Court in London, and of the law of the Court of Session in Edinburgh. In fact, however, this is neither the legal nor the popular usage of speech, save where it is rendered necessary by special considerations arising from the concurrent existence of different systems of law administered by the same courts within the same territory. Commonly we speak not of the law of a court but of the law of a country. We speak not of the law of the High Court but of the law of England; and not of the law of the Court of Session but of the law of Scotland. We speak of a system of law as belonging to and in force in some defined territory, and not as belonging to and being in force in some particular court of justice. The law is conceived and spoken of as territorial. It is necessary, therefore, to consider the true significance of this territorial aspect and nature of a legal system. What is meant by saying that the system of law recognised and administered by the High Court of Justice in London is the law of England and is in force in England, and that the law in accordance with which the Court of Session in Edinburgh exercises its judicial functions is the law of Scotland and is in force in Scotland?

The answer to this question is somewhat surprisingly complex, and we must begin by distinguishing between the territorial enforcement of law and the territoriality of law itself.

The enforcement of law is undoubtedly territorial in the same way as a state is territorial; that is to say, the state power is in time of peace exercised (generally speaking) only within the territories of the state and on its public ships and aircraft and on vessels and aircraft registered under its laws.

The territoriality of law in this meaning flows from the political division of the world. No state allows other states, as a general rule, to exercise powers of government within it (*f*). The enforcement of law is therefore confined to the territorial boundaries of the state enforcing it. A person who commits a crime or a tort in state A, and who then removes himself and his property to state B, cannot, so long as he is in state B, be reached by the authorities of state A. He has certainly violated the law of state A, by an act committed within its territory, but the enforcement of that law, while he and his belongings are outside the territory, is impossible.

In the case of crimes this situation is largely remedied by the practice of extradition. States conclude treaties with each other, by which each agrees to surrender to the other persons found in its territory who are wanted for crimes committed in the territory of the other party to the treaty. Extradition is not practised in civil cases, but as a general rule every state gives a remedy in its own courts for civil wrongs wherever they may be committed. Generally it is either necessary as a matter of law, or desirable in order to get an effective judgment, to sue in the state in which the defendant happens to be for the time being, or at least in a state in which he has property. If a valid judgment is once obtained, it may generally be enforced through the courts of another state if the conditions laid down in the law of that other state are complied with.

So far we have been speaking of the territoriality of law-enforcement rather than of the territoriality of law. It is easy to understand how the enforcement of law can be regarded as territorial, for force is a physical affair and is manifested in space. When a defendant is imprisoned or his property sold, these are acts that can intelligibly be said to take place on a certain part of the earth's surface. What is not so obvious is

(*f*) There are exceptions; thus states are by international law allowed to exercise control over their armed forces while on friendly visits abroad.

how law itself can be said to be territorial. Law consists of rules. These rules exist only in the mind, and have no local habitation. It is true that the people in whose minds they exist are located in space, but obviously that is not the same thing. An expert on French law may be living in England, but that does not extend the "territory" of French law to part of England.

The nature of the problem can be seen more clearly if we take the case of English law and Scots law. English law is said to prevail south of the Tweed, Scots law north of it. What do we mean by these statements? Clearly we are not referring to the rule that a state cannot enforce its laws beyond its own boundaries, for England and Scotland are parts of the same state. In what sense, then, do English and Scots law stop short at the common boundary between the two countries? Similarly, in what sense can it be said that in a federation like the United States of America each component state has its own system of law which is valid as the law of the state?

There is only one possible answer to this question, but it is an answer that can be stated only with great caution and with many qualifications. The proposition that a system of law belongs to a defined territory means that it applies to all persons, things, acts and events within that territory (g), and does not apply to persons, things, acts or events elsewhere. For instance, the part of English law that is said to be emphatically "territorial" is the criminal law, and this, with but a few exceptions, applies to all offences committed in England, and does not apply to offences elsewhere. Similarly, the land-law of English courts applies only to land situated in England, and is not a universal non-territorial doctrine applied by those courts in suits relating to land situated elsewhere. So the law of marriage, divorce, succession, and domestic relations is not applied by English courts to all mankind, but only to those persons who by residence, domicile, or otherwise, are sufficiently connected with the territory of England.

Having said so much, we must begin to qualify. The proposition that a system of law applies only to persons, things,

(g) "Territory" includes for this purpose public vessels and aircraft and private vessels and aircraft registered in the state enforcing the particular system of law.

acts and events within a defined territory is not a self-evident truth; it is merely a generalisation from the practice of states. Also, it is a very rough and imperfect generalisation. To take English criminal law, there are several offences with which English courts will deal and to which they will apply English law, though committed elsewhere than in England: for example, piracy, and treason, murder or bigamy committed by British subjects in any part of the world. Some states, such as Turkey, go much beyond this, and apply their criminal law even to foreigners in respect of crimes committed abroad if the victims are their subjects and the foreigner concerned ventures within their territory (*gg*). Next, the rule that title to land is governed by the *lex situs* is not invariable. An English court of equity will apply certain equitable rules even to land situated abroad. Italian law rejects the *lex situs* in favour of the law of the owner's nationality, in cases of succession on death (*h*). Turning to pure personalty, this is governed in several respects, in Anglo-American jurisdictions, by the law of the owner's domicile. According to this rule English law may be applied by English courts to chattels that are not in England and that belong to a person who is not at the time in England, if the owner is regarded as having his permanent home in England. This is a slight move away from the strict territorial principle.

The English law of torts knows comparatively little of any territorial limitation. If an action for damages for negligence or other wrongful injury committed abroad is brought in an English court, it will in general be determined in accordance with English law and not otherwise (*i*). Then again, the law of procedure is in hardly any respect territorial. The English law of procedure is the law of English courts rather than the law of

(*gg*) See Berge, "Criminal Jurisdiction and the Territorial Principle" (1932), 30 Mich. L. Rev. 238. Even the English rules of criminal jurisdiction were extended in the peculiar circumstances of *R. v. Joyce* [1946] A. C. 347. For a discussion of the place where an act is deemed to be committed see *infra*, § 134.

(*h*) See Lorenzen, "Territoriality, Public Policy and the Conflict of Laws" (1924) 33 Yale L. J. at p. 740.

(*i*) The only limitation is that the act must be wrongful (not necessarily tortious) by the law of the place where it is committed: *Machado v. Fontes* [1897] 2 Q. B. 231. For criticisms of this case see Lorenzen in (1931) 47 L. Q. R. at 490; Robertson in (1940) 4 M. L. R. at 35 ff.; Cheshire, *Private International Law* (4th ed. 1952), 269; Falconbridge, "Torts in the Conflict of Laws" (1945) 23 Can. Bar Rev. 309.

England. It is the same for all litigants who come before those courts, whatever may be the territorial connections of the litigants or of their cause of action. Finally, a great qualification upon the territoriality of law is the existence in every legal system of a department known as the conflict of laws. The avowed object of the various systems of conflict of laws is to help to regulate situations that have a foreign element.

One or two examples may illustrate this last point. Suppose that two Englishmen make a contract in England to be performed in England. If an action is brought upon the contract in English courts, the courts will as a matter of course apply the English law of contract. But if a contract is made in France between a German and an American, and is meant to be performed in Italy, the English courts, if they have to consider a question of law arising out of the contract, will first of all have to consider what system of law applies to it. The answer is supplied by the department of English law known as the conflict of laws. Suppose that the English system of conflict of laws indicates that French law is to be applied. The English courts will then apply to the contract not the English law of contract, what may be called the domestic law, but the French law of contract. Yet the French law is applied only in virtue of a rule of the English system of conflict of laws. Thus although the English courts do not apply domestic English law to the contract, they do apply the English system of conflict of laws. Moreover, it seems that in the example given the French rule, as so selected and applied, is applied not as a rule of French law but as a rule of English law (j). (Yet it has not all the characteristics of rules of English domestic law; for instance, questions of foreign law are classed as questions of fact, not as questions of law.)

It seems, therefore, that the territoriality of law, if considered as something distinct from the territorial enforcement of law, is an idea that fits the facts only in a very imperfect way. It does not follow from the notion of law, but is simply a rule that may or may not be adopted as convenience or policy dictate.

We must also observe that the territoriality of a particular system of law may be regarded very differently (a) in the courts of the state whose law is in question, (b) in the courts of another state, and (c) in international tribunals applying public international law. In (a) the territoriality of law is a matter of self-limitation by the state in question, and varies from state to state. In (b) it is a matter for each state to decide, in framing its rules for the conflict of laws, how far it will recognise the legal rules of other states; here again the solution varies from state to state.

(j) See the demonstration of this by W. W. Cook, "The Logical and Legal Bases of the Conflict of Laws" (1924) 33 Yale L. J. 457.

In (c) there ought in theory to be a uniform solution for all states, though the rules of international law cannot be regarded as settled (k). To illustrate the three aspects of territoriality: in England any Act of the sovereign Parliament, however extra-territorial in nature, would be enforced by the courts (l). But this does not mean that the judgment of an English court enforcing such an Act would be regarded as valid by a foreign court or international tribunal, or that the Act itself would be regarded as valid by a foreign court or international tribunal. In general, states are prone to claim for themselves a wider extra-territorial competence than they are ready to accord to others.

We are now in a position to answer the question that was posed a short space back, namely, in what sense English law is the law of England and Scots law the law of Scotland. The answer seems to be that, although in some ways English law is confined to events in England and Scots law to events in Scotland, the outstanding characteristic of English law as opposed to Scots law is that it is the law of a system of courts known as the English courts, and the outstanding characteristic of Scots law as opposed to English law is that it is the law of a system of courts known as the Scottish courts. We are thus back to the conception of law as rules belonging to a system of courts. An example will bring out the significance of this. Suppose that two parties make a contract in some part of the world—England, Scotland or some foreign country. If an action be brought upon the contract in English courts, they will apply either (1) English domestic law, or (2) the English system of conflict of laws; the latter resulting in the application either of (a) English domestic law, or (b) the domestic law of another country. If, on the other hand, an action be brought in Scottish courts, they will apply either (1) Scots domestic law, or (2) the Scots system of conflict of laws (in fact this is virtually identical with the English, but it might well be different), and the latter will result in the application either of (a) Scots domestic law, or (b) the domestic law of another country. Thus each system of courts applies primarily its own system of law, though its own system of law, in the department known as conflict of laws, may lead it ultimately to apply some foreign system.

If the case goes on appeal to the House of Lords, then if the case comes from the English courts the House will act in the spirit of the English courts, and if it comes from the Scottish courts the House will act in the spirit of the Scottish courts. Suppose, for instance, that the case started in an English county court, and the county court judge held that the law applicable to the contract was

(k) See Lorenzen, "The Theory of Qualification and the Conflict of Laws" (1920) 20 Col. L. R. 246, at 278 ff.

(l) Cf. *Mortensen v. Peters* (1906) 14 Sc. L. T. 227; Oppenheim, *International Law* (8th ed. 1955) I. § 192, n. 1; Lauterpacht, "Is International Law Part of the Law of England?" (1939) 25 Trans. Grot. Soc. 51

(under the English system of conflict of laws) Scots domestic law, and that the Scots law was so-and-so. Suppose, further, that an appeal were taken from his decision to the Court of Appeal and thence to the House of Lords. The House would presumably be precluded from inquiring into the validity of the county court judge's determination of what the rule of Scots law was, for in English courts the determination of "foreign" (i.e., non-English) law is regarded as a matter of fact, and no appeal lies from the decision of a county court judge on a matter of fact. Yet if precisely the same question of Scots law arose in the Scottish courts, and went on appeal to the House of Lords, it would be treated as a question of law (m).

The dependence of the "law of the land" upon the court in which the case is heard has also been strikingly illustrated in the United States of America. In the United States each component state possesses its own system of law and of courts, and there is also a federal law and federal system of courts. Before 1938 it was possible for the federal court to take a different view of the law of (say) Kentucky from the courts of Kentucky themselves (n). What in such circumstances was "the law of Kentucky"? The answer could only be that "the law of Kentucky" depended upon the court before which the action is brought.

Since territoriality is not part of the idea of law, a system of law is readily conceivable, the application of which is limited and determined not by reference to territorial considerations, but by reference to the personal qualifications of the individuals over whom jurisdiction is exercised: qualifications such as nationality, race or religion. The law of English courts might conceivably be the personal law of Englishmen—of British subjects—rather than the territorial law of England; indeed, it is this now to some extent. The history of early law shows us systems of personal law existing to a much higher degree. The early law administered by the courts of Rome was, in the main, not the territorial law of Rome, but the personal law of the

(m) Within the British Commonwealth, each legislature legislates primarily for its own system of courts. Thus if Canada were to pass an Act regulating the conduct of Canadian citizens in Australia, such an Act would be part of Canadian law and would be enforced by the Canadian courts, but would not be enforced by the Australian courts except possibly under the Australian system of conflict of laws. Cf. *Re Middleton's Settlement* [1949] A. C. 418; [1947] Ch. 583 (C. A.), where an English court treated an English statute passed before the creation of the Irish Free State (now the Irish Republic) as constructively in the circumstances an Irish statute which was not to be applied by English courts.

(n) *Swift v. Tyson* (1842) 16 Pet. 1; overruled in *Erie R. R. v. Tompkins* (1938) 58 Sup. Ct. 817; 304 U. S. 64. See Shulman, "The Demise of *Swift v. Tyson*" (1938) 47 Yale L. J. 1336.

Romans. Foreigners had no part in it. It was the *jus civile*, the law of the *cives*. It was only by a process of historical development that the *jus gentium* was superadded to the *jus civile* as applicable to *cives* and *peregrini* equally (*nn*). In Europe, after the dissolution of the Western Roman Empire, the laws were to a large extent conceived as personal rather than territorial, the members of each race or nationality living by their own national laws (*o*). A similar process of thought and practice was observable until recently in the ex-territorial administration of the national laws of European States in the consular courts of the East. The law administered by an English consular court abroad was to be regarded rather as the personal law of Englishmen, than as being in any proper or intelligible sense the territorial law of England.

It may be added that in India personal systems of law survive even at the present day, though they are gradually being superseded by legislation which either unifies the law of two or more races (particularly, of course, Hindus and Muslims) or applies to the country on a territorial basis. Conflicts of personal law still cause difficulties, for which there are no satisfactory rules (*p*).

§ 24. Law and Equity

Until the year 1875, England presented the extremely curious spectacle of two distinct and rival systems of law, administered at the same time by different tribunals. These systems were distinguished as common law and equity, or merely as law and equity (using the term law in a narrow sense as including only one of the two systems). The common law was the older, being coeval with the rise of royal justice in England, and it was administered in the older courts, namely, the King's Bench, the Court of Common Pleas, and the

(nn) See Buckland and McNair, *Roman Law and Common Law* (2nd ed.) 25.

(o) See Story, *Conflict of Laws* (8th ed. 1883) § 2A, p. 3; Savigny, *History of Roman Law in the Middle Ages* (tr. Cathcart, 1829), I. ch. 3, 99-104; Vinogradoff, *Roman Law in Medieval Europe*, 15, 24 ff.

(p) See A. Gledhill, *Whither Indian Law?* (School of Oriental and African Studies, Univ. of London, 1956).

It is one of the misfortunes of legal nomenclature that there is no suitable and recognised term by which to denote the territorial area within which any system of territorial law is in force. Dicey in his *Conflict of Laws* uses the term country for this purpose.

Exchequer. Equity was the more modern body of legal doctrine, developed and administered by the Chancellor in the Court of Chancery as supplementary to, and corrective of, the older law. To a large extent the two systems were identical and harmonious, for it was a maxim of the Chancery that equity follows the law (*Aequitas sequitur legem*); that is to say, the rules already established in the older courts were adopted by the Chancellors and incorporated into the system of equity, unless there was some sufficient reason for their rejection or modification. In no small measure, however, law and equity were discordant, applying different rules to the same subject-matter. The same case would be decided in one way, if brought before the Court of King's Bench, and in another, if adjudged in Chancery. However, in case of conflict or variance the rule of the Chancery prevailed, because if a common-law action were brought in defiance of a rule of equity the defendant could apply to the Court of Chancery for an order, called a common injunction, directed to the plaintiff and ordering him not to continue his action. The Judicature Act, 1873, which came into operation in 1875, put an end to this anomalous state of things, by the abolition of the common injunction, and by the fusion of the two systems of courts into a single court called the High Court of Justice. It was further provided, in section 25, that "In all matters not hereinbefore particularly mentioned, in which there is any conflict or variance between the rules of equity and the rules of the common law with reference to the same matter, the rules of equity shall prevail".

Although the distinction between common law and equity has thus become to a large extent historical merely, it has not ceased to demand attention, for it is still valid and operative for many purposes. The so-called fusion of law and equity effected by the Judicature Act has abolished only such rules of the common law as were in conflict with the rules of equity in the sense that both rules could not be recognised and applied in one and the same court of justice. So far as common law and equity are consistent with each other and so capable of being administered concurrently in a single court, these two systems still subsist, and the distinction between them is still in force. Thus the distinction between legal and equitable ownership, legal and equitable rights, legal and equitable

remedies, remains an essential part of the modern system. It is still the case that one person may be the legal owner of property and another the equitable owner of the same property, as in the case of a trustee and his beneficiary. Similarly, a mortgage or charge may still be either legal or equitable. These distinctions between law and equity are not conflicts between two irreconcilable systems of law, but are such as to be capable of recognition as part of one and the same system. A legal right and an equitable right, legal ownership and equitable ownership, although as a matter of history they originated in different courts and in different legal systems, are now two different kinds of rights and of ownership recognised in the same court administering a single and harmonious legal system.

The term equity possesses at least three distinct though related senses. In the first of these, it is nothing more than a synonym for natural justice. *Aequitas* is *aequalitas*—the fair, impartial, or equal allotment of good and evil—the virtue which gives to every man his own. This is the popular application of the term, and possesses no special juridical significance.

In a second and legal sense equity means natural justice, not simply, but in a special aspect; that is to say, as opposed to the rigour of inflexible rules of law. *Aequitas* is contrasted with *summum jus*, or *strictum jus*, or the *rigor juris*. For the law lays down general principles, taking of necessity no account of the special circumstances of individual cases in which such generality may work injustice. So, also, the law may with defective foresight have omitted to provide at all for the case in hand, and therefore supplies no remedy for the aggrieved suitor. In all such cases, in order to avoid injustice, it may be considered needful to go beyond the law, or even contrary to the law, and to administer justice in accordance with the dictates of natural reason. This it is, that is meant by administering equity as opposed to law; and so far as any tribunal possesses the power of thus supplementing or rejecting the rules of law in special cases, it is, in this sense of the term, a court of equity, as opposed to a court of law.

The distinction thus indicated was received in the juridical theory both of the Greeks and the Romans. Aristotle defines equity as the correction of the law where it is defective on

account of its generality (*q*), and the definition is constantly repeated by later writers. Elsewhere he says (*r*): "An arbitrator decides in accordance with equity, a judge in accordance with law; and it was for this purpose that arbitration was introduced, namely, that equity might prevail." In the writings of Cicero we find frequent references to the distinction between *aequitas* and *jus*. He quotes as already proverbial the saying, *Summum jus summa injuria* (*s*), meaning by *summum jus* the rigour of the law untempered by equity. Numerous indications of the same conception are to be met with in the writings of the Roman jurists (*t*).

The doctrine passed from Greek and Latin literature into the traditional jurisprudence of the Middle Ages. We may see, for example, a discussion of the matter in the *Tractatus de Legibus* of Aquinas (*u*). It was well known, therefore, to the lawyers who laid the foundations of our own legal system, and like other portions of scholastic doctrine, it passed into the English law courts of the thirteenth century. There is good reason for concluding that the King's courts of that day did not consider themselves so straitly bound by statute, custom, or precedent, as to be incapable upon occasion of doing justice that went beyond the law (*a*). It was not until later that the

(*q*) Nic. *Ethics* V. 10. 3. The Greeks knew equity under the name *epieikeia*.

(*r*) *Rhet.* I. 13. 19.

(*s*) *De Officiis* I. 10. 33. See also *Pro Caecina* 23, 65: Ex aequo et bono, non ex callido versutoque jure rem judicari oportere. *De Oratore* I. 56, 240: Multa pro aequitate contra jus dicere. *De Officiis* III. 16. 67.

(*t*) In omnibus quidem, maxime tamen in jure, aequitas spectanda est. D. 50. 17. 90. Placuit in omnibus rebus praecipuam esse justitiae aequitatisque, quam stricti juris rationem. C. 3. 1. 8. Haec aequitas suggerit, etsi jure deficiamus. D. 39. 3. 2. 5. A constitution of Constantine inserted in Justinian's Code, however, prohibits all inferior courts from substituting equity for strict law, and claims for the emperor alone the right of thus departing from the rigour of the *jus scriptum*: Inter aequitatem jusque interpositam interpretationem nobis solis et oportet et licet inspicere. C. I. 14. 1.

(*u*) *Summa Theologiae* 2. 2. q. 120. art. 1. De *epieikeia* seu aequitate: in his ergo et similibus casibus malum est sequi legem positam; bonum autem est praetermissis verbis legis, sequi id quod poscit justitiae ratio et communis utilitas. Et ad hoc ordinatur *epieikeia*, quae apud nos dicitur aequitas.

(*a*) Pollock and Maitland, *H. E. L.* (2nd ed. 1898) I. 189-90; Holdsworth, *H. E. L.*, II. 250-2, 335-6; Glanville VII. 1: Aliquando tamen super hoc ultimo casu in curia domini Regis de consilio curiae ita ex aequitate consideratum est. Bracton, in discussing the various meanings of *jus*, says (*f. 3. a.*): Quandoque pro rigore juris, ut cum dividitur inter jus et aequitatem. Following Azo, who follows Cicero (*Topica* IV. 23), he says: Aequitas autem est

common law so hardened into an inflexible and inexpansive system of *strictum jus*, that *aequitas* fled from the older courts to the newly established tribunal of the Chancellor.

The Court of Chancery, an offshoot from the King's Council, was established to administer the equity which the common law had rejected, and of which the common law courts had declared themselves incapable. It provided an appeal from the rigid, narrow, and technical rules of the King's courts of law, to the conscience and equity of the King himself, speaking by the mouth of his Chancellor. The King was the source and fountain of justice. The administration of justice was part of the royal prerogative, and the exercise of it had been delegated by the King to his servants, the judges. These judges came during the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries to hold themselves bound by the inflexible rules established in their courts, but not so the King. A subject might have recourse, therefore, to the natural justice of the King, if distrustful of the legal justice of the King's courts. Here he could obtain *aequitas*, if the *strictum jus* of the law courts was insufficient for his necessities. This equitable jurisdiction of the Crown, after having been exercised for a time by the King's Council, was subsequently delegated to the Chancellor, who, as exercising it, was deemed to be the keeper of the royal conscience.

We have now reached a position from which we can see how the term equity acquired its third and last signification. In this sense, which is peculiar to English nomenclature, it is no longer opposed to law, but is itself a particular kind of law. It is that body of law which is administered in the Court of Chancery, as contrasted with the other and rival system administered in the common law courts. Equity is Chancery law as opposed to the common law. The equity of the Chancery has changed its nature and meaning. It was not originally law at all, but natural justice. The Chancellor, in the first days of his equitable jurisdiction, did not go about to set up and administer a new form of law, standing side by side

rerum convenientia, quae in paribus causis paria desiderat jura (f. 3. a.). See also f. 12 b. and f. 23 b. *Aequitas tamen sibi locum vindicat in hac parte.* See also Y. B. 30 and 31 Ed. I. 121: *Et hoc plus de rigore quam de aequitate.*

For the "equity" of the itinerant justices in the early fourteenth century see Bolland, S. S. vols. 24, 27, 29, 30; Holdsworth, *H. E. L.* II. 336-44.

with that already recognised in the Court of Common Pleas. His purpose was to administer justice without law, and this purpose he in fact fulfilled for many a day. In its origin the jurisdiction of the Chancellor was unfettered by any rules whatever. His duty was to do that "which justice, and reason, and good faith, and good conscience require in the case" (b). And of such requirements he was in each particular case to judge at his own good pleasure. In due time, however, there commenced that process of the encroachment of established principle upon judicial discretion which marks the growth of all legal systems. By degrees the Chancellor suffered himself to be restricted by rule and precedent in his interpretation and execution of the dictates of the royal conscience. Just in so far as this change proceeded, the system administered in Chancery ceased to be a system of equity in the original sense, and became the same in essence as the common law itself. The final result was the establishment in England of a second system of law, standing over against the older law, in many respects an improvement on it, yet, no less than it, a scheme of rigid, technical, predetermined principles. And the law thus developed was called equity, because it was in equity that it had its source.

Closely analogous to this equity-law of the English Chancellor is the *jus praetorium* of the Roman praetor. The praetor, the supreme judicial magistrate of the Roman republic, had much the same power as the Chancellor of supplying and correcting the deficiencies and errors of the older law, by recourse to *aequitas*. Just as the exercise of this power gave rise in England to a body of Chancery law, standing by the side of the common law, so in Rome a *jus praetorium* grew up distinct from the older *jus civile*. "*Jus praetorium*", says Papinian (c), "*est quod praetores introduxerunt, adjuvandi vel supplendi vel corrigendi juris civilis gratia, propter utilitatem publicam*". The chief distinction between the Roman and the English cases is that at Rome the two systems of law co-existed in the same court, the *jus praetorium* practically superseding the *jus civile* so far as inconsistent with it; whereas in England, as we have seen, law and equity were administered by distinct tribunals. Moreover, although the *jus praetorium* had its

(b) Cited in Spence's *Equitable Jurisdiction of the Court of Chancery* I. 408, note (a).

(c) D. I. I. 7. 1.

source in the *aequitas* of the praetor, it does not seem that this body of law was ever itself called *aequitas*. This transference of meaning is peculiar to English usage (*d*).

§ 25. General Law and Special Law

The whole body of the law—the entire *corpus juris*—may be conveniently regarded as divided into two parts which may be suitably distinguished as general law and special law. The former consists of the general or ordinary law of the land. The latter consists of certain other bodies of legal rules which are so special and exceptional in their nature, sources, or application that it is convenient to treat them as standing outside the general and ordinary law, as derogating from or supplementing it in special cases but not forming a constituent part of it. The distinction so drawn is probably not one which will stand the test of minute logical analysis, and its application has been to some extent perverted by the accidents of legal history and has varied from time to time in the course of legal development. It is to some extent a matter of merely arbitrary classification whether we regard certain rules as falling within the scope of the general law of the land, though exceptional in their nature, source, or application, or whether on the contrary we classify them as forming a special body of law having an independent existence, and operating within its own sphere of application as derogating from or supplementing the general law. Considerations of practical convenience, however, in respect of legal classification, exposition, and nomenclature justify the recognition of this distinction between the central or principal portion of the *corpus juris*, and the various bodies of legal doctrine that are merely subsidiary and accessory to it.

The chief forms of special law which may be thus recognised as standing outside the general law of the land are the following.

(*d*) A special application by English lawyers of the term equity in its original sense, as opposed to *strictum jus*, is to be seen in the phrase *the equity of a statute*. By this is meant the spirit of a law as opposed to its letter. A matter is said to fall within the equity of a statute when it is covered by the reason of the statute, although through defective draftsmanship it is not within its actual terms. "*Valent aequitas*", says Cicero, "*quae paribus in causis paria jura desiderat*." *Topica* IV. 23.

See further on equity in Roman law Buckland, *Equity in Roman Law*; on equity in general, see Allen, *Law in the Making* (5th ed. 1951) ch. 5; Seagle *The Quest for Law* (1941) ch. 13. and bibliography therein at p. 432

which we shall consider in their order: 1. Local law; 2. The conflict of laws; 3. Conventional law; 4. Autonomic law; 5. Martial law; 6. International law as administered in prize courts.

1. *Local law.* In the first place, the general law is the law of the whole realm. It is in force throughout the entire territory of the English courts. Standing apart from this system of general territorial application are divers bodies of local law in force in particular portions of the realm only. Such local law is of two kinds, being either local customary law or local enacted law. Local customary law has its source in those immemorial customs which prevail in particular parts of England and have there the force of law in derogation of the general law of the land. Local enacted law, on the other hand, has its source in the local legislative authority of boroughs and other self-governing communities empowered to govern their own districts by by-laws supplementary to the general law. All such local customs and local laws are part of English law, since they are recognised and enforced in English courts; but they are not part of the general territorial law of England.

2. *The conflict of laws.* Another form of special law consists of those rules of English law that determine the system of foreign law that may on occasion be applied, even in English courts, to the exclusion of the general law of England. Justice cannot be efficiently administered by tribunals which refuse on all occasions to recognise any law but their own. It is essential in many cases to take account of some system of foreign law and to measure the rights and liabilities of litigants by it, rather, than by the indigenous and territorial law of the tribunal itself. If, for example, two men make a contract in France and one of them sues on it in an English court, justice demands that in many respects the validity and effect of the contract shall be determined by French rather than by English law. French, instead of English, law may therefore be applied in such a case in English courts, in derogation of the general law. The principles which determine and regulate such substitution of foreign law for the law of England in English courts constitute the body of legal doctrine known as the conflict of laws or private international law.

It is important to notice that the system of conflict of laws, though sometimes called "private international law", is not international law in the sense of being a law between states. The conflict of laws is simply a part of the civil law of every state, and its detailed rules may vary from state to state, as indeed they do—though it is in the highest degree desirable that they should be kept so far as possible the same. The English system of conflict of laws is, therefore, a special part of English law.

It may be added that foreign law, so far as it is thus recognised in English courts, may be regarded in one sense as itself becoming English law *pro re nata*, for English law is nothing but the body of principles recognised and applied by English courts in the administration of justice. Yet for some technical purposes it is regarded as not being law at all, but fact; thus it has to be proved by evidence, judicial notice not being taken of it; and presumably an appeal from the decision of an English judge on a question of foreign law would be treated as an appeal on a question of fact, subject to the same limitations as appeals on other questions of fact.

3. *Conventional law.* A third form of special law contrasted with and distinct from the general law of the land is that which may be suitably distinguished as conventional law. This is the law which has its source in the agreement of those who are subject to it. Agreement is a juristic fact having two aspects and capable of being looked at from two points of view. It is both a source of rights and a source of law. The former of those aspects is the more familiar, but on occasion and for some purposes it is convenient to have regard to the latter. General rules laid down in a contract, for the determination of the rights, duties, and liabilities of the parties *inter se*, may (as we have seen (c)) be regarded as rules of law which those parties have agreed to substitute for or add to the rules of the general law. Agreement is a law for those who make it, which *pro tanto* supersedes, supplements, or derogates from the ordinary law of the land. *Modus et conventio vincunt legem*. To a large extent the general law is not peremptory and absolute, but consists of rules whose force is conditional on the

(c) *Supra*, § 16.

absence of any other rules agreed upon by the parties interested. These conventional rules may be regarded as just as truly law as the general rules which they have superseded or supplemented. The articles of association of a company, for example, are just as binding on the members of that company as are the provisions of the Companies Act, or those statutory regulations which apply in the absence of any articles specially agreed upon. Similarly, articles of partnership are legally binding on the partners, no less than the provisions of the Partnership Act which they supplement or modify. But although such conventional law may be said to be true law *inter partes*, it is not a portion of the general law of the land. Like local law and foreign law, it stands outside the general system, for it is destitute of general application.

4. *Autonomic law.* Similar considerations apply to that form of special law which will be more fully dealt with in a subsequent chapter under the designation of autonomic law. By this is meant that species of enacted law which has its source in various forms of subordinate and restricted legislative authority possessed by private and semi-private persons and bodies of persons. The former railway companies, for example, might make by-laws for the regulation of their undertakings, and this power is now continued by the Railway Executive. A university may make statutes for the government of its members. An incorporated company can, by altering its articles, impose new rules and regulations upon dissentient shareholders. All rules so constituted by the exercise of autonomous powers of private legislation are true rules of law, for they will be recognised and applied as law in the courts of justice. But they are not incorporated as part of the general law of England.

5. *Martial law.* Yet another form of *jus speciale* standing apart from the general *lex terræ* is that which is known as martial law. This is the law which is applied by courts martial in the administration of military justice. Courts martial are the courts of the army. All other courts of justice are distinguished as civil, and the law applied by these civil courts in the administration of civil justice is distinguished from martial law as being civil law, in one of the senses of that term.

Martial law is of three kinds. It is either (1) the law for

the discipline and government of the army itself; or (2) the law by which the army in time of war governs foreign territory in its military occupation outside the realm; or (3) the law by which in time of war the army governs the realm itself in derogation of the civil law, so far as required by military necessity and the public safety.

The first form, that by which the army itself is disciplined and controlled, is commonly known by the specific title of military law, the two other forms being distinguished from it as being martial law in a narrow and specific sense. Historically and generically, however, the term martial law is properly applied to all three kinds. Military law is distinguished in three respects from the other forms of martial law. In the first place, it is in force in time of peace no less than in time of war, whereas the other forms are in force only in time of war. In the second place, military law applies only to the army itself, whereas the other forms of martial law apply to the civilian population also. In the third place, military law is of statutory authority, being contained in the Army Act and the rules and regulations made thereunder, whereas the other forms of martial law have their source in the royal prerogative, except so far as Parliament may from time to time, in view of the emergencies created by public or civil war, see fit to make special statutory provision in that behalf.

The second form of martial law is that by which the army, when it goes beyond the realm in time of war, governs any foreign territory of which it is in military occupation for the time being. Territory so held by the King's forces is governed autocratically by the royal prerogative, which is commonly exercised through the military commanders of the army of occupation. Save so far as the ordinary civil courts of the territory are permitted to continue their functions and to administer civil justice there in accordance with the ordinary territorial law, the justice administered in that territory is military justice administered by courts martial, and the martial law administered by these courts consists of the rules established by the good pleasure of the military authorities.

The third and last kind of martial law is that which is established and administered within the realm itself in derogation of the civil law, when a state of war exists within the

realm, whether by way of invasion or by way of rebellion. The legality of such substitution of military for civil justice within the realm itself in time of war has been the subject of much difference of opinion. It is held by some that it is never lawful, unless expressly authorised by Act of Parliament, and that the authority of the civil courts and the civil law is absolute in time of war no less than in time of peace. According to this view the exercise of military authority within the realm in time of war in derogation of the civil law is always illegal, whatever moral justification for it may exist in considerations of military necessity and the public safety, in the absence of statutory sanction, either precedent, or subsequent by way of Acts of indemnity and ratification. This is not the place in which this question can be adequately discussed. It is sufficient to say that the better opinion would seem to be that even within the realm itself the existence of a state of war and of national danger justifies in law the temporary establishment of a system of military government and military justice in derogation of the ordinary law of the land, in so far as this is reasonably deemed necessary for the public safety. To this extent and in this sense it is true that *inter arma leges silent*. The formal establishment of such a system of military government and justice in time of internal war or rebellion is commonly known as the proclamation of martial law. With the acts of military authorities done in pursuance of such a system the civil courts of law will not concern themselves in time of war; and even after peace has come again, the acts so done in time of war may be justified in the civil courts, so far as done in good faith and with reasonable cause in view of the real or apparent necessity which gave occasion to them (f). In short, the legal basis of martial law in this third sense is simply the common-law doctrine of necessity.

6. *International law*. The last kind of special law which it is necessary to distinguish from the general law of the land is that portion of the law of nations which is administered in the prize courts of the state in time of war. In a former chapter we saw that international law, or the law of nations,

(f) See *Ex parte Marais*, [1902] A. C. 109; Keir and Lawson, *Cases on Constitutional Law* (4th ed. 1954) 431 ff. As to the history of martial law, see Holdsworth, "Martial Law Historically Considered", (1902) 18 L. Q. R. 117.

consists of a body of rules the primary purpose of which is to regulate the conduct of independent states towards each other. The rules of international law are not as such, and in general, recognised and administered by courts of justice as being also rules of civil law. The remedy for breaches of international law is not in general to be found in the law courts of the state. A treaty or other international agreement is not in general a contract which creates legal rights and obligations of which the courts of justice will take notice. It is true that to some extent civil law and international law deal with the same subject-matters, and that when this is so, identical or similar rules tend to be established concurrently in both systems (g). Both civil and international law, for example, find it necessary to determine the limits of jurisdiction and state authority on the high seas; and it is obviously expedient that these rules should be determined in the same way by both systems. But this tendency of international law to borrow from the civil law and of the civil law to conform more or less accurately to the international law on the same matter is a very different thing from the recognition of international law as having, *per se* or *proprio vigore*, the force and authority of civil law in the state's courts of justice. As a general rule it possesses no such force or authority. Nevertheless, there is one particular portion of the law of nations which is thus recognised by courts of justice as having in itself the force and nature of civil law also. It is that portion which regulates the practice of the capture of ships and cargoes at sea in time of war, and which is known as prize law. By a rule of international law, all states which desire to exercise this right of capture are under an obligation, while at war, to establish and maintain within their dominions certain courts called prize courts, whose function is to investigate the legality of all captures of ships or cargoes, and to administer justice as between the captors and all persons interested in the property seized. If the seizure is lawful, the property is condemned by those courts as lawful prize of war; and if unlawful, decrees are made for such restitution or redress

(g) See Lauterpacht, *Private Law Sources and Analogies of International Law*; Lauterpacht, "Is International Law Part of the Law of England?" (1939) 25 *Trans. Grot. Soc.* 51; Dias, "The Mechanism of Definition as Applied to International Law", [1954] *C. L. J.* 215.

as the law requires. Now a prize court is not an international tribunal; it is a court established by and belonging exclusively to the individual state by which the ships or cargoes have been taken. The prize court of England was formerly the Court of Admiralty, and is now the Probate, Divorce and Admiralty Division of the High Court of Justice. Nevertheless, the law which it is the duty and function of these courts to administer is the law of nations. It has its source in the customs and treaties of states and the decisions of international tribunals, and not in the legislative authority of the individual state to which the court belongs. But because of the fact that this portion of international law is thus recognised and applied by prize courts in the administration of the justice of those courts, it is also civil law—inasmuch as civil law includes all rules, whatever their source, which are recognised and applied by the courts of justice of a state. Prize law, therefore, has a two-fold nature and aspect. It is international law, because it prevails between nations; and it is at the same time civil law, because it governs the administration of justice in civil courts. Yet although prize law possesses the true nature of civil law, and is therefore to be considered as part of the entire body of English law, it is not part of the general law of the land. Its exceptional source and nature justify its separate classification as a form of *jus speciale* along with local law, the conflict of laws, martial law, and the other forms that we have already dealt with.

The true nature of prize law as being essentially the law of nations, entitled, *proprio vigore*, to be recognised and applied as civil law, was authoritatively established by the decision of the Privy Council in the case of the *Zamora* during the first world war (*h*). It was unsuccessfully contended in that case that prize law as administered in English courts has its source in the royal prerogative, and that Orders in Council can establish for the prize courts such law as is thought proper in derogation of, or in substitution for, the established rules of international law. Lord Parker, delivering the judgment of the court, speaks as follows:

“The law which the Prize Court is to administer is not the national law or, as it is sometimes called, the municipal law, but the

(*h*) [1916] 2 A. C. 77.

law of nations—in other words, international law. . . . Of course the Prize Court is a municipal court, and its decrees and orders owe their validity to municipal law. The law it enforces may therefore in one sense be considered a branch of municipal law. Nevertheless the distinction between municipal and international law is well defined. A court which administers municipal law is bound by and gives effect to the law as laid down by the sovereign state which calls it into being. It need inquire only what that law is, but a court which administers international law must ascertain and give effect to a law which is not laid down by any particular state, but originates in the practice and usage long observed by civilised nations in their relations towards each other, or in express international agreement. . . . It cannot, of course, be disputed that a prize court, like any other court, is bound by the legislative enactments of its own sovereign state. A British prize court would certainly be bound by Acts of the Imperial Legislature. But it is none the less true that if the Imperial Legislature passed an Act the provisions of which were inconsistent with the law of nations, the Prize Court in giving effect to such provisions would no longer be administering international law. It would, in the field covered by such provisions, be deprived of its proper function as a prize court”.

§ 26. The Common Law

In the preceding section of this chapter we have seen that the entire *corpus juris*—the complete body of legal rules recognised and applied in English courts of justice—is divisible into two parts, which have been distinguished as the general law of the land and bodies of special law supplementing and derogating from the general law within the sphere of their special application. We have further considered in a summary manner the chief branches of this *jus speciale*, namely, local law, the conflict of laws, conventional law, autonomic law, martial law, and the international law administered in prize courts. We have now to notice that the general law of England is itself divided into three parts, which are distinguished as statute law, equity, and common law. These three portions of the law are distinguished as derived from different sources. Statute law is that portion of the law which is derived from legislation, including in that term, not merely the legislation of Parliament, but also the exercise of subordinate and delegated legislative power by public authorities under the authority of Parliament, as, for example, regulations made under a statute. It is enacted or written law (*jus scriptum*) as opposed to unenacted or

unwritten law (*jus non scriptum*). Equity, on the other hand, is that system of law which had its origin in the Court of Chancery, and which has been already considered in a previous part of this chapter. It is a form of case law having its source in the judicial precedents of that court and of the modern courts by which the legal system of the Court of Chancery is now administered and developed. All the residue of the general law of England, after thus excepting statute law and equity, is known as the common law. It is a form of case law having its source in the judicial decisions of the old courts of King's Bench, Common Pleas and Exchequer, and of the modern courts by which the system so established is now administered and developed (i).

The common law is the entire body of English law—the total *corpus juris Angliæ*—with three exceptions, namely (1) statute law, (2) equity, (3) special law in its various forms. When, therefore, it is said that a certain rule is a rule of common law, the precise significance of the statement depends on the particular branch of law which for the purpose in hand is thus contrasted with the common law. We may mean that it is a rule of common law as opposed to a rule established by statute; or as opposed to a rule of equity; or as opposed to a rule of special law—for example, a local custom, or a rule of foreign law applied in exclusion of the law of England, or a rule of military or prize law, or a conventional rule established by the parties in derogation of the common law. Indeed, the phrase may in a particular context include one of the types of law that according to the above definition is excluded from it. Thus if a contrast be made between “common law” and “statute”, the intention may be to include equity under the phrase “the common law”; and if a contrast be made between “the common law” and “equity”, the intention may be to

(i) The case law, on the other hand, that is produced by way of the judicial interpretation of the statute law must itself be classed as forming part of the statute law from which it proceeds, for the purpose of this division of the law into statute law, equity, and common law. Common law and equity do not comprise the whole body of case law to be found in the law reports, but only that portion of case law that is derived from some other source than statutory interpretation. The case law derived from a statute is merely the statute itself, as authoritatively construed by the law courts.

include statutory amendments under the phrase "the common law" (k).

As opposed to equity the common law is not infrequently called law *simpliciter*. We speak of law and equity, rather than of common law and equity, notwithstanding the fact that equity is just as truly a branch of law as the common law itself. For in its origin equity was not law at all, but was *justitia naturalis* administered in Chancery to correct the defects or supply the deficiencies of that *strictum jus* which was administered in the King's courts of law.

In its historical origin the term common law (*jus commune*) was identical in meaning with the term general law as already defined. The *jus commune* was the general law of the land—the *lex terrae*—as opposed to *jus speciale*. By a process of historical development, however, the common law has now become, not the entire general law, but only the residue of that law after deducting equity and statute law. It is no longer possible, therefore, to use the expression common law and general law as synonymous. How this came about in the case of equity is obvious. For equity was at first a matter of discretion, and so was not regarded as law. Now, of course, equity is just as much part of the ordinary or general law of the land as is the common law itself. Nevertheless legal nomenclature has remained unchanged, and although equity has now become *jus commune* in truth, it has not acquired a title to that designation. Equity is a part of the general law, but not part of the common law.

The reason for the distinction between common law and statute law is not so easily intelligible. If *jus commune* meant originally merely the general law of the land, how is it that it does not include statute law? The explanation is apparently this, that statute law was originally conceived as a form of *jus speciale* derogating from the *jus commune*. A statute was *contra jus commune*, just as a local custom or the law of Chancery was. The general or common law of the land was conceived as a single, uniform, unchanging system of legal

(k) Sir John Salmond denied that the meaning of the phrase "the common law" could vary in this way; but in § 46 of the 7th edition he himself seemed to use it to include equity. See the criticism of his view in (1945) 61 L. Q. R. 302.

doctrine based on the immemorial customs of the realm, as authoritatively declared by the decisions of the King's courts and applied in all cases save where some different rule, drawn from some other source, prevailed over it. Legislation, no less than local custom, was accounted one of those sources of alien rules, forming no part of the general law, but breaking in upon the established doctrine of that law by way of exceptional interference *ab extra*.

In modern times, however, it is no longer possible in any proper scheme of legal classification or arrangement to take this ancient view of the relation between statute and common law. The immense development of statute law in modern times and its invasion of almost every portion of the old common law has made it impossible now to treat the common law as possessing any independent existence as a special and central portion of the *corpus juris*, subject merely to the exceptional interference of special statutory provisions possessing the same relation to it as local custom does. Common law and statute law must now be regarded as fused into a single system of general law, just as in the case of common law and equity. Indeed, a very large portion of the general law has its sole source in statute, and the residue of the common law is undergoing a slow transformation into statute law by the process known as codification. Yet although statute law must now be recognised in any logical and practicable scheme of legal classification as being part of the general law of the land, the older mode of thought is still to be traced in the persistence of the ancient usage of legal speech. Statute law, although it is part of the general law of the land, is still distinguished in name from the common law, just as equity is still distinguished from it.

The expression common law, *jus commune*, was adopted by English lawyers from the canonists, who used it to denote the general law of the Church as opposed to those divergent usages (*consuetudines*) which prevailed in different local jurisdictions, and superseded or modified within their own territorial limits the common law of Christendom. This canonical usage must have been familiar to the ecclesiastical judges of the English law courts of the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, and was adopted by them. We find the distinction between common

law and special law (*commune ley* and *especial ley*) well established in the earliest Year Books (1).

The phrase "the common law" is also used to mean the whole law of England. It frequently bears this meaning when "the common law" is contrasted with a foreign system like Roman law or French law. Alternatively, in a context like this, the phrase may bear a still more extended sense, meaning the principles of English law as they have been adopted in the other "common law" countries, like the United States of America, Canada, Australia, New Zealand and the Irish Republic.

§ 27. Constitutional Law

The organisation of a modern state is of extraordinary complexity, and it is usual to regard it as divisible into two distinct parts. The first consists of its fundamental or essential elements; the second consists of its secondary elements—the details of state structure and state action. The first, essential, and basal portion is known as the *constitution* of the state. The second has no generic title.

Constitutional law is, as its name implies, the body of those legal rules which determine the constitution of the state. It is not possible to draw any hard and fast line between the constitution and the remaining portions of the state's organisation; neither, therefore, is it possible to draw any such line between constitutional law and other branches of the legal system. The distinction is one of degree, rather than one of kind, and is drawn for purposes of practical convenience, rather than in obedience to any logical requirement. The more important, fundamental, and far-reaching any principle or practice is, the more likely it is to be classed as constitutional. Conversely, the more special, detailed, and limited in its application, the less likely it is to find a place in any exposition of the law and practice of the constitution. The structure of the supreme legislature and the methods of its action pertain to constitutional law; the structure and operations of

(1) Y. B. 20 and 21 Ed. I. 329. See Pollock and Maitland, *H. E. L.* (2nd. ed. 1898) I. 176. The term *jus commune* is found in Roman law also, but in senses unconnected with that which here concerns us. It sometimes signifies *jus naturale* as opposed to *jus civile* (D. 1. 1. 6. pr.), while at other times it is contrasted with *jus singulare*, that is to say anomalous rules of law inconsistent with general legal principles, but established *utilitatis causa* to serve some special need or occasion. D. 28. 6. 15; D. 1. 3. 16.

subordinate legislatures, such as those possessed by the colonies, are justly entitled to the same position; but those of such subordinate legislatures as a borough council would by general consent be treated as not sufficiently important and fundamental to be deemed part of the constitution. So the organisation and powers of the Supreme Court of Judicature, treated in outline and not in detail, pertain to constitutional law; while it is otherwise with courts of inferior jurisdiction, and with the detailed structure and practice of the Supreme Court itself.

In some states, though not in England, the distinction between constitutional law and the remaining portions of the legal system is accentuated and made definite by the embodiment of the former in a special and distinct enactment, the terms of which cannot be altered by the ordinary forms of legislation. Such constitutions are said to be *rigid*, as opposed to those which are *flexible*. That of the United States of America, for example, is set forth in a document agreed upon by the founders of the Commonwealth as containing all those principles of state structure and action sufficiently important to be deemed fundamental and therefore constitutional. The provisions of this document cannot be altered without the consent of three-fourths of the legislatures of the different states. The English constitution on the other hand is flexible; it is defined and set apart in no distinct document, and is not distinguishable from the residue of the law in respect of the methods of its alteration.

We have defined constitutional law as the body of those legal principles which determine the constitution of a state—which determine, that is to say, the essential and fundamental portions of the state's organisation. We have here to face an apparent difficulty and a possible objection. How, it may be asked, can the constitution of a state be determined by law at all? There can be no law unless there is already a state whose law it is, and there can be no state without a constitution.

The state and its constitution are therefore necessarily prior to the law. How, then, does the law determine the constitution? Is constitutional law in reality law at all? Is not the constitution a pure matter of *fact*, with which the law has no concern? The answer is, that the constitution is both a matter of fact and a matter of law. The constitution as it exists *de facto* underlies of necessity the constitution as it exists *de jure*. Constitutional law involves concurrent constitutional practice. It is merely the reflection, within courts of law, of the external objective reality of the *de facto* organisation of the state. It

is the theory of the constitution, as received by courts of justice. It is the constitution, not as it is in itself, but as it appears when looked at through the eye of the law.

The constitution as a matter of fact is logically prior to the constitution as a matter of law. In other words, constitutional practice is logically prior to constitutional law. There may be a state and a constitution without any law, but there can be no law without a state and a constitution. No constitution, therefore, can have its source and basis in the law. It has of necessity an extra-legal origin, for there can be no talk of law until some form of constitution has already obtained *de facto* establishment by way of actual usage and operation. When it is once established, but not before, the law can, and will, take notice of it. Constitutional facts will be reflected with more or less accuracy in courts of justice as constitutional law. The law will develop for itself a theory of the constitution, as it develops a theory of most other things which may come in question in the administration of justice.

As an illustration of the proposition that every constitution has an extra-legal origin, we may take the United States of America. The original constituent states achieved their independence by way of rebellion against the lawful authority of the English Crown. Each of these communities thereupon established a constitution for itself, but way of popular consent expressed directly or through representatives. By virtue of what legal power or authority was this done? Before these constitutions were actually established, there was no law in these colonies save that of England, and it was not by the authority of this law, but in open and forcible defiance of it, that these colonial communities set up new states and new constitutions. Their origin was not merely extra-legal, it was illegal. Yet, so soon as these constitutions succeeded in obtaining *de facto* establishment in the rebellious colonies, they received recognition as legally valid from the courts of those colonies. Constitutional law followed hard upon the heels of constitutional fact. Courts, legislatures, and law had alike their origin in the constitution, therefore the constitution could not derive its origin from them. So, also, with every constitution that is altered by way of illegal revolution. By what legal authority was the Bill of Rights passed, and by what legal title

did William III assume the Crown? Yet the Bill of Rights is now good law, and the successors of King William have held the Crown by valid titles. *Quod fieri non debet, factum valet* (p).

Constitutional law, therefore, is the judicial theory, reflection, or image of the constitution *de facto*, that is to say, of constitutional practice. Here, as elsewhere, law and fact may be more or less discordant. The constitution as seen by the eye of the law may not agree in all points with the objective reality. Much constitutional doctrine may be true in law but not in fact, or true in fact but not in law. Power may exist *de jure* but not *de facto*, or *de facto* but not *de jure*. In law, for example, the consent of the Crown is no less necessary to legislation, than is that of the two houses of Parliament, yet in fact the Crown has no longer any power of refusing its consent. Conversely, the whole system of cabinet government, together with the control exercised by the House of Commons over the executive, is as unknown in law as it is well established in fact. Even in respect of the boundaries of the state's territories the law and the fact may not agree. A rebellious province may have achieved its *de facto* independence, that is to say, it may have ceased to be in the *de facto* possession and control of the state, long before this fact receives *de jure* recognition.

Nowhere is this discordance between the constitution in fact and in law more serious and obvious than in England. A statement of the strict legal theory of the British constitution would differ curiously from a statement of the actual facts. Similar discrepancies exist, however, in most other states. A complete account of a constitution, therefore, involves a statement of constitutional custom as well as of constitutional law. It involves an account of the organised state as it exists in practice and in fact, as well as of the reflected image of this organisation as it appears in legal theory.

Although the constitution *de jure* and the constitution *de facto* are not necessarily the same, they nevertheless tend towards coincidence. Constitutional law and practice react upon each other, each striving to assimilate the other to itself. The objective facts of state organisation tend to mould legal theory

(p) See *infra*, § 41.

into conformity with themselves. They seek expression and recognition through legislation, or through the law-creating functions of the courts. Conversely, the accepted legal theory endeavours to realise itself in the facts. The law, although it necessarily involves a pre-existing constitution, may nevertheless react upon and influence the constitution from which it springs. It cannot create a constitution *ex nihilo*, but it may modify to any extent one which already exists. Constitutional practice may alter, while constitutional law remains the same, and *vice versa*, but the most familiar and effective way of altering the practice is to alter the law. The will of the body politic, as expressed through the legislature and the courts, will commonly realise itself in constitutional fact no less than in constitutional theory (q).

SUMMARY

Law and Fact.

Questions of law.

Three meanings of the term:

1. Questions to be answered in accordance with a rule of law.
2. Questions as to what the law is.
3. Questions to be answered by the judge instead of by the jury.

Questions of fact.

The meanings of the term:

1. As opposed to questions of law.
2. As opposed to questions of right or judicial discretion.

All questions for judicial determination of three kinds:

1. Questions of law, to be determined in accordance with fixed rules of law.
2. Questions of judicial discretion, to be determined in accordance with the moral judgment of the court.
3. Questions of fact, to be determined in accordance with the evidence.

Transformation of questions of judicial discretion into questions of law by the development of authoritative rules of law.

Transformation of questions of fact into questions of law.

Legal presumptions.

Legal fictions.

Questions of mixed law and fact.

The territorial nature of law. The law of the land.

The territoriality of law-enforcement.

The territoriality of law itself.

(q) For the effect of constitutional conventions upon the law see Sir Ivor Jennings, *The Law and the Constitution* (3rd ed. 1943) ch. 3.

Law and equity.

The Court of Chancery and the Courts of Common Law.

The meanings of the term equity:

1. Natural justice in general.
2. Natural justice in its special aspect, as opposed to the *strictum jus* of the law courts.
3. The system of law developed and administered by the Court of Chancery.

General law and special law.

General law the ordinary law of the land.

Special law—accessory bodies of exceptional law derogating from or supplementing the ordinary law of the land.

Kinds of special law:

1. Local law.
 - (a) Local customary law.
 - (b) Local enacted law—*e.g.*, by-laws.
2. The conflict of laws—determining the system of foreign law to be applied by English courts.
3. Conventional law—made by agreement as law for the parties. *Modus et conventio vincunt legem.*
4. Autonomic law—made by private authority in the exercise of subordinate legislative power: *e.g.*, the by-laws of a railway company or the statutes of a university.
5. Martial law administered by courts martial:
 - (a) Military law for the discipline of the army.
 - (b) Martial law for the military government of foreign territory in military occupation.
 - (c) Martial law within the realm in time of war. *Inter arma leges silent.*
6. International law administered in the prize courts.

Common law:

The entire *corpus juris* except—

1. Statute law.
2. Equity.
3. Special law.

The general law of the land therefore consists of three parts:

1. Statute law.
2. Equity.
3. Common law.

Common law in its original sense identical with the general law of the land.

Equity formerly special law, now part of the general law.

Statute law formerly special law, now part of the general law.

Consequent distinction between common law and general law.

Constitutional law.

Its nature.

Its relation to constitutional fact.

CHAPTER 4

THE ADMINISTRATION OF JUSTICE

§ 28. Necessity of the Administration of Justice

"A HERD of wolves", it has been said (a), "is quieter and more at one than so many men, unless they all had one reason in them, or have one power over them." Unfortunately they have not one reason in them, each being moved by his own interests and passions; therefore the other alternative is the sole resource. For the cynical emphasis with which he insists upon this truth, the name and reputation of the philosopher Hobbes have suffered much. Yet his doctrine, however hyperbolically expressed, is true in substance. Man is by nature a fighting animal and force is the *ultima ratio*, not of kings alone, but of all mankind. Without "a common power to keep them all in awe", it is impossible for men to cohere in any but the most primitive forms of society. Without it, civilisation is unattainable, injustice is unchecked and triumphant, and the life of man is, as the author of *Leviathan* tells us, "solitary, poor, nasty, brutish, and short" (b). However orderly a society may be, and to whatever extent men may appear to obey the law of reason rather than that of force, and to be bound together by the bonds of sympathy rather than by those of physical constraint, the element of force is none the less present and operative. It has become partly or wholly latent, but it still exists. A society in which the power of the state is never called into actual exercise marks, not the disappearance of governmental control, but the final triumph and supremacy of it.

(a) Jeremy Taylor, *Works*, XIII. 306, Heber's ed.

(b) Hobbes, *Leviathan*, ch. 13: "Hereby it is manifest that during the time men live without a common power to keep them all in awe, they are in that condition which is called war; and such a war as is of every man against every man. . . . Whatsoever therefore is consequent to a time of war, where every man is enemy to every man, the same is consequent to the time wherein men live without other security than what their own strength and their own invention shall furnish them withal. In such condition there is no place for industry . . . no arts, no letters, no society, and, which is worst of all, continual fear and danger of violent death; and the life of man, solitary, poor, nasty, brutish, and short."

It has been thought and said by men of optimistic temper, that force as an instrument for the coercion of mankind is merely a temporary and provisional incident in the development of a perfect civilisation. We may well believe, indeed, that with the progress of civilisation we shall see the gradual cessation of the actual exercise of force, whether by way of the administration of justice or by way of war. To a large extent already, in all orderly societies, this element in the administration of justice has become merely latent; it is now for the most part sufficient for the state to declare the rights and duties of its subjects, without going beyond declaration to enforcement. A striking illustration of this is the increasing popularity of the action for a declaration, which seeks no relief other than a declaration of the law or of the rights of the parties. Yet there is always the possibility of an action for effective enforcement in the background. Ultimately there is no substitute for the rule of force administered through the law. Men being what they are, their conflicting interests, real or apparent, draw them in diverse ways; and their passions prompt them to the maintenance of these interests by all methods possible, notably by that method of private force to which the public force is the only adequate reply.

The constraint of public opinion is a valuable and, indeed, indispensable supplement to that of law, but an entirely insufficient substitute for it. The relation between these two is one of mutual dependence. If the administration of justice requires for its efficiency the support of a healthy national conscience, that conscience is in its turn equally dependent on the protection of the law and the public force. A coercive system based on public opinion alone, no less than one based on force alone, contains within itself elements of weakness that would be speedily fatal to efficiency and permanence. The influence of the public censure is least felt by those who need it most. The law of force is appointed not for the just but for the unjust; while the law of opinion is set rather for the former than for the latter, and may be defied with a large measure of impunity by determined evildoers. The rewards of successful iniquity are upon occasion very great; so much so that any law which would prevail against it must have sterner sanctions at its back than any known to the public censure.

It is also to be observed that the influence of the national conscience, unsupported by that of the national force, would be counteracted in any but the smallest and most homogeneous societies by the internal growth of smaller societies or associations possessing separate interests and separate antagonistic consciences of their own. It is certain that a man cares more for the opinion of his friends and immediate associates, than for that of all the world besides. The censure of ten thousand may be outweighed by the approval of ten. The honour of thieves finds its sanction and support in a law of professional opinion, which is opposed to, and prevails over, that of national opinion. The social sanction, therefore, is an efficient instrument only so far as it is associated with, and supplemented by, the concentrated and irresistible force of the incorporate community. Men being what they are—each keen to see his own interest and passionate to follow it—society can exist only under the shelter of the state, and the law and justice of the state is a permanent and necessary condition of peace, order, and civilisation.

§ 29. Origin of the Administration of Justice

The administration of justice is the modern and civilised substitute for the primitive practices of private vengeance and violent self-help. In the beginning a man redressed his wrongs and avenged himself upon his enemies by his own hand, aided, if need be, by the hands of his friends and kinsmen; but at the present day he is defended by the sword of the state. For the expression of this and other elements involved in the establishment of political government, we may make use of the contrast, familiar to the philosophy of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, between the civil state and the state of nature. This state of nature is now commonly rejected as one of the fictions which flourished in the era of the social contract, but such treatment is needlessly severe. The term certainly became associated with much false or exaggerated doctrine touching the golden age, on the one hand, and the *bellum omnium contra omnes* of Hobbes, on the other, but in itself it nevertheless affords a convenient mode for the expression of an undoubted truth. As long as there have been men, there has

probably been some form of human society. The state of nature therefore, is not the absence of society, but the absence of a society so organised on the basis of physical force as to constitute a state. Though human society is coeval with mankind, the rise of political society, properly so called, is an event in human history.

One of the most important elements, then, in the transition from the natural to the civil state is the substitution of the force of the organised community for the force of individuals, as the instrument of the redress and punishment of injuries. Private vengeance is transmuted into the administration of criminal justice; while civil justice takes the place of violent self-help. As Locke says (c), in the state of nature the law of nature is alone in force, and every man is in his own case charged with the execution of it. In the civil state, on the other hand, the law of nature is supplemented by the civil law, and the maintenance of the latter by the force of the organised community renders unnecessary and unpermissible the maintenance of the former by the forces of private men. The evils of the earlier system were too great and obvious to escape recognition even in the most primitive communities. Every man was constituted by it a judge in his own cause, and might was made the sole measure of right. Nevertheless the substitution was effected only with difficulty and by slow degrees. The turbulent spirits of early society did not readily abandon the liberty of fighting out their quarrels, or submit with good grace to the arbitrament of the tribunals of the state. There is much evidence that the administration of justice was in the earlier stages of its development merely a choice of peaceable arbitration or mediation, offered for the voluntary acceptance of the parties, rather than a compulsory substitute for self-help and private war. Only later, with the gradual growth of the power of government, did the state venture to suppress with the strong hand the ancient and barbarous system, and to lay down the peremptory principle that all quarrels shall be brought for settlement to the courts of law (d).

(c) *Treatise on Government*, II, ch. 2.

(d) For the history of the process see A. S. Diamond, *The Evolution of Law and Order* (London, 1951); also Holdsworth, *H. E. L.*, II. 43 ff., 99 ff.; Vinogradoff, *Historical Jurisprudence* (1920), I. 344 ff.

All early codes show us traces of the hesitating and gradual method in which the voice and force of the state became the exclusive instruments of the declaration and enforcement of justice. In the laws of the Saxon kings, Alfred for instance, we find no absolute prohibition of private vengeance, but merely its regulation and restriction (e). In due measure and in fitting manner it was the right of every man to do for himself that which in modern times is done for him by the state. As royal justice grew in strength, however, the law began to speak in another tone, and we see the establishment of the modern theory of the exclusive administration of justice by the tribunals of the state. An interesting stage in the transition was trial by battle, which was a strongly regularised judicial combat introduced into England by the Normans (f). In Norman times this mode of trial was classed with the ordeal as *judicium Dei*—the judgment of Heaven as to the merits of the case, made manifest by the victory of the right. But this explanation was an afterthought; it was applied to public war, as the litigation of nations, no less than to the judicial duel, and it is not the root of either practice (g).

§ 30. Civil and Criminal Justice

The administration of justice has been already defined as the maintenance of right within a political community by means

(e) Laws of King Alfred, 42 (Thorpe, *Ancient Laws and Institutes of England*, I. 91): "We also command that he who knows his foe to be at home fight not before he demand justice of him. If he have such power that he can beset his foe and besiege him, let him keep him within for seven days, and attack him not, if he will remain within. . . . But if he have not sufficient power to besiege him, let him ride to the caldorman, and beg aid of him. If he will not aid him, let him ride to the king before he fights." See further Holdsworth, *H. E. L.*, II. 43 ff.

(f) See Pollock and Maitland, *H. E. L.* (2nd ed. 1898), I. 39-40, 50-51; Diamond, *op. cit.* 163.

(g) Upon the doctrine of the King's peace, the chief means by which royal justice supplanted private vengeance, see Pollock, *Oxford Lectures*, 65-90, reprinted in *Select Essays in Anglo-American Legal History*, II. 403-417. As late as the closing years of Henry III it was found necessary to resort to special statutory enactments against a lawless recurrence to the extra-judicial use of force. The statute of Marlborough (52 Hen. III, c. 1) recites that "At the time of a commotion late stirred up within this realm, and also since, many great men and divers other have disdained to accept justice from the King and his Court, like as they ought and were wont in time of the King's noble progenitors, and also in his time, but took great revenges and distresses of their neighbours and of others, until they had amends and fines at their own pleasure." The statute thereupon provides that "All persons, as well of high as of low estate, shall receive justice in the King's Court, and

of the physical force of the state. It is the application by the state of the sanction of force to the rule of right. We have now to notice that it is divisible into two parts, which are distinguished as the administration of civil and that of criminal justice. A wrong regarded as the subject-matter of civil proceedings is called a civil wrong; one regarded as the subject-matter of criminal proceedings is termed a criminal wrong or a crime. The position of a person who has, by actual or threatened wrongdoing, exposed himself to legal proceedings, is termed liability or responsibility, and it is either civil or criminal according to the nature of the proceedings that may follow (*h*).

It follows from this definition that the distinction between civil wrongs and crimes relates to the legal consequences of acts. Civil justice is administered according to one set of forms, criminal justice according to another set. Civil justice is administered in one set of courts, criminal justice in a somewhat different set. The outcome of the proceedings, too, is generally different. Civil proceedings, if successful, result in a judgment for damages, or in a judgment for the payment of a debt or (in a penal action) a penalty, or in an injunction or decree of specific restitution or specific performance, or in an order for the delivery of possession of land, or in a decree of divorce, or in an order of mandamus, prohibition, or certiorari, or in a writ of habeas corpus, or in other forms of relief known distinctively as civil. Criminal proceedings, if successful, result in one of a number of punishments, ranging from hanging to a fine, or in a binding over to keep the peace, release upon probation, or other outcome known to belong distinctively to criminal law.

It will be observed that in some cases the outcome of civil and criminal proceedings may be roughly similar. For instance, both may result in the defendant being ordered to pay money. At one time it was a frequent practice, when it was desired to

none from henceforth shall take any such revenge or distress of his own authority without award of our Court." See also Holdsworth, *H. E. L.*, I. 506, n. 6. Long after the strength of the law of England had succeeded in suppressing the practice, the right of private war continued to be recognised and regulated by law in the more feebly governed states of the continent. See Nys, *Origines du Droit International* (1894) ch. 5. An interesting picture of the relations between law and private force in the primitive community of Iceland is to be found in *The Saga of Burnt Njal* (Dasent's translation).

(*h*) For this procedural distinction between crimes and civil wrongs see *per* Lord Esher, M.R., in *Seaman v. Burley*, [1896] 2 Q. B. 344 at 346.

repress some type of conduct thought to be harmful, to do so by the machinery of the civil rather than of the criminal law. The means so chosen was called a penal action, as being brought for the recovery of a penalty; and it might be brought, according to the wording of the particular statute creating the penal action, either by the Attorney-General on behalf of the state, or by a common informer on his own account. A common informer was anyone who should first sue the offender for the penalty. Penal actions by common informers are now practically all abolished (i), but those by the Attorney-General continue unaffected. Moreover there are several instances, under old statutes, where a person who has suffered a wrong (for instance, in being kept out of possession by his former tenant) is allowed to recover multiple damages by way of penalty. Since penal actions follow all the forms of civil actions, and are governed by the same rules, we must regard them as civil actions, and ignore for the purpose of classification their resemblances to criminal law.

Another respect in which criminal and civil proceedings may have a similar outcome is in the matter of imprisonment. If, for instance, an injunction be granted in a civil action, and the defendant defies the injunction, he may be imprisoned; yet the proceedings are civil proceedings, not criminal.

Many writers have not been content with making this procedural distinction between crimes and civil wrongs. They have suggested various other distinctions, considering them to be more fundamental than the procedural one. Thus it has been said that the object of civil proceedings is to enforce rights, while the object of criminal proceedings is to punish wrongs. This view was expressed in a previous edition of this work as follows: "In a civil proceeding the plaintiff claims a right, and the court secures it for him by putting pressure upon the defendant to that end; as when one claims a debt that is due to him, or the restoration of property wrongfully detained from him, or damages payable to him by way of compensation for wrongful harm, or the prevention of a threatened injury by way of injunction. In a criminal proceeding, on the other hand, the prosecutor claims no right, but accuses the defendant of a wrong. He is not a claimant, but an accuser. The court makes no attempt to constrain the defendant to perform any duty, or to respect any right. It visits him instead with a penalty for the duty already disregarded and for the right already violated; as where he is hanged for murder

(i) Common Informers Act, 1951.

or imprisoned for theft." There is an element of truth in this view, inasmuch as punishment certainly bulks more largely in criminal than in civil proceedings. But punishment is not always present in criminal proceedings, nor always absent in civil proceedings. Criminal proceedings, for instance, may end in a mere binding over to keep the peace, which is more in the nature of a warning than of a present punishment. In civil cases, the protection of rights may sometimes be secured through the medium of punishment. A clear illustration is one of those already given, where a defendant is imprisoned for failing to observe an injunction granted against him in a civil action. It is true that imprisonment of this sort generally lasts only so long as the defendant refuses to comply with the order of the court; so soon as he purges his contempt he is released. But the same is true of imprisonment for a public nuisance. This may by order of the court be ended as soon as the defendant abates the nuisance; yet the proceedings are criminal.

A second suggestion is that crimes are more harmful in their consequences than civil wrongs, or else that they injure the public at large as opposed to a private individual. This suggestion is seen to be unsound as soon as it is realised that the same act may be both a civil injury and a crime, both forms of legal remedy being available (*j*). This is true, for instance, of libel and manslaughter. Since the same act may be both a crime and civil wrong, and since an act has only one set of physical consequences, no distinction between crimes and civil wrongs can be based on the physical consequences of the act; for the physical consequences must be the same whether we regard it in law as a crime or as a civil wrong. The true distinction resides, as we have seen, not in the physical consequences of the act but in its legal consequences, that is, in the consequences by which it may legally be followed.

A third suggestion, somewhat akin to the second, is that the distinction between crimes and civil injuries is the same as that between public and private wrongs.

By a public wrong is meant an offence committed against the state or the community at large, and dealt with in a proceeding to which the state is itself a party. A private wrong is one committed against a private person, and dealt with at the suit of the individual so injured. The thief is criminally prosecuted by the Crown, but the trespasser is civilly sued by him whose right he has violated. Criminal libel, it is said, is a public wrong, and is dealt with as such at the

(*j*) Where this duplication of remedies exists it is generally necessary, in England, to take separate proceedings for the crime and civil wrong respectively (for exceptions see Kenny, *Outlines of Criminal Law* (ed. Turner 1952) 95, 188 n. 3, 463, 516). On the Continent the injured parties are allowed to join as *parties civiles* and secure reparation in the same proceedings as those in which the crime is established. The English system, though often inconvenient, has the advantage of excluding from criminal proceedings aggressive advocacy against the defendant, which inevitably attends civil proceedings.

suit of the Crown; civil libel is a private wrong, and is dealt with accordingly by way of an action for damages by the person libelled. Blackstone's statement of this view may be taken as representative: "Wrongs", he says (k), "are divisible into two sorts or species, private wrongs and public wrongs. The former are an infringement or privation of the private or civil rights belonging to individuals, considered as individuals, and are thereupon frequently termed civil injuries; the latter are a breach and violation of public rights and duties which affect the whole community considered as a community; and are distinguished by the harsher appellation of crimes and misdemeanours" (l). This explanation is insufficient, for all public wrongs are not crimes. A refusal to pay taxes is an offence against the state, and is dealt with at the suit of the state, but it is a civil wrong for all that, just as a refusal to repay money lent by a private person is a civil wrong. The breach of a contract made with the state is no more a criminal offence than is the breach of a contract made with a subject. An action by the state for the recovery of a debt, or for damages, or for the restoration of public property, or for the enforcement of a public trust, is purely civil, although in each case the person injured and suing is the state itself.

We must conclude, therefore, that the divisions between public and private wrongs and between crimes and civil injuries are not coincident but cross divisions. Public rights are often enforced, and private wrongs are often punished. The distinction between criminal and civil wrongs is based, not on any difference in the nature of the right infringed, but on a difference in the nature of the remedy applied.

The plausibility of this third theory is chiefly attributable to a certain peculiarity in the historical development of the administration

(k) *Commentaries*, III. 2.

(l) Austin's theory of the distinction is somewhat different from Blackstone's, for he makes the distinction between public and private wrongs, and therefore between criminal and civil wrongs, turn not on the public or private nature of the right violated, but solely on the public or private nature of the proceeding taken in respect of its violation. "Where the wrong", he says (3rd ed. 518), "is a civil injury, the sanction is enforced at the discretion of the party whose right has been violated. Where the wrong is a crime, the sanction is enforced at the discretion of the sovereign." This theory, however, is exposed to the same objections as those which may be made to Blackstone's, and it need not be separately considered.

Austin's definition is adopted with qualifications by Kenny, who declares that "crimes are wrongs whose sanction is punitive, and is in no way remissible by any private person, but is remissible by the Crown alone, if remissible at all" (*Outlines of Criminal Law* (ed. Turner 1952) App. I). By introducing the words "whose sanction is punitive" Kenny intends to parry the objection that in a civil action brought by the Crown, just as in a criminal prosecution, the sanction is remissible by the Crown alone. The most serious objection to the definition is its triviality. It seizes upon one element in the distinction between crimes and civil wrongs, without seeming to perceive that it is only a small part of a vast procedural distinction. One can easily imagine the prerogative of pardon being extended to civil wrongs; this would completely destroy the application of Kenny's definition, and yet the distinction between crimes and civil wrongs would not thereby be abolished.

of justice. The earliest efforts of society are generally directed towards the buying off of private vengeance. This it does, at first, by restricting and regulating the amount of violence that may be used by way of talion. A survival of this primitive stage of development may be seen in the custom of some Australian aborigines, whereby a murderer voluntarily submitted himself, armed only with his shield, to have spears thrown at him or be hacked with knives (*m*). Later, when goods become more plentiful, custom and law encourage and compel the payment of compensation in money or in property. Men are induced to barter their barren rights of vengeance for the more substantial solatium of coin of the realm. Hence it is that in primitive codes true criminal law is almost unknown. Its place is taken by that portion of civil law which is concerned with pecuniary redress. Murder, theft and violence are not crimes to be punished by loss of life, limb or liberty, but civil injuries to be paid for. This is a well-recognised characteristic of the early law both of Rome and England (*n*). In the Jewish law we notice an attempt to check this process, and to maintain the law of homicide, at least, as truly criminal. "Ye shall take no satisfaction for the life of a murderer, which is guilty of death: but he shall be surely put to death" (*o*). Such attempts, however, will be for the most part vain, until the state takes upon itself the office of prosecutor, and until offences worthy of punishment cease to be matters between private persons, and become matters between the wrongdoer and the community at large. Only when the criminal has to answer for his deed to the state itself will true criminal law be successfully established and maintained. Thus at Rome the more important forms of criminal justice pertained to the sovereign assemblies of the people, while civil justice was done in the courts of the praetor and other magistrates. So in England indictable crimes have always been in legal theory offences against "the peace of our Lord the King, his crown and dignity", and it was only under the rule of royal justice that true criminal law was superadded to the more primitive system of pecuniary compensation. Even at the present day, for the protection of the law of crime, it is necessary to prohibit as itself a crime the compounding of a felony, and to prevent in courts of summary jurisdiction the settlement of criminal proceedings by the parties without the leave of the court itself. Such is the historical justification of the doctrine which identifies the distinction between civil injuries and crimes with that between public and private wrongs.

(*m*) Diamond, *op. cit.* 22. "The lawgiver does not advise taking an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth; he forbids taking the whole head"; Pollock, "The Transformation of Equity", *Essays in Legal History* (ed. Vinogradoff, 1913) at p. 287.

(*n*) Holdsworth, *H. E. L.*, II. 43 ff. See also Jolowicz, "The Assessment of Penalties in Criminal Law", *Cambridge Legal Essays* (1926) 203; Driver and Miles, *Assyrian Laws* (1935) 33-6.

(*o*) *Numbers*, xxxv 31.

The considerations already adduced should be sufficient to satisfy us that the justification is inadequate (p).

§ 31. The Purposes of Criminal Justice: Deterrent and Preventive Punishment

The ends of criminal justice are four in number, and in respect of the purposes so served by it, punishment may be distinguished as (1) Deterrent, (2) Preventive, (3) Reformatory, and (4) Retributive. Of these aspects the first is the essential and all-important one, the others being merely accessory. Punishment is before all things deterrent, and the chief end of the law of crime is to make the evildoer an example and a warning to all that are like-minded with him. Offences are committed by reason of a conflict between the interests, real or apparent, of the wrongdoer and those of society at large. Punishment prevents offences by destroying this conflict of interests to which they owe their origin—by making all deeds which are injurious to others injurious also to the doers of them—by making every offence, in the words of Locke, "an ill bargain to the offender". Men do injustice because they have no sufficient motive to seek justice, which is the good of others rather than that of the doer of it. The purpose of the criminal law is to supply by art the motives which are thus wanting in the nature of things.

Punishment is, in the second place, preventive or disabling. Its primary and general purpose being to deter by fear, its secondary and special purpose is, wherever possible and expedient, to prevent a repetition of wrongdoing by the disablement of the offender. The most effective mode of disablement is the death penalty, which in practice, in time of peace, is confined to the crime of murder, though it is legally possible also for treason and certain forms of piracy and arson. The opposition to the death penalty is based partly on religious and partly on social grounds; in particular, critics point to the morbid excitement created by murder trials and their outcome.

A similar secondary purpose exists in such penalties as imprisonment, and forfeiture of office, the suspension of driving licences, and in the old penalty of exile. In modern times the

(p) For a further discussion of the nature of a crime see Williams in (1955) 8 *Current Legal Problems* 107 and literature there cited.

disabling aspect has been emphasised by statutes conferring upon judges power to sentence habitual offenders to preventive terms of imprisonment. In so far as imprisonment is intended to be merely disabling there is, of course, no need to make it unpleasant; and these sentences of preventive detention are served under conditions slightly less rigorous than ordinary imprisonment.

§ 32. Reformatory Punishment

Punishment is in the third place reformatory. Offences are committed through the influence of motives upon character, and may be prevented either by a change of motives or by a change of character. Punishment as deterrent acts in the former method; punishment as reformatory in the latter. This curative or medicinal function is practically limited to two particular species of penalty, namely, imprisonment (where it pertains to the ideal rather than to the actual) and probation. It would seem, however, that this aspect of the criminal law is destined to increasing prominence. The new science of criminology would go far towards identifying crime with disease, and would willingly deliver many classes of criminal out of the hands of the men of law into those of the men of medicine.

It is plain that there is a necessary conflict between the deterrent and the reformatory theories of punishment, and that the system of criminal justice will vary in important respects according as the former or the latter principle prevails in it. The purely reformatory theory admits only such forms of punishment as are subservient to the education and discipline of the criminal, and rejects all those which are profitable only as deterrent or disabling. Death is in this view no fitting penalty; we must cure our criminals, not kill them. Flogging and other corporal inflictions have already been excised from the law (except for assaults on prison warders) for the reason that they are degrading and brutalising both to those who suffer and to those who inflict them, and so fail in the central purpose of criminal justice. Imprisonment and probation, indeed, as already indicated, are the only important instruments available for the purpose of a purely reformatory system. Imprisonment, however, to be fitted for such a purpose, requires alleviation to a degree quite inadmissible in the alternative

system. If criminals are sent to prison in order to be there transformed into good citizens by physical, intellectual, and moral training, prisons must be turned into dwelling-houses far too comfortable to serve as any effectual deterrent to those classes from which criminals are chiefly drawn. A further illustration of the divergence between the deterrent and the reformatory theories is supplied by the case of incorrigible offenders. The most sanguine advocate of the curative treatment of criminals must admit that there are in the world men who are incurably bad, men who by some vice of nature are even in their youth beyond the reach of reformatory influences, and with whom crime is not so much a bad habit as an ineradicable instinct. What shall be done with these? The only logical inference from the reformatory theory, if taken by itself, is that they should be abandoned in despair as no fit subjects for penal discipline. The deterrent and disabling theories, on the other hand, regard such offenders as being pre-eminently those with whom the criminal law is called upon to deal. That they may be precluded from further mischief, and at the same time serve as a warning to others, they are justly deprived of their liberty, and in extreme cases of life itself (g).

The application of the purely reformatory theory, therefore, would lead to astonishing and inadmissible results. The perfect system of criminal justice is based on neither the reformatory nor the deterrent principle exclusively, but is the result of a compromise between them. In this compromise it is the deterrent principle which possesses predominant influence, and its advocates who have the last word. This is the primary and essential end of punishment, and all others are merely secondary and accidental. The present tendency to attribute exaggerated importance to the reformatory element is a reaction against the former tendency to neglect it altogether, and like most reactions it falls into the falsehood of extremes. It is an important truth, unduly neglected in times past, that to a very large extent criminals are not normal and healthy human beings, and that crime is in great measure the product of physical and mental

(g) Even exponents of the reformatory theory admit permanent segregation, provided it is without cruelty, as justifiable in such cases. Cf. Ferri, *Criminal Sociology*, 261.

abnormality and degeneracy. It has been too much the practice to deal with offenders on the assumption that they are ordinary types of humanity. Too much attention has been paid to the crime, and too little to the criminal. Yet we must be careful not to fall into the opposite extreme. If crime has become the monopoly of the abnormal and the degenerate, or even the mentally unsound, the fact must be ascribed to the selective influence of a system of criminal justice based on a sterner principle than that of reformation. The more efficient the coercive action of the state becomes, the more successful it is in restraining all normal human beings from the dangerous paths of crime, and the higher becomes the proportion of degeneracy among those who break the law. Even with our present imperfect methods the proportion of insane persons among murderers is very high; but if the state could succeed in making it impossible to commit murder in a sound mind without being indubitably hanged for it afterwards, murder would soon become, with scarcely an exception, limited to the insane.

If, after this consummation had been reached, the opinion were advanced that inasmuch as all murderers are insane, murder is not a crime which needs to be suppressed by the strong arm of the penal law, and pertains to the sphere of medicine rather than to that of jurisprudence, the fallacy of the argument would be obvious. Were the state to act on any such principle, the proposition that all murderers are insane would very rapidly cease to be true. The same fallacy, though in a less obvious form, is present in the more general argument that, since the proportion of disease and degeneracy among criminals is so great, the reformatory function of punishment should prevail over, and in a great measure exclude, its deterrent and coercive functions. For it is chiefly through the permanent influence and operation of these latter functions, partly direct in producing a fear of evil-doing, partly indirect in establishing and maintaining those moral habits and sentiments which are possible only under the shelter of coercive law, that crime has become limited, in such measure as it has, to the degenerate, the abnormal, and the insane. Given an efficient penal system, crime is too poor a bargain to commend itself, save in exceptional circumstances, to any except those who lack the self-control, the

intelligence, the prudence, or the moral sentiments of the normal man. But apart from criminal law in its sterner aspects, and apart from that positive morality which is largely the product of it, crime is a profitable industry, which will flourish exceedingly, and be by no means left as a monopoly to the feebler and less efficient members of society.

Although the general substitution of the reformative for the deterrent principle would lead to disaster, it may be argued that the substitution is possible and desirable in the special case of the abnormal and degenerate. Purely reformative treatment is now limited to the insane, the very young, and (in the case of probation) those who are young in crime; should it not be extended to include all those who fall into crime through their failure to attain to the standard of normal humanity? No such scheme, however, seems practicable. In the first place, it is not possible to draw any sharp line of distinction between the normal and the degenerate human being. It is difficult enough in the only case of degeneracy now recognised by the law, namely, insanity; but the difficulty would be a thousand-fold increased had we to take account of every lapse from the average type. The law is necessarily a rough and ready instrument, and men must be content in general to be judged and dealt with by it on the basis of their common humanity, and not on that of their special idiosyncrasies. In the second place, even in the case of those who are distinctly abnormal, it does not appear, except in the special instance of mental unsoundness, that the purely deterrent influences of punishment are not effective and urgently required. If a man is destitute of the affections and social instincts of humanity, the judgment of common sense upon him is not that he should be treated more leniently than the normal evildoer—not that society should cherish him in the hope of making him a good citizen—but that by the rigour of penal discipline his fate should be made a terror and a warning to himself and others. However, there is a point to which this logic does not extend. A strong medical opinion holds that there can be distinguished a class of "psychopaths", persons who throughout their lives have exhibited disorders of conduct that have proved to be incapable of being influenced by social, penal, and medical measures. Sir David Henderson

says of such persons that "the inadequacy or deviation or failure to adjust to ordinary social life is not a mere wilfulness or badness which can be threatened or thrashed out of the individual so involved, but constitutes a true illness for which we have no specific explanation" (r). Plans have now been officially approved for a special institution for psychopaths and other mentally abnormal prisoners.

It is needful, then, in view of modern theories and tendencies, to insist on the primary importance of the deterrent element in criminal justice. The reformatory element must not be overlooked, but neither must it be allowed to assume undue prominence. To what extent it may be permitted in particular instances to overrule the requirements of a strictly deterrent theory is a question of time, place, and circumstance. In the case of youthful criminals and first offenders, the chances of effective reformation are greater than in that of adults who have fallen into crime more than once, and the rightful importance of the reformatory principle is therefore greater also. Some crimes, such as sexual offences, admit more readily of reformatory treatment than others. In orderly and law-abiding communities concessions may be safely made in the interests of reformation, which in more turbulent societies would be fatal to the public welfare.

§ 33. Retributive Punishment

We have considered criminal justice in three of its aspects—namely, as deterrent, disabling, and reformatory—and we have now to deal with it under its fourth and last aspect as retributive. Retributive punishment, in the only sense in which it is admissible in any rational system of administering justice, is that which serves for the satisfaction of that emotion of retributive indignation which in all healthy communities is stirred up by injustice. It gratifies the instinct of revenge or retaliation, which exists not merely in the individual wronged, but also by way of sympathetic extension in the society at large. Although the system of private revenge has been suppressed, the emotions and instincts that lay at the root of it are still

(r) D. K. Henderson, *Psychopathic States* (New York 1947) 16-17; cf. Williams, *Criminal Law: The General Part*, § 101.

extant in human nature, and it is a distinct though subordinate function of criminal justice to afford them their legitimate satisfaction. For although in their lawless and unregulated exercise and expression they are full of evil, there is in them none the less an element of good. The emotion of retributive indignation, both in its self-regarding and its sympathetic forms, is even yet the mainspring of the criminal law. It is to the fact that the punishment of the wrongdoer is at the same time the vengeance of the wronged, that the administration of justice owes a great part of its strength and effectiveness. Did we punish criminals merely from an intellectual appreciation of the expediency of so doing, and not because their crimes arouse in us the emotion of anger and the instinct of retribution, the criminal law would be but a feeble instrument. Indignation against injustice is, moreover, one of the chief constituents of the moral sense of the community, and positive morality is no less dependent on it than is the law itself. It is good, therefore, that such instincts and emotions should be encouraged and strengthened by their satisfaction; and in civilised societies this satisfaction is possible in any adequate degree only through the criminal justice of the state. There can be little question that at the present day the sentiment of retributive indignation is deficient rather than excessive, and requires stimulation rather than restraint. Unquestionable as have been the benefits of that growth of altruistic sentiment which characterises modern society, it cannot be denied that in some respects it has taken a perverted course and has interfered unduly with the sterner virtues. We have too much forgotten that the mental attitude which best becomes us, when fitting justice is done upon the evildoer, is not pity, but solemn exultation (*s*).

The foregoing explanation of retributive punishment as essentially an instrument of vindictive satisfaction is by no means that which receives universal acceptance. It is a very widely held opinion that retribution is in itself, apart altogether from any deterrent or reformatory influences exercised by it, a right and reasonable thing, and the just reward of iniquity.

(*s*) Diogenes Laertius tells us that when Solon was asked how men might most effectually be restrained from committing injustice, he answered: "If those who are not injured feel as much indignation as those who are."

According to this view, it is right and proper, without regard to ulterior consequences, that evil should be returned for evil, and that as a man deals with others so should he himself be dealt with. An eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth is deemed a plain and self-sufficient rule of natural justice. Punishment as so regarded is no longer a mere instrument for the attainment of the public welfare, but has become an end in itself. The purpose of vindictive satisfaction has been eliminated without any substitute having been provided. Those who accept this view commonly advance retribution to the first place among the various aspects of punishment, the others being relegated to subordinate positions.

This conception of retributive justice still retains a prominent place in popular thought. It flourishes also in the writings of theologians and of those imbued with theological modes of thought, and even among the philosophers it does not lack advocates. Kant, for example, expresses the opinion that punishment cannot rightly be inflicted for the sake of any benefit to be derived from it either by the criminal himself or by society, and that the sole and sufficient reason and justification of it lies in the fact that evil has been done by him who suffers it (t). Consistently with this view, he derives the measure of punishment, not from any elaborate considerations as to the amount needed for the repression of crime, but from the simple principle of the *lex talionis*: "Thine eye shall not pity; but life shall go for life, eye for eye, tooth for tooth, hand for hand, foot for foot" (u). No such principle, indeed, is capable of literal interpretation; but subject to metaphorical and symbolical applications it is in Kant's view the guiding rule of the ideal scheme of criminal justice.

It is scarcely needful to observe that, from the utilitarian point of view hitherto taken up by us, such a conception of retributive punishment is totally inadmissible. Punishment

(t) Kant, *Rechtslehre* (Hastie's trans.) 195. The like opinion is expressed in Woolsey, *Political Science*, I. 334: "The theory that in punishing an evildoer the state renders to him his deserts, is the only one that seems to have a solid foundation. . . . It is fit and right that evil, physical or mental, suffering or shame, should be incurred by the wrongdoer." See also Fry, *Studies by the Way* (The Theory of Punishment) 43-71.

(u) *Deuteronomy*, xix 21.

is in itself an evil, and can be justified only as the means of attaining a greater good. Retribution is in itself not a remedy for the mischief of the offence, but an aggravation of it. The opposite opinion may be regarded as a product of the incomplete transmutation of the conception of revenge into that of punishment. It results from a failure to appreciate the rational basis of the instinct of retribution—a failure to refer the emotion of retributive indignation to the true source of its rational justification—so that retaliation is deemed an end in itself, and is regarded as the essential element in the conception of penal justice.

A more definite form of the idea of purely retributive punishment is that of expiation. In this view, crime is done away with, cancelled, blotted out, or expiated, by the suffering of its appointed penalty. To suffer punishment is to pay a debt due to the law that has been violated. Guilt *plus* punishment is equal to innocence. "The wrong", it has been said (v), "whereby he has transgressed the law of right, has incurred a debt. Justice requires that the debt be paid, that the wrong be expiated. . . . This is the first object of punishment—to make satisfaction to outraged law." This conception, like the preceding, marks a stage in the transformation of revenge into criminal justice. Until this transformation is complete, the remedy of punishment is more or less assimilated to that of redress. Revenge is the right of the injured person. The penalty of wrongdoing is a debt which the offender owes to his victim, and when the punishment has been endured the debt is paid, the liability is extinguished, innocence is substituted for guilt, and the *vinculum juris* forged by crime is dissolved. The object of true redress is to restore the position demanded by the rule of right, to substitute justice for injustice, to compel the wrongdoer to restore to the injured person that which is his own. A like purpose is assigned to punishment, so long as it is imperfectly differentiated from that retributive vengeance which is in some sort a reparation for wrongdoing. The fact that in the expiatory theory satisfaction is conceived as due rather to the outraged majesty of the law, than to the victim

of the offence, merely marks a further stage in the refinement and purification of the primitive conception (*w*).

§ 34. Civil Justice; Primary and Sanctioning Rights

We proceed now to the consideration of civil justice and to the analysis of the various forms assumed by it. The first distinction to be noticed is that the right enforced in civil proceedings is either a Primary or a Sanctioning right. A sanctioning right is one which arises out of the violation of another right. All others are primary; they are rights which have some other source than wrongs. Thus my right not to be libelled or assaulted is primary; but my right to obtain pecuniary compensation from one who has libelled or assaulted me is sanctioning. My right to the fulfilment of a contract made with me is primary; but my right to damages for its breach is sanctioning.

The administration of civil justice, therefore, falls into two parts, according as the right enforced belongs to the one or the other of these two classes. Sometimes it is impossible for the law to enforce the primary right; sometimes it is possible but not expedient. If by negligence I destroy another man's property, his right to this property is necessarily extinct and no longer enforceable. The law, therefore, gives him in substitution for it a new and sanctioning right to receive from me the pecuniary value of the property that he has lost. If on the other hand I break a promise of marriage, it is still possible, but it is certainly not expedient, that the law should specifically enforce the right, and compel me to enter into that marriage; and it enforces instead a sanctioning right of pecuniary satisfaction. A sanctioning right almost invariably consists of a claim to receive money from the wrongdoer, and

(*w*) For a further discussion of the theory of punishment see Oppenheimer, *The Rationale of Punishment*; Rashdall, *The Theory of Good and Evil*, I. 284 ff.; Lilly, *Idola Fori*, ch. 7; Vinogradoff, *Historical Jurisprudence* (1920) I. 53 ff.; Glueck, *The After-Conduct of Discharged Offenders*, 93 ff.; *The Modern Approach to Criminal Law* (ed. Radzinowicz and Turner) 1 ff., 57 ff.; Sen, *From Punishment to Prevention*; Michael and Adler, *Crime, Law and Social Science*, 340 ff.; A. C. Ewing, *The Morality of Punishment*; same, "A Study on Punishment" (1943) 21 Can. Bar Rev. 102; Kenny, *Outlines of Criminal Law* (15th ed. 1936) chs. 2 and 33 (passages not reproduced in the current edition). On the historical side, see Robson, *Civilisation and the Growth of Law*, ch. 8; Maine, *Ancient Law*, ch. 10.

we shall here disregard any other forms, as being quite exceptional.

The enforcement of a primary right may be conveniently termed specific enforcement. For the enforcement of a sanctioning right there is no very suitable generic term, but we may venture to call it sanctional enforcement (*a*).

Examples of specific enforcement are proceedings whereby a defendant is compelled to pay a debt, to perform a contract, to restore land or chattels wrongfully taken or detained, to refrain from committing or continuing a trespass or nuisance, or to repay money received by mistake or obtained by fraud. In all these cases the right enforced is the primary right itself, not a substituted sanctioning right. What the law does is to insist on the specific establishment or re-establishment of the actual state of things required by the rule of right, not of another state of things which may be regarded as its equivalent or substitute (*b*).

Sanctioning rights may be divided into two kinds by reference to the purpose of the law in creating them. This purpose is either (1) the imposition of a pecuniary penalty upon the defendant for the wrong which he has committed, or (2) the provision of pecuniary compensation for the plaintiff in respect of the damage which he has suffered from the defendant's wrongdoing. Sanctioning rights, therefore, are either (1) rights to exact and receive a pecuniary penalty, or (2) rights to exact and receive damages or other pecuniary compensation.

The first of these kinds is rare in modern English law, though it was at one time of considerable importance both in our own and in other legal systems. But it is sometimes the

(a) It will be remembered that in § 7 the term sanction was defined as any physical force by which a system of imperative law is enforced. This is the wider meaning of the term; more narrowly, it means what is here called (in order to have a distinguishing term) sanctional enforcement.

(b) Some forms of so-called specific enforcement may in the last resort become sanctional enforcement. Thus an order for specific performance of a contract represents an attempt by the courts to compel the defendant to perform his duty specifically; but if the order be disobeyed the next step may be to imprison the defendant for contempt of court, which is not specific but sanctional enforcement. In some cases specific enforcement may mean a greater loss to the defendant than the restored gain to the plaintiff. Cf. *Shelfer v. City of London Electric Lighting Co.*, [1895] 1 Ch. 287.

case even yet, that the law creates and enforces a sanctioning right which has in it no element of compensation to the person injured, but is appointed solely as a punishment for the wrongdoer. This is so where a pecuniary penalty is payable to the state. We have already sufficiently discussed these "penal actions".

The second form of sanctioning right—the right to pecuniary compensation or damages—is in modern law by far the more important. It may be stated as a general rule, that the violation of a private right gives rise, in him whose right it is, to a sanctioning right to receive compensation for the injury so done to him. Such compensation must itself be divided into two kinds, which may be distinguished as Restitution and Penal Redress. In respect of the person injured, indeed, these two are the same in their nature and operation; but in respect of the wrongdoer they are very different. In restitution the defendant is compelled to give up the pecuniary value of some benefit which he has wrongfully obtained at the expense of the plaintiff; as when he who has wrongfully taken or detained another's goods is made to pay him the pecuniary value of them, or when he who has wrongfully enriched himself at another's expense is compelled to account to him for all money so obtained.

Penal redress, on the other hand, is a much more common and important form of legal remedy than mere restitution. The law is seldom content to deal with a wrongdoer by merely compelling him to restore all benefits which he has derived from his wrong; it commonly goes further, and compels him to pay the amount of the plaintiff's loss; and this may far exceed the profit, if any, which he has himself received. It is clear that compensation of this kind has a double aspect and nature; from the point of view of the plaintiff it is compensation and nothing more, but from that of the defendant it is a penalty imposed upon him for his wrongdoing. The compensation of the plaintiff is in such cases the instrument which the law uses for the punishment of the defendant, and because of this double aspect it is here called penal redress. Thus if I burn down my neighbour's house by negligence, I must pay him the value of it. The wrong is then undone with respect to him, indeed, for he is put in as good a position as if it had not been committed.

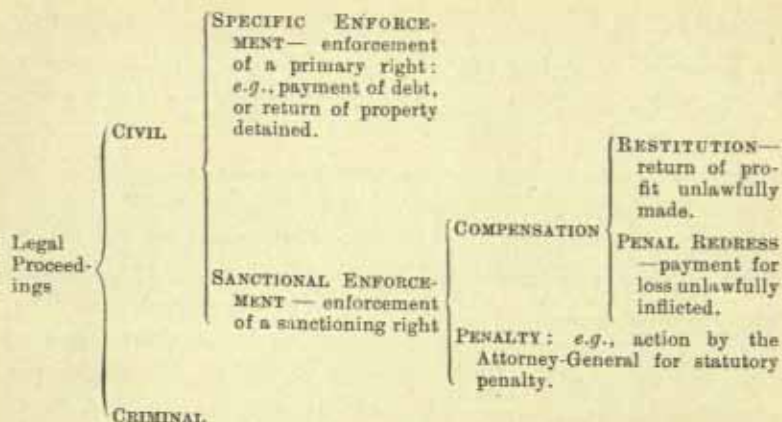
Formerly he had a house, and now he has the worth of it. But the wrong is not undone with respect to me, for I am the poorer by the value of the house, and to this extent I have been punished for my negligence (c).

So far in this section we have been considering the judicial enforcement of rights, that is to say, their enforcement through the medium of the courts. In addition there are various forms of extra-judicial enforcement, sometimes known as self-help. As with judicial enforcement, extra-judicial enforcement may be either specific or sanctional, though in English law all the examples save one are of specific enforcement. The rights of a landowner, of the owner of a chattel, and of anyone in respect of nuisances, can be specifically enforced without resort to the courts by the ejection of trespassing persons and things, the recaption of chattels, and the abatement of nuisances. The right of personal security can be enforced by self-defence and by the defence of others. The payment of debts can be enforced in appropriate cases through distress for rent and the assertion of liens. The only instance of extra-judicial sanctional enforcement in English law is distress damage feasant, that is, the right to seize animals or inanimate chattels that are doing damage to or (perhaps) encumbering land, and to keep them by way of security until compensation is paid.

§ 35. A Table of Judicial Remedies

Putting aside extra-judicial remedies, the result of the foregoing analysis of the various forms assumed by the administration of justice, civil and criminal, may be exhibited in a tabular form as follows :—

(c) Some of the American "realists" assert that only sanctioning rights have "reality", at any rate if we put aside cases of specific enforcement like the equitable remedies of specific performance and injunction. Thus, specific performance apart, there is no primary right that another shall perform his contract with me; there is simply a sanctioning right that he shall pay me damages if he breaks it. Cf. Holmes, "The Path of the Law", *Collected Legal Papers* (1921) 167, reprinted from (1897) 10 *Harvard L. R.* 457. This theory misses the fact that rights are concepts used in legal reasoning, and that we do in fact make use of the concept of primary rights even where they are enforced only sanctionally. Cf. Buckland, "The Nature of Contractual Obligation" (1944) 8 *C. L. J.* 247.



§ 36. Penal and Remedial Proceedings

It will be noticed that in the foregoing Table legal proceedings have been divided into five distinct classes, namely, (1) actions for specific enforcement, (2) actions for restitution, (3) actions for penal redress, (4) penal actions, and (5) criminal prosecutions. It must now be observed that the last three of these contain a common element which is absent from the others, namely, the idea of punishment. In all these three forms of procedure the ultimate purpose of the law is in whole or in part the punishment of the defendant (*d*). This is equally so, whether he is imprisoned, or compelled to pay a pecuniary penalty to a common informer, or is held liable in damages to the person injured by him. All these proceedings, therefore, may be classed together as *penal*, and as the sources of *penal liability*. The other forms, namely, specific enforcement and restitution, contain no such penal element; the idea of punishment is entirely foreign to them; and they may be classed together as *remedial*, and as the sources of *remedial liability*. From the point of view of legal theory this distinction between penal and remedial

(*d*) A complication is that criminal proceedings may result in a mere threat of punishment, such as release upon probation or binding over to keep the peace. Actions for specific enforcement and for restitution may also result in a threat of punishment; for instance, an injunction carries a threat of punishment if it be disobeyed. It must be admitted that this somewhat blurs the distinction between remedial and penal liability.

liability is, as we shall see, of even greater importance than that between criminal and civil liability. It will be noted that all criminal proceedings are at the same time penal, but that the converse is not true, some civil proceedings being penal while others are merely remedial.

§ 37. Secondary Functions of Courts of Law

Hitherto we have confined our attention to the administration of justice in the narrowest and most proper sense of the term. In this sense it means, as we have seen, the application by the state of the sanction of physical force to the rules of justice. It is the forcible defence of rights and suppression of wrongs. The administration of justice properly so called, therefore, involves in every case two parties, the plaintiff and the defendant, a right claimed or a wrong complained of by the former as against the latter, a judgment in favour of the one or the other, and execution of this judgment by the power of the state if need be. We have now to notice that the administration of justice in a wider sense includes all the functions of courts of justice, whether they conform to the foregoing type or not. It is to administer justice in the strict sense that the tribunals of the state are established, and it is by reference to this essential purpose that they must be defined. But when once established, they are found to be useful instruments, by virtue of their constitution, procedure, authority, or special knowledge, for the fulfilment of other more or less analogous functions. To these secondary and non-essential activities of the courts, no less than to their primary and essential functions, the term administration of justice has been extended. They are miscellaneous and indeterminate in character and number, and tend to increase with the advancing complexity of modern civilisation. They fall chiefly into four groups:

(1) *Actions against the state.* The courts of law exercise, in the first place, the function of adjudicating upon claims made by subjects against the state itself. If a subject claims that a debt is due to him from the Crown, or that the Crown has broken a contract with him, or wrongfully detains his property, he is at liberty to take proceedings in a court of law—formerly

by petition of right but now by an ordinary action—for the determination of his rights in the matter. Although the action is tried as if it were a claim between subjects (with some procedural variations) and although the outcome may be a judgment by the court that the plaintiff is entitled to damages, this is not the administration of justice properly so called, for the essential element of coercive force is lacking. The state is the judge in its own cause, and cannot exercise constraint against itself. Nevertheless in the wider sense the administration of justice includes proceedings against the state, no less than a criminal prosecution or an action for debt or damages against a private individual.

(2) *Declarations of right.* The second form of judicial action which does not conform to the essential type is that which results, not in any kind of coercive judgment, but merely in a declaration of a primary right. A litigant may claim the assistance of a court of law, not because his rights have been violated, but because they are uncertain. What he desires may be not any remedy against an adversary for the violation of a right, but an authoritative declaration that the right exists. Such a declaration may be the ground of subsequent proceedings in which the right, having been violated, receives enforcement, but in the meantime there is no enforcement nor any claim to it. Examples of declaratory proceedings are declarations of legitimacy, declarations of nullity of marriage, declarations of the legality or illegality of the conduct of state officers, advice to trustees or executors as to their legal powers and duties, and the authoritative interpretation of wills and statutes (*e*).

(3) *Administrations.* A third form of secondary judicial action includes all those cases in which courts of justice undertake the management and distribution of property. Examples are the administration of a trust, the liquidation of a company by the court, and the realisation and distribution of an insolvent estate.

(4) *Titles of right.* The fourth and last form includes all those cases in which judicial decrees are employed as the

(*e*) See generally, Borchard, *Declaratory Judgments* (1934); Williams, *Crown Proceedings* (1948), ch. 4.

means of creating, transferring, or extinguishing rights. Instances are a decree of divorce or judicial separation, an adjudication of bankruptcy, an order of discharge in bankruptcy, a decree of foreclosure against a mortgagor, an order appointing or removing trustees, a grant of letters of administration, and vesting or charging orders. In all these cases the judgment or decree operates, not as the remedy of a wrong, but as the title of a right.

These secondary forms of judicial action are to be classed under the head of the *civil* administration of justice. Here, as in its other uses, the term *civil* is merely residuary; civil justice is all that is not criminal.

We have defined the law as consisting of the rules observed in the administration of justice. We have now seen that the latter term is used in a double sense, and the question therefore arises whether it is the strict or the wide sense that is to be adopted in our definition of the law. There can be no doubt, however, that logic admits, and convenience requires, the adoption of the wider application. We must recognise as law the sum total of the rules that are applied by courts of justice in the exercise of any of their functions, whether these are primary and essential or secondary and accidental. The principles in accordance with which the courts determine a petition of right, decree a divorce, or grant letters of administration, are as truly legal principles as those which govern an action of debt or a suit for specific performance.

SUMMARY

The administration of justice by the state a permanent necessity.
The origin of the administration of justice.

Justice { Criminal.
 { Civil.

The distinction one of courts, procedure, and legal consequence generally.

Punishment not always present in criminal proceedings, or absent in civil proceedings.

Crimes and civil wrongs not distinguishable by the physical consequences of acts.

Crimes not necessarily public wrongs.

Purposes of punishment:—

1. Deterrent.
2. Preventive.
3. Reformative.
4. Retributive.

Civil Justice { Enforcement of primary rights—Specific enforcement.
 Enforcement of sanctioning rights—Sanctional enforcement.

Sanctional enforcement { Compensation { Restitution.
 Penalty { Penal Redress.

Self-help.

Justice { Remedial—independent of the idea of punishment—always civil.
 Penal—involving the idea of punishment—civil or criminal.

Subsidiary functions of courts of justice:—

1. Actions against the state.
2. Declarations of right.
3. Administration of property.
4. Creation, transfer, and extinction of rights.

CHAPTER 5

THE SOURCES OF LAW

§ 38. Legal and Historical Sources

The expression source of law (*fons juris*) has several meanings two of which will here be considered. They may be distinguished as legal and historical. The former are those sources which are recognised as such by the law itself. The latter are those sources which are such in fact, but are nevertheless destitute of legal recognition. This is an important distinction which calls for careful consideration. In respect of its origin a rule of law is often of long descent. The immediate source of it may be the decision of an English court of justice. But that court may have drawn the matter of its decision from the writings of some lawyer, let us say the celebrated Frenchman, Pothier; and Pothier in his turn may have taken it from the compilations of the Emperor Justinian, who may have obtained it from the prætorian edict. In such a case all these things—the decision, the works of Pothier, the *corpus juris civilis*, and the *edictum perpetuum*—are the successive material sources of the rule of English law. But there is a difference between them, for the precedent is the legal source of the rule, and the others are merely its historical sources. The precedent is its source, not merely in fact, but in law also; the others are its sources in fact, but obtain no legal recognition as such. Our law knows well the nature and effect of precedent, but it knows nothing of Pothier, or of Tribonian, or of the Urban Prætor. The proposition that every principle embodied in a judicial decision has for the future the force of law is not merely a statement of historical fact as to the growth of English law; it is itself a rule of law. But the proposition that much of the law of Rome has become incorporated into the law of England is simply a statement of fact, which has in law no relevance or recognition (a).

(a) For a criticism of this distinction see Allen, *Law in the Making*, 5th ed., 252 ff.

The legal sources of law are authoritative, the historical are unauthoritative. The former are allowed by the law courts as of right; the latter have no such claim; they influence more or less extensively the course of legal development, but they speak with no authority. No rule of law demands their recognition. Thus both the Statute Book and the works of Jeremy Bentham are material sources of English law. The historians of that system have to take account of both of them. Much that is now established law has its source in the ponderous volumes of the great law reformer. Yet there is an essential difference between the two cases. What the Statute Book says becomes law forthwith and *ipso jure*; but what Bentham says may or may not become law, and if it does, it is by no claim of right, but solely through the unconstrained good pleasure of the legislature or the courts. So the decisions of English courts are a legal and authoritative source of English law, but those of American courts are in England merely an historical and unauthoritative source. They are treated with respect by English judges, and are in fact the ground and origin of an appreciable portion of English law, but their operation is persuasive merely, not authoritative, and no rule of English law extends recognition to them.

The legal sources are the only gates through which new principles can find entrance into the law. Historical sources operate only mediately and indirectly. They are merely the various precedent links in that chain of which the ultimate link must be some legal source to which the rule of law is directly attached.

We are here concerned solely with the legal sources of the law. Its historical sources pertain to legal history, not to legal theory. Hereafter, when we speak of the sources of law, we shall mean by that term the legal sources exclusively.

It may help us to attain a clearer understanding of a somewhat difficult matter if we attempt to reach a definition of these sources from another standpoint. In every progressive community the law undergoes a continuous process of growth and change. This process of legal evolution does not proceed by haphazard. It is not left to the discretion of the judges to apply one law to-day and another to-morrow, for the growth

of the law is itself a matter governed by the law. Every legal system contains certain rules determining the establishment of new law and the disappearance of old. That is to say, it contains certain rules to this effect: that all new principles which conform to such and such requirements are to be recognised as new principles of law, and applied accordingly in substitution for, or as supplementary to the old. Thus it is itself a principle of English law that any principle involved in a judicial decision has the force of law. Similar legal recognition is extended to the law-producing effect of statutes and immemorial customs. Rules such as these establish the sources of the law. A source of law, then, is any fact which in accordance with the law determines the judicial recognition and acceptance of any new rule as having the force of law. It is the legal cause of the admittance by the judicature of any new principle as one which will be observed for the future in the administration of justice.

§ 39. The Legal Sources of English Law

We cannot deduce from the nature of law the nature of its legal sources, for these are merely contingent and not necessary; they differ in different systems of law and even in the same system in different periods of its growth. Having regard exclusively, however, to the general law of England in modern times, it may be said to proceed from two legal sources, namely, legislation and precedent. The *corpus juris* is divisible accordingly into two parts by reference to the source from which it so proceeds. One part consists of enacted law, having its source in legislation, while the other part consists of case law, having its source in judicial precedents. Less accurately, owing to certain ambiguities inherent in the term, the first part consists of the statute law—to be found in the Statute Book and the other volumes of enacted law—while the second part consists of the common law—to be found in the volumes of the law reports. The nature and authority of these two great sources of English law will form the subject of separate and detailed consideration later. It is sufficient here to indicate their nature in general terms. Legislation is the making of law by the formal and express declaration of new rules by some authority in the body politic which is recognised by the courts of law as adequate

for that purpose. A precedent, on the other hand, is the making of law by the recognition and application of new rules by the courts themselves in the administration of justice. Enacted law comes into the courts *ab extra*; case law is developed within the courts themselves.

If we have regard, not merely to the modern and general law of England, but also to that law in earlier times, and to the various forms of special law which exist side by side with the general law, it is necessary to recognise two other legal sources in addition to legislation and precedent. These are custom and agreement, being the sources respectively of customary law and conventional law. Customary law is that which is constituted by those customs which fulfil the requirements laid down by law as the condition of their recognition as obligatory rules of conduct. Conventional law is that which is constituted by agreement as having the force of special law *inter partes*, in derogation of, or in addition to, the general law of the land.

Classified, therefore, by reference to their legal sources, there are four kinds of law :—

- (a) Enacted law, having its source in legislation;
- (b) Case law, having its source in precedent;
- (c) Customary law, having its source in custom;
- (d) Conventional law, having its source in agreement.

The first three of these sources will be considered in the three following chapters of this book. The fourth, namely, agreement, will be dealt with more suitably at a later stage, in its other and predominant aspect as a source of rights and obligations rather than of law.

§ 40. Sources of Law and Sources of Rights

The sources of law may also serve as sources of rights. By a source or title of rights is meant some fact which is legally constitutive of rights. It is the *de facto* antecedent of a legal right just as a source of law is the *de facto* antecedent of a legal principle. An examination of any legal system will show that to a large extent the same classes of facts which operate as sources of law operate as sources of rights also. The two kinds of sources form intersecting circles. Some facts create law but not rights; some create rights but not law; some create both at once. An Act of Parliament, for example, is a typical source of law; but there are numerous private Acts which are clearly titles of

legal rights. Such is an Act of divorce, or an Act granting a pension for public services, or an Act incorporating a company. So in the case of precedent, the judicial decision is a source of rights as between the parties to it, though a source of law as regards the world at large. Regarded as creative of rights, it is called a judgment; regarded as creative of law, it is called a precedent. So also immemorial custom does upon occasion give rise to rights as well as to law. In respect of the former operation, it is specifically distinguished as prescription, while as a source of law it retains the generic title of custom. That an agreement operates as a source of rights is a fact too familiar to require illustration. The proposition which really needs emphatic statement in this case is that agreement is not exclusively a title of rights, but is also operative as a source of law.

§ 41. Ultimate Legal Principles

All rules of law have historical sources. As a matter of fact and history they have their origin somewhere, though we may not know what it is. But not all of them have legal sources. Were this so, it would be necessary for the law to proceed *ad infinitum* in tracing the descent of its principles. It is requisite that the law should postulate one or more first causes, whose operation is ultimate, and whose authority is underived. In other words there must be found in every legal system certain ultimate principles, from which all others are derived, but which are themselves self-existent. Before there can be any talk of legal sources, there must be already in existence some law which establishes them and gives them their authority. The rule that a man may not ride a bicycle on the footpath may have its source in the by-laws of a municipal council; the rule that these by-laws have the force of law has its source in an Act of Parliament. But whence comes the rule that Acts of Parliament have the force of law? This is legally ultimate; its source is historical only, not legal. The historians of the constitution know its origin, but lawyers must accept it as self-existent. It is the law because it is the law, and for no other reason that it is possible for the law itself to take notice of. No statute can confer this power upon Parliament, for this would be to assume and act on the very power that is to be conferred. So also the rule that judicial decisions have the force of law is legally ultimate and underived. No statute lays it down. It is certainly recognised by many precedents, but no precedent

can confer authority upon precedent. It must first possess authority before it can confer it.

If we inquire as to the number of these ultimate principles, the answer is that a legal system is free to recognise any number of them, but is not bound to recognise more than one. From any one ultimate legal source it is possible for the whole law to be derived, but one such there must be. A statute, for example, may at any time give statutory authority to the operation of precedent, and so reduce it from an ultimate to a derivative source of law (b) (c).

SUMMARY

Sources of law	{ Legal—immediate and legally recognised. Historical—remote and not legally recognised.
Legal sources	{ 1. Legislation—enacted law. 2. Precedent—case-law. 3. Custom—customary law. 4. Agreement—conventional law.
Relation between sources of law and sources of rights.	
Legal principles	{ Ultimate—without legal sources. Derivative—drawn from legal sources.

(b) A rule establishing a legal source is called by Kelsen a *Grundnorm* or initial hypothesis. His principal work is translated by Anders Wedberg under the title *General Theory of Law and the State*, in the 20th Century Legal Philosophy Series. For a bibliography and discussion of Kelsen's views see Lauterpacht in *Modern Theories of Law* (1933) 105 ff; J. W. Jones, *Historical Introduction to the Theory of Law* (1940) ch. 9. The similarity between the views of Salmond and Kelsen in this respect is noticed by Professor Lauterpacht in his *Function of Law in the International Community* (1933), 420n.

(c) In addition to the historical and legal sources of the law, it is necessary to note and distinguish what may be termed its literary sources, though this is a continental rather than an English use of the term source. The literary sources are the sources of our knowledge of the law, or rather the original and authoritative sources of such knowledge, as opposed to later commentary or literature. The sources of Roman law are in this sense the compilations of the Emperor Justinian, as contrasted with the works of commentators. So the sources of English law are the statute book, the reports, and the older and authoritative text-books, such as Littleton. The literature, as opposed to the sources of our law, comprises all modern text-books and commentaries.

CHAPTER 6

LEGISLATION

§ 42. The Nature of Legislation

LEGISLATION is that source of law which consists in the declaration of legal rules by a competent authority. It is such an enunciation or promulgation of principles as confers upon them the force of law. It is such a declaration of principles as constitutes a legal ground for their recognition as law for the future by the tribunals of the state.

Although this is the strict and most usual application of the term legislation, there are two other occasional uses of it which require to be distinguished. It is sometimes used in a wide sense to include all methods of law-making. To legislate is to make new law in any fashion. Any act done with the effect of adding to or altering the law is, in this wider sense, an act of legislative authority. As so used, legislation includes all the sources of law, and not merely one of them. "There can be no law," says Austin (a), "without a legislative act." Thus when judges establish a new principle by means of a judicial decision, they may be said to exercise legislative, and not merely judicial power. Yet this is clearly not legislation in the strict sense already defined. The law-creative efficacy of precedent is to be found not in the mere declaration of new principles but in the actual application of them. Judges have in certain cases true legislative power—as where they issue rules of court—but in ordinary cases the judicial declaration of the law, unaccompanied by the judicial application of it, has no legal authority whatever. So the act of the parties to a contract, in laying down rules of special law for themselves to the exclusion of the common law, may be regarded as an exercise of legislative power. But although they have made law, they have made it by way of mutual agreement for themselves, not by way of authoritative declaration for other persons.

The writers who make use of the term in this wide sense

(a) Austin, *Jurisprudence* (3rd ed.) 555.

divide legislation into two kinds, which they distinguish as *direct* and *indirect*. The former is legislation in the narrow sense—the making of law by means of the declaration of it. Indirect legislation, on the other hand, includes all other modes in which the law is made (b).

In a third sense, legislation includes every expression of the will of the legislature, whether directed to the making of rules of law or not. In this use, every Act of Parliament is an instance of legislation, irrespective altogether of its purpose and effect. The judicature, as we have seen, does many things which do not fall within the administration of justice in its strict sense (c); yet in a wider use the term “administration of justice” is extended to include all the activities of the courts. So here, the legislature does not confine its action to the making of rules, yet all its functions are included within the term legislation. An Act of Parliament may do no more than ratify a treaty with a foreign state, or alter the calendar, or establish a uniform time throughout the realm, or make some change in the style and title of the reigning sovereign, or alter the coinage, or appropriate public money, or declare war or make peace, or grant a divorce, or annex or abandon territory. All this is legislation in a wide sense, but it is not that declaration of legal principles with which, as one of the sources of law, in the sense of legal rules, we are here alone concerned (d).

Law that has its source in legislation may be most accurately termed *enacted* law, all other forms being distinguished as *unenacted*. The more familiar term, however, is *statute law* as opposed to the *common law*; but this, though sufficiently correct for most purposes, is defective, inasmuch as the word statute does not extend to all modes of legislation, but is limited to Acts of Parliament. Blackstone and other writers use the expressions *written* and *unwritten* law to indicate the distinction in question. Much law, however, is reduced to writing even in its inception, besides that which originates in legislation. The terms are derived from the Romans, who meant by *jus non scriptum* customary law, all other, whether enacted or unenacted, being *jus scriptum*. We shall see later that

(b) Austin *Jurisprudence* (3rd ed.) 548

(c) *Supra*, § 37.

(d) See further, § 16.

according to the older theory, as we find it in Blackstone and his predecessors, all English law proceeds either from legislation or from custom. The common law was customary, and therefore, adopting the Roman usage, unwritten law. All the residue was enacted, and therefore written law (*e*). We shall also see that this classification is not exhaustive.

§ 43. Supreme Legislation

Legislation is either *supreme* or *subordinate*. The former is that which proceeds from the supreme or sovereign power in the state, and which is therefore incapable of being repealed, annulled, or controlled by any other legislative authority. Subordinate legislation is that which proceeds from any authority other than the sovereign power, and is therefore dependent for its continued existence and validity on some superior or supreme authority. The legislation of the Imperial Parliament is supreme according to English law, for "what the parliament doth, no authority upon earth can undo" (*f*).

In England, the doctrine of parliamentary supremacy goes beyond this: Parliament is not only supreme, but legally omnipotent. It is now a clear rule that an Act of Parliament cannot be held void for unreasonableness (*g*), or indeed upon any other ground. The doctrine of the sovereignty of Parliament, in the sense that there is no legal limit upon the power of Parliament (except the inability of Parliament to bind its successors) was

(*e*) *Constat autem jus nostrum aut ex scripto aut ex non scripto. . . . Ex non scripto jus venit, quod usus comprobavit. Just. Inst. 1. 2. 3.; 1. 2. 9.* "The municipal law of England may with sufficient propriety be divided into two kinds: the *lex non scripta*, the unwritten or common law; and the *lex scripta*, the written or statute law." Blackstone, I. 63.

(*f*) Blackstone, I. 161.

(*g*) See *per Willes, J.*, in *Lee v. Bude, etc., Rly. Co.* (1871), L. R. 6 C. P. at 582. At one time the law was thought to be otherwise. "If any general custom were directly against the law of God, or if any statute were made directly against it . . . the custom and statute were void." *Doctor and Student*, Dial. I, ch. 6. See to the same effect *Bonham's Case* (1610), 8 Co. Rep. 118 a; Coke's 2nd Inst. 587; Hobart 87; Blackstone I. 91. There is some difference of opinion on the question whether this doctrine, in its application to statutes, represented actual medieval practice. The literature is collected in Haines, *The Revival of Natural Law Concepts* (1930) 28 ff. There is also a dispute as to the extent of the controlling power claimed by the judges in *Bonham's Case*. See Corwin, "The 'Higher Law' Background of American Constitutional Law" (1929) 42 H. L. R. at 367 ff.; S. E. Thorne, "Dr. Bonham's Case" (1938), 54 L. Q. R. 543.

expounded by Dicey in his classic treatise, and is now a commonplace of books on constitutional law. Save for a doubtful dictum by Denning, L. J. (*h*), it has hardly been challenged by any English lawyer. At the same time, it must be realised that the doctrine is one of English law only. It is not recognised by the courts of South Africa, which hold that the independence obtained by the Union could not, even in legal theory, be defeated by the English Parliament (*i*). Even a Scottish court has reserved the question whether it could canvass the validity of an Act alleged to infringe the Treaty of Union (*k*). It must be recognised, too, that the acceptance of the sovereignty of a legislature does not preclude the existence of binding rules determining what is, in law, a pronouncement of that legislature. This question lies at the heart of a recent constitutional controversy in South Africa (*l*).

§ 44. Subordinate Legislation

All forms of legislative activity recognised by the law of England, other than the supreme power of Parliament, are subordinate. They may be regarded as having their origin in a delegation of the power of Parliament to inferior authorities, which in the exercise of their delegated functions remain subject to the control of the sovereign legislature.

The chief forms of subordinate legislation are five in number.

(1) *Colonial*.—The powers of self-government entrusted to the colonies and other dependencies of the Crown are subject to the control of the Imperial legislature. The Parliament at Westminster may repeal, alter, or supersede any colonial enactment, and such enactments constitute, accordingly, the first and most important species of subordinate legislation. It has been held, however, that for the purpose of the maxim *Delegatus non potest delegare* a colonial legislature is not a mere delegate of the Imperial Parliament, and hence can delegate

(*h*) *Earl Fitzwilliam's Wentworth Estates v. Minister of Town and Country Planning*, [1951] 2 K.B. 284 at 314 (C. A.)—a dissenting judgment.

(*i*) *Ndlwana v. Hofmeyr N. O.*, [1937] A. D. 229.

(*k*) *McCormick v. Lord Advocate*, 1953 S. C. 396.

(*l*) See Cowen in (1952), 15 M. L. R. 282, (1953), 16 *ibid.* 273; Hamish Gray in (1953), 10 Univ. of Tor. L. J. 54; H. W. R. Wade in [1955] C. L. J. 172; also book review by S. A. de Smith in (1951) 14 M. L. R. 520.

its legislative powers to other bodies that in turn are dependent upon it (m).

(2) *Executive*.—The essential function of the executive is to conduct the administrative departments of the state, but it combines with this certain subordinate legislative powers which have been expressly delegated to it by Parliament, or pertain to it by the common law. Statutes, for example, frequently entrust to some department of the executive government the duty of supplementing the statutory provisions by the issue of more detailed regulations bearing on the same matter (n). So it is part of the prerogative of the Crown at common law to make laws for the government of territories acquired by conquest or cession, and not yet possessed of representative local legislatures.

(3) *Judicial*.—In the same way, certain delegated legislative powers are possessed by the judicature. The superior courts have the power of making rules for the regulation of their own procedure. This is judicial legislation in the true sense of the term, differing in this respect from the so-called legislative action of the courts in creating new law by way of precedent.

(4) *Municipal*.—Municipal authorities are entrusted by the law with limited and subordinate powers of establishing special law for the districts under their control. The enactments so authorised are termed by-laws, and this form of legislation may be distinguished as municipal.

(5) *Autonomous*.—All the kinds of legislation which we have hitherto considered proceed from the state itself, either in its supreme or in one or other of its many subordinate departments. But this is not necessarily the case, for legislation is not a function that is essentially limited to the state. The declaration of new principles amounts to legislation not because it is the voice of the state, but because it is accepted by the state as a sufficient legal ground for giving effect to those new principles in its courts of justice. In the allowance

(m) *Powell v. Apollo Candle Co.* (1885), 10 App. Cas. 282.

(n) See as to this form of delegated legislation, which is now of very great importance, the Report of the Committee on Ministers' Powers, Cmd. 4060 of 1932; Allen, *Law in the Making* (5th ed. 1951) ch. 7; Allen, *Law and Orders* (1945).

of new law the state may hearken to other voices than its own. In general, indeed, the power of legislation is far too important to be committed to any person or body of persons save the incorporate community itself. The great bulk of enacted law is promulgated by the state in its own person. But in exceptional cases it has been found possible and expedient to entrust this power to private hands. The law gives to certain groups of private individuals limited legislative authority touching matters which concern themselves. A railway company, for example, is able to make by-laws for the regulation of its undertaking. A university may make statutes binding upon its members. A registered company may alter those articles of association by which its constitution and management are determined. Legislation thus effected by private persons, and the law so created, may be distinguished as *autonomic*.

There is a close resemblance between autonomic law and conventional law, but there is also a real distinction between them. The creation of each is a function entrusted by the state to private persons. But conventional law is the product of agreement, and therefore is law for none except those who have consented to its creation. Autonomic law, on the contrary, is the product of a true form of legislation, and is imposed by superior authority *in invitos*. The act of a general meeting of shareholders in altering the articles of association is an act of autonomous legislation, because the majority has the power of imposing its will in this respect upon a dissentient minority. All the shareholders may in fact agree, but the law-creating efficacy of their resolution is independent of any such accidental unanimity. We may say, if we please, that with respect to consenting shareholders the resolution is an agreement, while with respect to dissentients it is an act of legislative authority. The original articles of association, on the other hand, as they stand when the company is first formed, constitute a body of conventional, not autonomic law. They are law for all shareholders by virtue of their own agreement to become members of the company, and are not the outcome of any subsequent exercise of legislative authority vested in the majority (o).

(o) The mere fact that a person who becomes a shareholder must be taken to have impliedly agreed to be bound not only by the articles as they stand but by any subsequent modification of them, does not render subsequent modifications conventional instead of legislative in their nature. The immediate source of the new rules is not agreement, but imposition by superior authority.

§ 45. Relation of Legislation to other Sources

So great is the superiority of legislation over all other methods of legal evolution, that the tendency of advancing civilisation is to acknowledge its exclusive claim, and to discard the other instruments as relics of the infancy of law. Statute law has already become the type or standard, from which the other forms of law are more or less abnormal variations. Nothing is more natural than this from our modern point of view, nothing less natural from that of primitive jurisprudence. Early law is conceived as *jus* (the principles of justice), rather than as *lex* (the will of the state). The function of the state in its earlier conception is to *enforce* the law, not to *make* it. The rules so to be enforced are those rules of right which are found realised in the immemorial customs of the nation, or which are sanctioned by religious faith and practice, or which have been divinely revealed to men. It is well known that the earliest codes were the work, not of mortal men, but of the gods (*p*). That the material contents of the law depend upon the express or tacit will of the state, that principles sanctioned by religion or immemorial usage are laws only so long as the prince chooses to retain them unaltered, that it is within the powers and functions of political rulers to change and subvert the laws at their own good pleasure, are beliefs which mark considerable progress along the road of political and legal development. Until such progress has been made, and until the petrifying influence of the primitive alliance of law with religion and immutable custom has been to some extent dissolved, the part played by human legislation in the development of the legal system is necessarily small, and may be even non-existent. As it is the most powerful, so it is the latest of the instruments of legal growth.

In considering the advantages of legislation, it will be convenient to contrast it specially with its most formidable rival, namely, precedent. So considered, the first virtue of legislation lies in its abrogative power. It is not merely a source of new law, but is equally effective in abolishing that which already exists. But precedent possesses merely constitutive efficacy;

(p) Plato, *Laws*, 624. Spencer, *Sociology*, II, 515 *et seq.* Maine, *Ancient Law* (ed. Pollock), ch. I, and note C. p. 22.

it is capable of producing very good law—better in some respects than that which we obtain by way of legislation—but its defect is that, except in a very imperfect and indirect manner, its operation is irreversible. What it does, it does once for all. It cannot go back upon its footsteps, and do well what it has once done ill. Legislation, therefore, is the indispensable instrument, not indeed of legal growth, but of legal reform. As a destructive and reformative agent it has no equivalent, and without it all law is as that of the Medes and Persians.

The second respect in which legislation is superior to precedent is that it allows an advantageous division of labour, which here, as elsewhere, results in increased efficiency. The legislature becomes differentiated from the judicature, the duty of the former being to make law, while that of the latter is to interpret and apply it. Speaking generally, a legal system will be best administered when those who administer it have this as their sole function. Precedent, on the contrary, unites in the same hands the business of making the law and that of enforcing it.

It is true, however, that legislation does not necessarily involve any such division of functions. It is not of the essence of this form of legal development that it should proceed from a distinct department of the state, whose business it is to give laws to the judicature. It is perfectly possible for the law to develop by a process of true legislation, in the absence of any legislative organ other than the courts of justice themselves. We have already noticed the existence of this judicial legislation, in considering the various forms of subordinate legislative power. The most celebrated instance of it is the case of the Roman praetor. In addition to his purely judicial functions, he possessed the *jus edicendi*, that is to say, legislative powers in respect of the matters pertaining to his office. It was customary for each praetor at the commencement of his term of office to publish an *edictum* containing a declaration of the principles which he intended to observe in the exercise of his judicial functions. Each such edict was naturally identical in its main outlines with that which preceded it, the alterations made in the old law by each successive praetor being for the most part accepted by his successors. By this exercise of legislative power on the part of judicial officers, a

very considerable body of new law was in course of time established, distinguished as the *jus praetorium* from the older *jus civile*. Powers of judicial legislation, similar in kind, though less in extent, are at the present day very generally conferred upon the higher courts of justice. Yet though not theoretically necessary it is certainly expedient that, at least in its higher forms, the function of law-making should be vested in a department of the state superior to and independent of the judicature.

A third advantage of statute law is that the formal declaration of it before the commission of the acts to which it applies is generally a condition precedent to its application in courts of justice. Case law, on the contrary, is created and declared in the very act of applying and enforcing it. Legislation satisfies the requirement of natural justice that laws shall be known before they are enforced; but case law operates retrospectively, being created *pro re nata*, and applied to facts which are prior in date to the law itself (q).

This particular distinction must not, however, be over-emphasised. Sometimes statutes are made retrospective, though this is not now done in the case of statutes creating criminal offences, the maxim *nulla poena sine lege* being rigidly followed in criminal law (r). Even where statutes are not made retrospective as a matter of law, their passing may in fact upset settled expectations. For instance, a person who has bought a house and who intends to let it at a profitable rent, may find, through the passing of a Rent Restrictions Act, that the recoverable rent is much less than he expected (s). Again, modern statutes are so numerous and so complicated that the ordinary layman has often little idea of his legal duties until he has broken them, or until he hears of legal proceedings for their breach being taken against others. This difficulty is

(q) On this and other grounds "judge-made law", as he called it, was the object of constant denunciation by Bentham. "It is the judges", he says in his vigorous way (*Works*, V. 235), "that make the common law. Do you know how they make it? Just as a man makes laws for his dog. When your dog does anything you want to break him of, you wait till he does it and then beat him. This is the way you make laws for your dog, and this is the way the judges make laws for you and me."

(r) See on this maxim Williams, *Criminal Law: The General Part*, ch. 12.

(s) A more surprising illustration of legislation defeating expectations is *Re Kempthorne, Charles v. Kempthorne*, [1930] 1 Ch. 268. Legislation may so easily defeat existing arrangements that in the law of contract impossibility of performance brought about by operation of law is regarded as a defence.

alleviated in the case of trade regulations by their publication in trade newspapers. Finally, even when the existence of legislation is known, its meaning may be doubtful. In such a case the meaning must be established by the court, and the decision of the court will be retrospective to the date of the operation of the statute. Here the rule as finally established is applied retrospectively even though in theory it rests upon a statute. In each of these respects the general proposition that statutes are not retrospective needs qualification. Turning to case law, it is true that it is invariably retrospective, but this is softened by the fact that its development is gradual, and limited in scope; new rules grow out of old ones, and rarely represent a clean break with the existing law. Also, much judge-made law is in accordance with ordinary ideas of morality. Thus the decision in *R. v. Manley* (t), which created or revived the offence of public mischief, was in a sense an infraction of the maxim *nulla poena sine lege*; but the defendant at least knew in advance that she was telling an untruth and confusing the authorities.

The fourth advantage of legislation is that it can by way of anticipation make rules for cases that have not yet arisen, whereas precedent must needs wait until the actual concrete instance comes before the courts for decision (u). Precedent is dependent on, legislation independent of, the accidental course of litigation. So far as precedent is concerned, a point of law must remain unsettled, until by chance the very case arises. Legislation can fill up a vacancy, or settle a doubt in the legal system, as soon as the existence of this defect is called to the attention of the legislature. Case law, therefore, is essentially incomplete, uncertain, and unsystematic; while if statute law shows the same defects, it is only through the lethargy or incapacity of the legislature. As a set-off against this demerit of precedent, it is to be observed that a rule formulated by the judicature in view of the actual case to which it is to be applied is not unlikely to be of better workmanship, and more carefully

(t) [1933] 1 K. B. 529. Cf. Williams, *op. cit.*

(u) The actual concrete instance may, however, be a case brought before the court for a declaration of rights, not a case in which one party complains that the other has committed a wrong. Generally, English courts are reluctant to make pronouncements as to rights otherwise than in cases where a wrong is alleged; but exceptionally, in a few cases, they do so. *Supra*, § 37.

adapted to the ends to be served by it, than one laid down *a priori* by the legislature.

Finally, statute law is greatly superior to case law in point of form. The product of legislation assumes the form of abstract propositions, but that of precedent is merged in the concrete details of the actual cases to which it owes its origin. Statute law is, in general, brief, clear, easily accessible and knowable, while case law is buried from sight and knowledge in the huge and daily growing mass of the records of bygone litigation. Case law is gold in the mine—a few grains of the precious metal to the ton of useless matter—while statute law is coin of the realm ready for immediate use.

This very perfection of form, however, brings with it a defect of substance from which case law is free. Statute law is embodied in an authoritative form of written words, and this literary expression is an essential part of the law itself. It is the duty of the courts in general to apply the letter of the law. They are concerned with the spirit and reason of it only so far as the spirit and reason have succeeded in finding expression through the letter. Case law, on the contrary, has no letter. It has no authoritative verbal expression, and there is no barrier between the courts of justice and the very spirit and purpose of the law which they are called on to administer. In interpreting and applying statute law, the courts are concerned with words and their true meaning; in interpreting and applying case law, they are dealing with ideas and principles and their just and reasonable contents and operation. Statute law, where the words of the statute are clear, is rigid, straitly bound within the limits of authoritative formulæ; case law, with all its imperfections, has at least this merit, that it remains in living contact with the reason and justice of the matter, and draws from this source a flexibility and a power of growth and adaptation which are too much wanting in the *littera scripta* of enacted law.

These last remarks need one qualification. Where the words of the statute are not clear the court has to some extent a discretion to interpret the statute in accordance with its social purpose. But the initial question whether the words of the statute are clear, and the subsidiary question as to its social purpose, may be quite as difficult as ascertaining the *ratio*

decidendi of a case. Thus statute law is not always superior to case law in point of clarity, nor yet always inferior to it in point of flexibility.

§ 46. Codification

The advantages of enacted law so greatly outweigh its defects that there can be no doubt as to the ultimate issue of its rivalry with the other forms of legal development and expression. The whole tendency in modern times is towards the process which, since the days of Bentham, has been known as codification, that is to say, the reduction of the whole *corpus juris*, so far as practicable, to the form of enacted law. In this respect England lags far behind the Continent. Since the middle of the eighteenth century the process has been going on in European countries, and is now all but complete. Nearly everywhere the old medley of civil, canon, customary, and enacted law has given place to codes constructed with more or less skill and success. Even in England, and the other countries to which English law has spread, tentative steps are being taken on the same road. Certain isolated and well-developed portions of the common law, such as the law of bills of exchange, of partnership, and of sale, have been selected for transformation into statutory form. The process is one of exceeding difficulty, owing to the complexity and elaboration of English legal doctrine. Many portions of the law are not yet ripe for it, and premature codification is worse than none at all. But the final result is not doubtful.

Codification must not be understood to involve the total abolition of precedent as a source of law. Case law will continue to grow, even when the codes are complete. The old theory, now gradually disappearing, but still true in most departments of the law, is that the common law is the basis and groundwork of the legal system, legislation being nothing more than a special instrument for its occasional modification or development. Unenacted law is the principal, and enacted law is merely accessory. The activity of the legislature is called for only on special occasions to do that which lies beyond the constructive or remedial efficacy of the common law. Codification means, not the total disappearance of case law, but merely the reversal of this relation between it and statute law. It

means that the substance and body of the law shall be enacted law, and that case law shall be incidental and supplementary only. In the most carefully prepared of codes subtle ambiguities will come to light, real or apparent inconsistencies will become manifest, and omissions will reveal themselves. No legislative skill can effectually anticipate the complexity and variety of the facts. The function of precedent will be to supplement, to interpret, to reconcile, and to develop the principles which the code contains. Out of the code itself, therefore, a body of case law will grow, as a judicial commentary and supplement. It will be expedient from time to time that this supplementary and explanatory case law be itself codified and incorporated into successive editions of the code. But so often as this is done, the process of interpretation will begin again with the like results (v).

An interesting compromise between case law and codification is the American Law Institute's Restatement of American law. The Restatement is in the form of a code, but it is not statutory and has no official sanction. Its authority in the courts of the United States, which is considerable, rests entirely on the eminence of the jurists who have framed it. Generally speaking, the Restatement, as its name implies, merely declares the existing law, without attempting to suggest or incorporate improvements in it. But where the decisions are in conflict, the framers of the Restatement have adopted what they consider to be the preferable rule, not necessarily the one supported by the greatest mass of authority (w).

§ 47. The Interpretation of Enacted Law: Literal Interpretation

We have seen that one of the characteristics of enacted law is its embodiment in authoritative formulæ. The very words

(v) For the Continental controversy on the subject of codification see J. W. Jones, *Historical Introduction to the Theory of Law*, ch. 2; Seagle, *The Quest for Law* (1941) ch. 18, and bibliography therein at pp. 435-6. For the history of the attempt to produce a criminal code for England see Williams, *Criminal Law: The General Part*, § 181; and for future prospects of codification in England see Dennis Lloyd in (1949) 2 *Current Legal Problems* 155.

(w) For the genesis and working of the American Law Institute see H. E. Yntema in (1934) 12 *Can. Bar Rev.* 319, reprinted in *Essays in Tribute to Orrin Kip McMurray* (ed. Radin and Kidd, 1935) 657. Franklin in (1934) 47 *H. L. R.* 1367 compares the Restatement with a code, to the disadvantage of the Restatement.

in which it is expressed—the *litera scripta*—constitute a part of the law itself. Legal authority is possessed by the letter, no less than by the spirit of the enactment. Other forms of law (with the exception of written conventional law, which in this respect stands by the side of statutory) have no fixed and authoritative expression. There is in them no letter of the law, to stand between the spirit of the law and its judicial application. Hence it is that in the case of enacted law a process of judicial *interpretation* or *construction* is necessary, which is not called for in respect of customary or case law. By interpretation or construction is meant the process by which the courts seek to ascertain the meaning of the legislature through the medium of the authoritative forms in which it is expressed.

Interpretation is of two kinds, which may be distinguished as *literal* and *free* (x). The former is that which regards exclusively the verbal expression of the law. It does not look beyond the *litera legis*. Free interpretation, on the other hand, is that which departs from the letter of the law, and seeks elsewhere for some other and more satisfactory evidence of the true intention of the legislature. It is essential to determine with accuracy the relations which subsist between these two methods. In other words, we have to determine the relative claims of the letter and the spirit of enacted law.

The traditional mode of resolving this problem is the following. The duty of the judicature is to discover and to act upon the true intention of the legislature—the *mens* or *sententia legis*. The essence of the law lies in its spirit, not in its letter, for the letter is significant only as being the external manifestation of the intention that underlies it. Nevertheless in all ordinary cases the courts must be content to accept the *litera legis* as the exclusive and conclusive evidence of the *sententia legis*. They must in general take it absolutely for granted that the legislature has said what it meant, and meant what it has said. *Ita scriptum est* is the first principle of interpretation. Judges are not at liberty to add to or take from or modify the letter

(x) Sir John Salmond adopted the terms *grammatical* and *logical* from Continental lawyers; the editor has replaced these by the words *literal* and *free* in the belief that the latter more clearly express the meaning. *Logical* is not a good name for free or equitable interpretation.

of the law, simply because they have reason to believe that the true *sententia legis* is not completely or correctly expressed by it.

In order to determine the ordinary meaning of the words used in the statute, the court may look at dictionaries, or scientific or other technical works in which the words are used. But a dictionary only gives the meaning of the word abstracted from its context, and the task of interpretation always involves selecting the meaning required by the particular collocation in which the word appears. Hence the maxim *Noscitur a sociis*, which Lord Macmillan translated: "The meaning of a word is to be judged by the company it keeps" (y). Context may even give the word a meaning that is not to be found in the dictionary; and it may do this even for the technical terms of the law itself. For example, several instances are to be found in the reports in which the technical term "void", as used in a statute, has been construed as if it were "voidable", since this was the meaning required to give effect to the evident intention of the legislature. The word "child", however, has a rather tougher technical meaning than most; it cannot be understood to include an illegitimate child unless there are clear indications to this effect in the statute itself (z).

Where the meaning of a word has changed with the passage of time, it is, of course, to be understood in the sense that it bore when the statute was enacted. One of the most interesting examples of this rule is the use by the courts of Mill's *Political Economy* to interpret the meaning of the expression "direct tax" in the British North America Act, 1867 (a). It is assumed that the Parliament of 1867 understood and intended the economic concepts current at the time. On the other hand, the courts are quite ready to extend the words of statutes to cover new inventions, provided that the new invention falls within the generic conception of what was known at the date of the statute, and falls within the fair meaning of what was expressed. Thus the Engraving Copyright Act, 1734, was held to cover not only engravings but photographs (b); the Telegraph Acts of 1863 and

(y) *Law and Other Things* 166.

(z) *Galloway v. Galloway*, [1956] A. C. 299; cf. (1955), 18 M. L. R. 298; (1956), 19 *ibid.* 200.

(a) E.g., *Atlantic Smoke Shops, Ltd. v. Conlon*, [1943] A. C. 550 (P. C.).

(b) *Gambart v. Bell* (1863), 32 L. J. C. P. 166.

1869 were held to extend to the telephone (c); and an electric tram-car was held to be a "stage carriage" within the meaning of an Act of 1832 (d).

§ 48. Logical Defects

It was said just now that the courts must ordinarily follow the letter of the statute. To this general principle there are two exceptions. There are two cases in which the *littera legis* need not be taken as conclusive, and in which the *sententia legis* may be sought from other indications. The first of these cases is that in which the letter of the law is *logically defective*, that is to say, when it fails to express some single, definite, coherent, and complete idea.

The logical defects by which the *littera legis* may be affected are three in number. The first is ambiguity; for a statute, instead of meaning one thing, may mean two or more different things. In such case it is the right and duty of the courts to go behind the letter of the law, and to ascertain from other sources, as best they can, the true intention which has thus failed to attain perfect expression.

A second logical defect of statutory expression is inconsistency. A law, instead of having more meanings than one, may have none at all, the different parts of it being repugnant, so as to destroy each other's significance. In this case it is the duty of the judicature to ascertain in some other way the true *sententia legis*, and to correct the letter of the law accordingly.

Lastly, the law may be logically defective by reason of its incompleteness. The text, though neither ambiguous nor inconsistent, may contain some *lacuna* which prevents it from expressing any logically complete idea. For example, where there are two alternative cases, the law may make provision for one of them, and remain silent as to the other. Such omissions the courts may lawfully supply by way of logical interpretation. It is to be noted, however, that the omission must be such as to make the statute *logically* incomplete. It is not enough that the legislature meant more than it said, and failed to express its whole mind. If what it has said is logically complete—

(c) *Att.-Gen. v. Edison Telephone Co.* (1881), 6 Q. B. D. 244.
(d) *Chapman v. Kirke*, [1948] 2 K. B. 450.

giving expression to a single, intelligible and complete idea—the courts generally have no concern with anything else that the legislature may have meant but not said. Their duty is to apply the letter of the law, therefore they may alter or add to it so far as is necessary to make its application possible, but they must do nothing more.

There are some specific principles of interpretation to assist or hinder the judges in dealing with ambiguous, contradictory or incomplete provisions. One is expressed in the maxim *Expressio unius est exclusio alterius*. An example of its application is in the following circumstances. Suppose that a statute makes two provisions, A and B, both of which would normally be taken to have a certain implication. Now suppose, further, that the statute *expresses* this implication for A, but fails to express it for B. According to the maxim, the implication which would normally hold for B is impliedly negated by the failure to express it, having regard to the fact that it is expressed for A. Another example is where the statute refers both to land and to buildings, and then makes a provision for land (without mentioning buildings). Here the provision may be construed not to cover buildings, even though the word "land" would normally be taken to include buildings (e). However, the maxim is not a compelling rule of law, but only a phrase that may be used by the court in expounding the probable intent of the legislature. It is, in the oft-quoted words of Lopes, L. J., "a valuable servant but a dangerous master" (f). Quite frequently the court holds that the express provision made in the one instance is *ex abundanti cautela*, and does not displace the normal implication to the same effect in the second instance (g). It may also be noticed that the maxim cannot be used to extend the operation of a statute beyond the provision that it actually makes. Thus if Parliament enacts for A what is already the law for A and others, this does not impliedly change the law for the others (h). Rather than make an

(e) Maxwell, *Interpretation of Statutes* (10th ed.) 330-331.

(f) *Colquhoun v. Brooks* (1888), 21 Q. B. D. 52.

(g) E.g., *Dean v. Wiesengrund*, [1955] 2 Q. B. 120 (C. A.); but cf. *Marczuk v. Marczuk*, [1956] 2 W. L. R. 849 (C. A.). For another application of the maxim see *Nyali, Ltd. v. Att.-Gen.*, [1956] 3 W. L. R. 341 at 346 (H. L.).

(h) Maxwell, *Interpretation of Statutes* (10th ed.) 316.

implication of this kind, the court will regard the statute as a work of supererogation.

The maxim *Expressum facit cessare tacitum* is sometimes used in the same context as the one just considered, but it can be taken as having a distinct meaning. In itself, the proposition that express words put an end to implication is obvious enough, but it has sometimes been used in the past for questionable purposes, particularly that of refusing to pay attention to the general words of statutes where these are accompanied by specific instances (i). At the present day it is rarely used for this purpose (k).

In considering the logical defects of the *litera legis*, we have tacitly assumed that by going behind the defective text it is always possible to discover a logically perfect *sententia legis*. We have assumed that the whole duty of the courts is to ascertain the true and perfect intention which has received imperfect expression. This is not so, however. In a great manifestation of corresponding defects in the *sententia*. If the legislature speaks ambiguously, it is often because there is no single and definite meaning to be expressed. If the words of the legislature are self-contradictory, it is possibly due to some repugnancy and confusion in the intention itself. If the text contains omissions which make it logically imperfect, the reason is more often that the case in question has not occurred to the mind of the legislature, than that there exists with respect to it a real intention which by inadvertence has not been expressed.

What, then, is the rule of interpretation in such cases? May the courts correct and supplement the defective *sententia legis*, as well as the defective *litera legis*? The answer is that they may and must. If the letter of the law is logically defective, it must be made logically perfect, and it makes no

(i) The use made of the maxim is thus satirised by Fielding (*Tom Jones*, Book 3, ch. 6). "Thwackum was encouraged to the undertaking by reflecting that to covet your neighbour's sister is nowhere forbidden; and he knew it was a rule in the construction of all laws, that *Expressum facit cessare tacitum*. The sense of which is, 'When a lawgiver sets down plainly his whole meaning, we are prevented from making him mean what we please ourselves'. As some instances of women, therefore, are mentioned in the divine law, which forbids us to covet our neighbour's goods, and that of a sister omitted, he concluded it to be lawful."

(k) See, e.g., *Re Smallwood* [1951] Ch. 369.

difference in this respect whether the defect does or does not correspond to one in the *sententia legis* itself. Where there is a genuine and perfect intention lying behind the defective text, the courts must ascertain and give effect to it; where there is none, they must ascertain and give effect to the intention which the legislature presumably would have had, if the ambiguity, inconsistency, or omission had been called to mind. This may be regarded as the *dormant* or *latent* intention of the legislature, and it is this which must be sought for as a substitute in the absence of any real and conscious intention (l).

§ 49. The Golden Rule for Avoiding Absurdity

It has been already said that there are two cases in which the courts do not regard themselves as enjoined to keep to a strictly literal interpretation. The first of these, namely that of some logical defect in the *litera legis*, has been considered. The second is that in which the text leads to a result so unreasonable that it is self-evident that the legislature could not have meant what it has said. For example, there may be some obvious clerical error in the text, such as a reference to a section by the wrong number, or the omission of a negative in some passage in which it is clearly required. But the courts will go much farther than this, and, in order to avoid what they regard as absurdity, imply into statutes saving clauses that have not been expressed. This is the so-called "golden rule" of interpretation (m). The saving clauses so implied are generally such as to preserve the previous principles of the common law.

Since a statute is intended to alter or declare the law of the land, it is naturally and properly read in the light of general legal principles. Thus when a statutory order was made transferring the rights and liabilities of a dissolved company to another company, it was held that this did not have the effect of transferring the employees of the dissolved company as though they were chattels, for it was a general principle of law that contracts of

(l) In the interpretation of contracts, no less than in that of statutes, there is to be noticed this distinction between the real and the latent intention of the parties. The difficulty of construing a contract arises more often from the fact that the parties had no clear intention at all as to the particular point, than from the fact that they failed to express an intention which they actually had.

(m) *Mattison v. Hart* (1854) 14 C. B. at 385.

personal service were not capable of being assigned (n). An Act providing for the distribution of the property of an intestate among his next-of-kin was held not to confer a benefit upon the murderer of the deceased, for it was a general principle of law that no one could profit from his own wrong (o). "It is a sound rule", said Byles, J., "to construe a statute in conformity with the common law, rather than against it, except where or in so far as the statute is plainly intended to alter the course of the common law" (p). The justification for this method of interpretation is twofold: that it is likely to effectuate the intention of the legislature, and that it avoids absurd, unjust or immoral results and preserves the broad principles of the law. However, the principle is abused when it is used as a means of whittling down what was evidently intended by Parliament as a broad reforming measure. It cannot be denied that the presumption of conformity with the common law has sometimes been used in this way in the past. Sir Frederick Pollock expressed this caustically when he wrote:

"There is a whole science of interpretation better known to judges and parliamentary draftsmen than to most members of the legislature itself. Some of its rules cannot well be accounted for except on the theory that Parliament generally changes the law for the worse, and that the business of the judges is to keep the mischief of its interference within the narrowest possible bounds" (q).

Lord Wright was hardly less emphatic when he criticised what he called "a tendency common in construing an Act which changes the law, that is to minimise or neutralise its operation by introducing notions taken from or inspired by the old law which the words of the Act were intended to abrogate and did abrogate" (r). Where the Act uses wide language, it may be said that Parliament could never have intended by general words to interfere with particular rules of the common law (s). Where,

(n) *Nokes v. Doncaster Amalgamated Collieries, Ltd.*, [1940] A. C. 1014.

(o) *Re Sigsworth*, [1935] Ch. 89.

(p) Quoted by Slessor, L. J., in *Lord Eldon v. Hedley Bros.*, [1935] 2 K. B. 1 at 24 (C. A.).

(q) *Essays in Jurisprudence and Ethics* (1882) 85.

(r) *Rose v. Ford*, [1937] A. C. 826 at 846.

(s) As in *Viscountess Rhondda's Claim*, [1922] 2 A.C. 339, where great learning was lavished upon the demonstration that when Parliament enacted that a person should not be disqualified by sex from the exercise of any public function, this did not mean that peeresses could sit in the House of Lords.

on the other hand, the draftsman has attempted to make his meaning clearer by giving a list of particular applications of the new rule and then following this list by general words, in order to make sure that nothing is omitted, the courts may cut down the meaning of the general words either by the maxims *Noscitur a sociis* and *Expressum facit cessare tacitum* or by the *ejusdem generis* rule, the latter operating to restrict the meaning of general words to things or matters of the same kind (genus) as the preceding particular words. Thus, whichever legislative technique is employed, the Act may fail of its effect as a general remedial measure. However, these criticisms of judicial practice have largely ceased to be true in our own day. In particular, the *ejusdem generis* rule is now used with caution, and is hardly ever allowed to defeat the obvious intention of Parliament, except in the case of ancient statutes that have come to be out of harmony with general opinion (t).

Where no principle of the common law can be invoked to control a statute, the absurdity rule is less likely to be applied, and numberless instances can be found in the reports in which the judges have construed statutes in such a way as to create obvious absurdities, being felt impelled to come to such a conclusion by the literal words of the statute (u). Also, the absurdity rule is almost wholly confined to the restriction of statutes for the avoidance of absurdity; it is rare indeed for statutes to be extended on this ground beyond their express language (v).

§ 50. The Mischief Rule

Another rule which allows the judges to enter into questions of policy in interpreting statutes is the "mischief" rule. This takes its origin from *Heydon's Case* (w), and requires the judges to look at the common law before the Act, and the mischief in the common law which the statute was intended to remedy; the Act is then to be construed in such a way as to suppress the mis-

(t) E.g., the Sunday Observance Act, 1677: see *Gregory v. Fearn*, [1953] 1 W. L. R. 974.

(u) To give only two illustrations: *Cheese v. Lovejoy* (1877), 2 P. D. 251 (C. A.); *Grange v. Silcock* (1897), 77 L. T. 340.

(v) The interpretation of the phrase "single woman" in the Bastardy Acts to include a married woman living apart from her husband is a rare example of judicial valour. See *Jones v. Evans*, [1944] K. B. 582.

(w) (1584) 3 Co. Rep. at 7b.

chief and advance the remedy. As with the absurdity rule, judges vary in the extent to which they are prepared to make use of this permission; and, in the instances where *Heydon's Case* is used, this is nearly always for the purposes of restricting, and not for extending the statute (x). Further, the courts are hampered in applying *Heydon's Case* by the restricted information that they allow themselves as to the mischief at which the statute was aimed and the reason for the remedy. In seeking the intention underlying a statute, English courts do not permit themselves to consider the preliminary discussions (called on the Continent *travaux préparatoires*) that took place before the enactment was made law. Thus they will not look at debates in Parliament, or, in general, at the reports of commissions to which effect was given in framing the legislation (y). The reason advanced for excluding the first is that the motives of different members of Parliament may vary; *non constat* that those who have spoken represent the intention of the majority. The reason advanced for excluding the second is that it may not have been the intention of Parliament to give precise effect to the report of the commission. Neither reason is fully convincing, and recent cases indicate that the rule of exclusion of commission reports will not always be insisted upon (z) (a).

(x) *E.g.*, *Viscountess Rhondda's Claim*, [1922] 2 A. C. 339 at 365, 369.

(y) See *Assam Railways & Trading Co. v. I. R. Commrs.*, [1935] A. C. 445; *Ellerman Lines, Ltd. v. Murray*, [1931] A. C. 126; *Transport & General Credit Corp. v. Morgan*, [1939] Ch. 531 at 551-2. There are, however, cases where the reports of commissions will be admitted. (1) Such a report was admitted in *Eastman Photographic Materials Co. v. Comptroller-General of Patents*, [1898] A. C. 571, and this was explained by Lord Wright in the *Assam Railways Case* (at pp. 458-9) as a case where resort was had to the report for the purpose of ascertaining the evil that the statute was designed to remedy, within the principle of *Heydon's Case*. This opens a considerable gap in the general rule, if the courts are willing to employ it. (2) In the construction of Acts relating to what were formerly called the Dominions judges have tended to relax the general rule. Thus in *British Coal Corp. v. R.*, [1935] A. C. 500, at 523, Lord Sankey referred to the report of the Imperial Conference of 1926, in construing the Statute of Westminster, 1931. See also Kennedy, *Essays in Constitutional Law* (1934) 167, and the same writer in (1943) 8 C. L. J. 152. For a general discussion see D. G. Kilgour in (1952) 30 Can. Bar Rev. 769; Craies, *Statute Law* (4th ed.) 123.

(z) *Beard v. Beard*, [1946] P. at 26-27; *Earl Fitzwilliam's Wentworth Estate v. Minister of Town and Country Planning*, [1951] 2 K. B. at 310.

(a) On the general subject of legislation as a source of law, see further Allen, *Law in the Making* (5th ed. 1951) ch. 6; Pollock, *First Book of Jurisprudence* (6th ed. 1929) Part II. ch. 7.

On the interpretation of statutes see Odgers on *The Construction of Deeds and Statutes*; Craies on *Statutes*; Maxwell on *Statutes*; Amos, "The Interpretation of Statutes" (1934) 5 C. L. J. 163; D. J. L. Davies, "The

SUMMARY

Legislation—Its three senses:

1. All forms of law-making { Direct legislation.
Indirect legislation.
2. All expression of the will of the legislature.
3. The creation of the law by way of authoritative declaration.

Law { Enacted—Statute—Written.
Unenacted—Common—Unwritten.

Legislation { Supreme—by the Imperial Parliament.
Subordinate { 1. Colonial.
2. Executive.
3. Judicial.
4. Municipal.
5. Autonomous.

Historical relation of legislation to other sources of law.

Superiority of legislation over other sources of law.

Codification.

Interpretation { Literal—based on the *litera legis* exclusively.
Logical { *Litera legis* logically defective. { Ambiguous.
Inconsistent.
Incomplete.
Litera legis containing self-evident error or leading to absurdity.

The exclusion of debates in Parliament and the reports of commissions.

Interpretation of Statutes in the Light of their Policy by the English Courts" (1935) 35 Col. L. Rev. 519; R. A. Eastwood, "A Plea for the Historical Interpretation of Statute Law" (1935) Journal of the Society of Public Teachers of Law, 1; Corry, "Administrative Law and the Interpretation of Statutes" (1935) 1 Univ. of Tor. L. J. 286; E. R. Hopkins, "The Literal Canon and the Golden Rule" (1937) 15 Can. Bar Rev. 689; John Willis, "Statute Interpretation in a Nutshell" (1938) 16 Can. Bar Rev. 1. The last article is particularly valuable.

For the uncertainty inherent in language, see Wurzel, *Das Juristische Denken* (1904), translated in part in *The Science of Legal Method* (1921) 286 ff.; Williams, "Language and the Law", II, III (1945), 61 L. Q. R. 179, 293.

CHAPTER 7

PRECEDENT

§ 51. The Authority of Precedents

THE importance of judicial precedents has always been a distinguishing characteristic of English law. The great body of the common or unwritten law is almost entirely the product of decided cases, accumulated in an immense series of reports extending backwards with scarcely a break to the reign of Edward the First at the close of the thirteenth century. Orthodox legal theory, indeed, long professed to regard the common law as customary law, and judicial decisions as merely evidence of custom and of the law derived therefrom. This was never much better than an admitted fiction. In practice, if not in theory, the common law of England has been created by the decisions of English judges. Neither Roman law, however, nor any of those modern systems which are founded upon it, allows such a degree of authority to precedent. They see no difference of kind between precedent and any other expression of expert legal opinion. A book of reports and a text-book are in the same legal category. They are both evidences of the law; they are both instruments for the persuasion of judges; but neither of them is anything more (a). English law, on the other hand, draws a sharp distinction between them. A judicial precedent speaks in England with authority; it is not merely evidence of the law but a source of it; and the courts are bound to follow the law that is so established.

It seems clear that we must attribute this feature of English law to the peculiarly powerful and authoritative position which has been at all times occupied by English judges. From the

(a) The importance of reported decisions has, however, been increasing in France, Italy, and Germany for some time, and as a matter of degree the courts of these countries tend to attach greater weight to their own previous decisions than to the views of text-writers. Also, a line of decisions, known as *jurisprudence fixée*, *giurisprudenza costante*, *feststehende Rechtsprechung*, has particularly high persuasive authority. See Lipstein, "The Doctrine of Precedent in Continental Law" (1946), 28 *Jrnl. Comp. Leg.* (Pt. III) 34.

earliest times the judges of the king's courts have been a small and compact body of legal experts. They have worked together in harmony, imposing their own views of law and justice upon the whole realm, and establishing thereby a single homogeneous system of common law. Of this system they were the creators and authoritative interpreters, and they did their work with little interference either from local custom or from legislation. The centralisation and concentration of the administration of justice in the royal courts gave to the royal judges a power and prestige which would have been unattainable on any other system. The authority of precedents was great in England because of the power, the skill, and the professional reputation of the judges who made them. In England the bench has always given law to the bar; in Rome it was the other way about, for in Rome there was no permanent body of professional judges capable of doing the work that has been done for centuries in England by the royal courts (b).

§ 52. The Declaratory Theory of the Judicial Function

We have already referred to the old theory that the common law is customary, not case law. This doctrine may be expressed by saying that according to it all precedents are declaratory merely, and do not make the law. Thus Hale says in his *History of the Common Law*:—

"It is true the decisions of courts of justice, though by virtue of the laws of this realm they do bind as a law between the parties thereto, as to the particular case in question, till reversed by error or attain, yet they do not make a law properly so called: for that only the king and parliament can do; yet they have a great weight and authority in expounding, declaring, and publishing what the law of this kingdom is; especially when such decisions hold a consonancy and congruity with resolutions and decisions of former times" (c).

(b) During the Middle Ages, although cases were reported in the Year Books, there were considerable variations between different MSS., and it was hardly possible to cite precedents by name. However, the law was developed by the judges through the accumulation of tradition, expressed, for instance, in the practice of upholding certain types of writ. With the invention of printing, reports became standardised, and it became the practice to cite not only from the more or less contemporaneous reports but also from the Year Books, which were now available in standard printed editions. The modern theory that precedents are absolutely binding was hardly settled before the nineteenth century. See T. Ellis Lewis, "The History of Judicial Precedent" (1930) 46 L. Q. R. 207, 341; (1931) 47 *ibid.* 411; (1932) 48 *ibid.* 230.

(c) Hale, *History of the Common Law* (1820 ed.) 89.

Hale, however, is evidently troubled in mind as to the true position of precedent, and as to the sufficiency of the declaratory theory thus set forth by him, for elsewhere he tells us inconsistently that there are three sources of English law, namely, (1) custom, (2) the authority of Parliament, and (3) "the judicial decisions of courts of justice consonant to one another in the series and succession of time" (d).

In the Court of Chancery this declaratory theory never prevailed, nor indeed could it, having regard to the known history of the system of equity administered by that court. There could be no pretence that the principles of equity were founded either in custom or legislation, for it was a perfectly obvious fact that they had their origin in judicial decisions. The judgments of each Chancellor made law for himself and his successors.

"It must not be forgotten", says Sir George Jessel, "that the rules of courts of equity are not, like the rules of the common law, supposed to have been established from time immemorial. It is perfectly well known that they have been established from time to time—altered, improved, and refined from time to time. In many cases we know the names of the Chancellors who invented them. No doubt they were invented for the purpose of securing the better administration of justice, but still they were invented" (e).

Both at law and in equity, however, the declaratory theory must be totally rejected if we are to attain to any sound analysis and explanation of the true operation of judicial decisions. We must admit openly that precedents make law as well as declare it. We must admit further that this effect is not merely accidental and indirect, the result of judicial error in the interpretation and authoritative declaration of the law. Doubtless judges have many times altered the law while endeavouring in good faith to declare it. But we must recognise a distinct law-creating power vested in them and openly and lawfully exercised. Original precedents are the outcome of the intentional exercise by the courts of their privilege of developing the law at the same time that they administer it (f).

(d) Hale, *History of the Common Law* (1820 ed.) 88.

(e) *Re Hallet* (1879), 13 Ch. D. at p. 710.

(f) For a full discussion of the declaratory theory of the judicial function see Dickinson, "The Law Behind Law" (1929) 29 Col. L. Rev. 113, 285.

§ 53. Authoritative and Persuasive Precedents

Decisions are further divisible into two classes, which may be distinguished as authoritative and persuasive. These two differ in respect of the kind of influence which they exercise upon the future course of the administration of justice. An authoritative precedent is one which judges must follow whether they approve of it or not. It is binding upon them and excludes their judicial discretion for the future. A persuasive precedent is one which the judges are under no obligation to follow, but which they will take into consideration, and to which they will attach such weight as it seems to them to deserve. It depends for its influence upon its own merits, not upon any legal claim which it has to recognition. In other words, authoritative precedents are *legal* sources of law, while persuasive precedents are merely *historical*. The former establish law in pursuance of a definite rule of law which confers upon them that effect, while the latter, if they succeed in establishing law at all, do so indirectly, through serving as the historical ground of some later authoritative precedent.

The authoritative precedents recognised by English law are the decisions of the superior courts of justice in England, within limits shortly to be stated. Among persuasive precedents are the following:—

(1) Foreign judgments, and more especially those of American courts (*g*).

(2) The decisions of superior courts in other portions of the British Commonwealth of Nations, and of countries until recently belonging thereto, for example, Irish courts (*h*).

(3) The judgments of the Privy Council when sitting as the final court of appeal from other members and parts of the Commonwealth (*i*).

(*g*) *Castro v. R.* (1881), 6 App. Cas. p. 249; *Scaramanga v. Stamp* (1880), 5 C. P. D. p. 303; *Cory v. Burr* (1882), 9 Q. B. D. p. 469; *M'Alister (or Donoghue) v. Stevenson*, [1932] A. C. pp. 598, 617-8; *Haynes v. Harwood*, [1935] 1 K. B. pp. 156-7, 163, 167. But see *Re Missouri* (1888), 42 Ch. D. p. 330; *Fender v. Mildmay*, [1938] A. C. p. 25.

(*h*) *Re Parsons* (1890), 45 Ch. D. 62: "Decisions of the Irish Courts, though entitled to the highest respect, are not binding on English judges."

(*i*) In *Leask v. Scott* (1877), 2 Q. B. D. 376, at p. 380, it is said by the Court of Appeal, speaking of such a decision: "We are not bound by its authority, but we need hardly say that we should treat any decision of that tribunal with the greatest respect, and rejoice if we could agree with it."

(4) Judicial *dicta*, that is to say, statements of law which go beyond the occasion, and lay down a rule that is irrelevant to the purpose in hand, or is stated by way of analogy merely, or is regarded by a later court as being unduly wide. We shall see later that the authoritative influence of precedents does not extend to such *obiter dicta*, but they are not equally destitute of persuasive efficacy.

Other instances of persuasive precedents will be considered when we come to deal with the circumstances destroying the binding force of precedent (§ 60). Persuasive efficacy, similar in kind though much less in degree to the instances enumerated, is attributed by our courts to the civil law and to the opinions of the commentators upon it; also to English and American textbooks of the better sort, and articles in legal periodicals.

The Judicial Committee of the Privy Council does not recognise any precedents except as persuasive, and may even rehear questions affecting property rights (j).

The distinction between authoritative and persuasive precedents is rendered somewhat difficult by the fact that the same precedent may be authoritative in one court and persuasive only in another. Thus a decision of the Court of Appeal is authoritative for the High Court but persuasive only for the House of Lords. In other words, a decision of the Court of Appeal is "law" for lower courts and, as we shall see, for the Court of Appeal itself, but it is not absolutely binding "law" at the level of the House of Lords.

Sir John Salmond attempted to solve this apparent contradiction by distinguishing between persuasive precedents and those that, though authoritative, are so only conditionally. He thought that whereas a foreign judgment is never more than persuasive for English courts, a decision of the Court of Appeal is always authoritative. For lower courts, and for the Court of Appeal itself, the authority is absolute; for the House of Lords the authority is only conditional. A conditionally authoritative precedent was defined by the learned author as follows: "In all ordinary cases it is binding, but there is one special case in which

(j) *Re Transferred Civil Servants (Ireland) Compensation*, [1929] A. C. 242; *Mercantile Bank of India v. Central Bank of India*, [1938] A. C. 287; W. E. Raney, "The Finality of Privy Council Decisions" (1926), 4 Can. Bar Rev. 307.

its authority may be lawfully denied. It may be overruled or dissented from, when it is not merely wrong, but so clearly and seriously wrong that its reversal is demanded in the interests of the sound administration of justice. Otherwise it must be followed, even though the court which follows it is persuaded that it is erroneous or unreasonable".

It may be doubted whether this distinction between persuasive and conditionally authoritative precedents can be made sufficiently precise to be of practical use. A decision of the Privy Council, the composition of which may be practically the same as the House of Lords, may have a weight greater than that of many a High Court decision; yet the first, according to this classification, is merely persuasive while the second has conditional authority. The only sharp dividing line is between those precedents that absolutely bind the court before which they are cited and those that do not. If the precedent is not absolutely binding, the weight attached to it will depend on many factors, and the nature of the court that decided it is only one of them.

§ 54. The Effect of Disregarding a Precedent

The disregard of a precedent assumes two distinct forms, for the court to which it is cited may (within limits shortly to be stated) either overrule it, or merely refuse to follow it. Overruling is an act of superior jurisdiction. A precedent overruled is definitely and formally deprived of all authority. It becomes null and void, like a repealed statute, and a new principle is authoritatively substituted for the old. A refusal to follow a precedent, on the other hand, is an act of co-ordinate, not of superior jurisdiction. Two courts of equal authority have no power to overrule each other's decisions. Where a precedent is merely not followed, the result is not that the later authority is substituted for the earlier, but that the two stand side by side conflicting with each other. The legal antinomy thus produced must be solved by the act of a higher authority, which will in due time decide between the competing precedents, formally overruling one of them, and sanctioning the other as good law. In the meantime the matter remains at large, and the law uncertain.

As we have seen, the theory of case law is that a judge does not make law; he merely declares it; and the overruling of a

previous decision is a declaration that the supposed rule never was law. Hence any intermediate transactions made on the strength of the supposed rule are governed by the law established in the overruling decision. The overruling is retrospective, except as regards matters that are *res judicatæ* (k), or accounts that have been settled (l) in the meantime (m). A repealed statute, on the contrary, remains valid and applicable as to matters arising before the date of its repeal (n).

§ 55. The Hierarchy of Authority

Subject to various qualifications to be mentioned later (§ 60), every court is bound by the decisions of all courts higher than itself. A court of first instance cannot question a decision of the Court of Appeal, nor can the Court of Appeal refuse to follow the judgments of the House of Lords.

The question what is a "higher" and what is a "lower" court is not without difficulties. Clearly this relationship exists if there is an appeal from the lower to the higher court. However, it may exist even if in respect of the particular matter there is no appeal. No appeal lies from the Divisional Court of the High Court to the Court of Appeal and House of Lords in criminal cases, yet the Divisional Court would certainly regard itself as bound by a pronouncement of the House of Lords (o). Four questions that call for discussion are whether a High Court judge is bound by a decision of the Divisional Court (in which connection it will be convenient to consider the preliminary question whether he is bound by the decision of a fellow-judge of the High

(k) *Thomson v. St. Catharine's College, Cambridge*, [1919] A.C. 468. Cf. *Derrick v. Williams*, [1939] 2 A. E. R. 559; 160 L. T. 589; 55 T. L. R. 676.

(l) *Henderson v. Folkestone Waterworks Co.* (1885), 1 T. L. R. 329. This is because of the rule that money paid under a mistake of law cannot be recovered back. Lord Coleridge's denial in the instant case that there was a mistake of law cannot be supported.

(m) In the United States it has been held that where a statute is first held void and later valid, the statute does not apply to transactions entered into before the later decision: see Freeman, "Retroactive Operation of Decisions" (1918), 18 Col. L. Rev. 230; Cardozo, *Nature of the Judicial Process*, 147. Cf., as to the prohibition of *ex post facto* penal legislation, *State v. Longino* (1915), 109 Miss. 125; 67 So. 902.

(n) Interpretation Act, 1889, s. 38.

(o) Unless, at least, the House of Lords had upheld a conviction and there were particularly strong reasons for thinking that the matter had not been properly considered—a somewhat academic qualification. See below, p. 194.

Court), whether the Divisional Court is bound by the Court of Appeal or Court of Criminal Appeal, whether the Court of Criminal Appeal is bound by the Court of Appeal, and finally whether administrative tribunals are bound by decisions of the ordinary courts.

(i) It is quite common for a judge of the High Court in deciding a case to refer to a previous decision of the High Court and to say that he is bound by it. However, the remark of a judge in following a decision that he is bound by that decision may be suspect, because if he sees no reason to dissent from the previous case the question whether he is bound by it is not really in issue. The true rule of law is that one High Court judge cannot bind another, and this rule is instanced by a line of cases in which judges have refused to follow precedents of their own rank, or have declared their freedom to do so (*p*). A judge may even refuse to follow a previous decision of his own, saying, with Bramwell, B., that "the matter does not appear to me now as it appears to have appeared to me then" (*q*). It need hardly be said that such refusals to follow precedent are unusual, for on the principle of judicial comity a court will usually follow the decisions of its predecessors, so as to avoid conflicts of authority and to secure certainty and uniformity in the administration of justice. If a High Court judge refuses to follow a decision of another High Court judge he does not and cannot overrule the earlier decision, because overruling is the act of a superior authority. In such circumstances it remains for a higher court to settle the antinomy; meanwhile, both decisions, though contradictory, remain open to be followed, even by an inferior court. Both are "law" in the sense that either may be followed, but neither is "law" in the sense that it must be followed. A county court

(*p*) Instances are: *Re Seymour*, [1937] 3 All E. R. 499, at 503 (words not reproduced in [1937] Ch., at 674); *Re Hillas-Drake*, [1944] Ch. 235; *I. R. Commrs. v. Anti-Vivisection Society*, [1945] 2 All E. R. 529; *Ex p. Speculand*, [1946] K. B. 48, at 49; *Armstrong v. Strain*, [1951] 1 T. L. R. 856, at 862; *Ozzard-Low v. Ozzard-Low and Wonham*, [1953] P. 372; *Re Burton's Settlement*, [1955] Ch. 82, at 100; *Receiver for the Metropolitan Police District v. Croydon Corporation*, [1956] 1 W. L. R. 1113, at 1115; *Bryers v. Canadian Pacific Steamships, Ltd.*, [1956] 1 W. L. R. 1181, at 1185. In *Herschall v. Stewart & Arden, Ltd.*, [1940] 1 K. B. 155, Tucker, J. (as he then was) gained applause by refusing to follow the bad decision in *Dransfield v. B. I. Cables, Ltd.* (1937), 54 T. L. R. 11, and ignoring *Otto v. Bolton & Norris, Ltd.*, [1936] 2 K. B. 46, in both of which, as it happened, he had been counsel on the losing side.

(*q*) *Andrews v. Styrap* (1872), 26 L. T. 704, at 706.

judge, for example, would not be bound to follow the later High Court decision; he could still choose to follow the earlier.

Just as one High Court judge cannot bind another, so, with much stronger reason, a High Court judge cannot bind a Divisional Court, consisting of two or more High Court judges (r). Here, again, although the Divisional Court can refuse to follow the earlier decision of the puisne judge, it cannot overrule that decision; and another puisne judge may prefer the judgment of his brother to that of the Divisional Court (s).

It would seem to follow from what has just been said that the Divisional Court is not regarded as superior to a puisne judge in the judicial hierarchy, and, if so, the Divisional Court cannot bind a puisne judge. However, the law, except in one instance, is not clear. The one instance is in respect of matters of procedure, where the determination of a puisne judge is subject to appeal to the Divisional Court; here, since there is a relation of subordination between the single judge and the Divisional Court, the decision of the latter would clearly be binding on other judges in like cases. On ordinary questions of substantive law, however, no appeal lies from a High Court judge to the Divisional Court—the appeal is to the Court of Appeal, or in criminal matters to the Court of Criminal Appeal. It is perhaps not finally settled whether, on such questions, the Divisional Court is able to bind single judges of the High Court, where there is no conflicting authority. Since, as will be shown later, the Divisional Court is bound by its own decisions, so that two judges can bind two judges, it would seem to follow as a matter of logic that two judges ought to be able to bind a single judge; and this is the view usually taken (t). But against this it may be said that the

(r) *R. v. Watson, ex p. Bretherton*, [1945] K. B. 96; *Bretherton v. U. K. Totalisator Co., Ltd.*, [1945] K. B. 555; but see, for a former view, *Winder* in (1946), 9 M. L. R. at 259.

(s) *Elderton v. U. K. Totalisator Co., Ltd.* (1945), 61 T. L. R. 629; on appeal, [1946] Ch. 57 (C. A.)

(t) *Village Main Reef, etc., Ltd. v. Stearns* (1900), 5 Com. Cas. 246, at 247-248; *Police Authority for Huddersfield v. Watson*, [1947] K. B. 842, at 848; cf. 9 M. L. R. 258-259, 11 M. L. R. 96. In *Chandris v. Isbrandtsen-Moller Co., Inc.*, [1951] 1 K. B. 240, at 243, Devlin, J., said: "I can decide this last question at once. In *Podar Trading Co., Ltd. v. Tagher* the Divisional Court answered the same question in the negative. Whether or not I am technically bound by a decision of the Divisional Court, I propose to follow this one as a recent and authoritative pronouncement on the law, and I have not, therefore, invited argument on it." The case went up to the Court of

High Court judge sitting as a judge of first instance has a different jurisdiction from the Divisional Court sitting (usually) as an appellate tribunal from courts below the rank of the High Court, and that, since his relation to his brother judges in the Divisional Court is one of equality and not of subjection, he ought not to be regarded as strictly bound by their decisions. This opinion is further supported by the fact that the Divisional Court cannot overrule a decision of a judge of the High Court, but can only create a divergence of authority. But, however the theoretical question may stand, it is only on rare occasions that a High Court judge will consider departing from a precedent in the Divisional Court.

(ii) Is the Divisional Court bound by decisions of the Court of Appeal? It is so in civil cases, where an appeal lies from the Divisional Court to the Court of Appeal (*u*). On the civil side, for example, a Divisional Court of the Queen's Bench Division hears applications for prerogative writs and orders; a Divisional Court of the Chancery Division hears appeals from a County Court judge sitting in bankruptcy matters; and a Divisional Court of the Probate, Divorce and Admiralty Division hears appeals from cases decided by justices on the civil side of their summary jurisdiction, such as separation and maintenance. In all these instances, with one exception, there is an appeal from the Divisional Court to the Court of Appeal, and thence in the usual way, with leave, to the House of Lords. Accordingly, the Divisional Court is bound by precedents decided in the higher courts. The only case where there is no appeal from a civil proceeding in the Divisional Court is where an application is made for a prerogative writ or order and the facts on which the application is based show that it is a

Appeal, which did not comment on the learned judge's failure to hear argument. It may be respectfully submitted that if he was not bound by the decision of the Divisional Court he should have invited argument.

(*u*) *R. v. Northumberland Compensation Appeal Tribunal*, [1951] 1 K. B. 711, at 723. Similarly, the C. A. may in such cases overrule the D. C.: *Chandris v. Isbrandtsen-Moller Co., Inc.*, [1951] 1 K. B. 240 (C. A.).

The rule seems to have been overlooked in *Ratkinskey v. Jacobs*, [1929] 1 K. B. 24, where the D. C. did not hold itself bound by a decision of the C. A., there being conflicting decisions of the D. C. on the same point. In fact, however, the decision of the C. A. was followed.

Before 1933 appeals from County Courts went first to the D. C. and thence to the C. A.; now they go direct to the C. A. Notwithstanding the change, the C. A. will, if necessary, overrule pre-1933 decisions of the D. C., which, if they occurred today, would not go to the D. C. See *Clarke v. Grant*, [1950] K. B. 104 (C. A.).

"criminal cause or matter". This occurs where a writ of habeas corpus is applied for on behalf of a person charged with crime. Although the application for a habeas corpus is itself, strictly, a civil proceeding, it is in these circumstances, according to the authorities, sufficiently affected with a criminal character to be a "criminal cause or matter" within the meaning of the section of the Judicature Act (v) barring appeal to the Court of Appeal.

On the purely criminal side, the Divisional Court of the Queen's Bench Division hears appeals from justices in petty sessions. The appeal is by way of "case stated" on a point of law, and, since it is a "criminal cause or matter", there is no appeal to the Court of Appeal, or for the matter of that to any other court. In these circumstances a question is capable of arising whether the Divisional Court is bound by decisions of the Court of Appeal. It is possible, even in a civil case, that the Court of Appeal might decide a point of criminal law; or it might have to decide the construction of a statute which has both civil and criminal aspects. Is the Divisional Court, exercising its criminal jurisdiction, bound by the decision of the Court of Appeal in civil litigation? In one case the Divisional Court gave an affirmative answer, Lord Goddard, C. J., saying—

"It is perfectly true that that judgment [the precedent in the Court of Appeal] was given in a civil action and the case we are considering is a criminal prosecution, but where it is a case of the true construction of a section and of what in relation to a particular section it is necessary to prove to show a breach of the factory owner's obligations, in our opinion a judgment of the Court of Appeal is just as binding on this court, though we may be considering a criminal prosecution, as though we were trying a civil action" (w).

This dictum was uttered in a case in which the Court of Appeal had construed the statute against the factory owner, and therefore in a sense favourable to the prosecution on the criminal charge. As will be shown, there is a rule of somewhat uncertain operation, laid down in *R. v. Taylor*, whereby a precedent is not absolutely binding when it operates against an accused person

(v) Now the Supreme Court of Judicature (Consolidation) Act, 1925, s. 31

(1) (a).

(w) *Carr v. Mercantile Produce Co., Ltd.*, [1949] 2 K. B. 601, at 605 (D. C.). Cf. 9 M. L. R. 260.

(§ 58); this rule was not considered by Lord Goddard on the occasion just referred to. Since the Divisional Court is the final appellate court in criminal cases which start before magistrates in their summary jurisdiction, it would seem to be unfortunate if that court is absolutely bound by a pronouncement of the Court of Appeal in a civil case, operating against the defendant to the criminal charge, which the Divisional Court now thinks is wrong. Thus the question cannot be regarded as finally settled.

As remarked before, it often happens that a judge who is content to follow a precedent will assert that he is bound by it, when if he had wished to be free from the precedent he would have asserted the contrary, or at least found a reason for refusing to apply it. There is a well-known decision of the Court of Appeal (x) interpreting a penal statute in a sense *favourable* to the accused, which has been consistently "distinguished" and in effect disregarded by the Divisional Court.

A similar question may arise whether the Divisional Court is bound by decisions of the Court of Criminal Appeal, although no appeal lies from the first to the second. Both these courts consist of judges of the High Court, and it is difficult to see why there should be any subordination. The Divisional Court has expressed the opinion that it is bound by decisions of the former court for Crown Cases Reserved (xx), which was the predecessor of the Court of Criminal Appeal, but even this may perhaps be regarded as not finally settled (y). Once again the principle of *R. v. Taylor* is in issue.

(iii) Are decisions of the Court of Appeal binding upon the Court of Criminal Appeal? This question will not generally arise, the Court of Appeal having civil jurisdiction only; but it is possible in exceptional circumstances for the same point of law to come before both courts. The Court of Criminal Appeal consists of judges of the Queen's Bench Division of the High Court, while the Court of Appeal consists of judges who are superior in rank to these High Court judges (other than the Lord Chief Justice). But this does not mean that the one court is inferior to the other from the point of view of the doctrine of precedent, and the

(x) *Ledwith v. Roberts*, [1937] 1 K. B. 232; see Williams, *Criminal Law: The General Part*, 507.

(xx) *Hawke v. Mackenzie*, [1902] 2 K. B. 225, at 232, 233.

(y) For another discussion see Winder in 9 M. L. R. 260-261.

position is that neither can bind the other. Any conflict between them can be settled only by the House of Lords (z).

(iv) Are administrative tribunals bound by the decisions of the High Court, Court of Appeal or House of Lords? Where appeal lies to the ordinary courts, it seems safe to predict that they will follow the decisions of these courts, for otherwise their determinations will be overruled. For example, there is an appeal from determinations of the Pensions Appeal Tribunals to the High Court in England or to the Court of Session in Scotland, and accordingly the tribunals follow the decisions of these courts. What if there is a conflict between the High Court and the Court of Session? Denning, J. (as he then was), ruled that the tribunal should then follow the later decision (a). He also held that when a High Court decision on a pensions appeal had not been followed by the Court of Session, it was his duty in a later appeal to follow the Court of Session, as having pronounced the later decision, unless there was a strong reason to the contrary, and particularly where the decision of the Court of Session was in favour of the claim.

Where no appeal lies from the administrative tribunal in question, the High Court has no control except through the prerogative orders in case of excess of jurisdiction, violation of the rules of natural justice or error on the face of the tribunal's order. Consequently, if the tribunal refuses to follow the decisions of the ordinary courts of law, and does not embody the refusal in the reasons for its order, there is usually nothing that these courts can do about it. The question is of particular importance with the new statutory tribunal set up to determine claims to compensation for industrial injuries. The National Insurance (Industrial Injuries) Act, 1946, gives a right to compensation in the case of an accident that "arises out of and in the course of the employment". These words have been the subject of much interpretation by the ordinary courts in the context of the Workmen's Compensation Acts, and various legal principles have emerged. Will these principles be followed by the new tribunals? Their general practice is to follow them (b), but it is not clear that they

(z) As the conflict between *Hardie & Lane, Ltd. v. Chilton*, [1928] 2 K. B. 306, and *R. v. Dwyer*, [1926] 2 K. B. 258, was settled by the House of Lords in *Thorne v. M. T. A.*, [1937] A. C. 797. Cf. 20 C. A. R. 185-6.

(a) *Minister of Pensions v. Higham*, [1948] 2 K.B. 153.

(b) See Safford in (1954), 17 M. L. R. 197.

regard themselves as absolutely bound to do so. In favour of the freedom of the new tribunals, it may be argued that whereas formerly a decision of (say) the Court of Appeal could be upset by the House of Lords, if the new tribunals are bound by former decisions of the Court of Appeal there will be no possibility (short of legislation) of rectifying past decisions of this court which are out of accord with present ideas.

§ 56. Precedents in the House of Lords

The rule that a court is bound by the pronouncements of courts superior to it in the hierarchy is simple and intelligible. English law has, however, gone much further, it having been settled, in comparatively modern times, that courts in the upper levels of the hierarchy are generally bound even by their own decisions. This rule applies to the House of Lords, Court of Appeal, Divisional Court (and with a very large exception) Court of Criminal Appeal. We must first consider it for the House of Lords.

In the first part of the nineteenth century no court was absolutely bound by its own decisions, or at any rate there was no unbroken practice to this effect. In the year 1840, Lord Brougham, the Lord Chancellor, said that the judges, "in deciding important questions, should adopt the course, when they have gone wrong, of at once, in an open and manly way, retracing their steps, rather than persist in their error" (c). Whether the House of Lords bound itself was still a subject of debate twelve years later, Lord St. Leonards, L.C., telling their Lordships that "you are not bound by any rule of law which you may lay down if upon a subsequent occasion you should find reason to differ from that rule; that is, that this House, like every other court of justice, possesses an inherent power to correct an error into which it may have fallen" (d). But Lord Campbell, giving judgment in the same case, disagreed: "this House", he said "cannot decide something as law today and decide differently the same thing as law tomorrow; because that would leave the inferior tribunals and the rights of the Queen's subjects in a state of uncertainty". Lord Campbell caused the House of Lords to act

(c) *Birtwhistle v. Vardill*, 7 Cl. & F. 895, at 922.

(d) *Bright v. Hutton* (1852), 3 H. L. C. 341, at 389.

upon his opinion in 1861 (e). And in 1898, in *London Street Tramways v. London County Council* (f), the dissentients were finally quelled. Ever since then the House has been held to bind itself.

The situation has not gone without adverse comment. Pollock wrote that "no other court of last resort in the world, it is believed, has fettered its own discretion in this way. Certainly the Judicial Committee of the Privy Council has not" (g). The rule has also been powerfully criticised by Lord Wright (h) and Dr. Goodhart (i).

Whatever may be thought of the rule as applied to modern decisions, it can hardly be said that all the old decisions of the House are of high intrinsic authority. Originally the House of Lords, failing to distinguish between its legislative and judicial functions, objected to publication of its proceedings, even when sitting as a court (j), and all that the earlier reports contain is a statement of the facts, the arguments, and a note of whether the appeal was allowed or dismissed. They do not give the opinions of the Lords, because these were speeches in the House

(e) *Beamish v. Beamish*, 9 H. L. C. 274. Lord Westbury in 1869 referred to "the irreversible and unchangeable quality that belongs to a decision of the House of Lords" (*Hills v. Evans*, 31 L. J. Ch. at 462).

(f) [1898] A. C. 375. See further, on the history, the arguments in this case, and add: *Metropolitan Ry. v. Jackson* (1877), 3 App. Cas. at 209; *Darley Main Colliery v. Mitchell* (1886), 11 App. Cas. at 134, in both of which the House was said to be bound. See generally Landon in (1951), 63 *Juridical Review*, 222. It seems that the Committee for Privileges of the House of Lords is also bound by its own decisions: *Viscountess Rhondda's Claim*, [1922] 2 A. C. 339, at 376-380.

(g) Preface to vol. 126 of the Revised Reports. That the Appellate Division of the Supreme Court of South Africa is not bound by its own decisions was not decided until *Harris v. Minister of the Interior*, [1952] (2) S. A. 428 (A. D.), [1952] 1 T. L. R. 1245. The attitude of the Irish Supreme Court is not clear: see (1953) 69 L. Q. R. 25.

Pollock repeated his view in his *First Book of Jurisprudence*, 6th ed. 333: "On the other side it is said that certainty in the rules of law by which men have to guide themselves is of greater importance than arriving at the rule which is best in itself or most logically harmonious as part of a system. This seems a good reason why a court of final appeal should not decide without full deliberation, and should be slow to disturb any doctrine it has once laid down or approved, but hardly a sufficient reason why it should disclaim any power of correcting its own errors in case of need." Quoting this passage with approval, Dr. Goodhart said: "There is an obvious antithesis between rigidity and growth, and if all the emphasis is placed on absolutely binding cases then the law loses the capacity to adapt itself to the changing spirit of the times which has been described as the life of the law" (64 L. Q. R. 41).

(h) (1942) 4 Univ. of Toronto L. J. 247, reprinted in (1943) 8 C. L. J. 118.

(i) (1947) 9 C. L. J. at 349-350.

(j) Slessor, *The Judicial Office*, 126.

which were not allowed to be reported. It was not until 1813 that a full report of House of Lords cases was published by Dow. Some of the pre-1813 cases have occasioned perplexity, and the absence of reasoning has virtually turned them into dead letters (*k*).

It follows from this that the effective doctrine of precedent applies only to cases decided in the House of Lords within something like the last 150 years, the period when reasons have been reported. Even this length of time has been sufficient to show certain stresses and strains in the working of the doctrine. Inevitably, certain decisions are seen in the light of experience or of mature consideration to be bad. Their number at present is perhaps not very large, but it will grow with the passage of years and accompanying changes in moral ideas. Moreover, as time goes on, some of the earlier decisions of the House will relate to a state of society that becomes continuously more antiquated. This is particularly important in commercial matters, where custom is still somewhat fluid. The present rule, laid down by Lord Wright, is that a binding precedent cannot be disregarded on the ground that it was based on industrial and social conditions that have changed (*l*).

Another source of dissatisfaction with some of the earlier decisions is the poverty of legal learning in the old House. Lord Eldon, as Lord Chancellor, heard cases not only in the House of Lords but in the Court of Chancery, and appeals from his decision in the Chancery would come before him in the Lords. The quorum of the House of Lords was three, and the other two members of the court would be laymen, "dummies" pressed into service. Lord Eldon would give judgment first, and there is no record of the two lay peers ever having dissented (*m*).

During the second half of the nineteenth century an effort was made to increase the legal element in the House of Lords for judicial purposes, and there were usually two legal peers to

(*k*) See, e.g., Linell, *Law of Names*, 21-22; Williams in McElroy, *Impossibility of Performance*, 115.

(*l*) *Radcliffe v. Ribble Motor Services*, [1939] A. C. at 245-246.

(*m*) See Lord Wright in (1949) 2 *Current Legal Problems*, 3 *et seq.* The practice of having the judges to advise the House of Lords was due to the fact that lay peers originally took part in the decision. Cf. (1946), 62 L. Q. R. 34-35. For some of the activities of non-judicial peers on the hearing of appeals to the old House of Lords see Megarry, *Miscellany at Law*, 11-13.

decide appeals. *Rylands v. Fletcher* (n), was decided by two peers, Lord Cairns and Lord Cranworth. The Appellate Jurisdiction Act, 1876, which allowed the creation of life peers as Lords of Appeal in Ordinary, confined their number to two, though there might also be the Lord Chancellor and peers who held or had held high judicial office. The number of Lords of Appeal in Ordinary has since been raised to nine.

It seems that all the old decisions of the House when it was composed of only one or two law lords are still fully binding where the reasons for them are reported.

Although the House is bound by its own decisions, it can distinguish them, and the result is much subtlety. *Goodman v. Mayor of Saltash* (o), which decided that a gift for the benefit of the inhabitants of a locality was charitable, has been so distinguished that it is now "authority only for facts that fall exactly within it" (p), whatever that may mean. *Bradley v. Carritt* (q), on "clogging the equity", was distinguished in *Kreglinger's Case* (r), but Professor Hanbury fails to find any satisfactory distinction between them and suggests that they simply represent opposing views (s). In *Benham v. Gambling* (t) the House obviously repented of its earlier decision in *Rose v. Ford* (u), but all it could do was to water it down, taking a bleak view of human existence and fixing the derisory figure of £200 as compensation for a young child's loss of expectation of happiness by premature death. *Heyman v. Darwin's, Ltd.* (v) is another instance of cavalier treatment by the House of its earlier decision. But perhaps the best illustration of the method used by a progressive House to cut its own fetters is the *Fibrosa Case* (w). The question there was whether the House was prepared to overrule the

(n) (1868), L. R. 3 H. L. 350. It seems that actually there was no quorum for the decision of this case: see Megarry, *op. cit.*, 312.

(o) (1882), 7 App. Cas. 633.

(p) Cf. *Williams's Trustee v. I. R.*, [1947] A. C. 447, and note in (1948), 64 L. Q. R. 5-6.

(q) [1903] A. C. 253.

(r) [1914] A. C. 25.

(s) *Essays in Equity*, 37-40; *Modern Equity*, 5th ed. 409-411.

(t) [1941] A. C. 157.

(u) [1937] A. C. 826.

(v) [1942] A. C. 356; see (1942), 6 M. L. R. 76. Yet other examples are commented upon in (1952), 68 L. Q. R. 307 *et seq.*; (1954), 17 M. L. R. 233.

(w) *Fibrosa Spolka Akcyjna v. Fairbairn Lawson Combe Barbour, Ltd.*, [1943] A. C. 32.

decision of the Court of Appeal given thirty-eight years earlier in *Chandler v. Webster* (x). In *Chandler v. Webster*, the Court of Appeal had held that money paid in advance under a contract that was afterwards frustrated could not be recovered back. This decision was approved by the House of Lords in the *French Marine Case* (y), but it met with a considerable amount of adverse criticism, not only from legal writers, but from the Bench. It therefore became a matter of speculation whether *Chandler v. Webster* would eventually be overruled by the House of Lords, and the chief element of doubt was whether their Lordships would hold themselves bound by their own decision in the *French Marine Case*. In the result, when the question again arose before the House of Lords in the *Fibrosa Case*, *Chandler v. Webster* was overruled, some law lords ignoring the *French Marine Case* and others subjecting it to spurious distinctions (z).

When their Lordships' decision is on the construction of legislation or of a document, it is easy for any court to depart from its spirit by alleging that the decision was on the particular words there before the House. Thus it seems from a Privy Council decision (a) that the much-criticised case of *Liversidge v. Anderson* (b) will not be applied in time of peace, and from a High Court case (c) that *Metropolitan Asylums District v. Hill* (d) will not be applied to modern statutes conferring governmental powers. There are other instances where even lower courts have shown only qualified respect for decisions of the House: thus *Foakes v. Beer* (e) was "distinguished" out of existence (as was at first thought) by Denning, J., in the *High Trees Case* (f), and it seems that *Weld-Blundell v. Stevens* (g) will only be followed

(x) [1904] 1 K. B. 493.

(y) [1921] 2 A. C. 494.

(z) See (1942), 6 M. L. R. 47-48.

(a) *Nakkuda Ali v. Jayaratne*, [1951] A. C. 66; see de Smith in (1951), 14 M. L. R. 71.

(b) [1942] A. C. 206, where the words "if the Secretary of State has reasonable cause to believe" were interpreted as if they read "honestly believes".

(c) *Edgington v. Swindon Corpn.*, [1939] 1 K. B. 86.

(d) (1881), 6 App. Cas. 193.

(e) (1884), 9 App. Cas. 605. See *Selected Readings on the Law of Contracts* (Assn. of American Law Schools) 329 *et seq.*

(f) *Central London Property Trust, Ltd. v. High Trees House, Ltd.*, [1947] K. B. 130.

(g) [1920] A. C. 956. See Goodhart in (1951), 4 *Current Legal Problems* 189-190; Williams, *Joint Torts and Contributory Negligence* 143-144.

on its narrow facts. *Shaw v. Gould* (h), relating to legitimacy in the conflict of laws, was carefully "explained" by Romer, J., for the purpose of ignoring it (i).

The question may be asked: If the House of Lords (not to mention lower courts) can thus spuriously distinguish its decisions, what harm is there in a theory that it is bound? The answer is that spurious distinguishing complicates the law. This is what Maitland said. "It is perhaps the main fault of 'judge-made law' (to use Bentham's phrase) that its destructive work can never be cleanly done. Of all vitality, and therefore of all patent harmfulness, the old rule can be deprived, but the moribund husk must remain in the system doing latent mischief" (j). Maitland's remark must be construed as applying only to the process of restrictive distinguishing, not to overruling. Where a court is permitted to overrule a precedent, the operation is a clean one.

In order not to give an exaggerated view of the freedom permitted by the present doctrine of precedent, it must be added that many decisions of the House of Lords pass with little or no judicial questioning and are given their full operation, though strong arguments exist against them in point of policy, principle or justice (k). The law laid down in the courts can, of course, be reversed by Parliament, and a few decisions of the House of Lords have been affected in this way (l). There exists a Law Reform Committee to review the case-law and propose amendments to the legislature. This implies a need for reform which is perhaps hardly consistent with the claim so frequently

(h) (1868), L. R. 3 H. L. 55 (H. L. (Sc.)).

(i) See *Re Bischoffshheim*, [1948] Ch. 79.

(j) *Encyclopædia Britannica*, 11th ed. ix, 606, art. "English Law".

(k) See Appendix IV.

(l) Notably *Russell v. Russell*, [1924] A. C. 687, one of the most "distinguished" of all cases, upon which Keith commented that "no other modern case has so strained the doctrine of precedent" (1940), 22 Jnl. Comp. Leg. 86; it was abolished by the Law Reform Act, 1949, s. 7. The egregiously wrong decision of the House of Lords in *Wood Green U. D. C. v. Joseph*, [1908] A. C. 419 (see Jennings in (1937), 1 M. L. R. at 124 ff.) has become nullified by the Public Health Act, 1936. *Hulton v. Jones*, [1910] A. C. 20, which in the words of Goddard, L.J., added "a terror to authorship" (Salmond, *Torts*, 10th ed. 378), was weightily criticised by Holdsworth in (1941), 57 L. Q. R. 74; see also Durran, *The Lawyer* 181-182; it was, however, not abolished, but only modified, by the Defamation Act, 1952, passed as a result of the Royal Commission's Report, Cmd. 7536 of 1948. There is a curious reluctance on the part of the legislature to abolish outright rules of the common law admitted to be bad.

made that the common law is a stable yet flexible system, adaptable to changing circumstances.

The reason advanced for the decision in *London Street Tramways v. L. C. C.* by Lord Halsbury was that if each doubtful question were allowed to be reargued there would be great uncertainty by reason of the different decisions, and "disastrous inconvenience" would result. It is not altogether clear whether he meant by this (1) that lower courts would not know which of the two inconsistent decisions of the House to follow, or (2) that litigants would not be able to predict whether the House would follow its own decisions. As to (1), the solution would appear to be simple: let lower courts make it a rule to follow the later decision of the House. This is already done when the House has in effect changed its mind by radical "distinguishing". As to (2), the fear is undoubtedly entertained that if the supreme tribunal could change its mind the result would be undue uncertainty in the law. Those who take this view point to some of the vacillations of the United States Supreme Court, which are regarded as having brought it into some disrepute (*m*). However, the behaviour of one tribunal is not a reliable basis of prediction for another. The doctrine of precedent in its present strict form is itself an expression of the conservatism of the English judiciary, and, even if the doctrine were modified, the reluctance to tamper with authority, except on the clearest grounds, would remain. Hence, as Lord Wright pointed out, if the House of Lords were set free from the trammels of its own decisions, there need be no fear that the whole system of precedents would be destroyed. "The instinct of inertia is as potent in judges as in other people. Judges would not be less anxious to find and follow precedents than ordinary folk are. . . . No court will be anxious to repudiate a precedent. It will do so only if it is completely satisfied that the precedent is erroneous. If the court is so satisfied, it is a humiliation which ought not to be put upon it to reproduce and perpetuate an error" (*n*). In support of the same conclusion, it may be observed that even under the present English doctrine, a higher court can overrule a lower court, and it is not usually thought that the use made of this power by the judges gives rise

(*m*) See Megarry, *Miscellany at Law* 321-322.

(*n*) Lord Wright in 4 Univ. of Toronto L. J. 275-276, reprinted in 8 C. L. J. 144. He applied his remarks also to precedents in the Court of Appeal.

to intolerable legal uncertainty. Since only a relatively small part of English law is covered by binding House of Lords' decisions, the extent to which the doctrine of *stare decisis* in the House of Lords ensures legal certainty can be exaggerated. The analogy of the United States Supreme Court is in any event inexact, because when that court vacillates on a constitutional question there is no authority (short of a constitutional amendment) capable of settling the question. In England, if a situation ever occurred in which judicial opinion failed to settle down, the legislature could always intervene. The need for such intervention would be likely to be rare, whereas under the present rigid law of *stare decisis* the occasions requiring legislative intervention (but not necessarily getting it) are frequent. Even in a federal country it is possible for a judicial *locus poenitentiae* to be exercised with restraint. This is shown by the practice of the High Court of Australia, which is not absolutely bound by its previous decisions, but which will reconsider them only with great caution and in clear cases (o).

To revert to the issue of certainty, it may further be pointed out that the present law does not by any means achieve the certainty that is claimed for it. If a precedent is sufficiently disliked a progressive House will be likely to seek to distinguish it; but the result of such an effort is extraordinarily difficult to predict. The fate of *Chandler v. Webster*, which has already been commented upon, may serve as an illustration. That the House of Lords would overrule this case if the matter were properly argued and if binding authority did not stand in the way was virtually certain for some years before 1943. When the *Fibrosa Case* arose in that year, the only real doubt about their Lordships' decision was whether they would consider themselves bound by their own decision in the *French Marine Case*. No lawyer could have predicted with any confidence that the House would cut itself free from this precedent in the way it did; but, if the House had had an admitted power to depart from its previous decision, the outcome of the *Fibrosa Case* would have been much more predictable. In short, it is a mistake to suppose that predictability of legal decision is always best secured by a system which accords binding force to a precedent under which the judges are restive.

(o) See *Perpetual Executors and Trustees Assn. of Australia, Ltd. v. Commr. of Taxes*, [1954] A. C. 114 (P. C.).

There are many situations where prediction, and hence legal certainty, would be safer under a system which gave primacy to the commonly acknowledged principles of law and policy.

Let it be assumed, however, for the sake of argument, that a modification of the present doctrine of precedent would in fact make the law more uncertain. Even then, a rational assessment of the rule would take account not only of the need for stability but of the need for change. These are opposing *desiderata*, and some compromise must be made between them. The attitude of the courts in settling questions on the doctrine of precedent has rather been to emphasise the need for stability and to ignore the need for change. This is particularly unfortunate in the present instance, for the House of Lords is the tribunal of last resort, and if it is bound by its own decisions the law must be settled beyond recall, except by Parliament. No one who knows the limitations of Parliament as a legislative machine will suppose that this is a complete solution. It has been observed with some, but not too much, exaggeration that in criminal and private law England has had no legislature since the middle of the nineteenth century. Parliament is too busy with politics, foreign affairs, finance, administration, and social legislation to have much time for the reform of the ordinary law, except in a desultory way. Some of the outstanding abuses get remedied from time to time, largely by private members' bills; but no legislative body exists for keeping under review the body of law as a whole. Even the Law Reform Committee is limited to matters specifically entrusted to it by the Lord Chancellor. In short, if reform is not effected by the courts it will often not be effected by anybody.

Thus the argument for changing the rule of precedent is stronger for the House of Lords than any other court. If a lower court goes wrong, there is always the possibility of the mistake being rectified by a higher court—ultimately, in most matters, by the House of Lords; but as things stand the mistakes of the House itself are beyond judicial recall. The rule contradicts the popular adage that second thoughts are best.

In settling the relative importance of legal certainty and flexibility, much depends upon the particular part of the law of which one is speaking. Certainty is important in property and criminal law, not so important in some parts of the law of contract (such as those relating to mistake and impossibility, which

are not parts of the law upon which the parties rely in making contracts), and still less important in the law of tort and administrative law. There are various other refinements to be noticed: certainty is important in criminal law in the sense that the list of crimes should not be extended by retrospective judicial decisions; but there is no similar social reason why the judges should not, for good reason, diminish the number of crimes or recognise new defences. The present doctrine of precedent makes no distinction between these different branches of law, with the possible exception, as we shall see, of criminal law.

We must now pass from this discussion of legal policy to a more precise consideration of the limits of the rule in *London Street Tramways v. L. C. C.* Only one exception to this ruling has been judicially recognised. According to Lord Halsbury in the case itself, the House is not bound by a previous decision of its own that ignored the existence of a statute (*p*). The reason he gave was that in such a case the previous decision would have been given under a mistake of fact. This is a slip, because ignorance of a statute is, in a legal sense, a mistake of law and not a mistake of fact. However, it is satisfactory to know that in such a case the House would not be bound. Although the possibility of other exceptions has not hitherto been canvassed, it is virtually certain that in case a conflict be discovered between previous decisions of the House, the House would be free to follow either, and would not be bound to follow the earlier, nor yet bound to follow the later. This rule exists for other courts (below, § 60 (5)), and there is no reason why it should be different for the House of Lords. Yet the House has, on occasion, shown the most painful anxiety to find some distinction between its apparently inconsistent decisions to prevent either of them from being cast as rubbish to the void. In one case (*q*) the House found itself called upon to decide a case indistinguishable from the earlier decision of the House in *Usher's Case* (*r*). Lord Radcliffe commenced his speech by saying: "My Lords, the decision of this House in *Usher's Case* has often been alluded to and sometimes explained. More than once it has been rather explained away than explained: for I think that it has come to be regarded as a

(p) [1898] A. C. at 380.

(q) *Nash v. Tamplin & Sons, Ltd.*, [1952] A. C. 231, noted in 68 L. Q. R. 162.

(r) *Usher's Wiltshire Brewery, Ltd. v. Bruce*, [1915] A. C. 433.

special case, the principle of which it is difficult to discover and almost impossible to extend". Lord Reid, after a close discussion of *Usher's Case*, said: "My Lords, it is very unsatisfactory to have to grope for a decision in this way, but the need to do so arises from the fact that this House has debarred itself from ever reconsidering any of its own decisions. It matters not how difficult it is to find the *ratio decidendi* of a previous case, that *ratio* must be found. And it matters not how difficult it is to reconcile that *ratio* when found with statutory provisions or general principles, that *ratio* must be applied to any later case which is not reasonably distinguishable". All their Lordships repudiated the general principle stated in *Usher's Case*, which had indeed been rejected in other decisions of the House, and held that, though it purported to be of general application in the law of income tax, it had now to be confined to brewery companies; unfortunately, since it was a brewery company that was now before the House, and the facts were otherwise identical, *Usher's Case* had to be followed.

A special problem arises as to the effect of decisions of the House of Lords on the Scottish side of its appellate jurisdiction. Domestically England and Scotland have different systems of law, and a decision of the House as final court of appeal from Scotland is not generally binding on the House as final court of appeal from England, or on lower English courts, because it is then deciding a point of Scots law that may be differently determined according to the law of England (s). This is quite clear and indeed obvious. However, it has been judicially suggested that there is an exception where the Scottish case is decided in the House on the same principles as apply in English law (t). The obvious example is *Donoghue v. Stevenson* (u), which was an appeal from Scotland, where the House of Lords announced that the principles to be applied were the same as in English law. It is usually assumed that this decision is, in consequence, binding

(s) See *per* Lord Lyndhurst in *Warrender v. Warrender* (1835), 2 Cl. & F. 488, at 561 (H. L. (Sc.)).

(t) *Per* Lord Dunedin in *R. v. Minister of Health, ex p. Yaffé*, [1931] A. C. 494, at 502; *per* Lord Porter in *Heyman v. Darwins, Ltd.*, [1942] A. C. 356, at 401.

(u) [1932] A. C. 562. Among other Scottish appeals that have affected English law are *Udny v. Udny* (1869), L. R. 1 Sc. & Div. 441, and *Bourhill v. Young*, [1943] A. C. 92.

upon English courts. Certainly it has become binding by subsequent adoption, and there was never any doubt that it would be followed and applied. *Donoghue v. Stevenson* was far too weighty a decision to stand in any need of support from a doctrine of precedent. But the theoretical question remains whether such a decision is technically binding in the other jurisdiction, if the opinion subsequently arises that it did not truly apply the principles of English law. It seems inevitable that the answer to this question must be in the negative. Even on the strictest doctrine of precedent, no ruling of the House in a Scottish case can ever be binding in an English case, for the simple reason that no *obiter dictum* is binding and that such a ruling must, for English law, be *obiter*. When the House has before it an appeal from Scotland, as in *Donoghue v. Stevenson*, the question for it to decide is a question of Scots law, and any statement that English law is the same is an *obiter dictum*. That this is so was recognised in a recent case where the House held that its own decision on an English appeal was not binding upon Scottish courts, notwithstanding that the English appeal had purported to be decided partly on the Scottish precedents (v). Lord Simonds expressly said that any observations made by the House in the English appeal must, so far as they related to the law of Scotland, be *obiter dicta*. If this is the true view, as it is submitted it is, the converse must also hold good. Quite apart from the technical rule relating to *obiter dicta*, the decision cannot be regarded as binding in the other jurisdiction for the substantial reason that it may not have been argued by advocates trained in the law of that jurisdiction, so that relevant authorities may not have been called to their Lordships' attention.

There is, however, one respect in which this logic must be restricted. Although a Scottish decision of the Lords is not binding upon English courts, it can be followed by English courts; and when their Lordships have announced that English and Scots law are the same, their judgment on the Scottish appeal can, it is submitted, be taken, if the English court so wishes, as being of the same weight as a decision of the House in an English appeal. For example, it would be proper for an English court to say that *Donoghue v. Stevenson* has "overruled"

(v) *Glasgow Corpn. v. Central Land Board*, 1956 S. L. T. 41, noted and discussed in (1956), 19 M. L. R. 427.

certain English decisions arrived at previously (*w*). This makes *Donoghue v. Stevenson* something more than an *obiter dictum* for English law, because an *obiter dictum* cannot overrule a decision. The Scottish appeal occupies an intermediate position, being something that *need not* be followed by English courts but *can* be followed notwithstanding previous English authority to the contrary. In the same way, when the House of Lords is faced with conflicting decisions of its own, one an English case and another a Scottish case in which English and Scots law were assumed to be the same, the House can, it seems, even in an English appeal, prefer the Scottish decision (*x*). This intermediate status of the Scottish appeal in the doctrine of precedent may be said to be illogical, but it represents a practical compromise between opposing arguments.

Before we leave the subject of precedents in the House of Lords it is worth saying a word on the logical status of the doctrine of precedent. At the moment, the legal view is that the House of Lords is bound by its own decisions. Suppose that we challenge a lawyer who puts forward this proposition, and ask him his authority for it. He will reply: "The House is bound by its own decisions, because that was decided in *London Street Tramways v. L.C.C.*". This answer plainly involves the fallacy of begging the question. It assumes that which it seeks to prove. For the case referred to is itself a decision of the House, and the whole question is whether such a decision is binding on the House. Clearly, the doctrine of precedent cannot be authoritatively supported by reference to precedent: it cannot pull itself up by its own bootstraps. One can no more prove the doctrine of precedent by referring to a precedent than one can prove that Parliament is sovereign by reading out a statute which declares that it is.

(*w*) Thus even a county court judge could hold that *Donoghue v. Stevenson* has overruled *Earl v. Lubbock*, [1905] 1 K. B. 253, though but for *Donoghue v. Stevenson* (and the cases following it) he would perhaps be bound by *Earl v. Lubbock*. (I say "perhaps", because it is not quite clear that a county court judge is bound by High Court cases, now that appeal lies direct from the county court to the Court of Appeal. A county court judge who wished to anticipate the decision of the Court of Appeal, and so save the parties the expense of an appeal, would not follow a High Court case if he thought the Court of Appeal would not do so.)

(*x*) This is what in effect happened in *Heyman v. Darwins, Ltd.*, [1942] A. C. 356, though the English precedent was distinguished rather than dissented from. See note in (1942), 6 M. L. R. at 79.

It would, therefore, be logically possible for the House of Lords to declare that it is not bound by its own decisions, and that the first decision that it proposes to overrule is *London Street Tramways v. L.C.C.* By doing this, it would empower itself to do it. The argument, though circular, would be no more circular than the opposite argument usually employed in following precedents.

This analysis does not mean that the decision in the *London Street Tramways* is devoid of legal status. It is an important statement of the practice of the House, which has since been followed, at least in words. That is what all decisions on precedent are: statements of judicial practice or tradition (*y*). The tendency has been for these statements of practice to grow stricter and more precise, so that the freedom of the judges has generally dwindled down from precedent to precedent; but occasionally new exceptions are allowed and then some discretion is restored. It is not impossible that in the future we may see a new attitude to precedent which will restore a larger element of discretion to the judges. This new attitude may be helped if it is understood that what the courts have done they can, logically, undo.

It is sometimes suggested that although the House of Lords could logically cut itself free from its own precedents, it would be "unconstitutional" for it to do so. But the present position was not fully established until 1898. If it would be unconstitutional to change the present practice, must it not have been unconstitutional to fix it in 1898? Can it be unconstitutional to reverse an unconstitutional practice? The clearest answer seems to be that constitutional practices are made and modified according to the prevailing sentiment of what is best. It is unconstitutional to break a constitutional rule, but not to change it.

§ 57. Precedents in the Court of Appeal

That the Court of Appeal is bound by its own decisions is taken to have been authoritatively settled in *Young v. Bristol Aeroplane Co.* (1944) (*z*). Even before 1944 there was a stream

(*y*) That precedent is a matter of tradition was recognised by Greer, L.J., in *Sigley v. Hale*, [1938] 2 K. B. at 634-635. Brett, M.R., in *Smith v. Lambeth Assessment Committee* (1882), 10 Q. B. D. at 328 rested the court's practice of following its own decisions on judicial comity.

(*z*) [1944] K. B. 718 (C. A.); on appeal, [1946] A. C. 163.

of authority for this view, broken only by a few dissentient voices. Greer and Slessor, L.J.J., consistently denied the rule (a), and the court as a whole held in *Wynne-Finch v. Chaytor* (1903) (b) that it was not bound by its previous decision. These minority opinions, as they became, were disapproved in *Young's Case*, which is now regarded as the leading authority and as settling the law.

Usually the Court of Appeal sits with three judges (rarely two); occasionally, for the determination of a point of exceptional difficulty and importance, it may sit as a "full court" of five judges. It was held in *Young's Case* that this full court has no greater powers than any division of that court, and is therefore bound by a decision of such division (c). Also, it is clear from later decisions that full binding force attaches even to unreported decisions of the court (d). Counsel engaged in a case may cite an unreported authority from memory, or draw from his pocket a manuscript note of it, and the court has even admitted a document purporting to be a copy of a transcript of the shorthand notes of a judgment (e). This "pocket-pistol law", as it has been called, accords ill with the rationale of precedent, which is to make the law certain and knowable. It seems extraordinary that one man alone can have in his pocket the law of England, which no one else knows about, and which, when produced, is absolutely binding on the court.

In one respect the opportunity for "pocket-pistol law" has been deliberately extended by official action. Since April, 1951, all judgments delivered by the Court of Appeal have been transcribed by the official shorthand writers, checked by a member

(a) (1939), 3 M. L. R. 66.

(b) [1903] 2 Ch. 475, at 485. See also (1941), 57 L. Q. R. 177.

(c) Cf. *Morelle, Ltd. v. The King*, [1955] 2 W. L. R. 672 (C. A.). But where counsel intimates that he wishes to argue that previous decision of the C. A. was *per incuriam* (see later), the case may be adjourned for consideration by a full court; and this course is particularly likely where the argument is initially raised before a court which is substantially the same as that which decided the impugned case. See *Berkeley v. Papadoyannis*, [1954] 2 Q. B. 149, at 150 (C. A.).

(d) *Gibson v. South American Stores* [1950] Ch. 177 (C. A.); cf. *King v. King*, [1943] P. 91 (C. A.) (precedent reported only in *The Times* newspaper).

(e) *Renshaw v. Dixon*, [1911] W. N. 40, at 41, cited by Megarry, *Miscellany at Law* 326; see also the same learned writer's "Reporting the Unreported" (1954) 70 L. Q. R. 246, and Allen, *Law in the Making*, 5th ed. 251.

of the court, and placed in the Bar Library (*ee*). Use has begun to be made of these cases in legal treatises and in the courts. Some of them have been found to decide points on which there is no other satisfactory authority. Existing, as they do, in one copy only, unclassified and unindexed, they constitute a serious danger to the litigant.

It seems that the Court of Appeal is also bound by decisions of its predecessors, the Court of Exchequer Chamber and the Lords Justices of Appeal in Chancery. The contrary was held in a case in 1880 (*f*), where the Court of Appeal refused to follow a decision of the Lords Justices of Appeal in Chancery; but in *Young's Case* (*g*) the doctrine was stated to extend to decisions of "courts of co-ordinate jurisdiction" with the Court of Appeal, which must have been intended as a reference to its predecessors.

The various exceptions to the rule in *Young's Case* which occasion great difficulty, will be considered later (§ 60). In some cases the argument in the Court of Appeal turns almost entirely on the question whether it is bound by a previous decision, the merits of the question hardly being examined (*h*). This is another illustration of how the doctrine of precedent may cause debate and uncertainty. Cases are not infrequent in which the Court of Appeal expresses regret at being bound by its own decision, and in effect advises the loser to appeal to the House of Lords, which duly reverses the decision of the Court of Appeal (*i*). As Dr. Goodhart puts it, there is "some doubt concerning the end which is achieved by requiring litigants to engage in such expensive appeals when the result is known, for all practical purposes, to be inevitable when the case reaches the House of Lords" (*j*). On other occasions the court manages to "distinguish" itself, sometimes by saying that the earlier

(*ee*) See [1947-51] 1 *Current Law Consolidation* 7621.

(*f*) *Mills v. Jennings*, 13 Ch. D. 639 (C. A.).

(*g*) [1944] K. B. at 729.

(*h*) *E.g.*, *Consett, etc., Society v. Consett Iron Co.*, [1922] 2 Ch. 135. For a prolonged and inconclusive discussion of a point of precedent see the case noted by Olive Stone in 14 M. L. R. 493.

(*i*) In *Olympia Oil Cake Co. v. Produce Brokers Co., Ltd.* (1915), 112 L. T. 744, at 750 (C. A.), where the court held itself to be bound by its previous ruling, Phillimore, L.J., said—"With reluctance, I might almost say sorrow, I concur in the view that this appeal must be dismissed. I trust the case will proceed to the House of Lords". The case did proceed to the House of Lords, which sympathetically reversed the decision of the Court of Appeal.

(*j*) (1948), 64 L. Q. R. 435.

decision was on a "question of fact"—even though it was actually decided as one of law (*k*). That the distinctions taken in an effort to evade the strict rule of precedent are sometimes unsatisfactory has been judicially recognised. Speaking of a particular decision of the Court of Appeal, which was being overruled in the House of Lords, Lord Reid said—

"I would only add that in at least two subsequent cases the Court of Appeal, being powerless to overrule a previous decision of that court, were driven to find distinctions which do not appear to me to be satisfactory, and which I doubt whether they would have adopted if they had been convinced of the validity of the general rule" (*l*).

Similarly Scrutton, L.J., observed that a judge in an earlier case had drawn "distinctions which I have not been fortunate enough to understand; I think the real truth is that he did not like the decisions, he thought they led to unreasonable results, and he declined to follow the Court of Appeal" (*m*). Such judicial candour is infrequent enough in England to be worth commenting upon when it appears; it is, as Sir Ivor Jennings remarked, "the kind of statement which is rarely found outside the American legal periodicals" (*n*). But although rare in avowal, it is by no means uncommon in manifestation.

It appears from all this that the argument used for the doctrine of *Young's Case*, that otherwise "there would be no finality in the law" (*o*), is not wholly convincing. As observed before, it is often more difficult to predict when a court will distinguish a precedent than when (if it had the power) it would refuse to follow it. Moreover, to speak of "finality" in connection with Court of Appeal is somewhat out of place, because

(*k*) See (1946), 62 L. Q. R. 110-111. Another pretext that may be used by a court to avoid the unwelcome effect of its own precedent is to find minute differences of wording in a governing statute as it formerly stood and as it has since been enacted. See *Plunkett v. Alker*, [1954] 1 Q. B. 420.

(*l*) *Bonnington Castings, Ltd. v. Wardlaw*, [1956] 2 W. L. R. 707 (H. L. (Sc.)). Dr. Goodhart's comment was—"With the greatest respect, there may be something to be said for a doctrine of precedent which is loyally followed by the courts, but a doctrine of precedent which recognises that the courts will deliberately attempt to avoid the effect of a previous decision by finding distinctions which are unsatisfactory seems to have less to commend it" (72 L. Q. R. 307).

(*m*) *Hill v. Aldershot Corp.*, [1933] 1 K. B. 259 (C. A.).

(*n*) (1937), 1 M. L. R. at 130.

(*o*) [1944] K. B. at 724, quoting Lord Cozens-Hardy, M.R.

any decision of the Court of Appeal can be overruled by the House of Lords. A person who is projecting a course of conduct, and who considers the possible effect of a debatable decision of the Court of Appeal, has always to contemplate the possibility of that decision being overruled by the House of Lords. Therefore it can hardly be that he places implicit reliance upon the law as formulated in the Court of Appeal, unless indeed he thinks that that law has sufficient argument in its favour to commend itself to the House of Lords. From the point of view of the security of transactions there would seem to be no reason why the Court of Appeal should not be given the same freedom from the binding effect of its own decisions as the House of Lords.

The objection to the present rule is particularly strong because the Court of Appeal gives so many unreserved decisions, *i.e.*, decisions not reduced to writing and rendered immediately after the conclusion of argument. Although, as will be shown, there is some relaxation from the binding force of precedent when it was decided *per incuriam*, the limits of this exception are somewhat tightly drawn, and the court is bound by its previous decision even if it was the result of overlooking the decisions of lower courts.

§ 58. Precedents in the Court of Criminal Appeal

The Court of Criminal Appeal generally regards itself as bound by its own previous decisions (*p*), and by those of its predecessor, the Court for Crown Cases Reserved (*q*). It may perhaps be said without disrespect that the court has in some ways proved to be an unsatisfactory tribunal, partly because it is overworked; and the great majority of its judgments are unreserved, and rendered with no great time for consideration. In these circumstances a strict rule of *stare decisis* would work particularly badly, and the court has recognised this by admitting rather more exceptions to the doctrine than usual. In addition to the standard exceptions which are to be discussed later, the court will reconsider

(*p*) See Winder in (1941), 5 *Journal of Criminal Law*, 242. But consider the different view of Prof. Seaborne Davies: "The court, in effect, despite some odd *dicta* to the contrary, seems always to have held itself free not to follow its own earlier decisions": (1951), *Jrnl. of the Society of Public Teachers of Law*, 439. Lord Goddard, C.J., contradicted this as a statement of current practice: (1952), *ibid.*, 8.

(*q*) *R. v. Cade*, [1914] 2 K. B. at 211-212 (C. C. A.).

a decision that was not argued on both sides (r). A further exception of the greatest importance was laid down in *R. v. Taylor* (s), when it was held that the full Court of Criminal Appeal was not bound by previous decisions of the court, because the liberty of the subject was involved. What this means is that the full court is not bound by previous decisions affirming a conviction, though it continues to be bound by previous decisions quashing a conviction. In the latter case, the maxim *Nulla pœna sine lege* reinforces the doctrine of precedent and prevents the court from changing its mind so as to extend the boundaries of the law of crime, but there is no similar policy to prevent the court from restricting the law of crime, as by extending the defences to a criminal charge.

Although the new concession recognised in *R. v. Taylor* was stated only for a "full court" of the Court of Criminal Appeal, it is not easy to see why it should be restricted in this way. A "full court" is usually taken to mean a court of five or more judges, as opposed to the usual court of three. However, there is no warrant for any distinction of power in the Criminal Appeal Act, 1907, which was the Act setting up the court. This enacts that "the court" (namely, the Court of Criminal Appeal) shall be duly constituted if it consists of not less than three judges, and no additional powers are given to a court of a larger number. It would seem capable of argument that a court of three judges (if no other such court is sitting) is a full court. The qualification in brackets is necessary because the Act provides that the court may sit in two or more divisions, and, if it does so, one division could not be called a full court; yet this division has the same minimum number of judges as a full court. It would be unreasonable to make the powers of a bench of three judges dependent on the question whether some other divisional court of three judges is sitting or not. It is, in fact, impossible to tell from the report of a particular case whether it is a decision of the only Court of Criminal Appeal or a decision of a division of that court; without reference to the cause list for the day it cannot be said whether any (other) division is sitting or not. Another difficulty is that the court may become or cease to be a divisional court

(r) *R. v. Eltridge*, [1909] 2 K. B. at 27 (C. C. A.); *R. v. Norman*, [1924] 2 K. B. at 322 (C. C. A.).

(s) [1950] 2 K. B. 368 (C. C. A.).

of the Court of Criminal Appeal during the course of the hearing, simply by the cessation or commencement of some other division of the court engaged on another case; in this event it might be necessary to look not merely at the calendar but at the clock, to see whether the particular court was a divisional court at the moment when it pronounced its formal decision, if that is taken to be the line between a court that is a "full court" and one that is not. It cannot be supposed that this consideration is relevant to the doctrine of precedent. On the whole it is submitted that the doctrine of *Taylor's Case* applies even to a divisional court of three judges (t). In practice, however, the court will generally cause a case to be argued before five judges if one of its precedents is attacked. This, as we have seen, is the practice of the Court of Appeal, and it is worth recalling that that court makes no distinction in the legal powers of the ordinary court and a so-called full court.

If the decision in *Taylor's Case* applies to a division of the Court of Criminal Appeal in respect of previous decisions of the court, it would seem to apply equally to a Divisional Court of the High Court in respect of its previous decisions, when that court sits in criminal cases, and when the previous decision was in favour of conviction. It would also seem to apply to the House of Lords in the same way, and to be capable of application even to civil appellate courts where the precedent has curtailed a constitutional liberty, e.g., denied a writ of habeas corpus. So far, however, there is no authority for making any of these extensions (u).

(t) Lord Goddard, C.J., in (1952), *Jrnl. of the Society of Public Teachers of Law*, 8, stated an interpretation of *Taylor* which it is difficult to find in the report of the case. He said: "It was not a question of the court consisting of five judges in *Taylor's case* against three in [the earlier case], but we thought we could bring the case within the doctrine of *Young v. The Bristol Aeroplane Co.*, as the former court had obviously not considered what we thought was the main point in the case". This is an extension of the *per incuriam* doctrine (below, p. 203) for which there is little other authority. But Lord Goddard went on to restate the more obvious interpretation of *Taylor's case* in the following words. "Moreover, the Court of Criminal Appeal, dealing as it does with the liberty of the subject, ought not in my opinion to be unduly limited with regard to its powers of quashing if they consider that a previous decision is clearly wrong so that a prisoner is wrongly convicted." It is satisfactory to note that this does not confine the rule to a "full" court.

(u) Dr. Goodhart took the decision in *R. v. Taylor* as the occasion for a still more general comment. He said: "Undoubtedly the Court of Criminal Appeal is concerned with the liberty of the subject, but we must not forget

§ 59. Precedents in the Divisional Court

The Divisional Court of the High Court exercises both civil and criminal jurisdiction. It has already been pointed out that its decision in the exercise of criminal jurisdiction is final, whereas its decision on the civil side is usually subject to appeal to the Court of Appeal. Formerly, this distinction had an effect in the doctrine of precedent, it being held that the Divisional Court was bound by its own decisions only in civil cases where the judgment was subject to appeal, and where, therefore, any error could be set right by a higher court. In criminal cases, where the judgment was unappealable, the court was not bound by its own decisions (v). This distinction seems to have disappeared since the decision in *Police Authority for Huddersfield v. Watson* (w), which is now the leading authority on the subject. The authorities for the distinction were not cited to the court, which held that a precedent was binding even where the decision of the Divisional Court was final (x). The fact that such a determination was final was, indeed, made the very reason for the decision. Lord Goddard, C.J., remarked that he knew that in the writings of various eminent people the doctrine of *stare decisis* had been canvassed from time to time, but that, in his opinion, "if one thing is certain it is that *stare decisis* is part of the law of England, and in a system of law such as ours, where the common law and equity largely are based on decisions, it seems to me it would be very unfortunate if a court of final appeal has given a decision and has laid down a definite principle and it cannot be said the court has been misled in any way by not being referred to authorities, statutory or judicial, which bear on the question, that it should then be said that that decision was not to be a binding authority". It is not, of course, a sufficient reason for a decision on a particular point of the law of precedent to say that "*stare*

that the civil courts are concerned with the administration of justice, which may be as important to a man as his liberty. The rule of *stare decisis*, if followed reasonably, is a means of achieving justice, but if it is followed blindly, like the laws of the Medes and the Persians, then it must lead to injustice in certain cases" (1950), 66 L. Q. R. 441.

(v) See *Winder* in (1946), 9 M. L. R. at 262-263, 265 *et seq.*

(w) [1947] K. B. 842. The rule was criticised by Dr. Goodhart in (1948), 64 L. Q. R. 40, by Mr. Winder in (1948), 11 M. L. R. 95, and by Sir Carleton Allen in (1953), 69 L. Q. R. 316.

(x) The *Huddersfield* case was a civil one, but, exceptionally, the decision of the Divisional Court was unappealable. It was followed in *Younghusband v. Luftig*, [1949] 2 K. B. 354, a criminal case.

decisis is part of the law of England'', for the question relates to the limits of the doctrine and not to its existence. Moreover, it is somewhat disappointing that a judicial decision of this importance should have proceeded without any consideration of the arguments tending the other way. The argument that a final court of appeal should not be bound by its own decisions has already been presented for the House of Lords (§ 56), and if the argument has any validity in that instance it would apply with redoubled force to the Divisional Court, because a decision of that court is unlikely to have been reached with the full deliberation customary in the higher tribunal.

Since Lord Goddard used as an argument that the Divisional Court ought to be bound where it is the final court, it may be thought that *per contra* it is not bound where it is not the final court, *i.e.*, in most civil cases. This, however, is not the law: the court regards itself as bound equally in civil cases where its decision is subject to appeal (y).

It has already been suggested (§ 58) that the rule in *R. v. Taylor* should logically apply to the Divisional Court of the High Court, and if so it constitutes a most important exception to the rule in the *Huddersfield Case*. Hitherto, however, there has been no mention of any such exception.

It seemed at one time that Lord Goddard, C.J., was prepared to recognise an exception to the rule in the *Huddersfield Case* where the court before which the precedent was cited was larger in numbers than the earlier court. In a case of 1947, as reported in the *All England Reports* (z), he said, of an earlier Divisional Court decision—

"I should have no hesitation, if necessary, in differing from the decision in that case, not merely because we are sitting now as a court of three, and that was a court of two, but also because the case was not argued for the defendants, who did not appear, and when a case has been argued only on one side, it has not the authority of a case which has been fully argued."

(y) However, in *Southgate Borough Council v. Park Estates (Southgate) Ltd.*, [1953] 1 W. L. R. 1274, at 1278, Lord Goddard, C.J., delivering the judgment of the Divisional Court, said that he followed a precedent decision of the court because it had stood for 55 years, a fact that he twice emphasised. It is difficult to see its relevance if the precedent was binding in any case.

(z) *Edwards v. Jones*, [1947] 1 All E. R. at 833. It is reported to the same effect in [1948] L. J. R. 1003 and 111 J. P. 324.

Distinction between overruling and refusal to follow. Retroactive effect.

	Decisions of superior court.
Authori-	Decisions of House of Lords.
tative	Decisions of Court of Appeal.
precedents	Decisions of Court of Criminal Appeal.
	Decisions of Divisional Court.

CHAPTER 8

PRECEDENT (continued)

§ 60. Circumstances Destroying the Binding Force of Precedent

The rules of precedent that have hitherto been stated are subject to a number of general exceptions. It will be convenient to begin with the ways in which a precedent may be affected by subsequent higher authority, before considering the more difficult question of how a precedent may suffer from inherent vice.

(1) *Abrogated decisions.* A decision ceases to be binding if a statute or statutory rule inconsistent with it is subsequently enacted, or if it is reversed or overruled by a higher court. *Reversal* occurs when the same decision is taken on appeal and is reversed by the appellate court. *Overruling* occurs when the higher court declares in another case that the precedent case was wrongly decided and so is not to be followed. What is a higher court has already been discussed in connection with the hierarchy of authority (§ 55).

Since overruling is the act of a superior authority, a case is not overruled merely because there exists some later opposing precedent of the same court or a court of co-ordinate jurisdiction. In such circumstances, as has already been observed, a court is free to follow either precedent; whereas when a case is overruled in the full sense of the word the courts become bound by the overruling case not merely to disregard the overruled case but to decide the law in the precisely opposite way. It may be remembered that in *R. v. Taylor* (§ 58) a so-called full court of the Court of Criminal Appeal disapproved a decision of a smaller number of judges in the same court; but the better view is that such a course does not result in overruling, but still leaves the earlier case open to be followed (a). In practice, of course,

(a) See the discussion of the similar point in the old practice of the Divisional Court by Winder in (1946), 9 M. L. R. at 263-264.

the later decision by the larger number of judges, given upon full consideration of the precedent, is likely to be preferred.

It has previously been suggested that there exists a type of overruling in a qualified sense which destroys the binding force of a precedent while not requiring the courts to decide the opposite. This is thought to happen in one case where the "overruling" court, though of high authority, is still not of binding authority, namely where the "overruling" court is the House of Lords deciding a Scottish appeal, and declaring that English and Scots law are the same (§ 56). It might be convenient if the same view were taken for the Judicial Committee of the Privy Council. This Committee, when deciding an appeal from another part of the Commonwealth, does not act as part of the English system of judicature, and its decision does not bind English courts or overrule an English case in the full sense of the term; but it would be reasonable to say that a decision of such high standing, if decided on common-law principles and yet inconsistent with a particular English decision, destroys the binding force of that decision to the extent of setting the English courts free to think the matter out again. Hitherto, however, there has been little indication that even this force will be given to its decision (b).

The general opinion is that a case cannot be overruled by an *obiter dictum*, however strong; there must be a decision against it. It may be, however, that some judges would be prepared to regard a strong *obiter dictum* in a higher court as setting them free to break away from their own decision, even though not compelling them to do so (c).

(b) But see *Herd v. Herd*, [1936] P. 205, at 211, where Bucknill, J., held himself to be free to disregard a decision of the Court of Appeal because of three later inconsistent cases decided respectively by the Privy Council, the House of Lords in a Scottish appeal, and a judge of the Probate Division. The Privy Council in *Sodeman v. The King*, [1936] W. N. 190; [1936] 2 All E. R. 1138, assumed that its decision could not alter the law adopted in the Court of Criminal Appeal, though it may have meant only that it could not alter that law with compulsive force. In *Gower v. Gower*, [1950] 1 All E. R. 804, at 806 (C. A.), Denning, L.J., assumed that he was set free from the binding force of a C. A. precedent by the fact that the High Court of Australia had refused to follow it; however, this was only one of several reasons that he gave for regarding himself as free.

(c) This was the subject of another of Lord Goddard's second thoughts. In *Zeidman v. Owen*, as reported in [1950] 1 All E. R. 290, the learned Chief Justice indicated that the Divisional Court was not bound by its own previous decision on the construction of an Act if the Court of Appeal had meanwhile expressed the opposite view in an *obiter dictum* with which the Divisional Court now agreed. However, he amended his judgment for the Law Reports ([1950]

Overruling need not be express, but may be implied. The doctrine of implied overruling is a comparatively recent development. Until the 1940's the practice of the Court of Appeal was to follow its own previous decision even though it was manifestly inconsistent with a later decision of the House of Lords, provided that it had not been expressly overruled (*d*). Lord Wright, in a case in the House of Lords, questioned the correctness of this attitude (*e*), and in *Young's Case* the Court of Appeal announced the acceptance of a new principle. This is that the Court of Appeal is not bound by its previous decision if, though not expressly overruled, it cannot "stand with" a subsequent decision of the House of Lords (*f*). Any other view would make an "ungodly jumble" of the law by robbing it of self-consistency. A subsequent decision of the House of Lords will destroy the binding force of a precedent not only when it is directly inconsistent with the decision in the precedent case but even when it destroys part of the reasoning in the precedent case which led to the decision. If the later court is not satisfied that the earlier court would have reached the result it did, had it apprehended the law as it has since been laid down in the Lords, the earlier case is deprived of binding authority (*g*).

The law so laid down for precedents in the Court of Appeal

1 K. B. 593) in such a way as to leave the point more open. For the more usual view, that an *obiter dictum* cannot affect a precedent, see *Wheatley v. Wheatley*, [1950] 1 K. B. 39. It was said by a Canadian judge that the fact that a higher court says that a particular question is still open does not absolve a lower court from its duty to follow its own previous decision on the point: *per* Middleton, J.A., in *Dority v. Ottawa Trustees*, [1930] 3 D. L. R. 633, at 635.

(*d*) *E.g.*, *Consett, etc., Society v. Consett Iron Co.*, [1922] 2 Ch. 135 (C. A.).

(*e*) "What a court should do when faced with a decision of the Court of Appeal manifestly inconsistent with the decisions of this House is a problem of some difficulty in the doctrine of precedent. I incline to think it should apply the law laid down by this House and refuse to follow the erroneous decision": *Noble v. Southern Ry.*, [1940] A. C. 583, at 598.

(*f*) [1944] K. B. 718, at 729 (C. A.). Cf. *Fitzsimmons v. Ford Motor Co.*, [1946] 1 All E. R. 429 (C. A.).

(*g*) *Mucklow (A. & J.), Ltd. v. I. R. Commrs.*, [1954] Ch. 615, at 636, 652. Cf. *Morelle, Ltd. v. Wakeling*, [1955] 2 Q. B. 379, at 406 (C. A.): "As a general rule the only cases in which decisions should be held to have been given *per incuriam* are those of decisions given in ignorance or forgetfulness of some inconsistent statutory provision or of some authority binding on the court concerned: so that in such cases some part of the decision or some step in the reasoning on which it is based is found, on that account, to be demonstrably wrong": *per* Evershed, M.R. (italics added). An earlier decision to the same effect is *Cackett v. Cackett*, n. (*g*) below. But judges of different temperament may differ in their opinion whether the basis of a precedent has been swept away: see Denning, L.J.'s, dissent in *Bonsor v. Musicians' Union*, [1954] Ch. 479, at 512 (C. A.), upheld in the Lords ([1956] A. C. 104).

applies equally to precedents in the Court of Criminal Appeal (h) and Divisional Court (i), which cease to be binding upon the courts concerned if impliedly overruled in the Lords. Even a lower court could refuse to follow a decision of one of these courts which has been robbed of its authority in this way (j).

(2) (*Perhaps*) *affirmation or reversal on a different ground*. It sometimes happens that a decision is affirmed or reversed on appeal on a different point. As an example, suppose that a case is decided in the Court of Appeal on ground A, and then goes on appeal to the House of Lords, which decides it on ground B, nothing being said upon A. (Ground B might be a purely procedural point, as that the facts sufficient to raise point A have not been pleaded and so cannot be adjudicated upon; or it may be a different point of substantive law.) What, in such circumstances, is the authority of the decision on ground A in the Court of Appeal? Is the decision binding on the High Court, and on the Court of Appeal itself in subsequent cases?

The question cannot be positively answered. Jessel, M.R., in one case (k) said that where the judgment of the lower court is affirmed on different grounds, it is deprived of all authority, giving as his reason the opinion that such conduct on the part of the appellate court showed that the appellate court did not agree with the grounds given below. In other words, the higher court relieved itself of the disagreeable necessity of overruling the court below by finding another ground on which the judgment below could be supported. Although this is sometimes a correct reading of the state of mind of the higher court, it is not so always. The higher court may, for example, shift the ground of its decision because it thinks that this is the easiest way to decide the case, the point decided in the court

(h) *R. v. Porter*, [1949] 2 K. B. 128, at 132-133 (C. C. A.).

(i) *Younghusband v. Luftig*, [1949] 2 K. B. 354, at 360.

(j) *Colman v. Croft*, [1947] K. B. 95. See also *Cackett (or se, Trice) v. Cackett*, [1950] P. 253, deciding that where a decision of the C. A. is based on the interpretation of a precedent which the House of Lords later holds to have been mistaken, although the House expresses no opinion on the point covered by the C. A., the decision of the C. A. is deprived of binding authority even for the High Court. The liberty of the High Court in such circumstances is also deducible *a fortiori* from *R. v. Northumberland Compensation Appeal Tribunal*, [1951] K. B. 711, at 721, where the D. C. held itself not bound by a decision of the C. A. arrived at in ignorance of a prior decision of the Lords, i.e., *per incuriam*. See later on the *per incuriam* rule.

(k) *Hack v. London Provident Building Society* (1883), 23 Ch. D. 103, at 112.

below being of some complexity. It is certainly possible to find cases in the reports where judgments affirmed on a different point have been regarded as authoritative for what they decided (l).

It is the same with cases reversed on another point. Such a case, as decided in the lower court, is not necessarily deprived of its significance as a judicial determination of the law (m); on the other hand, the reversal, though on another point, may shake the authority of the point that was decided. It is submitted that the true view is that a decision either affirmed or reversed on another point is deprived of any absolute binding force it might otherwise have had; but it remains an authority which may be followed by a court that thinks the particular point to have been rightly decided.

The other ways in which a precedent may have its authority defeated involve, for the most part, the inherent vice of the precedent itself. They are as follows.

(3) *Ignorance of statute.* A precedent is not binding if it was rendered in ignorance of a statute or a rule having the force of statute, i.e., delegated legislation. This rule was laid down for the House of Lords by Lord Halsbury in the leading case (*supra*, § 56), and for the Court of Appeal it was given as the leading example of a decision *per incuriam* which would not be binding on the court (n). The rule apparently applies even though the earlier court knew of the statute in question, if it did not refer to, and had not present to its mind, the precise terms of the statute (o). Similarly, a court may know of the existence of a statute and yet not appreciate its relevance to the matter in hand; such a mistake is again such *incuria* as to vitiate the decision (p). Even a lower court can impugn a precedent on such grounds.

(l) *E.g.*, *Griffiths v. Fleming*, [1909] 1 K. B. 805, at 814; *Hanlon v. Port of Liverpool Stevedoring Co.*, [1937] 4 All E. R. 39, at 42.

(m) In *Curtis Moffat, Ltd. v. Wheeler*, [1929] 2 Ch. 224, at 234, Maugham, J., treated himself as bound by a C. A. decision which had been reversed by the H. L. on another ground, in spite of a doubt expressed by Lord Cairns, L.C., in the H. L. as to the decision in the C. A. To the same effect *Re Boyer*, [1935] Ch. 382, at 386.

(n) *Young v. Bristol Aeroplane Co., Ltd.*, [1944] K. B. at 729 (C. A.).

(o) Cf. *Lancaster Motor Co. (London), Ltd. v. Bremith, Ltd.*, [1941] 1 K. B. 675, at 678 (C. A.), *per* Sir Wilfrid Greene, M.R.; this was, however, a case of a precedent *sub silentio* (see later).

(p) Cf. *per* Denning, L.J., in *Gower v. Gower*, [1950] 1 All E. R. 804, at 806 (C. A.).

The mere fact that (as is contended) the earlier court misconstrued a statute, or ignored a rule of construction, is no ground for impugning the authority of the precedent. A precedent on the construction of a statute is as much binding as any other, and the fact that it was mistaken in its reasoning does not destroy its binding force (q).

(4) *Inconsistency with earlier decision of higher court.* It is clear law that a precedent loses its binding force if the court that decided it overlooked an inconsistent decision of a higher court. If, for example, the Court of Appeal decides a case in ignorance of a decision of the House of Lords which went the other way, the decision of the Court of Appeal is *per incuriam*, and is not binding either on itself (r) or on lower courts (s); on the contrary, it is the decision of the House of Lords that is binding. The same rule applies to precedents in other courts, such as the Divisional Court (t).

The courts have vacillated on the question whether this application of the *per incuriam* rule extends to a situation where the decision of the higher court was not overlooked but was improperly distinguished. The Court of Appeal, for example, may consider a precedent in the House of Lords, and decide that it is distinguishable from the facts before it. Is it open to a later Court of Appeal (or some other court) to hold that the distinction was an illegitimate one, and that the authority of the House of Lords ought to be followed to the exclusion of the precedent in the Court of Appeal? Or does the doctrine of precedent compel the Court of Appeal to maintain a distinction that it now thinks to have been mistaken? The matter was disputed before *Young v. Bristol Aeroplane Co.* (u), but in that case the court seems to

(q) *Young's Case*, loc. cit.; cf. *Royal Crown Derby Porcelain Co., Ltd. v. Russell*, [1949] 2 K. B. 417 (C. A.).

(r) *Young's Case*, [1944] K. B. at 729. The earlier statement, at p. 725, which is confined to later inconsistent decisions of the House of Lords, must not be read as denying the *per incuriam* rule. An illustration of the rule is *Wilson v. Chatterton*, [1946] K. B. 361, where the C. A. showed unusual readiness to find a way out of its previous decision. See note in (1947), 10 M. L. R. 68.

(s) *R. v. Northumberland Compensation Appeal Tribunal*, [1951] 1 K. B. 711, at 721.

(t) *Younghusband v. Luftig*, [1949] 2 K. B. at 361.

(u) In *English, Scottish and Australian Bank v. I. R.*, [1932] A. C. 238, at 242, the opinion adopted was in favour of the binding force of the precedent (see Gooderson in (1950), 10 C. L. J. at 439-40); but in *Lyus v. Stepney B. C.*, [1941] 1 K. B. 134 at p. 152 (C. A.) the opposite view was taken, it being held

have favoured the binding force of the precedent (v). There is, however, one decision after *Young's Case* which rejects this strict interpretation of the doctrine of precedent and decides for the freedom of the court. This is *Fitzsimmons v. Ford Motor Co.* (w). Here the Court of Appeal refused to follow three of its prior decisions on the ground of inconsistency with a House of Lords decision; yet two of the three Court of Appeal decisions were after the House of Lords decision, and in neither of these two was the view expressed that there was any inconsistency with the House of Lords; in fact, the House of Lords decision was distinguished. This case therefore takes the wider view of the *per incuriam* doctrine. In the subsequent case of *Williams v. Glasbrook Bros., Ltd.* (x) the court (including Lord Greene, M.R.) reverted to the view taken by Lord Greene in *Young's Case*. *Fitzsimmons's Case* not being cited.

If the *Fitzsimmons* view is taken, a question arises similar to one discussed under the first exception, namely whether the point is ever reached when the question of conflict is to be taken as settled. In case A, the House of Lords decides a point of law. In the later case B, the Court of Appeal distinguishes A. In case C, the Court of Appeal holds the distinction invalid and follows A. If case D arises, is it open to the Court of Appeal to hold the previous distinction valid and to follow B? It seems that the answer is in the affirmative, and that this kind of resurrection is possible at any time (y).

(5) *Inconsistency between earlier decisions of the same rank.*

A court is not bound by its own previous decisions that are in conflict with one another. This rule has been laid down in the Court of Appeal (z), Court of Criminal Appeal (a) and Divisional

by the Court of Appeal that it was entitled to refuse to follow its own previous decision as inconsistent with a still earlier decision of the House of Lords although the House of Lords precedent had been considered in the case in the Court of Appeal. The same view appears to have been taken by Lord Wright in *Noble v. Southern Ry.*, [1940] A. C. 583.

(v) [1944] K. B. at 722. See Gooderson in (1950), 10 C. L. J. at 434.

(w) [1946] 1 All E. R. 429 (C. A.).

(x) [1947] 2 All E. R. 884 (C. A.).

(y) *Semble* from *Fisher's Case*: see Gooderson, *op. cit.*, at 440-441.

(z) It is one of the exceptions recognised in *Young's Case*, [1944] K. B. at 726, 729. For earlier authorities see *Winder* in (1940), 56 L. Q. R. 457.

(a) *R. v. Power*, [1919] 1 K. B. 572 (C. C. A.).

Court (b), and it obviously applies also to the House of Lords. There may at first sight seem to be a difficulty here: how can a situation of conflict occur, if the court is bound by its own decisions? At least two answers may be given. First, the conflicting decisions may come from a time before the binding force of precedent was recognised. Secondly, and more commonly, the conflict may have arisen through inadvertence, because the earlier cases was not cited in the later. One may sometimes suspect that the "inadvertence" is intentional—a Nelsonian "blind eye". But usually there is no need to resort to this hypothesis: owing to the vast number of precedents, and the heterogeneous ways in which they are reported—or are not reported—it is only too easy for counsel to miss a relevant authority. Whenever a relevant prior decision is not cited before the court, or mentioned in the judgments, it must be assumed that the court acts in ignorance or forgetfulness of it. If the new decision is in conflict with the old, it is given *per incuriam* and is not binding on a later court.

Although the later court is not bound by the decision so given *per incuriam*, this does not mean that it is bound by the first case. Perhaps in strict logic the first case should be binding, since it should never have been departed from, and was only departed from *per incuriam*. However, this is not the rule. The rule is that where there are previous inconsistent decisions of its own, the court is free to follow either. It can follow the earlier, but equally, if it thinks fit, it can follow the later. This rule has been laid down for the Court of Appeal (c), and it is submitted that it applies also to other courts (d). It will be seen, therefore,

(b) *R. v. de Gray* [1900] 1 Q. B. 521; *Youngehusband v. Luftig*, [1949] 2 K. B. 354, at 361-362. The rule may explain the cavalier treatment accorded to the precedent in *R. v. Fulham, etc., Rent Tribunal, ex p. Zarek*, [1951] 2 K. B. 1.

(c) *Young's Case*, at pp. 726, 729.

(d) For the Divisional Court see the authorities assembled by Winder in 9 M. L. R. 270-273. The behaviour of the court is, however, by no means uniform. In *Markham v. Markham*, [1946] 2 All E. R. 737, at 741, the D. C. held itself bound to follow its own decision B which had not considered a relevant precedent A, also decided in the D. C., even though the inclination of the court was now to the effect that B was wrongly decided. In *Wurzel v. Doucker*, [1954] 1 Q. B. 52, commented upon in (1953), 69 L. Q. R. 316, where the same point of precedent arose, the D. C. held itself bound to follow A, even though (this time) the court disliked A and would have preferred to follow B. It is submitted that both cases misunderstand the law of precedent.

that this exception to the binding force of precedent belongs both to the category of abrogation by subsequent facts and to the category of what is here called inherent vice. The earlier case can be disregarded because of the subsequent inconsistent decision on the same level of authority, and the later case can be disregarded because of its inherent vice of ignoring the earlier case.

Where authorities of equal standing are irreconcilably in conflict, a lower court has the same freedom to pick and choose between them as the schizophrenic court itself. The lower court may refuse to follow the later decision on the ground that it was arrived at *per incuriam*, or it may follow such decision on the ground that it is the latest authority. Which of these two courses the court adopts depends, or should depend, upon its own view of what the law ought to be. However, it takes a somewhat bold judge to disregard a precedent handed down by a court of higher standing on the ground that the decision was *per incuriam* (e).

We must now consider a third way in which a conflict may arise between precedents of equal rank. This is by improper distinguishing. An earlier case (A) may have been distinguished in a later (B), but it may now be thought that the distinction was invalid and that there was really a conflict between the two cases. Is it open to the court to change its mind and apply the outcome of A to the facts of B?

The problem has been inconclusively discussed for precedents in the Court of Appeal. *Young's Case* speaks with a somewhat uncertain voice (f). Subsequently, in *Battersby v. Anglo-American Oil Co., Ltd.* (g) and *Fisher v. Ruislip-Northwood*

(e) It can rather easily happen as between a High Court judge and the Divisional Court (see *Savory v. Bayley* (1922), 38 T. L. R. 619; *Lemon v. Lardeur*, [1946] K. B. 613, at 616 (C. A.)), and as between the Divisional Court and Court of Appeal (*R. v. Northumberland Compensation Appeal Tribunal*, [1951] 1 K. B. 711, at 721). But few High Court judges would have had the daring to treat a C. A. precedent as Devlin, J., did in *Armstrong v. Strain*, [1951] 1 T. L. R. 856, at 864 (affd. on other grounds, [1952] 1 K. B. 292 (C. A.)). The point happened to be one on which Devlin, J., had a pronounced opinion, having written an article on it in the L. Q. R. before being elevated to the Bench.

(f) See the discussions by Goodhart in (1947), 9 C. L. J. 349 and Gooderson in (1950), 10 C. L. J. 432.

(g) [1945] K. B. 23 (C. A.). Cases A1, A2, etc., laid down what was formerly thought to be a rule of law; case B decided that the court had a

U. D. C. (h), the Court of Appeal followed the earlier of conflicting precedents even though it had been cited and distinguished in the later one, the distinction being now held to be spurious. Still later, however, a differently constituted Court of Appeal, in *Hogan v. Bentinck, etc., Collieries* (1948) (i), held that in such circumstances they were bound, without reopening the question whether the earlier decision really was inconsistent with it, to accept the later decision. The two earlier cases just referred to were not cited in *Hogan's Case*, so that on any view the Court of Appeal is now free to choose between the doctrine of *Battersby's* and *Fisher's Case* and the doctrine of *Hogan's Case*. The difficulty with the doctrine of *Hogan's Case* is that it may not be possible to tell with any certainty from the report whether the earlier case was cited in the later one. It cannot safely be assumed (at least with reports other than the *Law Reports*) that the omission of a precedent from the report of the case means that the precedent was not cited to the court.

The question is in one respect connected with one previously discussed (p. 204), namely whether, when the Court of Appeal distinguishes an earlier decision of the House of Lords, it can subsequently decide that the distinction was mistaken. It was pointed out that the authorities are in conflict, but that the most recent case, *Williams v. Glasbrook Bros., Ltd.*, is against the power of the court to reopen the question. If this view comes to be accepted, it must have a repercussion upon the present problem, for "it is hardly conceivable that greater weight would be given to an earlier Court of Appeal decision than to one in the House of Lords" (j). Consequently *Fisher's Case* would, on this view, be wrongly decided. It may be hoped, however, that this narrow interpretation will not be followed, and that the wider interpretation of the exception adopted in *Fitzsimmons's Case* (p. 205) will be preferred.

discretion to apply the rule or not as it thought fit; the present case held that B had improperly interpreted the authorities, and that there was a fixed rule of law without judicial discretion.

(h) [1945] K. B. 584. Here three C. A. precedents of the years 1940 and 1941 were rejected as inconsistent with another three C. A. precedents of 1917, 1938 and 1942. The court thus enabled itself to lay down a uniform rule which is regarded as applicable to the situations in all six cases.

(i) [1948] 1 All E. R. 129 (C. A.), *affd.* [1949] 1 All E. R. 588 (H. L.).

(j) Prof. Goodhart in (1948), 64 L. Q. R. at 165.

The problem posed a short while back which has just been under discussion is whether, when case B distinguishes A, it is open to the court in a subsequent case to change its mind as to the validity of the distinction and apply the outcome of A to the facts of B. A related question must now be considered, whether the court can change its mind as to the validity of the distinction and apply the outcome of B to the facts of A. If this is permitted, it becomes possible for the court to change the law by a devious path. Case A is a precedent which, initially, is binding upon the court. In case B, however, where the facts are slightly different, the court decides that A can be distinguished, and so gives a judgment contrary to that in A. In case C, where the facts of A again arise, the court decides that the distinction between A and B is spurious. Can the court, instead of drawing the conclusion that B was wrongly decided as being against the authority of A, hold that B is an effective authority which justifies a conclusion contrary to that in A? The only judge who has hitherto answered this question in the affirmative is Denning, L.J. (k).

These doubts relating to the illegitimately distinguished precedent have made their appearance in the law reports only in connection with the Court of Appeal. There is no judicial discussion of the problem in connection with other courts, such as the Divisional Court.

Another doubt is whether the ability to choose between conflicting precedents goes on for ever. The court decides case A for the plaintiff, and a similar case B for the defendant. The conflict is considered in a later case C, where the two earlier cases are cited and the court decides in favour of (say) the later one, B. If the same question arises again in case D, is the court free to change its mind and follow A? On the one hand it has been suggested that this is not permissible, because the conflict was resolved by the decision in case C. On the other hand it may be

(k) In *Gower v. Gower*, [1950] 1 All E. R. 804 (C. A.), the background of which was as follows. In *Ginesi v. Ginesi*, [1948] P. 179 (C. A.) it was held that the standard of proof of adultery was the same as in criminal cases. In *Davis v. Davis*, [1950] P. 125 (C. A.), Denning, L.J., held that *Ginesi v. Ginesi* applied only to adultery cases and not to cruelty cases. In *Gower v. Gower*, Denning, L.J., expressed the opinion that *Ginesi v. Ginesi* was no longer law even for adultery cases, one reason being that it was really inconsistent with *Davis v. Davis*. On this view the same judge may in one case decide that there is a legal distinction and then in another case change his mind; by doing this he can undermine the authority of a precedent by which he would otherwise be bound.

pointed out that no such restriction upon the first exception in *Young's Case* has yet been judicially suggested (*kk*). Moreover, the suggestion means that case C has overruled case A; yet overruling has hitherto been regarded as the act of a superior court, not of the same or a co-ordinate court.

If the ability to choose between conflicting precedents goes on for ever, the Court of Appeal would now be free to find a conflict between *Wynne-Finch v. Chaytor* (p. 189) and *Young's Case* (notwithstanding that the former was considered and disapproved in the latter), and to follow *Wynne-Finch's Case* in preference to *Young's Case*, i.e., by holding that it is not bound by its previous decisions. This argument is not of much importance, for if the court wishes to regain its freedom it does not need to find a logical justification for this in the judgments in *Young's Case*. The logical justification can be obtained merely by saying that the observations in *Young's Case* are *obiter*, or else by assuming the freedom and proceeding to disapprove *Young's Case*.

Putting aside these doubts, the law may be stated as follows. The Court of Appeal and other courts are free to choose between conflicting precedents, even though this involves preferring an earlier to a later decision (*l*), preferring one decision to several (*m*), preferring an unreported decision to a reported one (*n*), and preferring a decision of a court of co-ordinate jurisdiction to its own decision (*o*). As Professor Goodhart points out, the exception to the rule in *Young's Case* goes far to destroy the certainty supposed to be created by the rule. Instances are found in which the whole difficulty of the decision lies in deciding whether previous decisions of the court are in conflict (in which event the court is enabled to decide the substantial question) or not (*p*). Thus, so far from saving legal argument, the rule with its exception may positively stimulate it.

This exception has been concerned with inconsistent decisions

(*kk*) Gooderson, *op. cit.*

(*l*) *E.g.*, *Battersby's Case* and *Fisher's Case*, above.

(*m*) *E.g.*, *Fisher's Case*; cf., for the D. C., *Winder* in 9 M. L. R. at 270-273.

(*n*) *E.g.*, *King v. King*, [1943] P. 91 (C. A.).

(*o*) *Young's Case*, [1944] K. B. at 729.

(*p*) As in *Rothwell v. Caverswall Stone Co.*, [1944] 2 All E. R. 350 (C. A.), discussed by Goodhart, *op. cit.*, at 354. It has even been suspected that in some instances the court has engineered a supposed conflict for the purpose of enabling itself to disregard its later decision.

on the same level of authority. There is probably no exception from the binding force of precedent for inconsistent decisions of a lower level of authority. For example, the Court of Appeal would not be entitled to disregard its own previous decision on the ground that a relevant earlier decision of a judge of the High Court had not been considered in it. It is true that in *Young's* case Lord Greene, M.R., suggested that there might in rare instances be other types of decision *per incuriam* with which he had not specifically dealt, but he did not particularise them, and there is little to suggest that ignorance of a lower precedent would be counted among them. Pretty well the sum total of that little is an extempore judgment of Lord Goddard. In *Nicholas v. Penny*, as reported in the *All England Reports* (q), the learned Chief Justice said:

"It has been laid down by the Court of Appeal in *Young v. Bristol Aeroplane Co., Ltd.*, that where material cases or sections of statutes were not cited to the court in a case, the court need not follow the decision if those cases or enactments might have influenced it had they been cited."

This states the doctrine of *Young's Case* more widely than anything laid down in the case itself, and when he came to correct his judgment for the *Law Reports* (r), Lord Goddard modified it by deleting the concluding words "if those cases or enactments might have influenced it had they been cited" and substituting the narrower requirement that the cases or enactments of which the court was in ignorance must show that the case was wrongly decided. The omission to cite a High Court case before the Court of Appeal does not show that the decision of the Court of Appeal, going against the High Court case, is wrong, because the Court of Appeal is not bound by the High Court—even though it may be possible that the High Court case would have been followed if it had been cited (s).

(6) *Precedents sub silentio or not fully argued.* The previous exceptions to the binding force of precedent can all be summed up as cases where the authority of the precedent either is swept away by subsequent higher or equal authority or is undermined

(q) [1956] 2 All E. R. 89 at 92.

(r) [1950] 2 K. B. 466, at 472-473.

(s) Cf. *Tancred v. Delagoa Bay Ry.* (1889), 23 Q. B. D. 239, at 242, where it was held that a conflicting precedent of a single judge of the High Court did not entitle the D. C. to disregard its own precedent.

by inconsistency with previous higher or equal authority. We now come to the more subtle attack upon the authority of a precedent involved in saying that the decision was arrived at *sub silentio*.

A decision passes *sub silentio*, in the technical sense that has come to be attached to that phrase, when the particular point of law involved in the decision is not perceived by the court or present to its mind. The court may consciously decide in favour of one party because of point A, which it considers and pronounces upon. It may be shown, however, that logically the court should not have decided in favour of the particular party unless it also decided point B in his favour; but point B was not argued or considered by the court. In such circumstances, although point B was logically involved in the facts and although the case had a specific outcome, the decision is not an authority on point B. Point B is said to pass *sub silentio*.

A good illustration is *Gerard v. Worth of Paris, Ltd.* (ss). There, a discharged employee of a company, who had obtained damages against the company for wrongful dismissal, applied for a garnishee order on a bank account standing in the name of the liquidator of the company. The only point argued was on the question of the priority of the claimant's debt, and, on this argument being heard, the Court of Appeal granted the order. No consideration was given to the question whether a garnishee order could properly be made on an account standing in the name of the liquidator. When, therefore, this very point was argued in a subsequent case before the Court of Appeal (t), the court held itself not bound by its previous decision. Sir Wilfrid Greene, M.R., said that he could not help thinking that the point now raised had been deliberately passed *sub silentio* by counsel in order that the point of substance might be decided. He went on to say that the point had to be decided by the earlier court before it could make the order which it did; nevertheless, since it was decided "without argument, without reference to the crucial words of the rule, and without any citation of authority", it was not binding and would not be followed.

The difference between a decision passing *sub silentio* and a

(ss) [1936] 2 All E. R. 905 (C. A.).

(t) *Lancaster Motor Co. v. Bremith, Ltd.*, [1941] 1 K. B. 675, at 677 (C.A.).

decision arrived at without relevant argument must be noticed. The first is a species of the second. If a point is put before the court and argued, any subsequent decision cannot be *sub silentio* on that point. However, the fact that a point is not argued is not enough to subject a decision to the aspersion of being *sub silentio*. If a court consciously decides a point of law, the mere deficiency of argument on one side or the other does not mean that the decision is *sub silentio*. In short, a decision *sub silentio* is a particular kind of decision on a point not argued, the distinguishing feature being the absence of realisation by the court that it is deciding the particular point (tt).

The rule that a precedent *sub silentio* is not authoritative goes back at least to 1661 (u), when counsel said: "An hundred precedents *sub silentio* are not material"; and Twisden, J., agreed: "Precedents *sub silentio* and without argument are of no moment". This rule has ever since been followed (v). But the court before whom the precedent is cited may be reluctant to hold that its predecessor failed to consider a point directly raised in the case before it (w), and this reluctance will be particularly pronounced if the *sub silentio* attack is levelled against not one case only but a series (x).

The importance of the *sub silentio* rule, and the danger of overlooking it, may be illustrated from *Re Dean* (y). In that

(tt) It may, however, be difficult in a particular case to distinguish between a decision truly *sub silentio* and a decision consciously on the legal point where an attractive line of argument has not been presented or considered. See, e.g., *Bryers v. Canadian Pacific Steamships, Ltd.*, [1956] 1 W. L. R. 1181, at 1186.

(u) *R. v. Warner (Ward)*, 1 Keb. 66, 1 Lev. 8.

(v) *O'Shea v. O'Shea and Parnell* (1890), 15 P. D. 59, at 61 (C. A.) (point deliberately withheld from court, the parties not wishing it to be raised); *Ankin v. L. N. E. Ry.*, [1930] 1 K. B. 527, at 537; *Lindsey C. C. v. Marshall*, [1937] A. C. 97, at 125; *Yelland v. Powell Duffryn Collieries*, [1941] 1 All E. R. 278, at 295 (a stage of the case not reported in [1941] 1 K. B. 154); notes by D. W. Logan (1940), 3 M. L. R. 235; Williams (1944), 7 M. L. R. 136 n. 43; Tylor (1947), 10 M. L. R. 398 (but see, for a different interpretation of the particular decision, Marsh in (1952), 68 L. Q. R. 235); Allen, *Law in the Making*, 5th ed. 312; Warnbaugh, *The Study of Cases*, 26. Nearly every decision *sub silentio* can be regarded, from another point of view, as a decision *per incuriam*, because the failure of counsel to argue the point will generally mean that relevant cases or statutes are not brought to the attention of the court. See *Lancaster Motor Co. v. Bremith, Ltd.*, [1941] 1 K. B. 675, at 678 (C. A.); *Bradley-Hole v. Cusen*, [1953] 1 Q. B. 300, at 305 (C. A.).

(w) *Gibson v. South American Stores, Ltd.*, [1950] Ch. 177, at 196-197 (C. A.).

(x) *Young v. Sealey*, [1949] 1 All E. R. 92, at 108; cf. *Read v. Lyons*, [1945] K. B. 216, at 247 (C. A.). Yet see *Re Pratt*, [1950] 2 All E. R. 540, at 547; on appeal, [1951] Ch. 225, at 234 (C. A.).

(y) (1889), 41 Ch. D. 552.

well-known case, a trust for the benefit of the testator's horses and dogs, for fifty years if they should so long live, was held by North, J., not to be void; and it has sometimes been inferred from this that the life of an animal can be taken as a "life in being" for the purpose of the perpetuity rule or the similar rules derived from it. In fact, however, the legal problem raised by the duration of the trust was not considered by the learned judge, so that his decision is no authority at all upon it. It is submitted that if the very case of *Re Dean* were to arise again, and the perpetuity point were argued, a court would be free to reach the opposite conclusion from that in *Re Dean*—even if *Re Dean* were sufficiently high in the legal scale to be capable of being a binding precedent (z).

We now turn to the wider question whether a precedent is deprived of its authoritative force by the fact that it was not argued, or not fully argued, by the losing party. If one looks at this question merely with the eye of common sense, the answer to it is clear. One of the chief reasons for the doctrine of precedent is that a matter that has once been fully argued and decided should not be allowed to be reopened. Where a judgment is given without the losing party having been represented, there is no assurance that all the relevant considerations have been brought to the notice of the court, and consequently the decision ought not to be regarded as possessing absolute authority, even if it does not fall within the *sub silentio* rule.

This opinion is adopted in the Court of Criminal Appeal, which will reconsider a decision that was not argued on both sides (a); presumably, it will also reconsider a decision that, although argued by the winner, was not argued by the loser. The Divisional Court follows the same rule (b). In the Court of Appeal, however, the position is somewhat doubtful, because the exception was

(z) A partial solution of the difficulty was found in *Re Haines*, *The Times*, November 7, 1952, where a gift for a cat was upheld on the ground that having regard to its present age the cat would not live longer than 21 years. This line of argument would probably not have helped in *Re Dean*, for horses can live substantially longer than 21 years.

(a) *R. v. Ettridge*, [1909] 2 K. B. at 27 (C. C. A.); *R. v. Norman*, [1924] 2 K. B. at 322 (C. C. A.). Cf. *R. v. Neal*, [1949] 2 K. B. 590, at 597, 599.

(b) This appears from *Edwards v. Jones*, in both the All E. R. and L. R. versions (above, p. 196, n. (z)). It also appears from the All E. R. report of *Nicholas v. Penny*, [1950] 2 All E. R. at 91; but Lord Goddard altered his judgment for the *Law Reports* so as to leave the question open ([1950] 2 K. B. 466).

not specifically mentioned in the judgment in *Young's Case*, which attempted a rather full statement of the law relating to precedents in the Court of Appeal. Notwithstanding this omission, it is submitted that the rule is the same for the Court of Appeal as for other courts (c). Although it is somewhat unfortunate that the situation was not considered in *Young's Case*, this silence is by no means conclusive on the point. There is no warrant for construing the judgment in *Young's Case* like a statute. A case is only authority on its facts, and the complete list of exceptions to the binding force of precedent was not before the court.

If there is a general exception for unargued cases, the *sub silentio* rule turns out to be merely a particular application of a wider principle.

A precedent is not destroyed merely because it was badly argued, inadequately considered, and fallaciously reasoned. Thus a rather arbitrary line has to be drawn between total absence of argument on a particular point, which vitiates the precedent, and inadequate argument, which is a ground for impugning the precedent only if it is absolutely binding and indistinguishable (d). There appears to be an exception if the court in deciding the precedent expressly intimated that the matter had not been fully argued or considered (e).

(7) *Decisions of equally divided courts.* Where an appellate court is equally divided, the practice is to dismiss the appeal, on the principle *Semper præsumitur pro negante*. In such circumstances, the rule adopted in all courts except the House of Lords is that the decision only has the authority of the court appealed from (f). The obvious reason for this rule is that there is in fact no majority against the appeal, and the appeal fails because of

(c) It may be noticed that even where the court fights shy of using the act of absence of argument to destroy the binding force of a precedent, it may use this weapon to restrict and distinguish the precedent. See, e.g., per Duff, J., in *Re Board of Commerce* (1920), 60 S. C. R. 456, at 507 (Can.).

(d) For the proposition that a case is not deprived of binding authority merely because it is contended that it was inadequately argued having regard to the complexity of the issues involved, see *Morelle, Ltd. v. Wakeling*, [1955] 2 W. L. R. 672 (C. A.). Denning, L.J.'s, opinion on this point in *Gower v. Gower*, [1950] 1 All E. R. 804, at 806 (C. A.) is a minority one.

(e) *Re a Solicitor*, [1944] K. B. 427.

(f) See for the C. A. *Galloway v. Galloway*, [1954] P. 312, and for earlier cases see note in (1954), 70 L. Q. R. 469; for the D. C., *Grocock v. Grocock*, [1920] 1 K. B. 1, at 11, 13; for the High Court of Australia, Paton and Sawyer in (1947), 63 L. Q. R. at 463; and for American courts, Gray, *Nature and Sources of the Law* (1921), 243.

an arbitrary rule. All that happens is that the appeal court fails to make up its collective mind. Indeed, the former view was that there was no "decision" in the technical sense by the appellate court. In *Att.-Gen. v. Radloff* (1854) (g), Pollock, C.B., said: "As the court is equally divided, no judgment can be pronounced; but the rule for a new trial will drop". In *Att.-Gen. v. Bradlaugh* (1885) (h), Brett, M.R., referring to the former case, said: "It is a case in which the judges were equally divided in opinion, and, therefore, it could not bind any court, but certainly could not bind this court". At the present time the Court of Appeal if equally divided will dismiss the appeal, and this dismissal will have the same effect between the parties as any other dismissal; yet from the point of view of precedent it is not unreasonable to say that there is no decision of the Court of Appeal in favour of the respondent. An unbiased observer does not describe a drawn battle as a victory.

This line of argument may help to explain why there was no reference to the exception in *Young's Case*. *Young's Case* laid down that the Court of Appeal was bound by its own decisions, but in the circumstances now being considered, where the precedent consisted in the dismissal of an appeal by an equally divided court, there is, for the doctrine of precedent, no "decision" of the Court of Appeal. In any event, as observed in connection with the previous exception, the judgments in *Young's Case* do not have to be construed as though they constituted a statutory code of the doctrine of precedent in the Court of Appeal. And the present exception or quasi-exception to the rule in *Young's Case* has been reaffirmed since that decision (j).

As already indicated, the House of Lords is the only court—the only court, it seems, in any common-law jurisdiction—to follow the opposite practice. The position in the House was settled in 1861 (k). It is now rare for the problem to arise, since it has become the invariable practice of the House to sit with an

(g) 10 Ex. 84, at 109.

(h) 14 Q. B. D. 668, at 688.

(j) Note (f) above.

(k) *Beamish v. Beamish* (1861), 9 H. L. C. 274. The rule was strongly criticised by Pollock, *First Book of Jurisprudence*, 6th ed. 339, and also by Lord Wright, who looked upon it as "an unfortunate result, without any substantial value" (4 Univ. of Tor. L. J. at 258; 8 C. L. J. at 126). It was, however, followed in *Usher's Case*, [1915] A. C. 433, at 444—a case which, as has already been shown (p. 184), has caused the greatest difficulty to later judges. Also in *Commrs. of Inland Revenue v. Walker*, [1915] A. C. 509.

uneven number of peers (usually five). This, too, is the general practice of other appellate courts.

§ 61. Circumstances Justifying Overruling or Refusal to Follow

It is often more important that the law should be certain than that it should be ideally perfect. These two requirements are to a great extent inconsistent with each other, and we must often choose between them. Whenever a decision is departed from, the certainty of the law is sacrificed to its rational development, and the evils of the uncertainty thus produced may far outweigh the very trifling benefit to be derived from the correction of the erroneous doctrine. The precedent, while it stood unreversed, may have been counted on in numerous cases as definitely establishing the law. Valuable property may have been dealt with in reliance on it; important contracts may have been made on the strength of it; it may have become to a great extent a basis of expectation and the ground of mutual dealings. Justice may therefore imperatively require that the decision, though founded in error, shall stand inviolate none the less. *Communis error facit jus* (a). "It is better", said Lord Eldon, "the law should be certain, than that every judge should speculate upon improvements in it" (b).

It follows from this that, other things being equal, a precedent acquires added authority from the lapse of time. The longer it has stood unquestioned and unreversed, the more harm in the way of uncertainty and the disappointment of reasonable expectations will result from its reversal. A decision which might be lawfully overruled without hesitation while yet new, may after the lapse of a number of years acquire such increased strength as to be practically of absolute and no longer of merely conditional authority. This effect of lapse of time has repeatedly received judicial recognition.

"Viewed simply as the decision of a court of first instance, the authority of this case, notwithstanding the respect due to the judges

(a) It is to be remembered that the overruling of a precedent has a retrospective operation. In this respect it is very different from the repeal or alteration of a statute.

(b) *Sheddon v. Goodrich* (1803), 8 Ves. 497.

who decided it, is not binding upon us; but viewed in its character and practical results, it is one of a class of decisions which acquire a weight and effect beyond that which attaches to the relative position of the court from which they proceed. It constitutes an authority which, after it has stood for so long a period unchallenged, should not, in the interests of public convenience, and having regard to the protection of private rights, be overruled by this court except upon very special considerations. For twelve years and upwards the case has continued unshaken by any judicial decision or criticism" (c).

"When an old decided case has made the law on a particular subject, the Court of Appeal ought not to interfere with it, because people have considered it as establishing the law and have acted upon it" (d).

"This House has, no doubt, power to overrule even a long-established course of decisions of the courts, provided it has not itself determined the question. It is impossible to lay down precise rules according to which this power will be exercised. But in general this House will adopt this course only in plain cases where serious inconvenience or injustice would follow from perpetuating an erroneous construction or ruling of law" (e).

The statement that a precedent gains in authority with age must be read subject to an important qualification. Up to a certain point a human being grows in strength as he grows in age; but this is true only within narrow limits. So with the authority of judicial decisions. A moderate lapse of time will give added vigour to a precedent, but after a still longer time the opposite effect may be produced, not indeed directly, but indirectly through the accidental conflict of the ancient and perhaps partially forgotten principle with later decisions. Without having been expressly overruled or intentionally

(c) *Pugh v. Golden Valley Ry.* (1880), 15 Ch. D. at 334.

(d) *Smith v. Keal* (1882), 9 Q. B. D. at 352. See also *Re Wallis* (1890), 25 Q. B. D. 180; *Queen v. Edwards* (1884), 13 Q. B. D. 590; *Riddale v. Clifton* (1877), 2 P. D. 306; *Foakes v. Beer* (1884), 9 App. Cas. at 630: "We find the law to have been accepted as stated for a great length of time, and I apprehend that it is not now within our province to overturn it"; per Lord Sumner in *Admiralty Commissioners v. S.S. Amerika*, [1917] A. C. 38, at 55-6; per Lord Sumner in *Weld-Blundell v. Stephens*, [1920] A. C. 956, at 967; per Lord Dunedin in *French Marine v. Compagnie Napolitaine*, [1921] 2 A. C. 494, at 511; per Lord Sterndale, M.R., in *Gibaud v. G. E. Ry.*, [1921] 2 K. B. 426, at 432-3. For the corollary, see per Fletcher-Moulton, L.J., in *Gorney v. Bristol Trade and Provident Society*, [1909] 1 K. B. 901, at 923: "Conclusions as to the common law which first appear in recent times and are based on no accepted principle of earlier date are to be looked upon with great suspicion."

(e) *Admiralty Commissioners v. Valverde (Owners)*, [1938] A. C. 173, per Lord Wright, at 194.

departed from, it may become in course of time no longer really consistent with the course of judicial decision. In this way the tooth of time will eat away an ancient precedent and gradually deprive it of all its authority. The law becomes animated by a different spirit and assumes a different course, and the older decisions become obsolete and inoperative (f).

The way in which the foregoing principles are interpreted must depend to a large extent upon the temperament, conservative or progressive, of the particular judge who has to consider the impugned precedent. It must also depend, as has already been indicated, upon the type of case in which the question arises. Overruling is more difficult where proprietary rights are affected than where merely personal rights are affected. Striking instances of judicial valour in the realm of personal rights are the reversal of the ancient rule whereby a husband could chastise his wife (g), and the great extension of the tort of negligence in cases like *Donoghue v. Stevenson* (h). Speaking generally, it may be said that where a department of the law is thought of as resting on moral principles, as in the case of much of the law of tort, an alteration in the law to make it conform more closely to those moral principles is particularly easy (i). Even in the law of contract, the courts hold themselves comparatively free to mould the doctrine of public policy to suit the needs of the time (k), and also to extend the excuses for non-performance arising out of impossibility. In a few cases the progressive spirit has manifested itself even in cases affecting proprietary rights. Thus in *Bourne v. Keane* (l) the House of Lords overruled a

(f) Cf. *per* Lord Watson in *Allen v. Flood*, [1898] A. C. 1, at 101: "I am very far from suggesting that the antiquity of a decision furnishes a good objection to its weight; but it is a circumstance which certainly invites and requires careful consideration, unless the decision is clearly in point, and its principle has since been recognised and acted upon."

(g) *R. v. Jackson*, [1891] 1 Q. B. 671: "Such quaint and absurd dicta as are to be found in the books as to the right of a husband over his wife in respect of personal chastisement are not . . . now capable of being cited as authorities in a court of justice in this or any civilised country", *per* Lord Halebury, L.C., at 679.

(h) [1932] A. C. 562.

(i) Cf. the remark of Lord Watson in *Mills v. Armstrong, The Bernina* (1888), 13 App. Cas. 1, at 16: "*Thorogood v. Brian* . . . cannot be represented as an authority upon which . . . persons guilty, or intending to be guilty, of contributory negligence are entitled to rely."

(k) Cf. *English Hopgrowers v. Dering*, [1928] 2 K. B. 128, *per* Sankey, L.J., at 130.

(l) [1919] A. C. 815.

long current of earlier authority animated by religious intolerance; in the *Fibrosa Case* (m) it overruled a decision of the Court of Appeal that, though much criticised, had been followed by the courts and acted upon in commercial dealings; and in *Perrin v. Morgan* (n) it upset a well-established rule on the construction of wills (o). These cases and others show an independence of mind that contrasts strongly with the prevailing judicial attitude of the nineteenth century.

To sum the matter up, we may say that to justify the disregard of a conditionally authoritative precedent, it must, in general, be erroneous, either in law or in reason, and the circumstances of the case must not be such as to make applicable the maxim, *Communis error facit jus*. The defective decision must not, by the lapse of time or otherwise, have acquired such added authority as to give it a title to permanent recognition notwithstanding the vices of its origin.

It may be mentioned in conclusion that there are various special circumstances that have in the past been regarded by

(m) *Fibrosa Spolka Akcyjna v. Fairbairn Lawson Combe Barbour, Ltd.*, [1943] A. C. 32. See especially at 44-5, 72-3.

(n) [1943] A. C. 399, per Viscount Simon, L.C., at 414: "The present question is not, in my opinion, one in which this House is required, on the ground of public interest, to maintain a rule which has been constantly applied but which it is convinced is erroneous. It is far more important to promote the correct construction of future wills in this respect than to preserve consistency in misinterpretation."

(o) For other cases where long-standing decisions have been overruled, see *West Ham Union v. Edmonton Union*, [1908] A. C. 1, per Lord Loreburn, L.C., at 4-5: "Great importance is to be attached to old authorities on the strength of which many transactions may have been adjusted and rights determined. But where they are plainly wrong, and especially where the subsequent course of judicial decisions has disclosed weakness in the reasoning on which they were based, and practical injustice in the consequences that must flow from them, I consider it is the duty of this House to overrule them, if it has not lost the right to do so by itself expressly affirming them"; *City of Westminster v. Southern Ry. Co.*, [1936] A. C. 511, per Lord Wright, M.R., at 563-4; *Robinson Bros. (Brewers), Ltd. v. Houghton and Chester-le-Street Assessment Committee*, [1937] 2 K. B. 445, per Greer, L.J., at 462-3; *Listenden v. C. A. V. Bosch, Ltd.*, [1940] A. C. 412, per Lord Wright, at 432: "For some reason no litigant has had the courage or the money to bring it before this House, and this unfortunate doctrine of law has remained in force because the remedial powers of this House are dependent on some private litigant at his own expense or initiative bringing up the question by way of appeal. Such is the English system. But notwithstanding that the decision has been followed so long and so often, and has no doubt become regarded in certain quarters as an established rule, this House has the duty to reconsider it when at last it is brought before it and to set it aside if it is seen to be contrary to justice and convenience."

different judges as determining the weight to be attached to a precedent. Circumstances tending to increase the authority of a precedent are: unanimity of the court, affirmation or approval by other courts, particularly by a superior court, eminence of the judge, approval (or even absence of criticism by) the profession, learned argument, consultation by the judges of both benches (before the Judicature Act), or other great deliberation, the fact that the judge at first entertained a different opinion, and finally the fact that an Act has since been passed on the same subject-matter without reversing the decision (*p*). Circumstances tending to lessen the authority of a precedent are: lack of unanimity, particularly where there is a well-reasoned dissenting judgment, failure to notice a contrary decision, or being misled by reliance upon a case of no authority, absence of final judgment, or where the matter is compromised or not opposed (*q*), where the question passes *sub silentio* without argument at the bar or by the court (*r*), where the decision is given in haste, and the question is not fully argued—this is a reason for attaching little importance to decisions at Assizes or on interlocutory motion (*s*)—, where the case is badly reported, where the judges agree in the result but not in the reasoning, where the reasoning is defective, where the decision was reached to avoid some special hardship, where it has been doubted or criticised (*t*), and where its result is embarrassing or unjust (*u*).

(*p*) Cf., as to the last, *per* Lord Atkin in *Thorne v. Motor Trade Association*, [1937] A. C. 797, at 806.

(*q*) A case decided against a party without argument from him is deficient in authority. But see *Sagar v. H. Ridehalgh & Son*, [1931] 1 Ch. 310, at 325, where Lord Hanworth, M.R., said: "The case was not argued for the respondent, but nevertheless a decision of the Chief Justice, with Wightman, J., Blackburn, J., and Mellor, J., beside him, must be respected."

(*r*) *Supra*, § 60 (6).

(*s*) *Greenhalgh v. Mallard*, [1943] 2 All E.R. 234, at 239.

(*t*) But in *Wolstanton, Ltd. v. Newcastle-under-Lyme Corporation*, [1940] A. C. 860, at 872-3, Viscount Maugham, in examining the status of a case of which Lord Hatherley, L.C., had said: "Whether the authority of that case would now be fully recognised or not, I do not stop to inquire," commented: "The reservation by a judge or a Lord of Appeal of the right to reconsider a decision at some later date ought not to be taken as a statement that he thinks the decision was erroneous." While this is true, it may be suggested that such a reservation does indicate a doubt, and may indicate even more than a doubt.

(*u*) For most of the material in the above paragraph, other than the footnotes, the editor is indebted to Dr. T. Ellis Lewis's unpublished dissertation on the doctrine of precedent. For another list see Morgan, *The Study of Law*, 156-7.

§ 62. The Ratio Decidendi of a Case

The operation of original precedents is the progressive transformation of questions of fact into questions of law—these terms being here used in the first of the senses explained in § 22. *Ex facto oritur jus*. The growth of case law involves the gradual elimination of judicial liberty. In any system in which precedents are authoritative, the courts are engaged in forging fetters for their own feet.

In respect of this law-creating operation of precedents, questions are divisible into two classes. For some of them do, and some do not, admit of being answered *on principle*. The former are those the answer to which is capable of assuming the form of a general principle; the latter are those the answer to which is necessarily specific. The former are answered by way of abstraction, that is to say, by the elimination of the immaterial elements in the particular case, the result being a general rule applicable not merely to that single case, but to all others which resemble it in its essential features. The other class of questions consists of those in which no such process of abstraction, no such elimination of immaterial elements, as will give rise to a general principle, is possible. The answer to them is based on the circumstances of the concrete and individual case, and therefore produces no rule of general application. The operation of precedent is limited to the former only of these classes of questions.

For example, the question whether the defendant did or did not make a certain statement is a question of fact (in the sense of being a jury question), and does not admit of any answer save one which is concrete and individual. It cannot be answered on principle. It necessarily remains, therefore, a pure question of fact; the decision of it is no precedent, and establishes no rule of law. On the other hand, the question whether the defendant in making such a statement was or was not guilty of fraud or negligence, though it is a question of fact, is also in part a question on which it may be possible to lay down a general principle. For it is a matter which may be dealt with *in abstracto*, not necessarily *in concreto*. If, therefore, the decision is arrived at on principle, it will amount to an original precedent, and the question, together with every

other essentially resembling it, will become for the future a question of law, predetermined by the rule thus established.

A precedent, therefore, is a judicial decision which contains in itself a principle. The underlying principle which thus forms its authoritative element is often termed the *ratio decidendi*. The concrete decision is binding between the parties to it, but it is the abstract *ratio decidendi* which alone has the force of law as regards the world at large. "The only use of authorities or decided cases", says Sir George Jessel, "is the establishment of some principle, which the judge can follow out in deciding the case before him" (v). "The only thing", says the same distinguished judge in another case, "in a judge's decision binding as an authority upon a subsequent judge is the principle upon which the case was decided" (w).

This is the true significance of the familiar contrast between authority and principle. It is often said by judges that inasmuch as the matter before them is not covered by authority, they must decide it upon principle. The statement is a sure indication of the impending establishment of an original precedent. It implies two things: first, that where there is any authority on the point, that is to say, where the question is already one of law, the duty of the judge is simply to follow the path so marked out for him; and secondly, that if there is no authority it is his duty, if possible, to decide it upon principle, that is to say, to formulate some general rule and to act upon it, thereby creating law for the future. It may be, however, that the question is one which does not admit of being answered either on authority or on principle, and in such a case a specific or individual answer is alone possible, no rule of law being either applied or created (x).

(v) *Re Hallet* (1879), 13 Ch. D., at 712.

(w) *Osborne v. Rowlett* (1880), 13 Ch. D., at 785.

(x) It is clearly somewhat awkward to contrast in this way the terms authority and principle. It is odd to speak of deciding a case on principle because there is no legal principle on which it can be decided. To avoid misapprehension, it may be advisable to point out that decisions as to the meaning of statutes are always general, and therefore establish precedents and make law. For such interpretative decisions are necessarily as general as the statutory provisions interpreted. A question of statutory interpretation is one of fact to begin with, and is decided on principle; therefore it becomes one of law, and is for the future decided on authority.

Although it is the duty of courts of justice to decide questions on principle if they can, they must take care in this formulation of principles to limit themselves to the requirements of the case in hand. That is to say, they must not lay down principles which are not required for the due decision of the particular case, or which are wider than is necessary for this purpose. The only judicial principles which are authoritative are those which are thus relevant in their subject-matter and limited in their scope. All others, at the best, are of merely persuasive efficacy. They are not true *rationes decidendi*, and are distinguished from them under the name of *dicta* or *obiter dicta*, things said by the way. The prerogative of judges is not to make law by formulating and declaring it—this pertains to the legislature—but to make law by applying it. Judicial declaration, unaccompanied by judicial application, is not of binding authority (y).

Who is to determine whether a principle thus laid down by a court is unduly wide for the decision of the case? The answer is, the subsequent court before whom the decision is cited as a precedent. In practice, courts do not concede to their predecessors the power of laying down very wide rules; they reserve to themselves the power to narrow such rules by introducing into them particular facts of the precedent case that were treated by the earlier court as irrelevant. This process is known as "distinguishing". The power of distinguishing is very important, especially for the House of Lords, and more than anything else has enabled the courts in England to preserve the flexibility of the law. Of course, a court low in the judicial hierarchy is less likely to show boldness in restrictively distinguishing the decisions of its superiors than the higher courts themselves. Yet instances are not unknown of puisne judges of the High Court cutting down the decisions of the House of Lords (z).

(y) The weight to be given to *obiter dicta* depends upon the circumstances. Sir Carleton Allen's conclusion is that "if the eminence of the tribunal, the consensus of judicial opinion, and the degree of deliberation all combine to lend a special weight and solemnity to *dicta*, then their authority is for all practical purposes indistinguishable from that of *rationes decidendi*." (*Law in the Making*, 5th ed. 250).

(z) E.g., *Att.-Gen. v. Valle-Jones*, [1935] 2 K. B. 209. For a further discussion, see Goodhart, "Determining the *Ratio Decidendi* of a Case" (1930), 40 Yale L. J. 161, reprinted in his *Essays in Jurisprudence and the Common Law*, 1, and the critical comments by R. N. Gooderson in (1952), 30 Can. Bar Rev. 892; Karl Llewellyn, *The Bramble Bush*.

An element of difficulty enters into the determination of the *ratio decidendi* when several reasons are given for the decision. When the same judge gives several reasons, each is *ratio decidendi* (a), but when one of the reasons is stated in a merely hypothetical way ("If it were necessary to decide the further point, I should be inclined to say that . . ."), it is merely *obiter dictum*. The position when the members of the court give different reasons but agree in the result raises problems too complex to be considered here (b).

§ 63. The Sources of Judicial Principles

Whence, then, do the courts derive those new principles, or *rationes decidendi*, by which they supplement the existing law? They are in truth nothing else than the principles of natural justice, practical expediency, and common sense. Judges are appointed to administer justice—justice according to law, so far as the law extends, but so far as there is no law, then justice according to nature. Where the civil law is deficient, the law of nature takes its place, and in so doing puts on its character also. But the rules of natural justice are not always such that any man may know them, and the light of nature is often but an uncertain guide. Instead of trusting to their own unguided instincts in formulating the rules of right and reason, the courts are therefore wisely in the habit of seeking guidance and assistance elsewhere. In establishing new principles, they willingly submit themselves to various persuasive influences which, though destitute of legal authority, have a good claim to respect and consideration. They accept a principle, for example, because they find it already embodied in some system of foreign law. For since it is so sanctioned and authenticated, it is presumably a just and reasonable one. In like manner the courts give credence to persuasive precedents, to judicial *dicta*, to the opinions of text-writers, and to any other forms of ethical or juridical doctrine which seem good to them. There is, however, one source of judicial

(a) *Jacobs v. L. C. C.*, [1950] A. C. 361, at 369; but see Allen, *op. cit.*, 248 ff.

(b) See Paton and Sawyer in (1947), 63 L. Q. R. 461; J. L. Montrose in (1949), 2 *Annual Law Review of University of Western Australia*, 301, 504; (1955) 71 L. Q. R. 24 ff., 196.

principles which is of special importance, and calls for special notice. This is the analogy of pre-existing law. New rules are very often merely analogical extensions of the old. The courts seek as far as possible to make the new law the embodiment and expression of the spirit of the old—of the *ratio juris*, as the Romans called it. The whole thereby becomes a single and self-consistent body of legal doctrine, containing within itself an element of unity and of harmonious development. At the same time it must be remembered that analogy is lawfully followed only as a guide to the rules of natural justice. It has no independent claim to recognition. Wherever justice so requires, it is the duty of the courts, in making new law, to depart from the *ratio juris antiqui*, rather than servilely to follow it.

It is surprising how seldom we find in judicial utterances any explicit recognition of the fact that in deciding questions on principle, the courts are in reality searching out the rules and requirements of natural justice and public policy. The measure of the prevalence of such ethical over purely technical considerations is the measure in which case law develops into a rational and tolerable system as opposed to an unreasoned product of authority and routine. Yet the official utterances of the law contain no adequate acknowledgment of this dependence on ethical influences. "The very considerations", it has been well said, "which judges most rarely mention, and always with an apology, are the secret root from which the law draws all the juices of life" (c). The chief reason of this peculiarity is doubtless to be found in the fictitious declaratory theory of precedent, and in the forms of judicial expression and reasoning which this theory has made traditional. So long as judges affect to be looking for and declaring old law, they cannot adequately express the principles on which they are in reality making new.

§ 64. Respective Functions of Judges and Juries

The division of judicial functions between judge and jury creates a difficulty in the theory of precedent which requires

(c) Holmes, *The Common Law* (1881) 35. For a more recent treatment of this theme see Cardozo, *The Nature of the Judicial Process* (1921) and *The Growth of the Law* (1924).

some consideration. It is commonly said that all questions of fact are for the jury, and all questions of law for the judge. But we have already seen that original precedents are answers to questions of fact, transforming them for the future into questions of law. Are such precedents, then, made by juries instead of by judges? It is clear that they neither are nor can be. No jury ever answers a question on principle; it gives decisions, but no reasons; it decides *in concreto*, not *in abstracto*. In this respect the judicial action of juries differs fundamentally from that of judges. The latter decide on principle, whenever this is possible; they formulate the *ratio decidendi* which underlies their decision; they strive after the general and the abstract, instead of adhering to the concrete and the individual. Hence it is that the decision of a judge may constitute a precedent, while that of a jury cannot. But in composite tribunals, where the jury decides the facts and the judge the law, how does the judge obtain any opportunity of establishing precedents and creating new law? If the matter is already governed by law, it will of course fall within his province; but if it is not already so governed, is it not a pure question of fact which must be submitted to the jury, to the total destruction of all opportunity of establishing any precedent in respect of it? The truth of the matter is that, although all questions of law are for the judge, it is very far from being true that all questions of fact are for the jury. There are very extensive and important portions of the sphere of fact which fall within the jurisdiction of the judge, and it is within those portions that the law-creating operation of judicial decisions takes place. No jury, for example, is ever asked to interpret a statute or, speaking generally, any other written document. Yet unless there is already some authoritative construction in existence, this is pure matter of fact. Hence that great department of case law which has its origin in the judicial interpretation of statute law. The general rule—consistently acted on, though seldom expressly acknowledged—is that a judge will not submit to a jury any question which he is himself capable of answering *on principle*. Such a question he answers for himself; for since it can be answered on principle, it provides a fit occasion for the establishment of a precedent and a new rule of law. It *ought* to be a matter of law, and can only become what it

ought to be, by being kept from the jury and answered *in abstracto* by the judge. The only questions which go to a jury are those questions of fact which admit of no principle, and are therefore the appropriate subject-matter of those concrete and unreasoned decisions which juries give (*d*).

We have said that this rule, though acted on, is not expressly acknowledged. The reason is that judges are enabled to avoid the acknowledgment through recourse to the declaratory theory of precedent. As between judge and jury this theory is still in full force and effect, although when the rights and privileges of juries are not concerned, the courts are ready enough at the present day to acknowledge the essential truth of the matter. As between judge and jury, questions of fact are withdrawn from the exclusive cognisance of the latter by means of the legal fiction that they are already questions of law. They are treated proleptically as being already that which they are about to become. In a completely developed legal system they would be already true questions of law; the principle for their decision would have been already authoritatively determined. Therefore the judges make bold to deal with them as being already that which they ought to be, and thus the making of the law by way of precedent is prevented from openly infringing upon the rights of juries to decide all questions which have not already been decided by the law.

§ 65. The Value of the Doctrine of Precedent

In recent years the value of the doctrine of precedent has been much debated. Some comments have already been made upon the subject in this and the previous chapter, but a few more general observations will not be out of place. It is necessary to point out that the phrase "the doctrine of precedent" has two meanings. In the first, which may be called the loose meaning, the phrase means merely that precedents are reported, may be cited, and will probably be followed by the courts. This was the doctrine that prevailed in England until the nineteenth century, and it is still the only

(*d*) On the decision by judges of questions of fact under the guise of questions of law, see Thayer, *Preliminary Treatise on the Law of Evidence*, 202, 230, 249.

sense in which a doctrine of precedent prevails on the Continent. In the second, the strict meaning, the phrase means that precedents not only have great authority but must (in certain circumstances) be followed. This was the rule developed during the nineteenth century and completed in some respects during the twentieth. Most of the arguments advanced by supporters of "the doctrine of precedent", such as Holdsworth, will be found to support the doctrine in the loose rather than in the strict meaning, while those who attack it (such as Dr. A. L. Goodhart) attack it in its strict and never in its loose meaning. Thus the two sides are less at variance than would appear on the surface. The real issue is whether the doctrine of precedent should be maintained in its strict sense or whether we should revert to the loose sense. There is no dissatisfaction with the practice of citing cases and of attaching weight to them; the dissatisfaction is with the present practice of treating precedents as absolutely binding.

In favour of the present practice it is said that the practice is necessary to secure the certainty of the law, predictability of decisions being more important than approximation to an ideal; any very unsatisfactory decision can be reversed for the future by statute. To this it may be replied that pressure on Parliamentary time is so great that statutory amendment of the common law on an adequate scale is not to be looked for; also our experience of statutory amendment in the past has not been happy. When Parliament has intervened to rectify the errors of the common law it has almost always done so not by clean reversal, but by introducing exceptions to the common-law rule, or at best by repealing the common-law rule subject to exceptions and qualifications. What is needed, it is submitted, is a power in the judges to set right their own mistakes. Such a power does exist at the moment in some degree, for a High Court judge may refuse to follow another High Court judge, a higher court may overrule a decision in an inferior court, and any court may restrictively distinguish an obnoxious precedent. But the process of overruling is not in itself an adequate solution, for it is possible only for a higher court, and thus involves the litigant in considerable expense. The power of restrictive distinguishing is also unsatisfactory because it leaves the "distinguished" decision standing, and thus in many cases

introduces unnecessary refinements and even illogicalities into the law. Also, the necessity for distinguishing sometimes leads to extraordinary mental gymnastics, as where a court distinguishes a precedent by supposing facts in the precedent that were not stated in the report (e).

It may be repeated that the present rules do not always promote the certainty of legal administration that is claimed for them, for it depends very much upon the strength of the particular judge whether he will restrictively distinguish a decision that is technically binding upon him.

As a compromise between the two opposing views, it is submitted that the strict doctrine should be retained in so far as it binds a court to follow the decisions of superior courts, but that courts should cease to be bound by decisions of courts of co-ordinate jurisdiction. In other words, the Court of Appeal and House of Lords should be given the power possessed by High Court judges to refuse to follow their own previous decisions (f) (g).

SUMMARY

Circumstances destroying the binding force of precedent:

1. Decisions abrogated by statute or expressly or impliedly overruled.
2. (Perhaps) affirmation or reversal on a different point.

(e) See Jennings in (1937), 1 M. L. R. at 123-124.

(f) On the whole question see Goodhart, "Precedent in English and Continental Law" (1934) 50 L. Q. R. 40 (and in book form); Holdsworth, "Case Law", *ibid.* 180; Goodhart, "Case Law: A Short Replication", *ibid.* 196; Allen, "Case Law: An Unwarrantable Intervention" (1935) 51 L. Q. R. 333; Holdsworth, "Precedents in the Eighteenth Century", *ibid.* 441; Lord Macmillan, *ibid.* 587.

(g) On precedent in general, see Allen, *Law in the Making* (3rd ed. 1939) chs. 3-4; Lord Wright, "Precedents" (1943) 8 C. L. J. 118, reprinted from (1942) 4 Univ. of Tor. L. J. 247; Pound, "Common Law and Legislation" (1908) 21 H. L. R. 383; Stone, *Recent Trends in English Precedent* (1945); Winder, "Precedent in Equity" (1941) 57 L. Q. R. 245. For Canadian literature, with special reference to the Canadian rules, see Hodgins, J., "The Authority of English Decisions" (1923) 1 Can. B. R. 470; Mignault, J., "The Authority of Decided Cases" (1925) 3 *ibid.* 1, and note *ibid.* 138; E. K. Williams, "Stare Decisis" (1926) 4 *ibid.* 289, and note *ibid.* 404; notes (1931) 9 *ibid.* 578, (1933) 11 *ibid.* 281, 287, 515; Laird, "The Doctrine of Stare Decisis" (1935) 13 *ibid.* 1, and note *ibid.* 182; notes (1948) 26 *ibid.* 581, (1949) 27 *ibid.* 465, 600; Friedmann in (1953) 31 *ibid.* 723. For Australia see Cowen, "The Binding Effect of English Decisions upon Australian Courts" (1944) 60 L. Q. R. 378. For Scotland, see T. B. Smith, *Judicial Precedent in Scots Law* (1952); for the Republic of Ireland, notes in (1943) 59 L. Q. R. 27, (1953) 69 L. Q. R. 25; for the colonies, Elias in (1955) 18 M. L. R. 356; for the U.S., Gray, *Nature and Sources of Law* (2nd ed. 1921) ch. 10.

3. Ignorance of statute.
4. Inconsistency with earlier decision of a higher court.
5. Inconsistency between earlier decisions of the same rank.
6. Precedents *sub silentio* or not fully argued.
7. Decisions of equally divided courts (except the House of Lords).

Circumstances justifying overruling or refusal to follow :

1. Decision erroneous { Contrary to law.
Unreasonable.
2. Rejection of it not mischievous as unsettling the law.

Effect of lapse of time on precedents.

Rationes decidendi.

The determination of questions on principle and on authority.

Judicial *dicta* contrasted with judicial decisions.

Sources of judicial principles.

Respective functions of judge and jury.

The value of the doctrine of precedent.

1. The loose meaning.
2. The strict meaning.

CHAPTER 9

CUSTOM

§ 66. The Early Importance of Customary Law

ALTHOUGH custom is an important source of law in early times (a), its importance continuously diminishes as the legal system grows. As an instrument of the development of English law in particular, it has now almost ceased to operate, partly because it has to a large extent been superseded by legislation and precedent, and partly because of the stringent limitations imposed by law upon its law-creating efficacy. In earlier times it was otherwise. It was long the received theory of English law that whatever was not the product of legislation had its source in custom. Law was either the written statute law, or the unwritten, common, or customary law. Judicial precedent was not conceived as being itself a legal source of law at all, for it was held to operate only as evidence of those customs from which the common law proceeded. *Lex et consuetudo Angliæ* was the familiar title of our legal system. The common law of the realm and the common custom of the realm were synonymous expressions. It may be confidently assumed, indeed, that this doctrine did not at any time express the substantial truth of the matter, and that from the earliest period of English legal history the common law was in fact to a very large extent created and imposed by the decisions of the royal courts of justice, rather than received by these courts from the established customs of the community. However this may be, the identification of the common law with customary law remained the accepted doctrine long after it had

(a) See Vinogradoff, "The Problem of Customary Law," *Collected Papers*, II, 410; Pollock, note "B" to his edition of Maine's *Ancient Law*; Allen, *Law in the Making* (5th ed.) 61 ff.; W. G. Sumner, *Folkways* (1906); E. Westermarck, *Origin and Development of Moral Ideas* (1907); and particularly A. S. Diamond, *The Evolution of Law and Order* (1951). Custom is still of great importance in India. See S. Roy, *Customs and Customary Law in British India* (1911) 22 ff.; L. J. Robertson, "The Judicial Recognition of Customs in India" (1922) 4 J. C. L. (3rd ser.) 218. See also A. Vandenbosch, "Customary Law in the Dutch East Indies" (1932) 14 J. C. L. (3rd ser.) 30. For the importance of custom (legal and non-legal) in modern society, see Ehrlich, *Fundamental Principles of the Sociology of Law* (tr. Moll, 1936).

ceased to retain any semblance of truth. For some centuries past the true sources of the bulk of our law have been statute and precedent, not statute and custom, and the common law is essentially judge-made law, not customary law (*b*). Yet we find Hale in the seventeenth century, and Blackstone in the eighteenth, laying down the older doctrine as still valid (*bb*). In the words of Blackstone, "The municipal law of England . . . may with sufficient propriety be divided into two kinds; the *lex non scripta*, the unwritten or common law; and the *lex scripta*, the written or statute law. The *lex non scripta*, or unwritten law, includes not only general customs, or the common law properly so called, but also the particular customs of certain parts of the kingdom; and likewise those particular laws that are by custom observed only in certain courts and jurisdictions". Such language is an echo of the past, not an accurate account of the facts of the present day. Nevertheless, even now custom has not wholly lost its law-creating efficacy. It is still to be accounted one of the legal sources of the law of England, along with legislation and precedent, but far below them in importance (*c*).

§ 67. Reasons for the Reception of Customary Law

There is more than one reason for thus attributing to custom the force of law. In the first place, custom is frequently the embodiment of those principles which have commended themselves to the national conscience as principles of justice and public utility. The fact that any rule has already the sanction of custom, raises a presumption that it deserves to obtain the

(*b*) This does not mean that the medieval common law was the result of a system of precedent. It was, however, the result of the practice of the courts—*mos iudicium*. See above, p. 163, n. (*b*).

(*bb*) Hale, *History of the Common Law*, ch. II.; Blackstone, *Commentaries*, I. 63.

(*c*) This relation between law and custom is not confined to English jurisprudence, but is a familiar feature of legal systems in general, more especially in the earlier stages of their development. In Roman law we find the same relation recognised between *mos* and *jus*, *lex* and *consuetudo*. In Justinian's Institutes it is said (I. 2. 9): *Ex non scripto jus venit, quod usus comprobavit; nam diuturni mores, consensu utentium comprobati, legem imitantur*. Similarly in the Digest (I. 3. 32): *Inveterata consuetudo pro lege non immerito custoditur, et hoc est jus quod dicitur moribus constitutum*. So in D. 23. 2. 8.: *Hoc jus moribus non legibus introductum est*. So Gaius at the commencement of his Institutes: *Omnes populi qui legibus et moribus reguntur*.

sanction of law also. *Via trita via tuta*. Speaking generally, it is well that courts of justice, in seeking for those rules of right which it is their duty to administer, should be content to accept those which have already in their favour the prestige and authority of long acceptance, rather than attempt the more dangerous task of fashioning a set of rules for themselves by the light of nature. The national conscience may well be accepted by the courts as an authoritative guide; and of this conscience national custom is the external and visible sign.

Custom is to society what law is to the state. Each is the expression and realisation, to the measure of men's insight and ability, of the principles of right and justice. The law embodies those principles as they commend themselves to the incorporate community in the exercise of its sovereign power. Custom embodies them as acknowledged and approved, not by the power of the state, but by the public opinion of the society at large. Nothing, therefore, is more natural than that, when the state begins to evolve out of the society, the law of the state should in respect of its material contents be in great part modelled upon, and coincident with, the customs of the society. When the state takes up its function of administering justice, it accepts as valid the rules of right already accepted by the society of which it is itself a product, and it finds those principles already realised in the customs of the realm. In this connection it must be remembered that at first the state is so weak that its judicial authority depends partly, at least, on voluntary submission, whilst custom is so closely linked with religion and taboo that any departure from it is almost unthinkable. This influence of custom upon law, however, is characteristic rather of the beginnings of the legal system than of its mature growth. When the state has grown to its full strength and stature, it acquires more self-confidence, and seeks to conform national usage to the law, rather than the law to national usage. Its ambition is then to be the source not merely of the form, but of the matter of the law also. But in earlier times it contents itself with conferring the form and nature of law upon the material contents supplied to it by custom.

A second ground of the law-creative efficacy of custom is to be found in the fact that the existence of an established

usage is the basis of a rational expectation of its continuance in the future. Justice demands that, unless there is good reason to the contrary, men's rational expectations shall, so far as possible, be fulfilled rather than frustrated. Even if customs are not ideally just and reasonable, even if it can be shown that the national conscience has gone astray in establishing them, even if better rules might be formulated and enforced by the wisdom of the judicature, it may yet be wise to accept them as they are, rather than to disappoint the expectations which are based upon established practice.

Considerations such as these are sufficient, even in modern times and in fully developed legal systems, to induce the legislature on due occasion to give express statutory authority to bodies of national or local custom. Thus in California the customs developed on the gold-fields for the regulation of the mining industry were given the authority of law by the legislature (d). Similarly in New Zealand, when English government and English law were introduced on the founding of the Colony, the legislature thought fit that the aboriginal Maoris should to a large extent continue to live by their own tribal customs, and to this extent those customs were given by statute, and still retain, the authority of law. By the Native Rights Act, 1865, it was enacted that "every title to or interest in land over which the native title has not been extinguished, shall be determined according to the ancient custom and usage of the Maori people, so far as the same can be ascertained".

§ 68. Kinds of Custom

All custom which has the force of law is of two kinds, which are essentially distinct in their mode of operation. The first kind consists of custom which is operative *per se* as a binding rule of law, independently of any agreement on the part of those subject to it. The second kind consists of custom which operates only indirectly through the medium of agreements whereby it is accepted and adopted in individual instances as conventional law between the parties.

These two kinds of customs may be conveniently distinguished as legal and conventional. A legal custom is one whose legal

(d) Gray, *The Nature and Sources of the Law* (2nd ed. 1921) 296.

authority is absolute—one which in itself and *proprio vigore* possesses the force of law. A conventional custom is one whose authority is conditional on its acceptance and incorporation in agreements between the parties to be bound by it.

In the language of English law the term custom is more commonly confined to legal custom exclusively, while conventional custom is distinguished as usage. The distinction so drawn, however, between the terms custom and usage, which in popular speech are synonymous, is by no means universally observed even by lawyers. In any talk of custom, therefore, it is always carefully to be noticed whether the matter referred to is legal custom or conventional custom—custom *stricto sensu* or usage. Occasional failure to appreciate and bear in mind the essential nature of this distinction has been responsible for a good deal that is obscure and difficult in the history and theory of customary law.

Legal custom is itself of two kinds, being either local custom, prevalent and having the force of law in a particular locality only, or the general custom of the realm, in force as law throughout all England. We shall consider in their order, therefore, the three classes of custom, namely (1) conventional custom or usage, (2) local custom, and (3) the general custom of the realm.

§ 69. Conventional Custom

A usage or conventional custom is, as has been indicated, an established practice which is legally binding, not because of any legal authority independently possessed by it, but because it has been expressly or impliedly incorporated in a contract between the parties concerned. Where two men enter into an agreement, they do not commonly set out in words, whether oral or written, the whole terms of that agreement. Most agreements consist of two parts, namely, the terms expressed and the terms implied. The larger part of most contracts is implied rather than expressed. The expressed terms are merely the framework or skeleton which has to be filled up and transformed into a complete and workable contract by the addition of further terms supplied by implication. It is for the law to supply those implied terms in supplement of the terms expressed by the parties, and a considerable portion of the legal system consists of rules for this purpose—rules, that is to say, for the completion and interpretation of contracts imperfectly and partially expressed by the parties. On a sale of goods, for

example, the only expressed terms may be that A will sell his black horse to B for £20; but the additional implied terms supplied by the law take up a considerable portion of the statute known as the Sale of Goods Act. The law, in thus supplementing the expressed intentions of the parties, endeavours to ascertain and conform to their presumed intentions—the intentions which they presumably would have expressed in their contract had the matter been called to their attention and expressly dealt with. This presumed intention is gathered from two chief sources—first, from that which is reasonable, and second, from that which is customary. We are here concerned with the latter consideration only. The law presumes that where persons enter into a contract in any matter in respect of which there exists some established usage, they intend to contract with reference to that usage, and to incorporate it as a term of the contract in the absence of any expressed indication of a contrary intention. He who makes a contract in any particular trade, or in any particular market, is presumed to intend to contract in accordance with the established usages of that trade or market, and he is bound by those usages accordingly as part of his contract (*dd*). Similarly, where there exist in any locality established usages of agriculture as between landlord and tenant, he who grants or takes a lease of land in that locality is presumed to have accepted these usages as impliedly incorporated in the lease. *In contractibus tacite veniunt ea quae sunt moris et consuetudinis* (*e*). This legal presumption of the conventional acceptance and incorporation of customary rules has resulted in the development of a considerable body of customary law determining the meaning and effect of contracts. The bulk of the law as to bills of exchange and other negotiable instruments, bills of lading and marine insurance, has originated in this manner as customary law. Law so derived from the conventional custom of merchants is known as the law merchant.

Law so originating passes normally through three successive historical stages. In the first stage, the existence of the usage

(*dd*) But as a general rule both parties must belong to the trade or business before the implication will be made: *Eastern Counties Building Soc. v. Russell*, [1947] 1 All E. R. 500, at 504, *affd.*, [1947] 2 All E. R. 734 (C. A.).

(*e*) Pothier, *Obligations*, § 95.

is a question of fact to be determined by the jury upon evidence in the particular case in which it arises. In the old days, for example, a plaintiff suing on a bill of exchange pleaded that the bill had been drawn and accepted in accordance with the custom of merchants—*secundum consuetudinem mercatorum*—and set out the nature and meaning of that custom, and at the trial mercantile witnesses were called to prove it (f). The second stage of development is reached when the courts take judicial notice of the custom in question, so that it no longer requires to be specially pleaded or proved in the particular case. It has already been sufficiently proved in previous cases, and has received the authority of the precedents established by those earlier cases. The law derived from that custom has accordingly passed out of its earlier stage as customary law pure and simple, and has become case law, having its immediate source in precedent, though its ulterior and original source was custom. "When a general usage has been judicially ascertained and established, it becomes a part of the law merchant, which courts of justice are bound to know and recognise" (g). The third and last stage of historical development which is or may be reached, is that in which the law which has thus its original source in conventional custom, and its secondary source in precedent, is embodied in a statute and so assumes its ultimate form as enacted law. The law of bills of exchange, and the law of marine insurance, which were both in their origin part of the customary law merchant, have now completed this normal course of legal development, and have become *jus scriptum* embodied in the Bills of Exchange Act and the Marine Insurance Act.

It remains to consider the legal requirements which must be fulfilled by a usage or conventional custom before it can thus serve as a source of law and of legal rights and obligations. In the first place, what must be its duration? Must it be an ancient immemorial custom, or is recent custom equally effective? When we come later to deal with legal as opposed to conventional custom, we shall see that the law imposes on the former the requirement of immemorial antiquity. A legal custom—a custom *stricto sensu*—must have endured from time

(f) Holdsworth, *H. E. L.*, V. 144 ff., VIII. 159 ff.

(g) *Brandao v. Barnett* (1846), 12 Cl. & F., 787, 805, per Lord Campbell.

whereof there is no memory. In the case of conventional custom, however, there is no such requirement. No specified duration is legally necessary, nor is any distinction drawn between ancient and modern custom. All that is necessary is that in point of duration the custom shall be so well established, and therefore so notorious, as to render reasonable the legal presumption that it is impliedly incorporated in agreements made in respect of the subject-matter (*h*). In practice, however, it is hard to establish the existence of a new conventional custom that is universally recognised as binding in the particular trade or locality. The difficulty relates to the evidence required to be called. "The witness", says one judge, "who seeks to prove the custom will be asked to cite instances in which a party has submitted willy-nilly to what is said to be the customary mode of performance or the customary claim, thereby recognising the binding force of the custom. If he cites what he thinks is an instance, he will be asked for the terms of the relevant contract, which he rarely knows; for unless it can be shown that a party has submitted to something beyond the express or implied requirements of his contract, he cannot be said to have paid tribute to the custom. Universality is a stiff test too; one witness of repute who says he has never recognised the custom may be fatal" (*i*).

What must be the extent of a conventional custom? Must it be a general custom of the realm, or is it enough that it should be local merely? We shall see later that a legal custom may be either local or general. So, also, may a conventional custom. It may prevail throughout the realm (and even beyond the realm), as in the case of mercantile customs as to negotiable instruments, or it may be limited to particular localities, as in the case of local usages of agriculture and tenancy. Both classes are sources of law and rights within the scope of their application. Local usages, however, cannot, like general usages, become part of the general or common law of the land.

(*h*) Thus in the early case of *Noble v. Kennoway* (1780), 2 Douglass 510, where the usage of the fishing trade on the coasts of Newfoundland was implied by law as incorporated in and governing a contract of marine insurance, an objection based on the recent origin of the custom was overruled, and Lord Mansfield distinguished in this respect a conventional from a legal custom. "It is no matter if the usage has only been for a year . . . The point is not analogous to a question concerning a common law custom."

(*i*) Sir Patrick Devlin in (1951), 14 M. L. R., at 251; cf. *ibid.*, 264-266.

How far can conventional custom operate as a source of law and rights in conflict with, and in derogation of, the general law of the land? The answer is that it may do so to the same extent as express agreement may, and no further. It operates, like express agreement, within the limits of the maxim *modus et conventio vincunt legem*. Certain parts of the law are absolute, and do not admit of being excluded or modified by the agreement of the parties interested; these parts are equally beyond the operation of conventional custom. Other parts of the law are operative only so far as they are not excluded or modified by agreement; and within these portions of the law conventional custom operates in the same manner as agreement. No rule can be established by a usage which could not be established by an express agreement to the same effect (j).

In one respect, however, the operation of usage seems to be more restricted than that of express agreement. When a general usage has once been received by judicial recognition into the body of the common law, so that it has now its immediate source in judicial precedent as a rule of case law, it appears that the law so constituted cannot be altered by the growth of any later usage in conflict with it. The case law of bills of exchange, for example, had its original source in the customs of merchants, but when once established it is permanent and does not alter with the growth of new and inconsistent usages. If any rule of law so established is to be excluded or modified in any particular case, it must be done by the express agreement of the parties, and not by reliance on any new usage which derogates from the law so constituted. The *consuetudo mercatoria* may make law, but it must for the future conform to the law when once so made (k).

(j) *Crouch v. Crédit Foncier* (1873), L. R. 8 Q. B. 374.

(k) *Edie v. East India Company* (1761), 2 Burr. 1216; *Goodwin v. Roberts* (1875), L. R. 10 Ex. p. 357: "We must by no means be understood as saying that mercantile usage, however extensive, should be allowed to prevail if contrary to positive law, including in the latter such usages as, having been made the subject of legal decision, and having been sanctioned and adopted by the Courts, have become by such adoption part of the common law. . . And we quite agree that this would apply quite as strongly to an attempt to set up a new usage against one which has become settled and adopted by the common law as to one in conflict with the more ancient rules of the common law itself." However, it is perhaps open to argument that the proposition is confined to customary rules that the parties could not affect by express agreement, and does apply to conventional custom. See Chorley, "The Conflict of Law and Commerce" (1932) 48 L. Q. R., at 59-64.

§ 70. Local Custom

We proceed now to the consideration of legal custom as opposed to conventional custom—of custom in the stricter sense as opposed to usage. Such custom is that which is effective as a source of law and legal rights directly and *per se*, and not merely indirectly through the medium of agreement in the manner already explained.

Legal custom is itself of two kinds, being either local custom or the general custom of the realm. The former is that which prevails in some defined locality only, such as a borough or county, and constitutes a source of law for that place only (l). The latter is that which prevails throughout England, and constitutes one of the sources of the common law of the land. The term custom in its narrowest sense means local custom exclusively. The general custom of the realm is distinguished from custom in this sense as the common law itself. We shall deal in the first place with local custom, and thereafter with the general custom of the realm (m).

At the present day local customs consist for the most part of customary rights vested in the inhabitants of a particular place to the use for divers purposes of land held by others in private ownership (n).

In order that a local custom may be valid and operative

(l) *Fitch v. Rawling* (1795), 2 H. Bl. 393. See H. E. Salt, "The Local Ambit of a Custom", in *Cambridge Legal Essays* 279.

(m) The term custom, therefore, has three distinct meanings of various degrees of generality:

- (a) As including both legal and conventional custom;
- (b) As including legal custom only, conventional custom being distinguished as usage;
- (c) As including only one kind of legal custom, namely local custom, as opposed to the general custom of the realm. Thus in *Co. Litt.* 110 b: "Consuetudo is one of the maine triangles of the lawes of England, these lawes being divided into common law, statute law, and custom."

(n) A custom, for example, for the inhabitants of a parish to enter on certain land for the purpose of dancing, games, and recreation, *Hall v. Nottingham* (1875), L. R. 1 Ex. D. 1; a custom for the inhabitants of a township to enter on certain land and take water from a spring there, *Race v. Ward* (1855), 24 L. J. Q. B. 153; a custom for fishermen in a parish to dry their nets on private land within the parish, *Mercer v. Denne*, [1905] 2 Ch. 538. Customs of this class are closely analogous to prescriptive easements and profits à prendre vested in individual persons. Before 1926 there were special customs in some places relating to the descent of land (see *Co. Litt.* 110 b); but these were abolished by the Administration of Estates Act, 1925, s. 45 (1).

as a source of law, it must conform to certain requirements laid down by law. The chief of these are the following:—

1. *Reasonableness*. A custom must be reasonable (o). *Malus usus abolendus est*. The authority of usage is not absolute, but conditional on a certain measure of conformity with justice and public utility. It is not meant by this that the courts are at liberty to disregard a custom whenever they are not satisfied as to its absolute rectitude and wisdom, or whenever they think that a better rule could be formulated in the exercise of their own judgment. This would be to deprive custom of all authority, either absolute or conditional. The true rule is, or should be, that a custom, in order to be deprived of legal efficacy, must be so obviously and seriously repugnant to right and reason, that to enforce it as law would do more mischief than that which would result from the overturning of the expectations and arrangements based on its presumed continuance and legal validity (p). We have already seen how the authority of judicial precedents is, in general, similarly conditional rather than absolute; a precedent which is plainly and seriously unreasonable may be overruled instead of followed. We are told in the old books that a similar rule obtains in respect of the authority of Acts of Parliament themselves. It was once held to be good law, that an unreasonable Act of Parliament was void (q). This, indeed, is no longer so, for the law creating authority of Parliament is absolute. Certain forms of subordinate legislation, however, are still subject to the rule in question; an unreasonable by-law, for example, is as void and unauthoritative as an unreasonable custom or precedent.

2. *Conformity with statute law*. In the second place, a custom must not be contrary to an Act of Parliament. In the

(o) Co. Litt. 141 a; *The Case of Tanistry* (1608), Dav. Rep. p. 32; Blackstone, I. 77; *Walstanton, Ltd. v. Newcastle-under-Lyme Corpn.*, [1940] A. C. 860.

(p) It must be admitted, however, that the judges have not always behaved so generously towards customs as this mode of stating the rule would require. In *Johnson v. Clark*, [1908] 1 Ch. 303, Parker, J., went so far as to hold unreasonable a custom whereby a married woman could dispose of her realty without her separate examination and acknowledgment. It is worth noting that this "unreasonable" abolition of the separate examination and acknowledgment has since been effected by the legislature: *Law of Property Act*, 1925, s. 167. For a criticism of the requirements of "reasonableness" see Bentham, *Comment on the Commentaries* (ed. Everett, 1928) 227-30.

(q) *Supra*, § 43, n. (g).

words of Coke, "No custom or prescription can take away the force of an Act of Parliament" (r). By no length of desuetude can a statute become obsolete and inoperative in law, and by no length of contrary usage can its provisions be modified in the smallest particular. The common law will yield to immemorial local custom, but the enacted law stands for ever (s).

It must not be supposed that this rule is one of necessity, derived by logical inference from the nature of things. It is nothing more than a positive principle of the law of England, and a different rule was adopted by Roman law and by the various Continental systems derived from it (t). There the recognised maxim is *lex posterior derogat priori*. The latter rule prevails over the earlier, regardless of their respective origins. Legislation has no inherent superiority in this respect over custom. If the enacted law comes first, it can be repealed or modified by later custom; if the customary law is the earlier, it can be similarly dealt with by later enacted law. "If", says Savigny (u), "we consider customs and statutes with respect to their legal efficacy, we must put them on the same level. Customary law may complete, modify, or repeal a statute; it may create a new rule, and substitute it for the statutory rule which it has abolished." So Windscheid (a): "The power of customary law is equal to that of statutory law. It may, therefore, not merely supplement, but also derogate from the existing law. And this is true, not merely of rules of customary law *inter se*, but also of the relations of customary to statute law" (b).

3. *Observance as of right.* The third requisite of the operation of a custom as a source of law is that it must have

(r) Co. Litt. 113 a.

(s) Blackstone, I. 76.

(t) Quare rectissime etiam illud receptum est, ut leges non solum suffragio legislatoris, sed etiam tacito consensu omnium per desuetudinem abrogentur. D. I. 3. 32. 1. Considerable doubt, however, exists as to the true relation between custom and statute in Roman law, owing to a passage in the Code (C. 8. 53. 2.) which, if read literally, conflicts with the doctrine expressed in the Digest, and declares custom to be destitute of legal effect if contrary to statute law. The ingenuity of German jurists has suggested numerous solutions of the apparent inconsistency, but with no convincing result. See Savigny, *System*, Vol. I, Appendix II; Vangerow, *Pandekten* I, Sect. 16; Dernburg, *Pandekten* I, Sect. 28.

(u) *System*, Sect. 18.

(a) *Pandektenrecht*, Vol. I, Sect. 18.

(b) For the similar doctrine of Scottish law see Erskine, *Institutes*, I. 19.

been observed as of right. This does not mean that the custom must be acquiesced in as a matter of moral right. Merehet, for instance (a fine due to the lord by a tenant in villeinage for leave to give his daughter in marriage), was a well-established custom of many if not all manors, but was always regarded as odious, not only by the tenants, but also by the Church. What the rule means is that the custom must have been followed openly, without the necessity for recourse to force, and without the permission of those adversely affected by the custom being regarded as necessary. These requisites are expressed in the form of the rule that the user must be *nec vi nec clam nec precario*—not by force, nor by stealth, nor at will.

4. *Immemorial antiquity.* The fourth and last requirement of a legal custom relates to the length of time during which it has been established. Such custom, to have the force of law, must be immemorial. It must have existed for so long a time that, in the language of the law, "the memory of man runneth not to the contrary". Recent or modern custom is of no account. In the words of Littleton (c): "No custom is to be allowed, but such custom as hath been used by title of prescription, that is to say from time out of mind". This idea of immemorial custom was derived by the law of England from the canon law, and by the canon law from the civil law. Time immemorial means in the civil and canon law and in the systems derived therefrom, and originally meant in England also, time so remote that no living man can remember it or give evidence concerning it. Custom was immemorial when its origin was so ancient that the beginning of it was beyond human memory, so that no testimony was available as to a time when it did not exist (d). In the course of the development of English law, however, a singular change took place in the meaning of this expression. The limit of human memory ceased to be a

(c) Co. Litt. 113 a.

(d) Both in English and foreign law, however, the time of memory was extended by the allowance of tradition within defined limits. A witness might testify not only to that which he had himself seen, but to that which he had been told by others who spoke of their own knowledge. D. 22. 3. 28. Bracton f. 373 a, 318 b. By French law time of memory was held to extend for one hundred years. Pothier, *De la Prescription*, secta. 278—288. For a further discussion of the history of the rule, see the 7th, 8th or 9th edition of this work, § 68.

question of fact and was determined by a curious rule of law which still remains in force. Time of legal memory became distinguished from time of human memory. By an analogical extension of the rule of limitation imposed on actions for the recovery of land by the Statute of Westminster passed in the year 1275, it became an established legal principle that the time of memory reached back as far as the accession of Richard I in 1189, and no further. From that day to this the law has remained unaltered. The discordance between the memory of man as it is in fact, and as it is in law, has steadily grown with the lapse of years, so that at the present day the law of England imputes to living men a faculty of remembrance extending back for seven centuries (e).

The rule, therefore, that a custom is invalid unless immemorial means in practice this: that if he who disputes its validity can prove its non-existence at any time between the present day and the twelfth century, it will not receive legal recognition. Thus in the year 1892 a claim by customs to erect stalls for hiring servants at the statute sessions was defeated in the Court of King's Bench by showing that such sessions were first introduced by the Statute of Labourers in the reign of Edward III, and that the custom therefore could not be immemorial as having existed since the reign of Richard Cœur de Lion (f). It is not necessary, however, for the upholder of a custom to prove affirmatively that it has existed during the whole period of legal memory. If he can prove that it has existed for a substantial period, such as the time of actual human memory, this will be sufficient to raise a presumption of

(e) The statute of Westminster I, c. 39, imposed a limitation upon actions for the recovery of land. It provided that no such action should lie, unless the claimant or his predecessor in title had had possession of the land claimed at some time subsequent to the accession of Richard I. The original common law rule of limitation for such actions was no other than the rule as to time immemorial. At common law the claimant had to prove his title and his seisin by the testimony of living men; therefore he or his predecessors must have been in possession within time of human memory. The enactment in question was accordingly construed as laying down a statutory definition of the term time of memory, and this definition was accepted by the courts as valid in all departments of the law in which the idea of time immemorial was relevant. See Blackstone II. 31; Co. Litt. 113 a. The Statute of Quo Warranto, 18 Edw. I, stat. 2, recognised the possession of franchises from the accession of Richard I, as a good prescriptive title. See further Holdsworth, *H. E. L.* III. 166, VII 343-5.

(f) *Simpson v. Wells* (1872), L. R. 7 Q. B. 214.

immemorial antiquity, which must be rebutted by him who disputes it (g).

It is not difficult to understand the motives which induced the law to impose this stringent limitation upon the efficacy of customs. It was designed in the interests of a uniform system of common law for the whole realm. Had all manner of recent customs been recognised as having the force of local law, the establishment and maintenance of a system of common law would have been rendered impossible. Customary laws and customary rights, infinitely various and divergent, would have grown up so luxuriantly as to have choked that uniform system of law and rights which it was the purpose of the royal courts of justice to establish and administer throughout the realm (h).

§ 71. Custom and Prescription

The relation between custom and prescription is such as to demand attention here, although the theory of the latter will receive further consideration in another place. Custom is long practice operating as a source of law; prescription is long practice operating as a source of rights. That all the lands in a certain borough have from time immemorial, on the death of an owner intestate, descended to his youngest son, is a custom, and is the source of a rule of special and customary law excluding in that borough the common law of primogeniture. But that John Styles, the owner of a certain farm, and all his predecessors in title, from time immemorial have used a way over the adjoining farm, is a prescription, and is the source of a prescriptive right of way vested in John Styles.

Regarded historically, the law of prescription is merely a branch of the law of custom. A prescription was originally conceived as a

(g) *R. v. Jolliffe* (1823), 2 B. & C. 54; *Bryant v. Foot* (1868), L. R. 3 Q. B. 497; *Lawrence v. Hitch* (1868), L. R. 3 Q. B. 521; Allen, *op. cit.* 128.

(h) For a discussion of these requirements for local custom see Allen, *Law in the Making* (5th ed.), 123 ff. Sir Carleton Allen seems to make light of the requirement of antiquity, saying that it is only one of "various modes of weighing the evidence for and against the existence of alleged customs". He adds: "A mere habit, practice, or fashion which has existed for a number of years nobody supposes to be *ipso facto* an obligatory custom: antiquity is the only reliable proof of resistance to the changing conditions of different ages" (p. 127). This remark, as applied to the extraordinary length of time demanded by English law, seems unconvincing. The learned author also seems unduly to belittle the requirement of reasonableness. Some of the cases on unreasonableness he prefers to regard as turning on a requirement that a custom should not be contrary to the "fundamental" rules of the common law. But the question what rules of the common law are "fundamental" is for the judge to decide, and in its practical working this latter requirement seems to be not a separate requirement but only a species of, or alternative statement of, the requirement of reasonableness.

personal custom, that is to say, a custom limited to a particular person and his ancestors or predecessors in title. It was distinguished from a local custom, which was limited to an individual place, not to an individual person. Local and personal customs were classed as the two species of *particular* customs, and as together opposed to the general customs of the realm. Coke distinguishes as follows between custom (i.e., local custom) and prescription (i): "In the common law, a prescription which is personal is for the most part applied to persons, being made in the name of a certain person and of his ancestors, or those whose estate he hath; or in bodies politique or corporate and their predecessors. . . . And a custome, which is local, is alleged in no person, but layd within some mannor or other place."

Since prescription and custom were thus regarded as two species of the same thing, we find, as might be expected, that they are originally governed by essentially similar rules of law. The requisites of a valid prescription were in essence the same as those of a valid custom. Both must be reasonable, both must be immemorial, both must be consistent with statute law, and so on. It was only by a process of gradual differentiation, and by the later recognition of other forms of prescription not known to the early law, that the difference between the creation of customary law and the creation of prescriptive rights has been brought clearly into view. In the case of custom, for example, the old rule as to time immemorial still subsists, but in the case of prescription it has been superseded to some extent by the fiction of lost modern grant (k) and to a much greater extent by the statutory rules contained in that most unfortunate specimen of legislative skill, the Prescription Act. A prescriptive right to light, for instance, is now finally acquired by enjoyment for twenty years. User during this period is now an absolute title, instead of, as at common law, merely evidence of user during time of memory. Prescription at common law is, however, still possible if the statutory rules are of no assistance.

§ 72. The General Custom of the Realm

As already indicated legal custom is of two kinds, being either local custom in particular portions of the realm, or general custom prevailing through the realm at large. The first of these has now been sufficiently considered, and it remains to deal with the second. It has been already said, but must be here repeated, that though in modern times the general law of England has its source in legislation and precedent and consists accordingly of enacted law and case law, the earlier doctrine was that the true

(i) Co. Litt. 113 b.

(k) Holdsworth, *H. E. L.* VII. 345 ff.; *Hulbert v. Dale*, [1909] 2 Ch. 570; *Foley's Charity Trustees v. Dudley*, [1910] 1 K. B. 317.

sources were statutes and the general customs of the realm, and that the law of England, save so far as statutory, was in its true nature customary. English law, like Roman law, was conceived as being *legibus et moribus constitutum*. This was set forth by Blackstone as late as the latter part of the eighteenth century as the authentic doctrine of our law. He says (l): "The *lex non scripta*, or unwritten law, includes not only general customs, or the common law properly so called, but also the particular customs of certain parts of the kingdom". Such language, although no longer true in substance, was a correct expression of the established tradition of English law. In the royal writs by which from the earliest days actions were commenced in the King's courts, the wrongs for which the plaintiff sought redress were alleged to have been committed *contra legem et consuetudinem regni nostri et contra pacem nostram* (m). In the law reports of the reign of Henry IV we find it said (n): "The common law of the realm is the common custom of the realm". So in the reign of Edward IV (o): "A custom which runs through the whole land is the common law". So the King's judges were sworn to execute justice "according to the law and custom of England" (p). So in much later days we find the same doctrine judicially recognised. "Such a custom", says Tindal, C.J. (q), "existing beyond the time of legal memory and extending over the whole realm, is no other than the common law of England." So it is said by Best, J. (r): "The practice of a particular place is called a custom. A general immemorial practice through the realm is the common law."

No doubt this traditional doctrine did in its origin contain a substantial measure of the truth. Doubtless when, in the earliest days of our law, the King's courts set out about their business of enforcing the King's peace and the King's justice

(l) *Commentaries*, I. 63.

(m) See, for example, in Fitzherbert's *Natura Brevium*, 90, the writ for a wrongful distress in the king's highway: "Quare bona et catalla ipsius A in regia via cepit . . . contra legem et consuetudinem regni nostri et contra pacem nostram".

(n) Y. B. 2 H. IV. 18.

(o) Y. B. 8 Edw. IV. 18, 19. *Blundell v. Catterall* (1821), 5 B. & Ald. p. 297.

(p) 12 Co. Rep. 64.

(q) *Veley v. Burder* (1841), 12 Ad. & El. 265, 302.

(r) *Blundell v. Catterall* (1821), 5 B. & Ald. 268, 279.

throughout his realm of England, the legal system developed by those courts was largely modelled upon the customs which they found already established there. But doubtless also much of the law so formulated had an entirely different source. While professing to declare and enforce the common custom of the realm, those courts must even in the earliest days have imposed on the realm much law which had in truth no warrant in national usage, but was derived from the Civil or Canon Law, or natural reason, or some other *fons juris* which commended itself to the royal judges. And this divergence between the early tradition of English law as *moribus constitutum* and the actual truth of the matter has widened from year to year, until that tradition has no longer any substantial conformity with fact. The common law of England has long since ceased to be customary law and become a body of case law instead.

This conclusion leads us to the consideration of a question of some importance and difficulty. We have seen that a legal custom must, if merely local, be of immemorial antiquity. We have also seen that a conventional custom or usage is not subject to any such requirement, and that modern usages are effective as creating law through the medium of contracts in which they are impliedly incorporated. What shall be said in this respect of the general customs of the realm? In order to operate as legal custom, giving rise to law *proprio vigore* and not merely through the medium of agreement, must such a general custom be immemorial, or is a modern or recent custom equally effective to this end?

On this question there is a direct conflict of judicial decision. The particular point in issue was whether the modern custom of merchants could transform bonds and debentures expressed to be payable to bearer into negotiable instruments, contrary to the common law. A negotiable instrument, of which bills of exchange, promissory notes, and cheques are the most important instances, means a security for money which is transferable by delivery so as to confer upon a holder for value in good faith an unimpeachable title, notwithstanding any defect in the title of the last holder from whom he received it. An instrument which is so negotiable conflicts with the common law in two respects. In the first place, a debt is not at common law

transferable at all. In the second place, at common law the transferee of property cannot obtain, save in special cases such as the transfer of current coin, any better title than that possessed by the transferor. He who acquires goods from a thief, even for value and in good faith, cannot hold them as against the true owner. Notwithstanding these rules of the common law, it became recognised in the seventeenth century that bills of exchange were negotiable by virtue of the custom of merchants. In the year 1873, in the case of *Crouch v. Crédit Foncier of England* (s), the question arose in the Court of Queen's Bench whether by recent mercantile custom the same quality of negotiability could be conferred on debentures payable to bearer. It was held by a court of four judges, including Blackburn, J., that this was impossible—that a custom, to produce such an effect, must be an ancient immemorial custom of the realm—and that recent mercantile custom could only operate as a conventional usage, and therefore could not make an instrument negotiable in defiance of the common law. The judgment of the court contains the following passage:

“Incidents which the parties are competent by express stipulation to introduce into their contracts, may be annexed by custom, however recent, provided that it be general, on the ground that they are tacitly incorporated in the contract. If the wording of an instrument is such as to exclude this tacit incorporation, no usage can annex the incident. But where the incident is of such a nature that the parties are not themselves competent to introduce it by express stipulation, no such incident can be annexed by the tacit stipulation arising from usage. It may be so annexed by the ancient law merchant, which forms part of the law, and of which the courts take notice. Nor, if the ancient law merchant annexes the incident, can any modern usage take it away. . . . It is beyond the competency of the parties to a contract by express words to confer on the assignee of that contract a right to sue in his own name. And we also think it beyond the competency of the parties by express stipulation to deprive the assignee of either the contract or the property represented by it, of his right to take back his property from any one to whom a thief may have transferred it, even though the transferee took it *bona fide* and for value. As these stipulations if express, would have been ineffectual, the tacit stipulations implied from custom must be equally ineffectual.”

(s) L. R. 8 Q. B. 374.

In the year 1875, in the case of *Goodwin v. Roberts* (t), the contrary conclusion was reached by the Court of Exchequer Chamber. Cockburn, C.J., delivering the judgment of the court, speaks as follows after referring to the argument that modern custom cannot make an instrument negotiable:

Having given the fullest consideration to this argument we are of opinion that it cannot prevail. It is founded on the view that the law merchant thus referred to is fixed and stereotyped, and incapable of being expanded and enlarged so as to meet the wants and requirements of trade in the varying circumstances of commerce. It is true that the law merchant is sometimes spoken of as a fixed body of law, forming part of the common law, and as it were coeval with it. But as a matter of legal history this view is altogether incorrect. The law merchant thus spoken of with reference to bills of exchange and other negotiable securities, though forming part of the general body of the *lex mercatoria*, is of comparatively recent origin. It is neither more nor less than the usages of merchants and traders in the different departments of trade, ratified by the decisions of courts of law, which, upon such usages being proved before them, have adopted them as settled law with a view to the interests of trade and the public convenience, the court proceeding herein on the well-known principle of law that, with reference to transactions in the different departments of trade, courts of law, in giving effect to the contracts and dealings of the parties, will assume that the latter have dealt with one another on the footing of any custom or usage prevailing generally in the particular department. By this process, what before was usage only, unsanctioned by legal decision, has become engrafted upon or incorporated into the common law, and may thus be said to form part of it."

In view of this striking conflict of judicial opinion, what conclusion is to be drawn on this important question as to the operation of modern custom as a source of law? The conclusion here suggested as correct is that, on the general principle (leaving aside for the time being the particular case of negotiable instruments), the reasoning of Blackburn, J., and the Court of Queen's Bench in the earlier case of *Crouch v. Crédit Foncier of England* is logically unanswerable. The only custom which can operate as a legal custom creating law *proprio vigore* in derogation of the common law, is ancient immemorial custom. It is only *consuetudo praescripta* which can in this manner derogate from the *jus commune*. Modern usage operates only

(t) L. R. 10 Ex. 33.

as conventional custom, and therefore only through the medium of terms implied in a contract between the parties concerned. In strict logic, therefore, modern custom, as pointed out in *Crouch v. Crédit Foncier*, cannot establish any rule which the parties to a contract could not establish as conventional law between themselves. It cannot, therefore, logically be regarded as operating *inter alios* so as to make an instrument negotiable in violation of the principles of the common law. To hold, in opposition to this reasoning, that the modern custom of merchants or of any other class of the community possesses any general authority to derogate from the common law, except so far as express agreement may derogate from it, would be to establish a far-reaching and revolutionary principle of unknown extent and consequence, for which there is no sufficient justification in principle or authority, and which would be inconsistent with the permanence and uniformity of the established law of the land. The very same considerations of public interest which induced our early law to impose upon local custom the requirement of immemorial antiquity are applicable with equal force to the general customs of the realm. The public interest requires that modern custom shall conform to the law, and not that the law shall conform automatically to newly established customs.

A logical application of this general principle would necessitate the conclusion reached in *Crouch v. Crédit Foncier* that modern custom was powerless to make instruments negotiable. The law, however, is not always logical. It is often drawn from the straight course by accidents of historical development. There can be little doubt that, in the special case of negotiable instruments, the authority of the Exchequer Chamber in *Goodwin v. Roberts* will prevail over that of the Queen's Bench in the earlier case, and in fact it has been followed in two later cases (u). Negotiability by modern mercantile usage obtained recognition in the seventeenth century in the case of bills of exchange by an anomalous and illogical application of the doctrine of conventional custom, and it is in all probability too late now to question the application of the rule so recognised

(u) *Bechuanaland Exploration Co. v. London Trading Bank*, [1898] 2 Q. B. 658; *Edelstein v. Schuler*, [1902] 2 K. B. 144.

to all other instruments payable to bearer by the custom of merchants. Almost all the *lex mercatoria* which has been derived from mercantile usage was derived by a correct and logical application of the general principle of conventional custom as already explained. For those rules were for the most part such as might have been established by express agreement, and therefore were equally within the operation of usage. Here and there, however, by an illogical and anomalous extension, the courts allowed, as derived from conventional custom, certain rules which in strictness could only be derived from that immemorial custom which operates *proprio vigore*. One of these cases is the recognition of the rule that the delivery of an instrument can operate as an assignment of the debt represented thereby, in breach of the rule of common law that debts are not assignable. Had the true limits of the operation of conventional custom or usage as formulated in *Crouch v. Crédit Foncier* been strictly adhered to by the courts of the seventeenth century, bills of exchange would not have been recognised as assignable at law. The courts would have maintained the dissentient doctrine of Holt, C.J., that Lombard Street could not to this extent give laws to Westminster Hall (a). After much hesitation and conflict of opinion, however, mercantile custom was ultimately recognised as operative for this purpose. Finally, in *Miller v. Race* (b), in the year 1758, the courts recognised that instruments so transferable by custom were negotiable in the full sense that the transferee acquired a title independent of the title of the transferor. This rule was an analogical extension of the common law rule as to the title to coin of the realm. Bills of exchange and bank notes were recognised as equivalent to coin for this purpose. The rule as to coin was extended to all securities for money which by mercantile usage passed from hand to hand as if they were money. These rules, though anomalous, and though received by an illogical application of the doctrine of commercial usage, must nevertheless be now accepted as an authentic part of the common law. In all probability the law is that all securities for money which by mercantile usage are transferable by delivery.

(a) 6 Mod. 29.

(b) 1 Burr. 452.

are in law negotiable instruments. But the allowance of this exceptional and anomalous rule, as now established by authoritative precedent, does not involve the allowance of the general doctrine, repudiated by *Crouch v. Crédit Foncier*, that modern mercantile usage has any general authority whereby it can add to or derogate from the common law in matters in which express agreement is not similarly competent (c).

Accepting, therefore, as true the proposition that the general custom of the realm must, like local custom, be of immemorial antiquity in order to constitute legal custom having in itself the force of law, it follows that general custom is no longer at the present day a living and operative source of English law. It may be taken as certain that all of the general and immemorial customs of the realm have long since received judicial notice and application by the courts of law, and have therefore been transformed into case law which has its immediate source in precedent. The ancient doctrine that the common law of the realm consists of the common custom of the realm (which was never at the best more than an approximation to the truth), has now been transformed into the sounder doctrine that the common law of the realm consists of the law which has been declared and created by the reported decisions of the superior courts of justice.

SUMMARY

Historical Importance of Customary Law.

Reasons for the recognition of Customary Law.

The Kinds of Custom:

Conventional custom—usage.

Legal custom—custom *stricto sensu*.

Conventional custom or usage.

A source of law determining the interpretation and operation of agreements.

The origin of the law merchant.

The stages of development of such law.

The legal requirements of a valid usage.

(c) It is sometimes argued that *Goodwin v. Roberts* and the cases following it can be justified as cases of conventional custom. This is not so. *Goodwin v. Roberts* recognises recent mercantile custom as conferring rights on someone who is no party to the original contract. Hence it cannot be an example of conventional custom. See further Chorley, "The Conflict of Law and Commerce" (1932) 48 L. Q. R. at 52-5.

Local custom.

A source of local law *proprio vigore*.

Requirements of a valid custom.

1. Reasonableness.
2. Conformity with statute law.
3. Observance as of right.
4. Immemorial antiquity.

Custom distinguished from prescription.

Origin of the rule as to time of memory.

The General Custom of the Realm.

Identified by early tradition with the common law.

Must be of immemorial antiquity.

Modern mercantile usage operates only as conventional custom.

Exception: *Crouch v. Crédit Foncier* and *Goodwin v. Roberts*.

History of the law as to negotiable instruments.

BOOK II
ELEMENTS OF THE LAW

CHAPTER 10

LEGAL RIGHTS

§ 73. Wrongs

WE have seen that the law consists of the principles in accordance with which justice is administered by the state, and that the administration of justice consists in the use of the physical force of the state in enforcing rights and punishing the violation of them. The conception of a right is accordingly one of fundamental significance in legal theory, and the purpose of this chapter is to analyse it, and to distinguish its various applications. Before attempting to define a right, however, it is necessary to define two other terms which are closely connected with it, namely, wrong and duty.

A wrong is simply a wrong act—an act contrary to the rule of right and justice. A synonym of it is injury, in its true and primary sense of *injuria* (that which is contrary to *jus*), though by a modern perversion of meaning this term has acquired the secondary sense of harm or damage (*damnum*) whether rightful or wrongful, and whether inflicted by human agency or not.

Wrongs or injuries are divisible for our present purpose into two kinds, being either moral or legal. A moral or natural wrong is an act which is morally or naturally wrong, being contrary to the rule of natural justice. A legal wrong is an act which is legally wrong, being contrary to the rule of legal justice and a violation of the law. It is an act which is authoritatively determined to be wrong by a rule of law, and is therefore treated as a wrong in and for the purposes of the administration of justice by the state. It may or may not be a moral wrong, and conversely a moral wrong may or may not be a wrong in law. Natural and legal wrongs, like natural and legal justice, form intersecting circles, this discordance between law and fact being partly intentional and partly the result of imperfect historical development.

In all ordinary cases the legal recognition of an act as a wrong involves the suppression or punishment of it by the

physical force of the state, this being the essential purpose for which the judicial action of the state is ordained. We shall see later, however, that such forcible constraint is not an invariable or essential incident, and that there are other possible forms of effective legal recognition. The essence of a legal wrong consists in its recognition as wrong by the law, not in the resulting suppression or punishment of it. A legal wrong is a violation of *justice according to law*.

§ 74. Duties

A duty is an obligatory act, that is to say, is an act the opposite of which would be a wrong. The commission of a wrong is the breach of a duty, and the performance of a duty is the avoidance of a wrong. A synonym of duty is obligation, in its widest sense, although in a special and technical application the latter term denotes one particular kind of duty only, as we shall see later.

Duties, like wrongs, are of two kinds, being either moral or legal. A moral or natural duty is an act the opposite of which would be a moral or natural wrong. A legal duty is an act the opposite of which would be a legal wrong. These two classes are partly coincident and partly distinct. For example, in England there is a legal duty not to sell or have for sale adulterated milk, whether knowingly or otherwise, and without any question of negligence. In so far as the duty is irrespective of knowledge and negligence it is exclusively a legal, not a moral duty. On the other hand, there is no legal duty in England to refrain from offensive curiosity about one's neighbours, even if the satisfaction of it does them harm. Here there is clearly a moral though not a legal duty. Finally, there is both a moral and a legal duty not to steal.

When the law recognises an act as a duty, it commonly enforces the performance of it, or punishes the disregard of it. But this sanction of legal force is in exceptional cases absent. A duty is legal because it is legally recognised, not necessarily because it is legally enforced or sanctioned. There are legal duties of imperfect obligation, as they are called, which will be considered by us at a later stage of our inquiry.

§ 75. Rights

A right is an interest recognised and protected by a rule of right (a). It is any interest, respect for which is a duty, and the disregard of which is a wrong.

All that is right or wrong, just or unjust, is so by reason of its effects upon the interests of mankind (b), that is to say, upon the various elements of human well-being, such as life, liberty, health, reputation, and the uses of material objects. If any act is right or just, it is so because and in so far as it promotes some form of human interest. If any act is wrong or unjust, it is because the interests of men are prejudicially affected by it. Conduct which has no influence upon the interests of any one has no significance either in law or morals.

Every wrong, therefore, involves some interest attacked by it, and every duty involves some interest to which it relates, and for whose protection it exists. The converse, however, is not true. Every attack upon an interest is not a wrong, either in fact or in law, nor is respect for every interest a duty, either legal or natural. Many interests exist *de facto* and not also *de jure*; they receive no recognition or protection from any rule of right. The violation of them is no wrong, and respect for them is no duty. For the interests of men conflict with each other, and it is impossible for all to receive rightful recognition. The rule of justice selects some for protection, and the others are rejected.

The interests which thus receive recognition and protection from the rules of right are called rights. Every man who has a right to any thing has an interest in it also, but he may have an interest without having a right. Whether his interest amounts to a right depends on whether there exists with respect to it a duty imposed upon any other person. In other words, a right is an interest the violation of which is a wrong.

(a) This definition of Salmond's, following Ihering (*Geist d. r. R.* III. p. 339, 4th ed.) is well known, and is perhaps reasonably successful in explaining the word "right" in simple terms. But some critics say that a right cannot be defined in terms of physical, psychological or economic facts: rights and duties are hypostasis of the legal "ought", that is to say, the imperative mood of the law turned into nouns. See Williams, "Language and the Law" (1946), 62 L. Q. R. at 398; cf. H. L. A. Hart in (1954), 70 L. Q. R. at 49.

(b) This statement, to be strictly correct, must be qualified by a reference to the interests of the lower animals. It is unnecessary, however, to complicate the discussion at this stage by any such consideration. The interests and rights of beasts are moral, not legal. See § 21, *supra*, and § 112 *infra*.

Every right corresponds to a rule of right, from which it proceeds, and it is from this source that it derives its name. That I have a *right* to a thing means that it is *right* that I should have that thing. All right is *the* right of him for whose benefit it exists, just as all wrong is *the* wrong of him whose interests are affected by it. In the words of Windscheid (c). "*Das Recht ist sein Recht geworden*".

Rights, like wrongs and duties, are either moral or legal. A moral or natural right is an interest recognised and protected by a rule of natural justice—an interest the violation of which would be a moral wrong, and respect for which is a moral duty. A legal right, on the other hand, is an interest recognised and protected by a rule of legal justice—an interest the violation of which would be a legal wrong done to him whose interest it is, and respect for which is a legal duty. "Rights", says Ihering, "are legally protected interests".

Bentham set the fashion still followed by many of denying that there are any such things as natural rights at all. All rights are legal rights and the creation of the law. "Natural law, natural rights", he says (d), "are two kinds of fictions or metaphors, which play so great a part in books of legislation, that they deserve to be examined by themselves. . . . Rights properly so called are the creatures of law properly so called; real laws give rise to real rights. Natural rights are the creatures of natural law; they are a metaphor which derives its origin from another metaphor." "In many of the cultivated", says Spencer (e), criticising this opinion, "there has been produced a confirmed and indeed contemptuous denial of rights. There are no such things, say they, except such as are conferred by law. Following Bentham, they affirm that the state is the originator of rights, and that apart from it there are no rights."

A complete examination of this opinion would lead us far into the regions of ethical rather than juridical conceptions, and would here be out of place. It is sufficient to make two observations with respect to the matter. In the first place, he who denies the existence of natural *rights* must be prepared at

(c) *Pandekt*. I. sect. 37.

(d) *Theory of Legislation* (Dumont, Hildreth's trans. 8th ed.), pp. 82—84. See also *Works*, III. 217.

(e) *Principles of Ethics*, II. p. 63.

the same time to reject natural or moral *duties* also. Rights and duties are essentially correlative, and if a creditor has no natural right to receive his debt, the debtor is under no moral duty to pay it to him. In the second place, he who rejects natural *rights* must at the same time be prepared to reject natural *right*. He must say with the Greek Sceptics that the distinction between right and wrong, justice and injustice, is unknown in the nature of things, and a matter of human institution merely. If there are no rights save those which the state creates, it logically follows that nothing is right and nothing is wrong save that which the state establishes and declares as such. If natural justice is a truth and not a delusion, the same must be admitted of natural rights (*f*).

It is to be noticed that in order that an interest should become a legal right, it must obtain not merely legal protection, but also legal recognition. The interests of beasts are to some extent protected by the law, inasmuch as cruelty to animals is a criminal offence. But beasts are not for this reason possessed of legal rights. The duty of humanity so enforced is not conceived by the law as a duty *towards* beasts, but merely as a duty *in respect* of them. There is no bond of legal obligation between mankind and them. The only interest and the only right which the law recognises in such a case is the interest and right of society as a whole in the welfare of the animals belonging to it. He who ill-treats a child violates a duty which he owes to the child, and a right which is vested in him. But he who ill-treats a dog breaks no *vinculum juris* between him and it, though he disregards the obligation of humane conduct which he owes to society or the state, and the correlative right which society or the state possesses. Similarly a man's interests may obtain legal protection as against himself, as when drunkenness or suicide is made a crime. But he has not for this reason a legal right against himself. The duty to refrain from drunkenness is not conceived by the law as a duty owing by a man to himself, but as one owing by him to the community. The only interest which receives legal recognition is that of the society in the sobriety of its members.

It should also be noticed that the foregoing statement of the connection between rights and human interests is merely a generalisation based upon Western legal systems, and may be found contradicted in some parts of the world. There is nothing in the nature of things to prevent a legal system from regarding rights as inhering in animals or idols, and in fact some Eastern systems do regard rights as inhering

(*f*) The denial of natural rights is not rendered any more defensible by the recognition of other *positive* rights in addition to the strictly legal rights which are created by the State; for example, rights created by international law, or by the so-called law of public opinion.

in idols (*g*). Such "rights" are concepts used in legal reasoning, the ultimate effect of which is to influence human conduct and affect human interests. The same is true of the corporation aggregate or the Continental *Stiftung* (fund to which rights attach), which are not identified with human beings but whose "rights" ultimately affect the interests of human beings.

Although a legal right is commonly accompanied by the power of instituting legal proceedings for the enforcement of it, this is not invariably the case, and does not pertain to the essence of the conception. As we shall see, there are classes of legal rights which are not enforceable by any legal process; for example, debts barred by prescription or the lapse of time. Just as there are imperfect and unenforceable legal duties, so there are imperfect and unenforceable legal rights.

The question has been debated whether rights and duties are necessarily correlative. According to one view, there can be no right without a corresponding duty, or duty without a corresponding right, any more than there can be a husband without a wife, or a father without a child. For, on this view, every duty must be a duty *towards* some person or persons, in whom therefore, a correlative right is vested. And conversely every right must be a right *against* some person or persons, upon whom, therefore, a correlative duty is imposed. Every right or duty involves a *vinculum juris* or bond of legal obligation, by which two or more persons are bound together. There can therefore be no duty unless there is some one to whom it is due; there can be no right unless there is some one from whom it is claimed; and there can be no wrong unless there is some one who is wronged, that is to say, whose right has been violated (*gg*).

The opposite school distinguishes between *relative* and *absolute* duties, the former being those which have rights corresponding to them, and the latter being those which have none (*h*). This school conceives it to be of the essence of a right that it should be vested in some determinate person, and be enforceable by some form of legal process instituted by him. On this view, duties towards the public at large or towards indeterminate portions of the public have no correlative rights; the duty, for example, to refrain from committing a public nuisance.

The dispute seems to be a typical example of a verbal controversy, which like every other verbal controversy is devoid of practical consequences. We may consider as a test case the situation where trustees hold property on trust for "religious purposes". This is a good charitable trust, even though there is no ascertained beneficiary; and

(*g*) *Infra*, § 111.

(*gg*) This was the view taken by Sir John Salmond (7th ed. § 72).

(*h*) See Austin, *Lect.* 17; Allen, *Legal Duties* (1931), 183-193.

the trustees are under a duty not to use the property for any but religious purposes. To whom, then, is the duty owed? If owed to anybody it must be owed to the public at large, or to some indeterminate portion of the public, or to the state, or to the Crown as representing the state. But it makes no difference whether we say that the duty is owed in one of these ways or not owed to anyone. The law in any event is clear, namely that the duty is enforced by the Attorney-General in his official capacity as a servant of the Crown (i).

76. The Characteristics of a Legal Right

Every legal right has the five following characteristics:—

(1) It is vested in a *person* who may be distinguished as the *owner* of the right, the *subject* of it, the *person entitled*, or the *person of inherence*.

(2) It avails against a *person*, upon whom lies the correlative duty. He may be distinguished as the *person bound*, or as the *subject* of the duty, or as the *person of incidence*.

(3) It obliges the person bound to an *act* or *omission* in favour of the person entitled. This may be termed the *content* of the right.

(4) The act or omission relates to some *thing* (in the widest sense of that word), which may be termed the *object* or *subject-matter* of the right.

(5) Every legal right has a *title*, that is to say, certain facts or events by reason of which the right has become vested in its owner.

Thus if A buys a piece of land from B, A is the subject or owner of the right so acquired. The persons bound by the correlative duty are persons in general, for a right of this kind avails against all the world. The content of the right consists in non-interference with the purchaser's exclusive use of the land. The object or subject-matter of the right is the land.

(i) Professor Radin, who takes in substance the first of the two views above stated, objects to the use of the word "correlatives" to describe rights and duties. Rights and duties, he says, are not correlative because "they are not separate, however closely connected, things at all. They are not even two aspects of the same thing. They are two absolutely equivalent statements of the same thing. . . . B's duty is A's right". (Radin, "A Restatement of Hohfeld", (1938) 51 H. L. R. 1141 at 1150.) This seems to neglect the fact that rights and duties are different legal concepts. From the premise that B's duty is A's right it cannot be inferred that a duty is a right.

And finally the title of the right is the conveyance by which it was acquired from its former owner (*k*).

Every right, therefore, involves a threefold relation in which the owner of it stands:—

(i) It is a right *against* some *person* or persons.

(ii) It is a right *to* some *act* or omission of such person or persons.

(iii) It is a right *over* or *to* some *thing* to which that act or omission relates.

An ownerless right does not appear to be recognised by English law (*l*). This is not because an ownerless right is an impossibility, for there would be nothing to prevent such a concept being used in legal reasoning if lawyers chose to employ it. However, the fact is that they do not appear to do so. Yet although ownerless rights are not recognised, the ownership of a right may be merely contingent or uncertain. The owner of it may be a person indeterminate. He may even be a person who is not yet born, and may therefore never come into existence. Although every right has an owner, it need not have a *vested* and *certain* owner. Thus the fee simple of land may be left by will to a person unborn at the death of the testator. To whom does it belong in the meantime? We cannot say that it belongs to no one for the reasons already indicated. We must say that it is presently owned by the unborn person, but that his ownership is contingent on his birth.

Who is the owner of a debt in the interval between the death of the creditor intestate and the vesting of his estate in an

(*k*) The terms subject and object are used by different writers in a somewhat confusing variety of senses:—

- (a) The subject of a right means the owner of it; the object of a right means the thing in respect of which it exists. This is the usage which has been here adopted: Windscheid, I. sect. 49.
- (b) The subject of a right means its subject-matter (that is to say, its object in the previous sense). The object of a right means the act or omission to which the other party is bound (that is to say, its content): Austin, pp. 47, 712.
- (c) Some writers distinguish between two kinds of subjects—active and passive. The active subject is the person entitled; the passive subject is the person bound: Baudry-Lacantinerie, *Des Biens*, sect. 4.

(*l*) A possible exception is in the case of the parson's glebe land; here there appears to be an "abeyance of seisin" when a parson dies and before his successor is appointed. See Maitland, "The Corporation Sole", in his *Selected Essays*, at pp. 98-9.

administrator? Roman law in such a case personified the inheritance itself, and regarded the rights contingently belonging to the heir as presently vested in the inheritance by virtue of its fictitious personality. According to English law before the Judicature Act, 1873, the personal property of an intestate, in the interval between death and the grant of letters of administration, was deemed to be vested in the Judge of the Court of Probate, and since 1925 both the real and the personal property of an intestate vests in the President of the Probate, Divorce and Admiralty Division (m). But neither the Roman nor the English fiction is essential. There is no difficulty in saying that the estate of an intestate is presently owned by an *incerta persona*, namely by him who is subsequently appointed the administrator of it. The law, however, abhors a temporary vacuum of vested ownership. It prefers to regard all rights as presently vested in some determinate person, subject, if need be, to be divested on the happening of the event on which the title of the contingent owner depends (n).

Certain writers define the object of a right with such narrowness that they are forced to the conclusion that there are some rights which have no objects. They consider that the object of a right means some material thing to which it relates; and it is certainly true that in this sense an object is not an essential element in the conception. Others admit that a person, as well as a material thing, may be the object of a right; as in the case of a husband's right in respect of his wife, or a father's in respect of his children. But they go no further, and consequently deny that the right of reputation, for example, or that of personal liberty, or the right of a patentee, or a copyright, has any object at all.

The truth seems to be, however, that an object is an essential element in the idea of a right. A right without an object in respect of which it exists is as impossible as a right without a subject to whom it belongs. A right is, as we have said, a legally protected interest; and the object of the right is the thing in which the owner has this interest. It is the thing, material or immaterial, which he desires to keep or to obtain, and which he is enabled to keep or to obtain by

(m) Administration of Estates Act, 1925, ss. 9, 55 (1) (xv). The rule for personal property between 1875 and 1925 was in some doubt, but Sir John Salmond suggested that such property vested either in the President of the Probate, Divorce and Admiralty Division, or in the Judges of the High Court collectively. Real property before 1926 vested in the heir. Where an executor is appointed all property vests in him at the moment of the death.

(n) As to ownerless rights, see Windscheid, I. sect. 49, n. 3. Dernburg, *Pandekten*, I. sect. 49.

means of the duty which the law imposes on other persons. We may illustrate this by classifying the chief kinds of rights by reference to their objects.

(1) *Rights over material things.*—In respect of their number and variety, and of the great mass of legal rules relating to them, these are by far the most important of legal rights. Their nature is too familiar to require illustration.

(2) *Rights in respect of one's own person.*—I have a right not to be killed, and the object of this right is my life. I have a right not to be physically injured or assaulted, and the object of this right is my bodily health and integrity. I have a right not to be imprisoned save in due course of law; the object of this right is my personal liberty—that is to say, my power of going where I will. I have a right not to be coerced or deceived into acting contrary to my desires or interests; the object of this right is my ability to fulfil my desires and protect and promote my interests by my own activities.

(3) *The right of reputation.*—In a man's reputation, that is to say, in the good opinion that other persons have of him, he has an interest, just as he has an interest in the money in his pockets. In each case the interest has obtained legal recognition and protection as a right, and in each case the right involves an object in respect of which it exists.

(4) *Rights in respect of domestic relations.*—Every man has an interest and a right in the society, affections, and security of his wife and children. Any person who without just cause interferes with his interest, as by the seduction of his wife or daughter, or by taking away his child, is guilty of a violation of his rights. The wrongdoer has deprived him of something which was his, no less than if he had robbed him of his purse.

(5) *Rights in respect of other rights.*—In many instances a right has another right as its subject-matter. I may have a right against A, that he shall transfer to me some right which is now vested in himself. If I contract with him for the sale of a piece of land to me, I acquire thereby a right against him, that he shall so act as to make me the owner of certain rights now belonging to himself. By the contract I acquire a right to the right of ownership, and when the conveyance has been executed, I acquire the right of ownership itself. Similarly a promise of marriage vests in the woman a right to the rights of a wife; but the marriage vests in her those rights themselves (o).

It is commonly a question of importance, whether the right acquired by an agreement or other transaction is merely a right to a right, or is one having something else than another right as its immediate object. If I buy a ton of coal or a flock of sheep, the right which I

(o) See as to rights to rights, Windscheid, I. sect. 48 a (Rechte an Rechten).

thereby acquire may be of either of these kinds according to circumstances. I may become forthwith the owner of the coal or the sheep; that is to say, my right may have material things as its immediate and direct object. On the other hand, I may acquire merely a right against the seller, that he by delivery or otherwise shall make me the owner of the things so purchased. In this case I acquire a right which has, as its immediate and direct object, nothing more than another right; though its mediate and indirect object may be said, truly enough, to be the material things purchased by me.

(6) *Rights over immaterial property.*—Examples of these are patent-rights, copyrights, trade-marks, and commercial good-will. The object of a patent-right is an invention, that is to say, the *idea* of a new process, instrument, or manufacture. The patentee has a right to the exclusive use of this idea. Similarly the object of literary copyright is the form of literary expression produced by the author of a book. In this he has a valuable interest by reason of the disposition of the public to purchase copies of the book, and by the Copyright Act this interest has been raised to the level of a legal right.

(7) *Rights to services.*—Finally we have to take account of rights vested in one person to the services of another: the rights, for example, which are created by a contract between master and servant, physician and patient, or employer and workman. In all such cases the object of the right is the skill, knowledge, strength, time, and so forth, of the person bound. If I hire a physician, I obtain thereby a right to the use and benefit of his skill and knowledge, just as, when I hire a horse, I acquire a right to the use and benefit of his strength and speed.

Or we may say, if we prefer it, that the object of a right of personal service is the *person* of him who is bound to render it. A man may be the subject-matter of rights as well as the subject of them. His mind and body constitute an instrument which is capable of certain uses, just as a horse or a steam-engine is. In a law which recognises slavery, the man may be bought and sold, just as the horse or steam-engine may. But in our own law this is not so, and the only right that can be acquired over a human being is a temporary and limited right to the use of him, created by voluntary agreement with him—not a permanent and general right of ownership over him.

§ 77. Legal Rights in a Wider Sense of the Term

Hitherto we have confined our attention to legal rights in the strictest and most proper sense. It is in this sense only that we have regarded them as the correlatives of legal duties, and have defined them as the interests which the law protects by imposing duties with respect to them upon other persons (*p*).

(*p*) In this narrow sense the word "right" is by some writers replaced by the word "claim", "demand", "claim-right" or "demand-right". This distinguishes it from a right in the generic sense.

We have now to notice that the term is also used in a wider and laxer sense, to include any legally recognised interest whether it corresponds to a legal duty or not. In this generic sense a legal right may be defined as any advantage or benefit which is in any manner conferred upon a person by a rule of law. Of rights in this sense there are four distinct kinds. These are (1) *Rights* (in the strict sense), (2) *Liberties*, (3) *Powers*, and (4) *Immunities*. Each of these has its correlative, namely (1) *Duties*, (2) *No-rights*, (3) *Subjections* (or *Liabilities*), and (4) *Disabilities*. The four pairs of correlatives may be arranged in the following table, the correlatives being obtained by reading downwards.

Right (<i>stricto sensu</i>)	Liberty (not)	Power	Immunity
Duty	No-right	Subjection	Disability

As we shall see, the four concepts within each rectangle are intimately related to each other, whereas there is not the same relationship between the concepts in the one rectangle and the concepts in the other rectangle. Having already sufficiently considered rights and their correlative duties, we shall now deal briefly with the others (q).

(q) The analysis of rights (in the wide sense) into the four pairs of correlatives exhibited in the above table was a matter of slow evolution, and reached its culmination with the work of Hohfeld. See his *Fundamental Legal Conceptions*, published posthumously in 1923, and reprinting (*inter alia*) essays first published in (1913) 23 Yale L. J. 16 and (1917) 26 Yale L. J. 710. The above table is taken from Hohfeld, with the exceptions that his "privilege" is here called "liberty", and the word "not" added in brackets (this will be explained in § 78), and that his "liability" is here called "subjection" (see § 79 n. (c)); also, Hohfeld did not divide off the eight concepts into the two rectangles. Sir John Salmond, upon whose work Hohfeld built, did not assign a separate place in the scheme to the concept of immunity (the absence of power), and he did not have separate terms for the concepts of no-right and subjection, but called both of them liabilities. For the work of Salmond and the other predecessors of Hohfeld see Pound, "Fifty Years of Jurisprudence", (1937), 50 H. L. R. 557 at 571-2. Most of the literature that has collected around the work of Hohfeld will be found referred to in Hall, *Readings in Jurisprudence*, ch. 11; see especially the table showing the terminology of different writers on p. 527. A clear presentation of Hohfeld for the beginner is Corbin, "Legal Analysis and Terminology" (1919), 29 Yale L. J. 163, reprinted in Hall, *op. cit.* 471. See also Campbell, "Some Footnotes to Salmond's Jurisprudence" (1940), 7 C. L. J. 206. An advanced treatment will be found in Kocourek, *Jural Relations* (2nd ed. 1928).

§ 78. Liberties and No-rights

Just as my legal rights (in the strict sense) are the benefits which I derive from legal duties imposed upon other persons, so my legal liberties (sometimes called licences or privileges) are the benefits which I derive from the absence of legal duties imposed upon myself. They are the various forms assumed by the interest which I have in doing as I please. They are the things which I may do without being prevented by the law. The sphere of my legal liberty is that sphere of activity within which the law is content to leave me alone. It is clear that the term right is often used in a wide sense to include such liberty. I have a right (that is to say, I am at liberty) to do as I please with my own; but I have no right and am not at liberty to interfere with what is another's. I have a right to express my opinions on public affairs, but I have no right to publish a defamatory or seditious libel. I have a right to defend myself against violence, but I have no right to take revenge upon him who has injured me.

The interests of unrestrained activity thus recognised and allowed by the law constitute a class of legal rights clearly distinguishable from those which we have already considered. Rights of the one class are concerned with those things which other persons *ought* to do for me; rights of the other class are concerned with those things which I *may* do for myself. The former pertain to the sphere of obligation or compulsion; the latter to that of liberty or free will. Both are legally recognised interests; both are advantages derived from the law by the subjects of the state; but they are two distinct species of one genus.

It is often said that all rights whatsoever correspond to duties; and by those who are of this opinion a different explanation is necessarily given of the class of rights which we have just considered. It is said that a legal liberty is in reality a legal right not to be interfered with by other persons in the exercise of one's activities. It is alleged that the real meaning of the proposition that I have a legal right to express what opinions I please, is that other persons are under a legal duty not to prevent me from expressing them. So that even in this case the right is the correlative of a duty. Now there is no doubt that in most cases a legal liberty of acting is accomplished by a legal right not to be hindered in so acting. If the law allows me a sphere of lawful and innocent activity, it usually takes

care at the same time to protect this sphere of activity from alien interference. But in such a case there are in reality two rights and not merely one; and there are instances in which liberties are not thus accompanied by protecting rights. I may have a legal liberty which involves no such duty of non-interference imposed on others. If a landowner gives me a licence to go upon his land, I have a right to do so, in the sense in which a right means a liberty; but I have no right to do so, in the sense in which a right vested in me is the correlative of a duty imposed upon him. Though I have a liberty or right to go on his land, he an equal right or liberty to prevent me. The licence has no other effect than to make that lawful which would otherwise be unlawful. The right which I so acquire is nothing more than an extension of the sphere of my rightful activity. So a trustee has a right to receive from the beneficiaries remuneration for his trouble in administering the estate, in the sense that in doing so he does no wrong. But he has no right to receive remuneration, in the sense that the beneficiaries are under any duty to give it to him. So an alien has a right, in the sense of liberty, to enter British dominions, but the executive government has an equal right, in the same sense, to keep him out (r). That I have a right to destroy my property does not mean that it is wrong for other persons to prevent me; it means that it is not wrong for me so to deal with that which is my own. That I have no right to commit theft does not mean that other persons may lawfully prevent me from committing such a crime, but that I myself act illegally in taking property which is not mine (s).

The correlative of A's liberty to do a thing is B's no-right that it shall not be done, and the correlative of A's liberty not to do a thing is B's no-right that it shall be done. "No-right" is a manufactured word indicating the absence of right against another in some particular respect. To say that B has a no-right against A is simply another way of saying that B has not a right against A, just as to say that A has a privilege against B is simply another way of saying that A is not under a duty towards B. Thus a trespasser has a no-right not to be forcibly ejected (i.e. has not a right not to be forcibly ejected), corresponding to the occupier's liberty to eject him. Again, the owner of a building generally has a no-right not to have his windows darkened or his foundations weakened by the buildings

(r) *Musgrove v. Toy*, [1891] A. C. 272.

(s) On the distinction between liberties and rights, see Bentham, *Works*, III. 217; *Starey v. Graham*, [1899] 1 Q. B. at p. 411, per Channel, J.; *Allen v. Flood*, [1898] A. C. at p. 29, per Cave, J.; Terry, *Leading Principles of Anglo-American Law* 90; Brown, *Austinian Theory of Law* 189; Hohfeld, *Fundamental Legal Conceptions* 38-50; also an article by the editor of this work to appear in a forthcoming number of the *Columbia Law Review*.

or excavations of his neighbours. In short, all cases of *damnum sine injuria* (t) are cases of no-right (u).

It will have been noticed that in the table of correlatives on page 270, the word "not" is added in brackets after the word "liberty". This is because the correlative of B's no-right that an act shall be done is not A's liberty to do the act but A's liberty *not* to do it. Similarly the correlative of B's no-right that an act shall *not* be done is A's liberty *not not* to do it—i.e., A's liberty to do it. Perhaps it would be clearer to delete the words "liberty (not)" from the table of correlatives and to put in their place the word "no-duty". It will be seen from any test sentences that may be chosen that the word "no-duty" is a precise equivalent of "liberty not", and that the words "no-duty not" are a precise equivalent of "liberty".

§ 79. Powers and Subjections

Yet another class of legal rights consists of those which are termed powers. Examples of such are the following: the right to make a will, or to alienate property; the power of sale vested in a mortgagee; a landlord's right of re-entry; the right to marry one's deceased wife's sister; the power to sue and to prosecute; the right to rescind a contract for fraud; a power of appointment; the right of issuing execution on a judgment; the various powers vested in judges and other officials for the due fulfilment of their functions. All these are legal rights—they are legally recognised interests—they are advantages conferred by the law—but

(t) *Infra*, § 133.

(u) The term "no-right" was invented by Hohfeld. The term used by Salmond was "liability". "No-right" is sometimes derided as being a purely negative concept. If a no-right is something that is not a right, the class of no-rights must, it is said, include elephants. The answer is that negative terms are often useful as alternative ways of stating propositions involving negatives. For instance, the terms "alien", "cold" and "dark" are all negative or privative, because their meaning includes the idea of absence of something else. The proposition that A is an alien means that A is not a British subject; in the one mode of statement the negative is incorporated in the noun, whereas in the other it is expressed as a separate word. Similarly the word "liberty" is negative, and critics who attack the concept of no-right should logically attack the concept of liberty also. As explained above, "liberty" simply means "no-duty not". It must be remembered that our aim in the present chapter is to distinguish the four meanings of the term "right", and for the sake of clear thinking it is necessary to give each of the four meanings a separate name. Words like "no-right" and "no-duty" may seem uncouth at first sight, but it is surely a clear and useful statement to say that "right" sometimes means "no-duty not".

they are rights of a different species from the two classes which we have already considered. They resemble liberties, and differ from rights *stricto sensu*, inasmuch as they have no duties corresponding to them. My right to make a will corresponds to no duty in any one else. A mortgagee's power of sale is not the correlative of any duty imposed upon the mortgagor; though it is otherwise with his right to receive payment of the mortgage debt. A debt is not the same thing as a right of action for its recovery. The former is a right in the strict and proper sense, corresponding to the duty of the debtor to pay; the latter is a legal power, corresponding to the liability of the debtor to be sued. That the two are distinct appears from the fact that the right of action may be destroyed (as by prescription) while the debt remains.

It is clear, therefore, that a power is not the same thing as a right of the first class. Neither is it identical with a right of the second class, namely, a liberty. That I have a right to make a will does not mean that in doing so I do no wrong. It does not mean that I *may* make a will innocently; it means that I *can* make a will effectively. That I have a right to marry my cousin does not mean that such a marriage is legally innocent, but that it is legally valid. It is not a liberty that I have, but a power. That a landlord has a right of re-entry on his tenant does not mean that in re-entering he does the tenant no wrong, but that by so doing he effectively terminates the lease (a).

A power may be defined as ability conferred upon a person by the law to alter, by his own will directed to that end, the rights, duties, liabilities or other legal relations, either of himself or of other persons. Powers are either public or private. The former are those which are vested in a person as an agent

(a) A power is usually combined with a liberty to exercise it; that is to say, the exercise of it is not merely effectual but rightful. This, however, is not necessarily the case. It may be effectual and yet wrongful; as when, in breach of my agreement, I revoke a licence given by me to enter upon my land. Such revocation is perfectly effectual, but it is a wrongful act, for which I am liable to the licensee in damages. I had a right (in the sense of power) to revoke the licence, but I had no right (in the sense of liberty) to do so: *Wood v. Leadbitter* (1845), 13 M. & W. 838; *Kerrison v. Smith*, [1897] 2 Q. B. 445. The possibility that since the fusion of law and equity the rule in *Wood v. Leadbitter* has little, if any, practical operation (*Hurst v. Picture Theatres, Ltd.*, [1915] 1 K. B. 1; *H. W. R. Wade* in (1948), 37 L. Q. R. 57) does not destroy its significance as an illustration of the distinction between powers and liberties.

or instrument of the functions of the state; they comprise the various forms of legislative, judicial, and executive authority. Private powers, on the other hand, are those which are vested in persons to be exercised for their own purposes, and not as agents of the state. Power is either ability to determine the legal relations of other persons, or ability to determine one's own. The first of these—power over other persons—is sometimes called *authority*; the second—power over oneself—is usually termed *capacity* (b).

The correlative of a power is a subjection. This word is here employed in preference to the commoner term "liability", because "liability" has two other meanings in the law, and it is not desirable to have the same word for two or more different concepts (c). Subjection, in the sense in which that term is now being used, connotes the presence of power vested in someone else, as against the person in subjection. It is the position

(b) On the distinction between powers and other kinds of rights, see Windscheid, I. sect. 37; Terry, *op. cit.* 100; Hohfeld, *op. cit.* 50–60.

(c) All modern analytical jurists writing in the English language (including Salmond and Hohfeld) have used the term "liability" for the correlative of power, and this usage has been adopted in the American *Restatement*. It is therefore with considerable trepidation that the present editor ventures to replace it by the term "subjection". The object of distinguishing the four meanings of the term "right", and giving three of them separate names, is to free the word "right" from ambiguity. It is irrational to do this by employing a term ("liability") that already has two other meanings, for this resolves one ambiguity only by extending another. Salmond seems to have been himself confused as to the meaning of the word "liability", for he argued (7th ed. § 77 n. (r)) that when we speak of debts as liabilities, we mean that the debtor is liable to be sued for them. It is submitted that this is not quite correct. A person who owes nothing is liable (i.e., subject) to be sued for a debt; he can be forced to enter an appearance to the proceedings, file a defence, and so on, on pain of judgment going by default if he does not. This subjection to be sued corresponds to the power to sue, which does not depend upon the plaintiff's having a good case. When we speak of a debt as a liability, and also when we speak of tortious liability and the liability to pay damages for breach of contract, we are referring to an enforceable duty *in personam* to pay money; the word "liability" may also be used for the position of any wrongdoer in respect of the remedy of a wrong. See *infra*, § 128. Thus we may say that in its narrower sense a liability is an enforceable duty *in personam* to pay money, and in its wider sense it is the position of one against whom legal proceedings can be taken *with success*. It is not convenient to add to these two meanings a third meaning in which it is the correlative of any power.

The term "subjection" for the correlative of a power was suggested by Radin ("A Restatement of Hohfeld" (1939), 51 H. L. R. 1141 at 1158), though he did not adopt his own suggestion and kept to the term "liability". Other synonyms suggested by Goble are "susceptibility", "subjectivity" and "helplessness" ("A Redefinition of Basic Legal Terms" (1935), 35 Col. L. Rev. 535), though he kept to "liability" as the standard expression.

of one whose legal rights (in the wide sense) may be altered by the exercise of a power. Examples are the subjection of a tenant to have his lease determined by re-entry, that of a mortgagor to have the property sold by the mortgagee, that of a judgment debtor to have execution issued against him, and that of an unfaithful spouse to be divorced. The most important form of subjection is that which corresponds to the various powers of action and prosecution. Such subjection is independent of the question whether the particular action or prosecution will be successful, and is therefore independent of (say) the duty to pay damages for a civil wrong. A tortfeasor is under a duty to pay damages for his wrong (this is called "tortious liability") and is subject to be sued in tort; but a person who has committed no tort is also subject to be sued in tort, though in this case the action will fail.

A subjection may be co-incident with a no-right: thus when a defaulting tenant has his goods distrained for rent, he has both a no-right against his landlord not to have his goods touched and a subjection to have them impounded and sold against his will. In this technical use of the term, a "subjection" may be an advantageous position. Thus a person has a power to make a gift of his property (for by exercising the power he alters the legal position both of himself and of the donee); hence other persons, who may be given the property, have a subjection to have it given to them. This subjection is beneficial, not detrimental.

§ 80. Immunities and Disabilities

The term "right" is used in a fourth sense to mean an immunity from the legal power of some other person. Just as a power is a legal ability to change legal relations, so an immunity is an exemption from having a given legal relation changed by another. The right of a peer to be tried by his peers, for example, is neither a right in the strict sense, nor a liberty, nor a power. It is an exemption from trial by jury—an immunity from the power of the ordinary criminal courts. Immunity stands in the same relation to power as liberty (not) does to right *stricto sensu*: immunity is exemption from

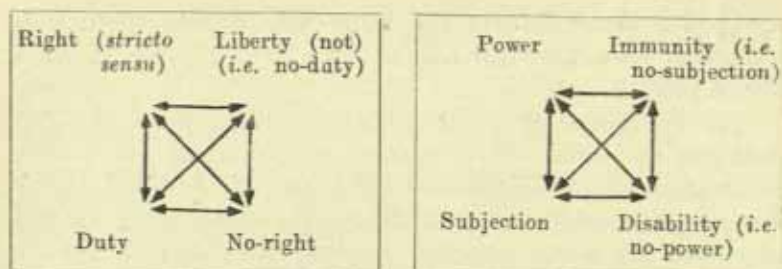
the power of another in the same way as liberty (not) is exemption from the right of another. Immunity, in short, is no-subjection.

The correlative of immunity is disability (otherwise called inability, or, more clearly though less elegantly, no-power). Disability is simply the absence of power. Thus the rule *Nemo dat quod non habet* can be expressed as a disability on the part of persons in general to transfer property that they do not themselves own.

These, then, are the four classes of rights conferred by the law: right in the strict sense, when the law limits the liberty of others in my behalf; liberty, when the law allows to my will a sphere of unrestrained activity; power, when the law actively assists me in making my will effective; immunity, when the law denies to others a particular power over me. A right in the narrow sense is that which other persons *ought* to do on my behalf; a liberty is that which I *may* do innocently; a power is that which I *can* do effectively; an immunity is that which other persons *cannot* do effectively in respect of me. I enjoy my rights through the control exercised by the law over the acts of others on my behalf; I use my liberties with the acquiescence of the law; I use my powers with its active assistance in making itself the instrument of my will; I use my immunities through its refusal to accord this active assistance to others.

Of the four classes the first, consisting of rights correlative to duties, are by far the most important. So predominant are they, indeed, that we may regard them as constituting the principal subject-matter of the law, while the others are merely accessory. In future, therefore, I shall use the term right in this narrow and specific sense, except when the context indicates a different usage; and I shall commonly speak of the other forms of rights by their specific designations.

Reverting to the table of legal correlatives in section 77, it will be seen that the four terms in the first rectangle are related to each other in precisely the same way as the four terms in the second rectangle. This can be seen more clearly by connecting each set of terms by arrows, and assigning a meaning to each kind of arrow.



In this diagram the vertical arrows connect jural correlatives, and may be read either way as "_____ is the presence of _____ in another". Thus right is the presence of duty in another and subjection is the presence of power in another.

The diagonal arrows connect jural contradictories and may be read either way as "_____ is the absence of _____ in oneself". Thus no-right is the absence of right in oneself, and disability is the absence of power in oneself.

The horizontal arrows connect the contradictories of correlatives and may be read either way as "_____ is the absence of _____ in another". Thus liberty (not) is the absence of right in another, and immunity is the absence of power in another.

With the aid of the arrows any of the eight expressions can be mechanically defined in terms of three of the others. The broad distinction between the first set of terms and the second set is that the first relates to static legal relationships while the second relates to the changing of relationships.

SUMMARY

The nature of a Wrong.

Moral and legal wrongs.

The nature of a Duty.

Moral and legal duties.

The nature of a Right.

Interests.

Their protection by the rule of right.

Interests and rights.

Moral and legal rights.

The denial of moral rights.

The correlation of rights and duties.

The characteristics of a legal right.

1. Person entitled, or owner.
2. Person bound.
3. Content.
4. Object or subject-matter.
5. Title.

No rights without owners.

No rights without objects.

- | | | |
|-------------------|---|--|
| Objects of rights | { | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Material things. 2. One's own person. 3. Reputation. 4. Domestic relations. 5. Other rights. 6. Immaterial property. 7. Services. |
|-------------------|---|--|

Rights in the generic sense—Any benefit conferred by the law.

- | | |
|---|---|
| { | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Rights (<i>stricto sensu</i>)—correlative to Duties. 2. Liberties (not)—correlative to No-rights. 3. Powers—correlative to Subjections. 4. Immunities—correlative to Disabilities. |
| { | <ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Rights (<i>stricto sensu</i>)—what others <i>must</i> do for me. 2. Liberties—what I <i>may</i> do for myself. 3. Powers—what I <i>can</i> do as against others. 4. Immunities—what others <i>cannot</i> do in respect of me. |

CHAPTER 11

THE KINDS OF LEGAL RIGHTS

§ 81. Perfect and Imperfect Rights

RIGHTS and duties are of two kinds, distinguishable as *perfect* and *imperfect*. A perfect right is one which corresponds to a perfect duty; and a perfect duty is one which is not merely recognised by the law, but *enforced*. A duty is enforceable when an action or other legal proceeding, civil or criminal, will lie for the breach of it, and when judgment will be executed against the defendant, if need be, through the physical force of the state. Enforceability is the general rule. In all ordinary cases, if the law will recognise a right at all, it will not stop short of the last remedy of physical compulsion against him on whom the correlative duty lies. *Ought*, in the mouth of the law, commonly means *must*. In all fully developed legal systems, however, there are rights and duties which, though undoubtedly recognised by the law, yet fall short of this typical and perfect form (a).

Examples of such imperfect legal rights are certain claims barred by lapse of time; claims unenforceable by action owing to the absence of some special form of legally requisite proof (such as a written document); claims against foreign states or sovereigns, as for interest due on foreign bonds; claims unenforceable by action as exceeding the local limits of a court's jurisdiction, such as claims in respect of foreign land; debts

(a) There is another use of the term imperfect duty which pertains to ethics rather than to jurisprudence, and must be distinguished from that adopted in the text. According to many writers, an imperfect duty is one of such a nature that it is not fit for enforcement, but ought properly to be left to the free will of him whose duty it is. A perfect duty, on the other hand, is one which a man not merely *ought* to perform, but may be *justly compelled* to perform. The duty to give alms to the poor is imperfect; that of paying one's debts is perfect. Perfect duties pertain to the sphere of justice; imperfect to that of benevolence. The distinction is not equivalent to that between legal duties and those which are merely moral. A duty may be a perfect duty of justice, although the actual legal system takes no notice of it; and conversely an imperfect duty of benevolence may be unjustly made by law the subject of compulsion. It does not seem possible, however, so to divide the sphere of duty by a hard and fast line. See § 21, *supra*.

due to an executor from the estate which he administers. In all those cases the duties and correlative rights are imperfect. No action will lie for their maintenance; yet they are, for all that, legal rights and legal duties, for they receive recognition from the law. The statute of limitations, for example, does not provide that after a certain time a debt shall become extinct, but merely that no action shall thereafter be brought for its recovery (b). Lapse of time, therefore, does not destroy the right, but merely reduces it from the rank of one which is perfect to that of one which is imperfect. It remains valid for all purposes save that of enforcement (c). All these cases of imperfect rights are exceptions to the maxim, *Ubi jus ibi remedium*. The customary union between the right and the right of action has been for some special reason severed, but the right survives.

For what purposes the law will recognise an imperfect right is a question relating to the concrete details of a legal system, and cannot be fully discussed here. We may, however, distinguish the following effects as those of greatest importance and most general application.

1. An imperfect right may be good as a ground of defence, though not as a ground of action. I cannot sue on an informal contract, but if money is paid or property delivered to me in pursuance of it, I can successfully defend any claim for its recovery.

2. An imperfect right is sufficient to support any security that has been given for it. A mortgage or pledge remains perfectly valid, although the debt secured by it has ceased to be recoverable by action (d). But if the debt is discharged, instead of becoming merely imperfect, the security will disappear along with it.

3. An imperfect right may possess the capacity of becoming perfect. The right of action may not be non-existent, but may be merely dormant. An informal verbal contract may become enforceable by action, by reason of the fact that written evidence

(b) Limitation Act, 1939, s. 2 (1). But lapse of time now extinguishes title to chattels or to land: *ibid.*, ss. 3 (2), 16; but see s. 7 and Land Registration Act, 1925, s. 75.

(c) Cf. *Allen v. Waters & Co.*, [1935] 1 K. B. 200.

(d) *Ex p. Sheil* (1877), 4 Ch. D. 789; *London & Midland Bank v. Mitchell*, [1899] 2 Ch. 161.

of it has since come into existence. In like manner part-payment or acknowledgment will raise once more to the level of a perfect right a debt that has been barred by the lapse of time.

§ 82. The Legal Nature of Rights against the State

A subject may claim rights against the state, no less than against another subject. He can institute proceedings against the state for the determination and recognition of those rights in due course of law, and he can claim judgment in his favour, recognising their existence or awarding to him compensation for their infringement. But there can be no *enforcement* of that judgment (e). What duties the state recognises owing by it to its subjects, it fulfils of its own free will and unconstrained good pleasure. The strength of the law is none other than the strength of the state, and cannot be turned or used against the state whose strength it is. The rights of the subject against the state are therefore imperfect. They obtain legal recognition but no legal enforcement.

The fact that the element of enforcement is thus absent in the case of rights against the state, has induced many writers to deny that these are legal rights at all. But as we have already seen, we need not so narrowly define the term legal right, as to include only those claims that are legally enforced. It is equally logical and more convenient to include within the term all those claims that are legally recognised in the administration of justice. All rights against the state are not legal, any more than all rights against private persons are legal. But some of them are; those, namely, which can be sued for in courts of justice, and the existence and limits of which will be judicially determined in accordance with fixed principles of law, redress or compensation being awarded for any violation of them. To hold the contrary, and to deny the name of legal right or duty in all cases in which the state is the defendant, is to enter upon a grave conflict with legal and popular speech and thought. In the language of lawyers, as in that of laymen, a contract with the state is as much a source of legal rights and obligations as is a contract between two private persons; and the right of the holder of consols is as much a legal right as is that of a debenture holder in a public company. It is not to the point to say that rights against the state are held at the state's good pleasure, and are therefore not legal rights at all; for all other legal rights are in the same position. They are legal rights not because the state is bound to recognise them, but because it does so.

Whether rights against the state can properly be termed legal depends simply on whether judicial proceedings in which the state is the defendant are properly included within the administration of justice. For if they are rightly so included, the principles by which they are governed are true principles of law, in accordance with the

(e) Cf. Crown Proceedings Act, 1947, ss. 21, 25.

definition of law, and the rights defined by these legal principles are true legal rights. The boundary-line of the administration of justice has been traced in a previous chapter. We there saw sufficient reason for including not only the direct enforcement of justice, but all other judicial functions exercised by courts of justice. This is the ordinary use of the term, and it seems open to no logical objection (*f*).

§ 83. Positive and Negative Rights

In respect of their contents, rights are of two kinds, being either *positive* or *negative*. A positive right corresponds to a positive duty, and is a right that he on whom the duty lies shall do some positive act on behalf of the person entitled. A negative right corresponds to a negative duty, and is a right that the person bound shall refrain from some act which would operate to the prejudice of the person entitled. The former is a right to be positively benefited; the latter is merely a right not to be harmed. The former is a right to receive something more than one already has, such as my right to the money in the pocket of my debtor; the latter is a right to retain what one already has, such as my right to the money in my pocket.

The distinction is one of practical importance. It is much easier, as well as much more necessary, for the law to prevent the infliction of harm than to enforce positive beneficence. Therefore while liability for hurtful acts of commission is the general rule, liability for acts of omission is the exception. Generally speaking, all men are bound to refrain from all kinds of positive harm, while only some men are bound in some ways actively to confer benefits on others. No one is entitled to do another any manner of hurt, save with special ground of justification; but no one is bound to do another any manner of good save on special grounds of obligation. Every man has a right against every man that the present position of things shall not be interfered with to his detriment; whilst it is only in particular cases and for special reasons that any man has a right against any man that the present position shall be altered for his advantage. I have a right against every one not to be pushed into the water; if I have a right at all to be pulled out, it is only on special grounds against determinate individuals.

(*f*) As to rights against the state, see Brown, *Austinian Theory of Law*, 194; Campbell, "Some Footnotes to Salmond's Jurisprudence", (1940) 7 C. L. J. 206 at 209-211.

§ 84. Rights in Rem and Rights in Personam

The distinction between rights *in rem* and *in personam* is closely connected but not identical with that between negative and positive rights. It is based on a difference in the incidence of the correlative duties. A right *in rem*, sometimes called a real right, corresponds to a duty imposed upon persons in general; a right *in personam*, sometimes called a personal right, corresponds to a duty imposed upon determinate individuals (g). A right *in rem* is available against the world at large; a right *in personam* is available only against particular persons. The distinction is one of great prominence in the law, and we may take the following as illustrations of it. My right to the peaceable occupation of my farm is *in rem*, for all the world is under a duty towards me not to interfere with it. But if I grant a lease of the farm to a tenant, my right to receive the rent from him is *in personam*, for it avails exclusively against the tenant himself. For the same reason my right to the possession and use of the money in my purse is *in rem*; but my right to receive money from some one who owes it to me is *in personam*. I have a right *in rem* against every one not to be deprived of my liberty or my reputation; I have a right *in personam* to receive compensation from any individual person who has imprisoned or defamed me. I have a right *in rem* to the use and occupation of my own house; I have a right *in personam* to receive accommodation at an inn.

A right *in rem*, then, is an interest protected against the world at large; a right *in personam* is an interest protected solely

(g) Although the terms "real right" and "personal right" are less cumbersome than the terms "right *in rem*" and "right *in personam*", the use of the term "personal right" in this meaning is open to the objection that it creates an ambiguity, for "personal right" is also opposed to "proprietary right", and the meaning is then different (see § 85). The more flexible language of the Germans enables them to distinguish between *persönliche Rechte* (as opposed to *sachliche Rechte* or rights *in rem*) and *Personenrechte* (as opposed to *Vermögensrechte* or proprietary rights). See Dernburg, *Pandekten*, I. sect. 22, n. 7. Kocourek, *Jural Relations* (2nd ed.), 201, suggests the terms "polarized" and "unpolarized" for rights *in personam* and *in rem* respectively.

Prof. F. H. Lawson in *Festschrift für Martin Wolff* (Tübingen, 1952), 108, argues that rights *in rem* do not correlate with duties. This, however, does not represent English law. Suppose that X promises Y £5 in return for Y's promise not to trespass on X's land. X's promise is void, because of lack of consideration: and the reason why there is no consideration is because Y is already under a duty (corresponding to X's right *in rem*) not to trespass on X's land.

against determinate individuals. The distinction is clearly one of importance. The law confers upon me a greater advantage in protecting my interests against all persons than in protecting them only against one or two. The right of a patentee, who has a monopoly as against all the world, is much more valuable than the right of him who purchases the goodwill of a business and is protected only against the competition of his vendor. If I buy a chattel, it is an important question whether my interest in it is forthwith protected against every one, or only against him who sells it to me. The main purpose of mortgages and other forms of real security is to supplement the imperfections of a personal right by the superior advantages inherent in a right of the other class. Furthermore, these two kinds of rights are necessarily very different in respect of the modes of their creation and extinction. The indeterminate incidence of the duty which corresponds to a right *in rem*, renders impossible many modes of dealing with it which are of importance in the case of rights *in personam*.

Hohfeld argued that every so-called right *in rem* is in truth not one isolated right but either a large bundle of fundamentally similar, yet separate, rights availing respectively against each of a large and indefinite class of persons, or else one right out of such a bundle. Every right, in his view, correlates only with a single duty incumbent upon a single person; a single right cannot correlate with many duties (*h*). The point, however, seems to be a verbal one, devoid of practical importance. Even if Hohfeld's view be adopted as a matter of strict analysis, it is still convenient to speak of a right *in rem* as correlating with a large number of duties, and this terminology will continue to be used in these pages.

The distinction between rights *in rem* and *in personam* is closely connected with that between negative and positive rights. Almost all rights *in rem* are negative, and most rights *in personam* are positive, though in a few exceptional cases they are negative. It is not difficult to see the reason for this general coincidence. A right *in rem*, available against all other persons, can be in general nothing more than a right to be left alone by those persons—a right to their passive non-interference. No person is in general given a legal right to the active assistance of all the world. The chief exception is in the case of the state, which may have a right that is both positive and *in rem*, as for instance, a right that all persons should pay taxes or send in

(*h*) Hohfeld, *Fundamental Legal Conceptions* (1921) 91 ff.; cf. Campbell in (1940), 7 C. L. J., at 211-12.

census returns (i). On the other hand almost all personal rights are positive.

The merely passive duty of non-interference, when it exists at all, usually binds all persons in common. There are, however, exceptional cases in which this is not so. These exceptional rights which are both negative and *in personam* are usually the product of some agreement by which some particular individual has deprived himself of a liberty which is common to all other persons. Thus all tradesmen may lawfully compete with each other in the ordinary way of business, even though the result of this competition is the ruin of the weaker competitors. But in selling to another the goodwill of my business I may lawfully deprive myself of this liberty by an express agreement with the purchaser to that effect. He thereby acquires against me a right of exemption from competition, and this right is both *in personam* and negative. It is a monopoly, protected, not against the world at large, but against a determinate individual.

In defining a right *in rem* as one availing against the world at large, it is not meant that the incidence of the correlative duty is absolutely universal, but merely that the duty binds persons in general, and that, if any one is not bound his case is exceptional. Similarly a right *in personam* is not one available against a single person only, but one available against one or more *determinate* individuals. The right of the creditor of a firm is *in personam*, though the debt may be due from any number of partners. Even as so explained, however, it can scarcely be denied that, if intended as an exhaustive classification of all possible cases, the distinction between rights *in rem* and *in personam*—between duties of general and of determinate incidence—is logically defective. It takes no account of the possibility of a third and intermediate class. Why should there not be rights available against particular classes of persons, as opposed both to the whole community and to persons individually determined, for example, a right available only against aliens? An examination, however, of the contents of any actual legal system will reveal the fact that duties of this suggested description either do not exist at all, or are so exceptional that we are justified in classing them as anomalous. As a classification, therefore, of the rights which actually obtain legal

(i) It may possibly be argued that the rights of the state instanced above are not *in rem* because of another requisite of rights *in rem*. It may be said that a right *in rem* must not only avail against persons generally but also have a single subject-matter, not varying with each different person of incidence. If so, the right of the state to receive income tax is not *in rem*, because the subject-matter, namely the amount payable, varies with each taxpayer. However, the argument would hardly apply to a poll-tax of a uniform sum, or the duty incumbent upon persons generally to answer the same questions in the census. The question, however we answer it, is unimportant; no legal consequence turns on whether we regard the state's right in these cases as *in rem* or *in personam*. Other possible positive rights *in rem* are instanced by Professor Campbell, (1940) 7 C. L. J., at 213-14.

recognition, the distinction between rights in *rem* and in *personam* may be accepted as valid.

The terms right in *rem* (or in *re*) and right in *personam* are derived from the commentators on the civil and canon law (*k*). Literally interpreted, *jus in rem* means a right against or in respect of a thing, *jus in personam* a right against or in respect of a person. In truth, however, every right is at the same time one in respect of some thing, namely, its object, and against some person, namely the person bound. In other words, every right involves, not only a *real*, but also a *personal* relation. Yet, although these two relations are necessarily co-existent, their relative prominence and importance are not always the same. In real rights it is the real relation that stands in the forefront of the juridical conception; such rights are emphatically and conspicuously in *rem*. In personal rights, on the other hand, it is the personal relation that forms the predominant factor in the conception; such rights are before all things in *personam*.

For this difference there is more than one reason. In the first place, the right in *rem* is a relation between the owner and a vague multitude of persons, no one of whom is distinguished from any other; while a right in *personam* is a definite relation between determinate

(*k*) Although the terms are not found in the original sources of the civil law, the distinction thereby expressed received adequate recognition from the Roman lawyers. They drew a broad line of demarcation between *dominium* on the one side and *obligatio* on the other, the former including rights in *rem*, and the latter rights in *personam*. *Dominium* is the relation between the owner of a right in *rem* (*dominus*) and the right so vested in him. *Obligatio* is the relation between the owner of a right in *personam* (*creditor*) and the person on whom the correlative duty lies. *Obligatio*, in other words, is the legal bond by which two or more determinate individuals are bound together. Our modern English obligation is no longer confined to this, for it is frequently applied to any duty, whether the duty corresponds to a real or to a personal right. It is to be noticed, however, that both *dominium* and *obligatio* are limited by the Romans to the sphere of what, in the succeeding part of this chapter, we term proprietary rights. A man's right to his personal liberty or reputation, for example, falls neither within the sphere of *dominium* nor within that of *obligatio*. The distinction between rights in *rem* and in *personam*, on the other hand, is subject to no such limitation.

The terms *jus in rem* and *jus in personam* are derived from the Roman terms *actio in rem* and *actio in personam*. An *actio in rem* was an action for the recovery of *dominium*; one in which the plaintiff claimed that a certain thing belonged to him and ought to be restored or given up to him. An *actio in personam* was one for the enforcement of an *obligatio*; one in which the plaintiff claimed the payment of money, the performance of a contract, or the protection of some other personal right vested in him as against the defendant (Gaius IV. 2). Naturally enough, the right protected by an *actio in rem* came to be called *jus in rem*, and a right protected by an *actio in personam*, *jus in personam*.

individuals, and the definiteness of this personal relation raises it into prominence. Secondly, the source or title of a right in *rem* is commonly to be found in the character of the real relation, while a right in *personam* generally derives its origin from the personal relation. In other words, if the law confers upon me a right in *rem*, it is commonly because I stand in some special relation to the thing which is the object of the right. If, on the contrary, it confers on me a right in *personam*, it is commonly because I stand in some special relation to the person who is the subject of the correlative duty. If I have a right in *rem* in a material object, it is because I made it, or found it, or first acquired possession of it, or because by transfer or otherwise I have taken the place of some one who did originally stand in some such relation to it. But if I have a right in *personam* to receive money from another, it is commonly because I have made a contract with him, or have come in some other manner to stand in a special relation to him.

The commonest and most important kind of *jus in personam* is that which has been termed by the civilians and canonists *jus ad rem*. I have a *jus ad rem* when I have a right that some other right shall be transferred to me or otherwise vested in me. *Jus ad rem* is a right to a right. We have already seen, in the previous chapter, that it is possible for one right to be in this way the subject-matter of another. A debt, a contract to assign property, and a promise of marriage, are examples of this. It is clear that such a right to a right must be in all cases in *personam*. The right which is to be transferred, however—the subject-matter of the *jus ad rem*—may be either in *rem* or in *personam*, though it is more commonly in *rem*. I may agree to assign or mortgage a debt or the benefit of a contract, no less than lands or chattels. An agreement to assign a chattel creates a *jus ad jus in rem*; an agreement to assign a debt or a contract creates a *jus ad jus in personam* (1).

The distinction between rights in *rem* and in *personam* applies not only to rights in the strict sense, but also to liberties, powers and immunities. Thus freedom of speech is, within its limits, a liberty in *rem*, while a licence to walk over the land of a particular landowner is a liberty in *personam*. The power to make a contractual offer is a power in *rem*, while the power to accept an offer made, and thus to create a contract, is

(1) Some writers treat *jus in personam* and *jus ad rem* as synonymous terms. It seems better, however, to use the latter in a narrower sense, as including merely one species, although the most important species, of *jura in personam*. Savigny, *System*, sect. 56, n. b.

a power in *personam*, availing only against the person who has made the offer.

§ 85. Proprietary and Personal Rights

Another important distinction is that between proprietary and personal rights. The aggregate of a man's proprietary rights constitutes his *estate*, his *assets*, or his *property* in one of the many senses of that most equivocal of legal terms. German jurisprudence is superior to our own in possessing a distinct technical term for this aggregate of proprietary rights, namely, *Vermögen*, the rights themselves being *Vermögensrechte*. The French speak in the same fashion of *avoir* or *patrimoine*. The sum total of a man's personal rights, on the other hand, constitutes his *status* or personal condition, as opposed to his estate. If he owns land, or chattels, or patent rights, or the goodwill of a business, or shares in a company, or if debts are owing to him, all these rights pertain to his estate. But if he is a free man and a citizen, a husband and a father, the rights which he has as such pertain to his status or standing in the law.

What, then, is the essential nature of this distinction? It lies in the fact that proprietary rights are *valuable*, and personal rights are not. The former are those which are worth money; the latter are those that are worth none. The former are the elements of a man's *wealth*; the latter are merely elements in his *well-being* (*m*).

It makes no difference in this respect whether a right is *jus in rem* or *jus in personam*. Rights of either sort are proprietary, and make up the estate of the possessor if they are of economic value. Thus my right to the money in my pocket is proprietary; but not less so is my right to the money which I have in the bank. Stock in the funds is part of a man's

(*m*) Ahrens, sect. 55: Tous les biens, soit matériels en eux-mêmes, soit susceptibles d'être estimés en argent comme équivalent (par aestimatio et condemnatio pecuniaria) appartenant à une personne, forment son avoir ou son patrimoine.

Baudry-Lacantinerie, *Des Biens*, sect. 2: Le patrimoine est un ensemble de droits et de charges appréciables en argent.

Dernburg, *Pandekten*, I. sect. 22: Vermögen ist die Gesamtheit der geldwerthen Rechte einer Person.

Windscheid, I. sect. 42, note: Vermögensrechte sind die Rechte von wirtschaftlichem Werth.

See also to the same effect Savigny, *System*, sect. 56, and Puchta, *Institutionen*, II. sect. 193.

estate, just as much as land and houses; and a valuable contract, just as much as a valuable chattel. On the other hand, a man's rights of personal liberty, and of reputation, and of freedom from bodily harm, are personal, not proprietary. They concern his welfare, not his wealth; they are juridical merely, not also economic. So, also, with the rights of a husband and father with respect to his wife and children. Rights such as these pertain to his legal status, not his legal estate. If we go outside the sphere of private into that of public law, we find the list of personal rights greatly increased. Citizenship, honours, dignities, and official position (n) in all its innumerable forms, pertain to the law of status, not to that of property (o).

It may be thought that proprietary rights should be defined as those which are transferable, rather than as those which are valuable. As to this, it seems clear that all transferable rights are also proprietary; for if they can be transferred, they can be sold, and are therefore worth money. But it is not equally true that all proprietary rights are transferable. Popular speech does not, and legal theory need not, deny the name of property to a valuable right, merely because it is not transferable. A pension may be inalienable; but it must be counted, for all that, as wealth or property. Debts were originally incapable of assignment; but even then they were elements of the creditor's estate. A married woman may be unable to alienate her estate; but it is an estate none the less. The true test of a proprietary right is not whether it can be alienated, but whether it is equivalent to money; and it may be equivalent to money, though it cannot be sold for a price. A right to receive money or something which can itself be turned into money, is a proprietary right, and is to be reckoned in the possessor's estate, even though inalienable.

With respect to the distinction between proprietary and personal rights there are the following supplementary observations to be made—

(n) In the past, however, public office was regarded as a form of property, to be bought and sold like other property: see Holdsworth, *H. E. L.*, I. 439 ff.; D. W. Logan, "A Civil Servant and His Pay" (1945), 61 *L. Q. R.* 240, at 249 ff.

(o) For a criticism of the above account see Campbell in (1940), 7 *C L. J.* at 214-15, arguing that personal rights also are of economic value. Though this is true, it may perhaps be answered that the economic value of personal rights consist in the fact that they afford an opportunity for the acquisition of proprietary rights; they are not of economic value in themselves. Professor Campbell has kindly written to the editor to say that he accepts this answer to his criticism.

The words status and estate are in their origin the same. As to the process of their differentiation in legal meaning, see Pollock and Maitland, *History of English Law* (2nd ed.) II. 10 and 78. The other uses of the term property will be considered later, in ch. 19.

1. The distinction is not confined to rights in the strict sense, but is equally applicable to other classes of rights also. A person's estate is made up not merely of his valuable claims against other persons, but of such of his liberties, powers and immunities as are either valuable in themselves or are accessory to other rights which are valuable. A landlord's right (*i.e.*, power) of re-entry is proprietary, no less than his right to the rent; and a mortgagee's right (*i.e.*, power) of sale, no less than the debt secured. A general power of appointment is proprietary, but the power of making a will or a contract is personal.

2. The distinction between personal and proprietary rights has its counterpart in that between personal and proprietary duties, no-rights, subjections and disabilities. The latter relate to a person's estate, and (generally speaking) diminish the value of it. They represent a loss of money, just as a proprietary right represents the acquisition of it. All others are personal. The duty of fulfilling a contract for the purchase of goods is proprietary, but the duty of fulfilling a contract to marry is personal. A liability to be sued for a debt is proprietary, but a liability to be prosecuted for a crime is personal, except to the extent that it may be punishable by fine.

3. Although the term estate includes only rights (in the generic sense), the term status includes not only rights, but also duties, no-rights, subjections and disabilities. A minor's contractual disabilities are part of his status, though a man's debts are not part of his estate.

4. *The law of persons and the law of things.* Certain of the Roman lawyers, for example Gaius, divided the whole of the substantive law into two parts, which they distinguished as *jus quod ad personas pertinet* and *jus quod ad res pertinet*, terms which are commonly translated as the law of persons and the law of things. There has been much discussion as to the precise significance of this distinction, and it is possible that it was based on no clear and consistent logical analysis at all. Any adequate investigation of the matter would here be out of place, but it is suggested that the true basis of the division is the distinction between personal and proprietary rights, between status and property. The *jus quod ad res pertinet* is the law of property, the law of proprietary rights; the *jus quod ad personas pertinet* is the law of status, the law of personal rights, so far as such rights require separate consideration, instead of being dealt with in connection with those portions of the law of property to which they are immediately related (*p*).

It is an unfortunate circumstance that the term status is used in a considerable variety of different senses. Of these we may distinguish the following:—

(p) See Savigny, *System*, § 59.

- (a) *Legal condition of any kind, whether personal or proprietary.* This is the most comprehensive use of the term. A man's status in this sense includes his whole position in the law—the sum total of his legal rights, duties, liabilities, or other legal relations, whether proprietary or personal, or any particular group of them separately considered. Thus we may speak of the status of a landowner, of a trustee, of an executor, of a solicitor, and so on. It is much more common, however, to confine the term in question to some particular description of legal condition—some particular kind of status in this wide sense. Hence the other and specific meanings of the term.
- (b) *Personal legal condition;* that is to say, a man's legal condition, only so far as his personal rights and burdens are concerned, to the exclusion of his proprietary relations. It is in this sense that we have hitherto used the term. A person's status, in this sense, is made up of smaller groups of personal rights and their correlative burdens, and each of these constituent groups is itself also called a status. Thus the same person may have at the same time the status of a free man, of a citizen, of a husband, of a father, and so on. So we speak of the status of a wife, meaning all the personal benefits and burdens of which marriage is the legal source and title in a woman. In the same way we speak of the status of an alien, a lunatic, or an infant; but not of a landowner or a trustee.
- (c) *Personal capacities and incapacities,* as opposed to the other elements of personal status. By certain writers the term status is applied not to the whole sphere of personal condition, but only to one part of it, namely that which relates to personal capacity and incapacity (q). The law of status in this sense would include the rules as to the contractual capacities and incapacities of married women, but not the personal rights and duties existing between her and her husband.

(q) See Dicey, *Conflict of Laws* (6th ed. 1949) 465. See also, as to capacities, *ante*, § 79.

(d) *Compulsory as opposed to conventional personal condition.*

Status is used by some writers to signify a man's personal legal condition, so far only as it is imposed upon him by the law without his own consent, as opposed to the condition which he has acquired for himself by agreement. The position of a slave is a matter of status, the position of a free servant is a matter of contract. Marriage creates a status in this sense, for although it is entered into by way of consent, it cannot be dissolved in that way, and the legal condition created by it is determined by the law, and cannot be modified by the agreement of the parties. A business partnership, on the other hand, pertains to the law of contract, and not to that of status. It is with this in mind that a learned writer has defined status as "a special condition of a continuous and institutional nature, differing from the legal position of the normal person, which is conferred by law and not purely by the act of the parties, whenever a person occupies a position of which the creation, continuance or relinquishment and the incidents are a matter of sufficient social or public concern" (r). This definition, however, supposes a somewhat peculiar meaning of the phrase "normal person"; citizenship is a status; yet normal persons in a country are citizens of that country.

§ 86. Rights in *re propria* and Rights in *re aliena*

Rights may be divided into two kinds, distinguished by the civilians as *jura in re propria* and *jura in re aliena*. The latter may also be conveniently termed *encumbrances*, if we use that term in its widest permissible sense (s). A right in *re aliena* or encumbrance is one which limits or derogates from some more

(r) Graveson, *Status in the Common Law* (1953) 2. See the interesting discussion of this and other definitions by J. C. Hicks, "Jargon and Occult Qualities" (1956), 19 M. L. R. 158. See further, Maine, *Ancient Law*, Ch. 5 ad fin., and Pollock's Note L to his edition; Markby, *Elements of Law*, § 178; Hunter, *Roman Law* (4th ed.) 138. For a further discussion of status see Allen, "Status and Capacity", in his *Legal Duties* (1931) 28 ff.

(s) The Romans termed them *servitudes*, but the English term *servitude* is used to include one class of *jura in re aliena* only, namely the *servitudes praediorum* of Roman law.

general right belonging to some other person in respect of the same subject-matter. All others are *jura in re propria*. It frequently happens that a right vested in one person becomes subject or subordinate to an adverse right vested in another. It no longer possesses its full scope or normal compass, part of it being cut off to make room for the limiting and superior right which thus derogates from it. Thus the right of a landowner may be subject to, and limited by, that of a tenant to the temporary use of the property; or to the right of a mortgagee to sell or take possession; or to the right of a neighbouring landowner to the use of a way or other easement; or to the right of the vendor of land in respect of restrictive covenants entered into by the purchaser as to the use of it; for example, a covenant not to build upon it.

A right subject to an encumbrance may be conveniently designated as *servient*, while the encumbrance which derogates from it may be contrasted as *dominant*. These expressions are derived from, and conform to, Roman usage in the matter of servitudes. The general and subordinate right was spoken of figuratively by the Roman lawyers as being in bondage to the special right which prevailed over and derogated from it. The term *servitus*, thus derived, came to denote the superior right itself rather than the relation between it and the other; just as *obligatio* came to denote the right of the creditor, rather than the bond of legal subjection under which the debtor lay (t).

The terms *jus in re propria* and *jus in re aliena* were devised by the commentators on the civil law, and are not to be found in the original sources. Their significance is clear. The owner of a chattel has *jus in re propria*—a right over his own property; the pledgee or other encumbrancer of it has *jus in re aliena*—a right over the property of someone else.

There is nothing to prevent one encumbrance from being itself subject to another. Thus a tenant may sublet; that is to say, he may grant a lease of his lease, and so confer upon the sub-lessee a *jus in re aliena* of which the immediate subject-matter is itself merely another right of the same quality. The right of the tenant in such a case is dominant with regard to that of the landowner, but servient with regard to that of the sub-lessee. So the mortgagee of land may grant a mortgage of his mortgage; that is to say, he may create what is

(t) The owner of an encumbrance may be termed the encumbrancer of the servient right or property over which it exists.

called a sub-mortgage. The mortgage will then be a dominant right in respect of the ownership of the land, but a servient right with respect to the sub-mortgage. So the easements appurtenant to land are leased or mortgaged along with it; and therefore, though themselves encumbrances, they are themselves encumbered. Such a series of rights, each limiting and derogating from the one before it, may in theory extend to any length.

A right is not to be classed as encumbered or servient merely on account of its *natural* limits and restrictions. Otherwise all rights would fall within this category, since none of them are unlimited in their scope, all being restrained within definite boundaries by the conflicting interests and rights of other persons. All ownership of material things, for example, is limited by the maxim, *sic utere tuo ut alienum non laedas*. Every man must so restrain himself in the use of his property, as not to infringe upon the property and rights of others. The law confers no property in stones sufficiently absolute and unlimited to justify their owner in throwing them through his neighbour's windows. No landowner may, by reason of his ownership, inflict a nuisance upon the public or upon adjoining proprietors. But in these and all similar cases we are dealing merely with the normal and natural boundaries of the right, not with those exceptional and artificial restrictions which are due to the existence of *jura in re aliena* vested in other persons. A servient right is not merely a limited right, for all are limited; it is a right so limited that its ordinary boundaries are infringed.

It is essential to an encumbrance that it should, in the technical language of our law, *run with* the right encumbered by it. In other words, the dominant and the servient rights are necessarily *concurrent*. By this it is meant that an encumbrance must follow the encumbered right into the hands of new owners, so that a change of ownership will not free the right from the burden imposed upon it. If this is not so—if the right is transferable free from the burden—there is no true encumbrance. For the burden is then merely personal to him who is subject to it, and does not in truth limit or derogate from the right itself. This right still exists in its full compass, since it can be transferred in its entirety to a new owner. For this reason an agreement to sell land vests an encumbrance or *jus in re aliena* in the purchaser; but an agreement to sell a chattel does not. The former agreement runs with the property, while the latter is non-concurrent. So the fee simple of land may be encumbered by negative agreements, such as a covenant not to build; for, speaking generally, such obligations will run with the land into

the hands of successive owners. But positive covenants are merely personal to the covenantor, and derogate in no way from the fee simple vested in him, which he can convey to another free from any such burdens.

Concurrence, however, may exist in different degrees; it may be more or less perfect or absolute. The encumbrance may run with the servient right into the hands of some of the successive owners and not into the hands of others. In particular, encumbrances may be concurrent either in law or merely in equity. In the latter case the concurrence is (apart from statute) imperfect or partial, since it does not prevail against the kind of owner known in the language of the law as a purchaser for value without notice of the dominant right. Examples of encumbrances running with their servient rights at law are easements, leases, and legal mortgages. On the other hand, an agreement for a lease, an equitable mortgage, a restrictive covenant as to the use of land, and a trust, will run with their respective servient rights in equity, but not at law.

The Land Charges Act, 1925, effects important alterations in these characteristics of legal and equitable encumbrances. The Act provides that certain encumbrances over land, whether legal (as for example puisne mortgages) or equitable (as for example estate contracts and general equitable charges) may be registered in the Land Charges Registry. If the encumbrance is registered it is binding upon the whole world (u); if it is not registered, it is not binding upon a purchaser for value, or a purchaser of the legal estate for money or money's worth, according to the encumbrance in question (a). The result is that at the present day some legal encumbrances, if not registered, are not perfectly concurrent, while some equitable encumbrances, if registered, are perfectly concurrent.

The chief classes of encumbrances are four in number, namely, Leases, Servitudes, Securities, and Trusts. In a later chapter we shall consider these more at length, and in the meantime it is sufficient briefly to indicate their nature.

1. A lease is the encumbrance of property vested in one man by a right to the possession and use of it vested in another.

2. A servitude is a right to the limited use of a piece of land unaccompanied either by the ownership or by the possession of it; for example, a right of way or a right to the passage of light or water across adjoining land.

(u) Law of Property Act, 1925, s. 198.

(a) Land Charges Act, 1925, ss. 13, 20 (8).

3. A security is an encumbrance vested in a creditor over the property of his debtor, for the purpose of securing the recovery of the debt; a right, for example, to retain possession of a chattel until the debt is paid.

4. A trust is an encumbrance in which the ownership of property is limited by an equitable obligation to deal with it for the benefit of some one else. The owner of the encumbered property is the trustee; the owner of the encumbrance is the beneficiary.

§ 87. Principal and Accessory Rights

The relation between principal and accessory rights is the reverse of that just considered as existing between servient and dominant rights. For every right is capable of being affected to any extent by the existence of other rights; and the influence thus exercised by one upon another is of two kinds, being either adverse or beneficial. It is adverse when one right is limited or qualified by another vested in a different owner. This is the case already dealt with by us. It is beneficial, on the other hand, when one right has added to it a supplementary right vested in the same owner. In this case the right so augmented may be termed the *principal*, while the one so appurtenant to it is the *accessory* right. Thus a security is accessory to the right secured; a servitude is accessory to the ownership of the land for whose benefit it exists; the rent and covenants of a lease are accessory to the landlord's ownership of the property; covenants for title in a conveyance are accessory to the estate conveyed; and a right (i.e., power) of action is accessory to the right for whose enforcement it is provided.

§ 88. Legal and Equitable Rights

In a former chapter we considered the distinction between common law and equity. We saw that these two systems of law, administered respectively in the courts of common law and the Court of Chancery, were to a considerable extent discordant. One of the results of this discordance was the establishment of a distinction between two classes of rights, distinguishable as legal and equitable. Legal rights are those which were recognised by the courts of common law. Equitable rights (otherwise called equities) are those which were recognised solely in the Court of Chancery. Notwithstanding the fusion of law and equity by the Judicature Act, 1873, this distinction still exists, and must be reckoned with as an inherent part of our legal system. That which would have been merely an equitable

right before the Judicature Act is merely an equitable right still.

Inasmuch as all rights, whether legal or equitable, now obtain legal recognition in all courts, it may be suggested that the distinction is now of no importance. This is not so, however, for in two respects at least, these two classes of rights differ in their practical effects.

1. The methods of their creation and disposition are different. A legal mortgage of land must be created by deed, but an equitable mortgage may be created by a written agreement or by a mere deposit of title-deeds. A similar distinction exists between a legal and an equitable lease, a legal and an equitable servitude, a legal and an equitable charge on land, and so on.

2. Equitable rights have a more precarious existence than legal rights. Where there are two inconsistent legal rights claimed adversely by different persons over the same thing, the first in time generally prevails. *Qui prior est tempore potior est jure*. A similar rule applies, in general, to the competition of two inconsistent equitable rights. But when a legal and an equitable right conflict, the legal will (apart from statute) prevail over and destroy the equitable, even though subsequent to it in origin, provided that the owner of the legal right acquired it for value and without notice of the prior equity. As between a prior equitable mortgage, for example, and a subsequent legal mortgage, preference will be given to the latter. The maxim is: Where there are equal equities, the law will prevail. This liability to destruction by conflict with a subsequent legal right was formerly a characteristic defect of all rights which are merely equitable (b). We have already seen, however (§ 86), that when an equitable right over land is validly registered under the Land Charges Act, 1925, it becomes binding upon the whole world. The Law of Property Act expresses this (section 198) by saying that registration shall be deemed to constitute actual notice of the equitable right; but this is only the statutory way of saying that the equitable right, when registered, becomes effective against everybody.

(b) In addition to the distinctions between different kinds of rights considered in this chapter, there must be borne in mind the important distinction between Primary and Sanctioning Rights, but this has already been sufficiently dealt with in the chapter on the Administration of Justice.

There has been controversy over the question whether equitable rights in respect of property are *in personam* or *in rem*. This will be considered in § 94.

SUMMARY

- I. Rights { Perfect—enforceable by law.
 { Imperfect—recognised by law, but not enforceable.

The legal quality of rights against the state.

- II. Rights { Positive—correlative to positive duties and negative wrongs.
 { Negative—correlative to negative duties and positive wrongs.

- III. Rights { *In rem* or *in re*—correlative to duties of indeterminate incidence (almost all negative).
 { *In personam*—correlative to duties of determinate incidence (almost all positive).

Jura ad rem.

- IV. Rights { Proprietary—constituting a person's *estate* or property.
 { Personal—constituting a person's *status* or personal condition.

Other uses of the term *status*.

- V. Rights { *In re propria*.
 { *In re aliena*—*servitus*—encumbrance.

The natural limits of rights, distinguished from encumbrances.

The concurrence of the encumbrance and the right encumbered.

- Classes of encumbrances { 1. Leases.
 { 2. Servitudes.
 { 3. Securities.
 { 4. Trusts.

VI. Principal and Accessory Rights.

VII. Legal and Equitable Rights.

VIII. Primary and Sanctioning Rights.

CHAPTER 12

OWNERSHIP

§ 89. Incorporeal Ownership

OWNERSHIP, in its most comprehensive signification, denotes the relation between a person and any right that is vested in him. That which a man owns in this sense is in all cases a right. Ownership, in this wide sense, extends to all classes of rights, whether proprietary or personal, *in rem* or *in personam*, *in re propria* or *in re aliena*; and it applies not only to rights in the strict sense, but to liberties, powers, and immunities. I may own a debt, or a mortgage, or a share in a company, or money in the public funds, or a copyright, or a lease, or a right of way, or a power of appointment, or the fee simple of land. Every man is in this sense the owner of all the rights which are his.

Ownership, in its wide sense, as the relation in which a person stands to any right vested in him, is opposed to two other possible relations between a person and a right. It is opposed, in the first place, to possession. This very difficult juridical conception will be considered by us in the succeeding chapter. We shall see that the possession of a right (*possessio juris*, *Rechtsbesitz*) is the *de facto* relation of continuing exercise and enjoyment, as opposed to the *de jure* relation of ownership. A man may possess a right without owning it, as where the wrongful occupant of land makes use of a right of way or other easement appurtenant to it. Or he may own a right without possessing it. Or finally, ownership and possession may be united, as, indeed, they usually are, the *de jure* and the *de facto* relations being co-existent and coincident.

The ownership of a right is, in the second place, opposed to the encumbrance of it. The owner of the right is he in whom the right itself is vested, while the encumbrancer of it is he in whom is vested, not the right itself, but some adverse, dominant, and limiting right in respect of it. A may be the owner of property, B the lessee of it, C the sub-lessee, D the first mortgagee, E the second mortgagee, and so on indefinitely. Legal

nomenclature, however, does not supply separate names for every distinct kind of encumbrancer. There is no distinctive title, for example, by which we may distinguish from the owner of the property him who has an easement over it or the benefit of a covenant which runs with it.

Although encumbrance is thus opposed to ownership, every encumbrancer is nevertheless himself the *owner* of the encumbrance. The mortgagee of the land is the owner of the mortgage. The lessee of the land is the owner of the lease. The mortgagee of the mortgage is the owner of the sub-mortgage. That is to say, he in whom an encumbrance is vested stands in a definite relation, not merely to it, but also to the right encumbered by it. Considered in relation to the latter, he is an encumbrancer, but considered in relation to the former, he is himself an owner.

In addition to this wide sense of the word ownership, which will here be distinguished by the name incorporeal ownership, is a narrow sense, which will be called corporeal ownership. This will be discussed in the next section. We shall then proceed to consider the distinctions between sole ownership and co-ownership, trust ownership and beneficial ownership, legal and equitable ownership, and vested and contingent ownership.

§ 90. Corporeal Ownership

Although the subject-matter of ownership in its wide sense is in all cases a right, there is a narrower sense of the term in which we speak of the ownership of material things. We speak of owning, acquiring, or transferring, not rights in land or chattels, but the land or chattels themselves. This was the original, and still is the commonest, meaning of the word "ownership". We may call it by the name "corporeal ownership" to distinguish it from the ownership of rights, which may be called "incorporeal ownership".

The use of the word ownership in its corporeal sense is not always permissible. I may be said to own the money in my hand, but as to that which is due to me, I own, not the money, but a right to it. In the one case I own the material coins; in the other the immaterial debt or *chose in action*. So I own my land, but merely a right of way over the land of my neighbour. How, then, is the line drawn between corporeal and incorporeal

ownership? The usage is to some extent arbitrary and uncertain. Speaking generally, however, we may say that the ownership of a material thing means the *jus in re propria* in respect of that thing (see § 86). No man is said to own a piece of land or a chattel, if his right over it is merely an encumbrance of some more general right vested in some one else. The ownership of a *jus in re aliena* is always incorporeal, even though the object of that right is a corporeal thing. I am not said to own a chattel merely because I own a right to have it transferred to me, or because I own a lien over it or a right to the temporary use of it. When, on the other hand, a right is not a mere encumbrance of another right—when it is a self-existent *jus in re propria*—the terminology of ownership is applicable to the material thing which is its subject matter.

It may be thought from the foregoing that all freehold interests except the fee simple (which latter is substantially equivalent to corporeal ownership) are mere encumbrances. The doctrine of estates has, however, led to their being regarded as "parts of ownership". There is the authority of statute for speaking of a tenant for life as a "limited owner" (a). For the purpose of the following pages the tenancy of land for an estate less than the fee simple must be regarded as a form of corporeal ownership no less than a tenancy in fee simple.

In its full and normal compass corporeal ownership is the right to the entirety of the lawful uses of a corporeal thing. This compass, however, may be limited to any extent by the adverse influences of *jura in re aliena* vested in other persons. The right of the owner of a thing may be all but eaten up by the dominant rights of lessees, mortgagees, and other encumbrancers. His ownership may be reduced to a mere name rather than a reality. Yet he none the less remains the owner of the *thing*, while all the others own nothing more than *rights* over it. For in him is vested that *jus in re propria* which, were all encumbrancers removed from it, would straightway expand to its normal dimensions as the *universum jus* of general and permanent use. He, then, is the owner of a material object, who has a

(a) Limited Owners Residences Act, 1870; Limited Owners Reservoirs etc. Act, 1877. Some lawyers would regard this as loose language, and Professor Hargreaves expresses the opinion that "words such as 'ownership' and its derivatives are not part of the language of land law" (1956) 19 M. L. R. 18).

right to the general or residuary uses of it (b), after the deduction of all special and limited rights of use vested by way of encumbrance in other persons.

It is always possible to express corporeal ownership in terms of incorporeal ownership. Ownership as a particular kind of right can be translated into ownership as a particular kind of relation to rights of all descriptions. Thus the proposition that A has ownership in a piece of land (where "ownership" is used in its corporeal sense) is precisely equivalent to the proposition that A has ownership in a *jus in re propria* in respect of that land (where "ownership" is used in its incorporeal sense). The converse, however, is not true. It is not always possible to express incorporeal ownership in terms of corporeal ownership. The translation is possible only where the incorporeal ownership is of a *jus in re propria*.

In the foregoing paragraphs it has been assumed that corporeal ownership is a right in respect of a material object. Strictly speaking, however, corporeal ownership is not so much one right as a bundle of rights, liberties, powers and immunities. The ownership of land, for instance, involves a right that others shall not trespass on the land or commit nuisances in respect of it, a privilege to go upon it oneself, to dig for minerals, and to build on it, a power to alienate it, and so on. There is no harm in speaking of corporeal ownership as a single right provided that we recognise that this is a simplification.

It should also be pointed out that the rights, liberties, etc., involved in corporeal ownership are chiefly *in rem*. Rights *in personam* in respect of a material object are not in themselves regarded as qualifying for corporeal ownership of the object (c) (d).

(b) Pollock, *Jurisprudence* (6th ed., 1929) 179-80: "Ownership may be described as the entirety of the powers of use and disposal allowed by law. . . . The owner of a thing is not necessarily the person who at a given time has the whole power of use and disposal; very often there is no such person. We must look for the person having the residue of all such power when we have accounted for every detached and limited portion of it; and he will be the owner even if the immediate power of control and use is elsewhere."

(c) Sir John Salmond's discussion of corporeal and incorporeal ownership, which has been somewhat altered in the present edition, has attracted a considerable amount of attention and some criticism. The present editor has rejected all criticisms except one. (1) The first criticism is directed to the author's choice of the terms "corporeal ownership" and "incorporeal ownership". All ownership, it is urged is incorporeal. Ownership is an abstract

(d) See note (d), p. 304.

§ 91. Corporeal and Incorporeal Things

Closely connected with the distinction between corporeal and incorporeal ownership is that between corporeal and incorporeal *things*. The term thing (*res*, *choses*, *Sache*) is used in three distinct senses by legal writers:—

1. In its first and simplest application it means merely a material object, regarded as the subject-matter of a right (*c*). According to this use, some rights are rights to or over things, and some are not. The owner of a house owns a thing; the owner of a patent does not.

2. In a second and wider sense the term thing includes every subject-matter of a right, whether a material object or not. In

conception; you cannot touch it or see it; it is not an empirical fact; it is not corporeal. This, however, is merely an objection to the author's choice of names, not to the validity of his analysis. When Salmond speaks of "corporeal ownership" he obviously does not mean that the ownership is corporeal; he means that the ownership in question is that of a corporeal object. If the critics dislike the term "corporeal ownership" they are at liberty to suggest a better one, but a terminological objection cannot disprove the analysis. (2) The second objection is that all ownership is of things. Salmond says that incorporeal ownership is of rights; but according to this criticism even incorporeal ownership is of things, only here they are *incorporeal things*. This criticism is again purely verbal. All that has happened is that the critic has translated the word "rights" into "incorporeal things". (3) It is objected that whereas the two forms of ownership are, according to Salmond, a relation between a person and a thing, and a relation between a person and a right, respectively, all legal relations are in truth between one legal person and another. The answer to this is that an affirmation of one relation is not a denial of another. One cannot prove that a man is not a brother by proving that he is a father. A relation is simply a mental coupling of two concepts, and one may couple a concept to a number of others in a variety of ways. There is therefore nothing amiss in saying that ownership is both a relation between a person and a thing or right and a relation between a person and another person. (4) Salmond thought that all ownership was, logically, a relation between a person and a right—i.e., that all ownership was incorporeal. Corporeal ownership he explained by saying that it was a metonymy, a figure of speech whereby the right was identified with the material thing which was its object. The present editor objected to this view in (1945) 61 L. Q. R. at 386, and he has taken the liberty of deleting it from the text. The objections are, first, that it is a mistake to suppose that a word cannot logically be used in two different senses, and second, that Salmond's explanation seems to suggest that incorporeal ownership is the original idea and corporeal ownership an extension of it, whereas the reverse is the case.

(d) For the extent to which corporeal ownership is recognised in English law see Maitland's articles on seisin in his *Collected Papers*, I. 329, 358, 407; Ames, "The Disseisin of Chattels", in *Essays in Anglo-American Legal History*, III. 541, and in his *Lectures on Legal History* (Cambridge, Mass., 1913) 172, 192; J. W. C. Turner, "Some Reflections on Ownership in English Law" (1941) 19 Can. B. Rev. 342; Kiralfy, "The Problem of a Law of Property in Goods" (1949), 12 M. L. R. 424.

(e) Austin, p. 358. German Civil Code, sect. 90: Sachen im Sinne des Gesetzes sind nur körperliche Gegenstände.

this signification every right is a right in or to some thing. A man's life, reputation, health, and liberty are things in law, no less than are his land and chattels (*f*). Things in this sense are either material or immaterial, but the distinction thus indicated must not be confounded with that now to be explained between things corporeal and incorporeal.

3. In a third and last application the term thing means whatever a man owns as part of his estate or property. It is any subject-matter of ownership within the sphere of proprietary or valuable rights. Now we have already seen that according to the current usage of speech ownership is sometimes that of a material object and sometimes that of a right. Things, therefore, as the objects of ownership, are of two kinds also. A corporeal thing (*res corporalis*) is the subject-matter of corporeal ownership; that is to say a material object. An incorporeal thing (*res incorporalis*) is the subject-matter of incorporeal ownership; or rather it is any proprietary right except that right of full dominion over a material object which is regarded as corporeal ownership. If I own a field and a right of way over another, my field is a *res corporalis* and my right of way is a *res incorporalis*. If I own a pound in my pocket and a right to receive another from my debtor, the first pound is a thing corporeal, and the right to receive the second is a thing incorporeal; it is that variety of the latter which is called, in the technical language of English law, a *chose in action* or thing in action; while the pound in my pocket is a *chose* or thing in possession (*g*).

It is clear that if literally interpreted, this distinction is illogical and absurd. We cannot treat in this way rights and the objects of rights as two species of one genus. If we use the term thing in each case to mean a right, then the right of an owner of land is just as incorporeal as is that of his tenant. On the other hand, if the term is to be taken in each case to

(*f*) *Vide supra*, § 76.

(*g*) This use of the term thing (*res*) and the distinction between *res corporalis* and *res incorporalis* are derived from Roman Law. Just. Inst. II. 2:—*Quaedam praeterea res corporales sunt, quaedam incorporales. Corporales eae sunt, quae sui naturae tangi possunt: veluti fundus, homo, vestis, aurum, argentum, et denique aliae res innumerabiles. Incorporales autem sunt, quae tangi non possunt. Qualia sunt ea, quae in jure consistunt: sicut hereditas, usufructus, obligationes quoquo modo contractae.*

For choses in action, see *infra*, § 168.

mean the object of a right, then the object of the tenant's right is just as corporeal as is that of his landlord. The only way out of the difficulty is to recognise that "incorporeal thing" is merely a technical term for a particular kind of right, and that this is altogether different from the physical thing that is referred to as a "corporeal thing" (h).

§ 92. Sole Ownership and Co-Ownership

As a general rule a right is owned by one person only at a time, but duplicate ownership is perfectly possible. Two or more persons may at the same time have the same right vested in them. This may happen in several distinct ways, but the simplest and most obvious case is that of co-ownership. Partners, for example, are co-owners of the chattels which constitute their stock-in-trade, of the lease of the premises on which their business is conducted, and of the debts owing to them by their customers. It is not correct to say that a right owned by co-owners is divided between them, each of them owning a separate part. The right is an undivided unity, which is vested at the same time in more than one person. If two partners have at their bank a credit balance of £1,000, there is one debt of £1,000 owing by the bank to both of them at once, not two separate debts of £500 due to each of them individually. Each partner is entitled to the whole sum, just as each would owe to the bank the whole of the firm's overdraft. The several ownership of a part is a different thing from the co-ownership of the whole. So soon as each of two co-owners begins to own a part of the right instead of the whole of it, the co-ownership has been dissolved into sole ownership by the process known as partition. Co-ownership involves the undivided integrity of the right owned.

Co-ownership, like all other forms of duplicate ownership, is possible only so far as the law makes provision for harmonising in some way the conflicting claims of the different owners *inter se*. In the case of co-owners the title of the one is rendered consistent with that of the other by the existence of reciprocal obligations of restricted use and enjoyment.

(h) The same explanation is applicable to the distinction between corporeal and incorporeal property. A person's property consists sometimes of material objects and sometimes of rights. As to the different uses of the term property, see *infra*, ch. 20.

Co-ownership may assume different forms by virtue of the different incidents attached to it by law. Its two chief kinds in English law are distinguished as ownership *in common* and *joint* ownership. The most important difference between these relates to the effect of the death of one of the co-owners. In ownership in common the right of a dead man descends to his successors like any other inheritable right. But on the death of one of two joint owners his ownership dies with him, and the survivor becomes the sole owner by virtue of his right of survivorship or *jus accrescendi*.

§ 93. Trust and Beneficial Ownership

A trust is a very important and curious instance of duplicate ownership. Trust property is that which is owned by two persons at the same time, the relation between the two owners being such that one of them is under an obligation to use his ownership for the benefit of the other. The former is called the trustee, and his ownership is trust-ownership; the latter is called the beneficiary, and his is beneficial ownership (i).

The trustee is destitute of any right of beneficial enjoyment of the trust property. His ownership, therefore, is a matter of form rather than of substance, and nominal rather than real. If we have regard to the essence of the matter rather than to the form of it, a trustee is not an owner at all, but a mere agent, upon whom the law has conferred the power and imposed the duty of administering the property of another person. In legal theory, however, he is not a mere agent but an owner. He is a person to whom the property of some one else is fictitiously attributed by the law, to the extent that the rights and powers thus vested in a nominal owner shall be used by him on behalf of the real owner. As between trustee and beneficiary, the law recognises the truth of the matter; as between these two, the

(i) He who owns property for his own use and benefit, without the intervention of any trustee, may be termed the *direct* owner of it, as opposed to a mere trustee on the one hand, and to a beneficial owner or beneficiary on the other. Thus if A owns land, and makes a declaration of trust in favour of B, the direct ownership of A is thereby changed into trust-ownership, and a correlative beneficial ownership is acquired by B. If A then conveys the land to B, the ownership of B ceases to be merely beneficial, and becomes direct.

Professor Campbell suggests the term "bare ownership" in place of "trust ownership". See (1940), 7 C. L. J., at 217-18.

property belongs to the latter and not to the former. But as between the trustee and third persons, the fiction prevails. The trustee is clothed with the rights of his beneficiary, and is so enabled to personate or represent him in dealings with the world at large.

The purpose of trusteeship is to protect the rights and interests of persons who for any reason are unable effectively to protect them for themselves. The law vests those rights and interests for safe custody, as it were, in some other person who is capable of guarding them and dealing with them, and who is placed under a legal obligation to use them for the benefit of him to whom they in truth belong. The chief classes of persons in whose behalf the protection of trusteeship is called for are four in number. In the first place, property may belong to persons who are not yet born; and in order that it may be adequately safeguarded and administered, it is commonly vested in the meantime in trustees, who hold and deal with it on account of its unborn owners. In the second place, similar protection is required for the property of those who lie under some incapacity in respect of the administration of it, such as infancy, lunacy, or absence. Thirdly, it is expedient that property in which large numbers of persons are interested in common should be vested in trustees. The complexities and difficulties which arise from co-ownership become so great, so soon as the number of co-owners ceases to be small, that it is essential to avoid them; and one of the most effective devices for this purpose is that scheme of duplicate ownership which we term a trust. Fourthly, when persons have conflicting interests in the same property (for example, an owner and an encumbrancer, or different kinds of encumbrancers) it is often advisable that the property should be vested in trustees, whose power and duty it is to safeguard the interests of each of those persons against the conflicting claims of the others.

A trust is to be distinguished from two other relations which resemble it. It is to be distinguished, in the first place, from a mere contractual obligation to deal with one's property on behalf of some one else. A trust is more than an obligation to use one's property for the benefit of another; it is an obligation to use it for the benefit of another in whom it is already concurrently vested. The beneficiary has more than a mere personal

right against his trustee to the performance of the obligations of the trust. He is himself an owner of the trust property. That which the trustee owns the beneficiary owns also. If the latter owned nothing save the personal obligation between the trustee and himself, there would be no trust at all. Thus if a husband gratuitously covenants with his wife to settle certain property upon her, he remains the sole owner of it, until he has actually transferred it in fulfilment of his contract; and in the meantime the wife owns nothing save the contractual obligation created by the covenant. There is therefore no trust. If, on the other hand, the husband declares himself a trustee of the property for his wife, the effect is very different. Here also he is under a personal obligation to transfer the property to her, but this is not all. The beneficial ownership of the property passes to the wife forthwith, yet the ownership of the husband is not destroyed. It is merely transformed into a trust-ownership consistent with the concurrent beneficial title of his wife.

In the second place, a trust is to be distinguished from the relation in which an agent stands towards the property which he administers on behalf of his principal. In substance, indeed, as already indicated, these two relations are identical, but in form and in legal theory they are essentially different. In agency the property is vested solely in the person on whose behalf the agent acts, but in trusteeship it is vested in the trustee himself, no less than in the beneficiary. A trustee is an agent for the administration of property, who is at the same time the nominal owner of the property so administered by him. A trustee can give a good title to a *bona fide* purchaser of the legal estate for value without notice of the trust, while an agent cannot do so except under the Factors Act or one of the other exceptions to the principle *Nemo dat quod non habet*. An agent must, in general, carry out the instructions of his principal, while a trustee frequently has considerable discretion so long as he keeps within the terms of the trust instrument. A trust always involves property that is the subject-matter of the trust, while agency need not necessarily do so. An agent can create direct obligations between his principal and a third person, while the acts of a trustee acting as such never do this—he can affect only the property (and therefore the beneficiaries' interests indirectly) and

cannot impose new duties upon the beneficiaries towards third persons (*k*).

A trust is created by any act or event which separates the trust-ownership of any property from the beneficial ownership of it, and vests them in different persons. Thus the direct owner of property may declare himself a trustee for some one else, who thereupon becomes the beneficial owner; or the direct owner may transfer the property to some one else, to hold it in trust for a third. In many cases trusts arise without any intention to create them, where a person holds property in circumstances that make it inequitable for him to disregard the claims of others to the benefit of it. These are called "constructive trusts". Conversely, a trust is destroyed by any act or event which reunites in the same hands the two forms of ownership which have become thus separated. The trustee, for example, may transfer the property to the beneficiary, who then becomes the direct owner; or the beneficiary may transfer it to his trustee, with the like result.

Trust-ownership and beneficial ownership are independent of each other in their destination and disposition. Either of them may be transferred, while the other remains unaffected. The trustee may assign to another, who thereupon becomes a trustee in his stead, while the beneficiary remains the same; or the beneficiary may assign to another, while the trust-ownership remains where it was. In like manner, either kind of ownership may be independently encumbered. The trustee may, in pursuance of the powers of the trust, lease or mortgage the property without the concurrence of the beneficiary; and the beneficiary may deal in the same way with his beneficial ownership independently of the trustee.

Whenever the beneficial ownership has been encumbered, either by the creator of the trust or by the beneficial owner himself, the trustee holds the property not only on behalf of the beneficial owner but also on behalf of the beneficial encumbrancers. That is to say, the relation of trusteeship exists between the trustee and all persons beneficially interested in the property, either as owners or encumbrancers. Thus if property is transferred to A, in trust for B for life, with remainder to C, A is a trustee not merely for C, the beneficial owner, but also for B, the beneficial encumbrancer. Both are beneficiaries of the trust, and between the trustee and each of them there exists the bond of a trust-obligation.

§ 94. Legal and Equitable Ownership

Closely connected but not identical with the distinction between trust and beneficial ownership is that between legal and

(*k*) See further on the distinction between trusts and other relations. Ashburner, *Equity* (2nd ed. 1933) 84-7.

equitable ownership. One person may be the legal and another the equitable owner of the same thing or the same right at the same time. Legal ownership is that which has its origin in the rules of the common law, while equitable ownership is that which proceeds from rules of equity divergent from the common law. The courts of common law refused to recognise equitable ownership, and denied that the equitable owner was an owner at all. The Court of Chancery adopted a very different attitude. Here the legal owner was recognised no less than the equitable, but the former was treated as a trustee for the latter. Chancery vindicated the prior claims of equity, not by denying the existence of the legal owner, but by taking from him by means of a trust the beneficial enjoyment of his property. The fusion of law and equity effected by the Judicature Act, 1873, has not abolished this distinction; it has simply extended the doctrines of the Chancery to the courts of common law, and as equitable ownership did not extinguish or exclude legal ownership in Chancery, it does not do so now.

The distinction between legal and equitable ownership is not identical with that mentioned in a previous chapter as existing between legal and equitable *rights*. These two forms of ownership would still exist even if all rights were legal. The equitable ownership of a legal right is a different thing from the ownership of an equitable right. Law and equity are discordant not merely as to the *existence* of rights, but also as to the *ownership* of the rights which they both recognise. When a debt is orally assigned by A to B, A remains the legal owner of it none the less, but B becomes the equitable owner of it. But there are not for that reason *two* debts. There is only one as before, though it has now two owners. So if A, the legal owner of a share in a company, makes a declaration of trust in favour of B, B becomes forthwith the equitable owner of the share; but it is the same share as before, and not another. The thing which he thus equitably owns is a legal right, which is at the same time legally owned by A. Similarly the ownership of an equitable mortgage is a different thing from the equitable ownership of a legal mortgage.

Nor is the distinction between legal and equitable ownership merely equivalent to that between trust and beneficial ownership. It is true that, whenever the legal estate is in one man and the equitable estate in another, there is a trust. A legal owner is always a trustee for the equitable owner, if there is one. But an equitable owner may himself be merely a trustee for another person. A man may settle upon trust his equitable interest in a trust fund, or his equitable

estate in his mortgaged land. In such a case neither trustee nor beneficiary will have anything more than equitable ownership.

If an equitable owner can be a trustee, can a legal owner be a beneficiary? As the law now stands, he cannot. But this is a mere accident of historical development, due to the fact that the courts of common law refused to recognise trusts at all. There is no more theoretical difficulty in allowing that a trustee and his beneficiary may both be legal owners, than in allowing that they may both be equitable owners. Had the courts of common law worked out a doctrine of trusts for themselves this twofold legal ownership would have actually existed.

The practical importance of the distinction between legal and equitable ownership is the same as that already indicated as pertaining to the distinction between legal and equitable rights (l).

Hitherto it has been assumed that the terms "beneficial ownership" and "equitable ownership" are a proper use of language, i.e., that they conform to the usual idea of ownership. Something more must now be said in defence of this position. Originally it was hardly possible to speak of equitable ownership, in the corporeal sense of the word "ownership", because the rights of the beneficiary were enforced only against a restricted class of persons, and, as we have seen, the notion of corporeal ownership presupposes rights, liberties, powers and so on *in rem*, not merely *in personam*. The protection of the beneficiary was, however, greatly extended in the course of time (m). At first his rights availed only against the trustee himself; later they were extended against the trustee's heir and personal representatives, his creditors, donees from him, purchasers from him with notice of the equitable interest, and others, until finally it became true to say that equitable rights availed against every one except a *bona fide* purchaser of the legal estate for value without notice, actual or constructive, of the equitable rights (n). Notwithstanding this development there are still some writers who take the traditional view that all equitable rights are *in personam* and that equitable ownership, at least in the sense of corporeal ownership, is impossible (o). Others content themselves

(l) *Vide supra*, § 88.

(m) See on the development Maitland, *Equity* (revised ed. 1936) 112—114.

(n) *Re Nisbet and Pott's Contract*, [1906] 1 Ch. 386.

(o) Among the writers who have taken this view are Coke, Langdell, Ames, Maitland and Holland. For specialised discussions see Hart, "The Place of Trust in Jurisprudence" (1912), 28 L. Q. R. 290; Stone, "The Nature of the Rights of the *Cestui que Trust*" (1917), 17 Col. L. Rev. 467; Williams in (1952), 30 Can. Bar Rev. 1004; Valentine Latham in (1954), 32 *ibid.*, 520.

with saying that equitable rights are neither purely *in rem* nor purely *in personam* but are *sui generis* or hybrids (p). The latter view, however, does not assist in solving the practical questions to which the distinction gives rise, as for example in the field of conflict of laws. Suppose that the beneficiary under a trust of land dies domiciled in a different country from that in which the land is situated. According to which system of law will his interest devolve? The rule of the conflict of laws is that land devolves according to the *lex situs*; hence if the beneficiary is regarded as having an interest in the land itself, his interest will presumably devolve according to the law of the place where the land is situated. If on the other hand the beneficiary is regarded as having a mere right *in personam* against the trustee and other particular persons, his interest will presumably devolve in the same way as other rights that are not regarded as existing in respect of land, namely in accordance with the *lex domicilii*. The law must settle this question one way or the other, and cannot content itself simply with saying that equitable rights are hybrids. On the whole it is submitted that equitable rights are now best regarded as being fully *in rem* (q).

§ 95. Vested and Contingent Ownership

Ownership is either vested or contingent. It is vested when the owner's title is already perfect; it is contingent when his title is as yet imperfect, but is capable of becoming perfect on the fulfilment of some condition. In the former case he owns the right absolutely; in the latter he owns it merely conditionally. In the former case the investitive fact from which he derives the right is complete in all its parts; in the latter it is incomplete, by reason of the absence of some necessary element, which is nevertheless capable of being supplied in the future. In the meantime, therefore, his ownership is contingent, and it will not become vested until the necessary condition is fulfilled. A testator, for example, may leave property to his wife for her life, and on her death to A, if he is then alive, but if A is then dead,

(p) So Pollock in (1912), 28 L. Q. R. at 297; Hanbury, *Essays in Equity* (1934) 26-7, 51.

(q) For a presentation of this view see Scott, "The Nature of the Rights of the *Cestui que Trust*" (1917), 17 Col. L. Rev. 269; cf. Hohfeld, *op. cit.* 156-9. A taxation case that bears it out is *Baker v. Archer-Shee*, [1927] A. C. 844.

to B. A and B are both owners of the property in question, but their ownership is merely contingent. That of A is conditional on his surviving the testator's widow; while that of B is conditional on the death of A in the widow's lifetime.

In English law an estate may be vested even though it does not give a right to immediate possession. Thus on a devise to A for life with remainder to B in fee simple, B's interest is vested because there is nothing but A's prior interest to stand between him and the actual enjoyment of the land. In technical language, B's interest is vested in interest, though not vested in possession; it becomes vested in possession only on the death of A.

An estate may be vested in interest although the facts may be such that it never becomes vested in possession, and so never gives a right to the actual enjoyment of the land. Thus on a devise to A for life with remainder to B for life with remainder to C in fee simple, B's estate is vested in interest notwithstanding that if B dies before A his interest will never vest in possession. For there is still nothing but A's estate between B and the enjoyment of the land.

The contingent *ownership* of a right does not necessarily involve its contingent *existence*. It need not be a contingent right, because it is contingently owned. Shares and other choses in action may have an absolute existence, though the ownership of them may be contingently and alternatively in A and B. Money in a bank may be certainly owing to some one, though it may depend on a condition, whether it is owing to C or D. On the other hand, it may be that the right is contingent in respect of its existence, no less than in respect of its ownership. This is so whenever there is no alternative owner, and when, therefore, the right will belong to no one unless it becomes vested in the contingent owner by the fulfilment of the condition.

It is to be noticed that the contingent ownership of a right is something more than a simple chance or possibility of becoming the owner of it. It is more than a mere *spes acquisitionis*. I have no contingent ownership of a piece of land merely because I may buy it, if I so wish; or because peradventure its owner may leave it to me by his will. Contingent ownership is based not upon the mere possibility of future acquisition, but upon the present existence of an inchoate or incomplete title.

The conditions on which contingent ownership depends are termed conditions *precedent* to distinguish them from another kind known as conditions *subsequent*. A condition precedent is one by the fulfilment of which an inchoate title is completed; a condition subsequent is one on the fulfilment of which a title already completed is extinguished. In the former case I acquire absolutely what I have already acquired conditionally. In the latter case I lose absolutely what I have already lost conditionally. A condition precedent involves an inchoate or incomplete investitive fact; a condition subsequent involves an incomplete or inchoate divestitive fact (r). He who owns property subject to a power of sale or power of appointment vested in some one else owns it subject to a condition subsequent. His title is complete, but there is already in existence an incomplete divestitive fact, which may one day complete itself and cut short his ownership.

It is to be noticed that ownership subject to a condition subsequent is not contingent but vested. The condition is attached not to the commencement of vested ownership, but to the continuance of it. Contingent ownership is that which is not yet vested, but may become so in the future; while ownership subject to a condition subsequent is already vested, but may be divested and destroyed in the future. It is ownership already vested, but liable to premature determination by the completion of a divestitive fact which is already present in part (s).

It is clear that two persons may be contingent owners of the same right at the same time. The ownership of each is alternative to that of the other. The ownership of one is destined to become vested, while that of the other is appointed to destruction. Similarly, the vested ownership of one man may co-exist with the contingent ownership of another. For the event which in the future will vest the right in the one, will at the same time divest it from the other. Thus a testator may leave property to his wife, with a provision that if she marries again, she shall forfeit it in favour of his children. His widow will have the vested

(r) On investitive and divestitive facts, see ch. 16, § 123.

(s) English law draws a technical distinction between estates subject to a condition subsequent and determinable estates. The distinction turns merely upon the form of words used to create the respective estates, but when an estate is classified as the one or the other, certain legal consequences follow: see (1945), 61 L. Q. R. 79.

ownership of the property, and his children the contingent ownership at the same time. Her marriage is a condition subsequent in respect of her own vested ownership, and a condition precedent in respect of the contingent ownership of the children (t).

SUMMARY

Ownership	}	The three beneficial relations between persons and rights.
Possession		
Encumbrance		

The kinds of Ownership.

1. Corporeal and incorporeal.

The ownership of things and that of rights.

The ownership of rights and the right of ownership.

Res corporales and *res incorporales*.

Different uses of the term *res* or thing.

(a) A material object.

(b) The object of a right.

Material and immaterial things.

(c) The object of ownership.

Corporeal and incorporeal things.

2. Sole ownership and co-ownership.

Joint ownership and ownership in common.

3. Trust and beneficial ownership.

The nature of trusts.

The purposes of trusts.

4. Legal and equitable ownership.

5. Vested and contingent ownership.

Conditions precedent and subsequent.

Contingent and determinable ownership.

(t) On vested and contingent ownership, see Windscheid, I. sects. 86—95; Dernburg, *Pandekten*, I. 82, 105—112; Austin, *Lecture* 53; Kocourek, *Jural Relations* (2nd ed. 1928) ch. 14.

CHAPTER 13

POSSESSION (a)

§ 96. Introduction

IN the whole range of legal theory there is no conception more difficult than that of possession. The Roman lawyers brought their usual acumen to the analysis of it, and since their day the problem has formed the subject of a voluminous literature, while it still continues to tax the ingenuity of jurists. Nor is the question one of mere curiosity or scientific interest, for its practical importance is not less than its difficulty. The legal consequences which flow from the acquisition and loss of possession are many and serious. Possession, for example, is evidence of ownership; the possessor of a thing is presumed to be the owner of it, and may put all other claimants to proof of their title. Long possession is a sufficient title even to property which originally belonged to another. The transfer of possession is one of the chief methods of transferring ownership (b). The first possession of a thing which as yet belongs to no one is a good title of right. Even in respect of property already owned, the wrongful possession of it is a good title for the wrongdoer, as against all the world except the true owner. Possession is of such efficacy, also, that a possessor may in many cases confer a good title on another, even though he has none himself; as when I obtain a banknote from a thief, or goods from a factor who disposes of them in fraud of his principal. These are some, though only some, of the results which the law attributes to possession, rightful or wrongful. They are sufficient to show the importance of this conception, and the necessity of an adequate analysis of its essential nature.

(a) The leading monograph on the English law of possession is Pollock and Wright, *Possession in the Common Law*. See also Holmes, *The Common Law*, Lecture VI, and Kocourek, *Jural Relations* (2nd ed.) Chapter XX.

(b) In early law it was the only method, because of (1) "the incapacity of the primitive mind to conceive of a transfer of things without actual *traditio*", and (2) the necessity for proof. See Pollock and Maitland, *H. E. L.* (2nd ed.) II. 84; S. E. Thorne, "Livery of Seisin" (1936), 52 L. Q. R. 345.

§ 97. Possession in Fact and in Law

It is necessary to bear in mind from the outset the distinction between possession in fact and possession in law. We have to remember the possibility of more or less serious divergences between legal principles and the truth of things. Not everything which is recognised as possession by the law need be such in truth and in fact. And conversely the law, by reasons good or bad, may be moved to exclude from the limits of the conception facts which rightly fall within them. There are three possible cases in this respect. First, possession may and usually does exist both in fact and in law. The law recognises as possession all that is such in fact, and nothing that is not such in fact, unless there is some special reason to the contrary. Secondly, possession may exist in fact but not in law. Thus the possession by a servant of his master's property is for some purposes not recognised as such by the law, and he is then said to have detention or custody rather than possession. Thirdly, possession may exist in law but not in fact; that is to say, for some special reason the law attributes the advantages and results of possession to some one who as a matter of fact does not possess. The possession thus fictitiously attributed to him is by English lawyers termed *constructive*. The Roman lawyers distinguished possession in fact as *possessio naturalis*, and possession in law as *possessio civilis* (c).

In consequence of this divergence, partly intentional and avowed, partly accidental and unavowed, between the law and the fact of possession, it is impossible that any abstract theory should completely harmonise with the detailed rules to be found in any concrete body of law. Such harmony would be possible only in a legal system which had developed with absolute logical rigour, undisturbed by historical accidents, and unaffected by any of those special considerations which in all parts of the law prevent the inflexible and consistent recognition of general principles.

It follows from this discordance between law and fact, that

(c) Possession in law is sometimes used in a narrow sense to denote possession which is such in law *only* and not both in law and in fact—that is to say, to denote constructive possession (*possessio fictitia*). In the wider sense it denotes all possession which is recognised by the law, whether it does or does not at the same time exist in fact.

a complete theory of possession falls into two parts: first an analysis of the conception itself, and secondly an exposition of the manner in which it is recognised and applied in the actual legal system. It is with the first of those matters that we are here principally concerned; but reference will be made incidentally to the manner in which the conception is recognised in English law.

It is to be noticed that there are not two *ideas* of possession—a legal and a natural. Were this so, we could dispense altogether with the discussion of possession in fact. There is only one idea, to which the actual rules of law do more or less imperfectly conform. There is no conception which will include all that amounts to possession in law, and will include nothing else, and it is impossible to frame any definition from which the concrete law of possession can be logically deduced. Our task is merely to search for the idea which underlies this body of rules, and of which they are the imperfect and partial expression and application (d).

The complexities of the English law are increased by the curious circumstance that two distinct kinds of legal possession are recognised in that system. These are distinguished as *seisin* and *possession*. To a considerable extent they are governed by different rules and have different effects. I may have *seisin* of a piece of land but not *possession* of it, or *possession* but not *seisin*, or both at once; and in all those cases I may or may not at the same time have *possession* in fact. The doctrine of *seisin* is limited to land; it is one of the curiosities of that most curious of the products of the human intellect, the English law of real property. The doctrine of *possession*, on the other hand, is common, with certain variations, to land and chattels. The divergence between these two forms of possession in law is a matter of legal history, not of legal theory.

Extraordinary importance was until a comparatively recent period attributed by our law to the acquisition and retention of *seisin* by the owner of land. Without *seisin* his right was a mere shadow of ownership, rather than the full reality of it. For many purposes a man *had* only what he possessed—and the form of his possession must be that which amounted to *seisin*. A dispossessed owner was deprived of his most effective remedies; he could neither alienate his estate, nor leave it by his will; neither did his heirs inherit it after him.

(d) For a criticism of this idea of "possession in fact" see (1945), 61 L. Q. R. 390-1. The view there advanced is that "possession in fact" is a simplified and idealised theory of possession as it is found in a given legal system.

The tendency of modern law is to eliminate the whole doctrine of seisin, as an archaic survival of an earlier process of thought, and to recognise a single form of legal possession (e).

§ 98. Corporeal and Incorporeal Possession

We have seen in a former chapter that ownership is of two kinds, being either corporeal or incorporeal. A similar distinction is to be drawn in the case of possession. Corporeal possession is the possession of a material object—a house, a farm, a piece of money. Incorporeal possession is the possession of anything other than a material object—for example, a way over another man's land, the access of light to the windows of a house, a title of rank, an office of profit, and such like. All these things may be possessed as well as owned. The possessor may or may not be the owner of them, and the owner of them may or may not be in possession of them. They may have no owner at all, having no existence *de jure* and yet they may be possessed and enjoyed *de facto* (f).

Corporeal possession is termed in Roman law *possessio corporis*. Incorporeal possession is distinguished as *possessio juris*, the possession of a right, just as incorporeal ownership is the ownership of a right. The Germans distinguish in like fashion between *Sachenbesitz*, the possession of a material thing, and *Rechtsbesitz*, the possession of a right. The significance of this nomenclature and the nature of the distinction indicated by it will be considered by us later.

It is a question much debated whether incorporeal possession is in reality true possession at all. Some are of opinion that all genuine possession is corporeal, and that the other is related to it by way of analogy merely. They maintain that there is no single generic conception which includes *possessio corporis* and *possessio juris* as its two specific forms. The Roman lawyers speak with hesitation and even

(e) See, as to the idea of seisin and the consequences attributed to its presence or absence, a series of interesting articles by Maitland, "The Seisin of Chattels", "The Mystery of Seisin", and "The Beatitude of Seisin", *Collected Papers*, I, 329, 358, 407. See also Lightwood, *Possession of Land*, 4-8.

(f) The possession (seisin) of incorporeal things was prominent in medieval law. See Holdsworth, *H. E. L.*, III, 96-101. For a recognition of the idea in the law of prescription, see Limitation Act, 1939, ss. 10, 14, 31 (6); cf. *Mason v. Clarke*, [1955] A. C. 778, at 790, 794. Yet see *Nizam of Hyderabad v. Jung*, [1956] 3 W. L. R. 667, at 673, where Upjohn J. denied the possibility of possessing (the right to) a debt. For a criticism, see Campbell in (1940), 7 C. L. J. at 222-223.

inconsistency on the point. They sometimes include both forms under the title of *possessio*, while at other times they are careful to qualify incorporeal possession as *quasi possessio*—something which is not true possession, but is analogous to it. The question is one of no little difficulty, but the opinion here accepted is that the two forms do in truth belong to a single genus. The true idea of possession is wider than that of corporeal possession, just as the true idea of ownership is wider than that of corporeal ownership. The possession of a right of way is generically identical with the possession of the land itself, though specifically different from it.

In the following pages we shall consider first corporeal possession and then incorporeal possession.

§ 99. Corporeal Possession

Corporeal possession is clearly some form of continuing relation between a person and a material object. It is equally clear that it is a relation of fact and not one of right. It may be, and commonly is, a title of right; but it is not a right itself. A man may possess a thing in defiance of the law, no less than in accordance with it. Nor is this in any way inconsistent with the proposition, already considered by us, that possession may be such either in law or in fact. A thief has possession in law, although he has acquired it contrary to law. The law condemns his possession as wrongful, but at the same time recognises that it exists, and attributes to it most, if not all, of the ordinary consequences of possession (*g*).

What, then, is the exact nature of that continuing *de facto* relation between a person and a thing, which is known as possession? The answer is apparently this: *The possession of a material object is the continuing exercise of a claim to the exclusive use of it.* It involves, therefore, two distinct elements, one of which is mental or subjective, the other physical or objective. The one consists in the intention of the possessor with respect to the thing possessed, while the other consists in the external facts in which this intention has realised, embodied, or fulfilled itself. These two constituent elements of possession were distinguished by the Roman lawyers as *animus* and *corpus*, and the expressions are conveniently retained by modern writers.

(*g*) *Possessio* is the *de facto* relation between the possessor and the thing possessed. *Jus possessionis* is the right (if any) of which possession is the source or title. *Jus possidendi* is the right (if any) which a man has to acquire or to retain possession.

The subjective element is called more particularly the *animus possidendi*, *animus sibi habendi*, or *animus domini*.

Apiscimur possessionem, so runs a celebrated sentence of the Roman lawyer Paul (h), *corpore et animo, neque per se animo aut per se corpore*. Neither of these is sufficient by itself. Possession begins only with their union, and lasts only until one or other of them disappears. No claim or *animus*, however strenuous or however rightful, will enable a man to acquire or retain possession, unless it is effectually realised or exercised in fact. No mere intent to appropriate a thing will amount to the possession of it. Conversely, the *corpus* without the *animus* is equally ineffective. No mere physical relation of person to thing has any significance in this respect, unless it is the outward form in which the needful *animus* or intent has fulfilled and realised itself. A man does not possess a field because he is walking about in it, unless he has the intent to exclude other persons from the use of it. I may be alone in a room with money that does not belong to me lying ready to my hand on the table. I have absolute physical power over this money; I can take it away with me if I please; but I have no possession of it, for I have no such purpose with respect to it.

§ 100. The Animus Possidendi

We shall consider separately these two elements in the conception. And first of the *animus possidendi*. The intent necessary to constitute possession is the intent to exclude others from interfering with a material object. Whether or not the possessor intends to use the thing himself, he must intend to exclude the interference of other persons. As to this necessary mental attitude of the possessor there are the following observations to be made.

1. The *animus sibi habendi* is not necessarily a claim of right. It may be consciously wrongful. The thief has a possession no less real than that of a true owner. The possessor of a thing is not he who has, or believes that he has, a right to it, but he who intends to act as if he had such a right. To possession in good faith the law may and does allow special benefits which are cut

(h) D. 41. 2. 3. 1. The phrase is borrowed nearly word for word by Bracton (f. 38 b).

off by fraud, but to possession as such—the fulfilment of the self-assertive will of the individual—good faith is irrelevant.

2. The claim of the possessor must be exclusive. Possession involves an intent to exclude other persons from the uses of the thing possessed. A mere intent or claim of unexclusive use cannot amount to possession of the material thing itself, though it may and often does amount to some form of incorporeal possession. He who claims and exercises a right of way over another man's land is in possession of this right of way; but he is not in possession of the land itself, for he has not the necessary *animus* of exclusion.

The exclusion, however, need not be absolute. I may possess my land notwithstanding the fact that some other person, or even the public at large, possesses a right of way over it. For, subject to this right of way, my *animus possidendi* is still a claim of exclusive use. I intend to exclude all alien interference except such as is justified by the limited and special right of use vested in others (i). Furthermore, if a bailee intends to exclude the world at large from control of the chattel, his intent is enough for possession although he is willing to give up the chattel to its owner at any time.

3. The *animus possidendi* need not amount to a claim or intent to use the thing as owner. A tenant or a borrower may have possession no less real than that of the owner himself. Any degree or form of intended use, however limited in extent or in duration, may, if exclusive for the time being, be sufficient to constitute possession. Indeed, the *animus possidendi* need not be a claim to use the thing at all. Thus a pledgee, or a bailee with a lien, has possession, though he means merely to detain the thing until he is paid.

4. The *animus possidendi* need not be a claim on one's own behalf. I may possess a thing either on my own account or on account of another. A servant, agent, or trustee may have true possession, though he claims the exclusive use of the thing on behalf of another than himself (k).

(i) See also § 105, *infra*, on concurrent possession.

(k) It must be remembered that we are speaking of possession in *fact*. Whether possession in law and the various advantages conferred by it are to be attributed to all possessors in fact or only to some of them is a different question with which we are not here concerned. Roman law, save in exceptional cases, allowed *possessio corporis* only to those who possessed as

5. The *animus possidendi* need not be specific, but may be merely general. That is to say, it does not necessarily involve any continuous or present knowledge of the particular thing possessed or of the possessor's relation to it. A general intent with respect to a class of things is sufficient (if coupled with the necessary physical relation) to confer possession of the individual objects belonging to that class, even though their individual existence is unknown. Thus I possess all the books in my library, even though I may have forgotten the existence of many of them. So if I set nets to catch fish, I have a general intent and claim with respect to all the fish that come therein; and my ignorance whether there are any there or not does in no way affect my possession of such as are there. So I have a general purpose to possess my flocks and herds, which is sufficient to confer possession of their increase though unknown to me.

It might be thought that when a person has possession of a receptacle, such as a box, bag, cabinet or envelope, his possession of the receptacle automatically gives him possession of its contents. This, however, seems not to be so, at any rate for the purpose of the law of larceny. The principal cases are as follows.

In *Merry v. Green* (l) the plaintiff purchased a bureau at auction, and subsequently discovered money in it, hidden in a secret drawer and belonging to the vendor. The plaintiff thereupon appropriated the money; and it was held that in doing so he committed theft, as he obtained possession of the money not when he innocently bought the bureau, but when he fraudulently abstracted the contents of it.

In *Cartwright v. Green* (m) a bureau was delivered for the purpose of repairs to a carpenter, who discovered in a secret drawer money which he converted to his own use. It was held that he committed larceny, by feloniously taking the money into his possession.

It appears that in both these cases the recipient of the bureau neither knew nor suspected that there was anything inside. It seems, however, that the same rule applies even if the recipient knows or suspects that there is something inside, if he does not know exactly what is inside. In *R. v. Hudson* (n) the prisoner received a letter that was intended for someone else. He kept it for some days and then, on opening it, found inside a cheque, which he appropriated to his own use. The Court of Criminal Appeal held that he was guilty of larceny.

owners and on their own behalf. In English law, on the other hand, there is no such limitation of legal possession; though even here the possession of a *serpant* sometimes fails to obtain legal recognition.

(l) (1841), 7 M. & W. 623.

(m) (1803), 8 Ves. 405; 7 R. R. 99.

(n) [1943] K. B. 458, not following *R. v. Mucklow* (1827), 1 Moody C. C. 160.

The cheque did not in law pass into his possession until he realised what it was, and since at that moment he conceived the *animus furandi*, his act was larceny.

Notwithstanding the weight of authority for the rule, it is submitted that it is not satisfactory. In *R. v. Hudson* the prisoner must have supposed that the envelope contained a piece of paper of some sort, and it seems to be excessively subtle to say that, just because he did not realise that the piece of paper was a cheque, the cheque did not pass into his possession. As for the decision in *Merry v. Green*, it seems to involve a logical inconsistency. The report states that the bureau was an old one, and that neither the seller nor anyone else knew that the money was in the secret drawer. Nevertheless the property in the money was pleaded to be in the seller. If, as was held, the plaintiff did not come into possession of the money by buying the bureau, it is difficult to see how the seller had come into possession of the money when he for his part bought or otherwise acquired the bureau; and therefore it is difficult to see how the property in the money could be laid in the seller, for "property" in the law of larceny means possession. The logical consequence of saying that a person does not possess money in a secret drawer in a bureau in his possession, of the existence of which money he is ignorant, is that he is not protected by the criminal law against a *de facto* theft of the money. Obviously it is quite impossible for the law to take this view; but it was avoided in *Merry v. Green* only at the cost of a logical inconsistency. However the question of possession is decided, it is clear law that a person who buys an article is not entitled to retain an object of value which he finds hidden in the article, but must return it to the seller (o).

§ 101. The Corpus of Possession

To constitute possession the *animus domini* is not in itself sufficient, but must be embodied in a *corpus*. The will is sufficient only when manifested in an appropriate environment of fact, just as the fact is sufficient only when it is the expression and embodiment of the required intent and will. Possession is the effective realisation in fact of the *animus sibi habendi* (p). We shall consider the *corpus* of possession under two headings: (1) the relation of the possessor to other persons, and (2) the relation of the possessor to the thing possessed.

(o) *Thomas v. Greenslade*, *The Times*, November 6, 1954. See further, Holmes, *The Common Law*, pp. 224-226.

(p) An instructive case on the *corpus* of possession is *The Tubantia*, [1924] P. 78. The terms *animus* and *corpus* are sometimes used also in Rent Act cases, but there they do not necessarily bear the same meaning as in the law of tort and crime. See, e.g., *Brown v. Brash*, [1948] 2 K. B. 247 (C. A.); *Bushford v. Falco*, [1954] 1 W. L. R. 672 (C. A.).

§ 102. The Relation of the Possessor to other Persons

So far as other persons are concerned, I am in possession of a thing when the facts of the case are such as to create a reasonable expectation that I will not be interfered with in the use of it. I must have some sort of security for their acquiescence and non-interference. "The reality", it has been well said (*q*), "of *de facto* dominion is measured in inverse ratio to the chances of effective opposition." A security for enjoyment may, indeed, be of any degree of goodness or badness, and the prospect of enjoyment may vary from a mere chance up to moral certainty. At what point in the scale, then, are we to draw the line? What measure of security is required for possession. We can only answer: Any measure which normally and reasonably satisfies the *animus domini*. A thing is possessed, when it stands with respect to other persons in such a position that the possessor, having a reasonable confidence that his claim to it will be respected, is content to leave it where it is. Such a measure of security may be derived from many sources, of which the following are the most important (*r*).

1. *The physical power of the possessor.* The physical power to exclude all alien interference (accompanied of course by the needful intent) certainly confers possession; for it constitutes an effective guarantee of enjoyment. If I own a purse of money, and lock it up in a burglar-proof safe in my house, I certainly have possession of it. I have effectively realised my *animus possidendi*, for no one can lay a finger on the thing without my consent, and I have full power of using it myself.

Possession thus based on physical power may be looked on as the typical and perfect form. Many writers, however, go so far as to consider it the only form, defining possession as the intention, coupled with the physical power, of excluding all other persons from the use of a material object (*s*). This is far too narrow a view of the matter.

(*q*) Pollock and Wright, *Possession in the Common Law*, 14.

(*r*) "Absolute security for the future", says Dernburg, *Pandekten*, I. sect. 169, "is not requisite. For it is not to be had. . . . All that is necessary is that according to the ordinary course of affairs one is able to count on the continuing enjoyment of the thing." See also I. sect. 178. See also Pollock and Wright, *Possession*, 13: "That occupation is effective which is sufficient as a rule and for practical purposes to exclude strangers from interfering with the occupier's use and enjoyment."

(*s*) The theory here considered is that which has been made familiar by Savigny's celebrated treatise on Possession (*Recht des Besitzes*, 1803). The influence of this work was long predominant on the Continent and considerable in England, and it still finds no small amount of acceptance. A forcible statement of the objections to Savigny's doctrine is contained in Thering's *Grund des Besitzesschutzes*, 160—193.

What physical power of preventing trespass does a man acquire by making an entry upon an estate which may be some square miles in extent? Is it not clear that he may have full possession of land that is absolutely unfenced and unprotected, lying open to every trespasser? There is nothing to prevent even a child from acquiring effective possession as against strong men, nor is possession impossible on the part of him who lies in his bed at the point of death. If I stretch a net in the sea, do I not acquire the possession of the fish caught in it, so soon as they are caught? Yet every other fisherman that passes by has more power of excluding me than I have of excluding him. So if I set traps in the forest, I possess the animals which I catch in them, though there is neither physical presence nor physical power. If in my absence a vendor deposits a load of stone or timber on my land, do I not forthwith acquire possession of it? Yet I have no more physical power over it than any one else has. I may be a hundred miles from my farm, without having left any one in charge of it; but I acquire possession of the increase of my sheep and cattle.

In all such cases the assumption of physical power to exclude alien interference is no better than a fiction. The true test is not the physical power of preventing interference, but the improbability of any interference, from whatever source this improbability arises. Other sources may now be considered.

2. *The personal presence of the possessor.* This source of security must be distinguished from that which has just been mentioned. The two commonly coincide, indeed, but not necessarily. Bolts, bars, and stone walls will give me the physical power of exclusion without any personal presence on my part; and on the other hand there may be personal presence without any real power of exclusion. A little child has no physical power as against a grown man; yet it possesses the money in its hand. A dying man may retain or acquire possession by his personal presence, but certainly not by any physical power left in him. The occupier of a farm has probably no real physical power of preventing a trespass upon it, but his personal presence may be perfectly effective in restraining any such interference with his rights. The respect shown to a man's person will commonly extend to all things claimed by him that are in his immediate presence.

3. *Secrecy.* A third source of *de facto* security is secrecy. If a man will keep a thing safe from others, he may hide it; and he will gain thereby a reasonable guarantee of enjoyment and is just as effectively in possession of the thing, as is the strong man armed who keeps his goods in peace.

4. *Custom.* Such is the tendency of mankind to acquiesce in established usage, that we have here a further and important source of *de facto* security and possession. Did I plough and sow and reap the harvest of a field last year and the year before? Then unless there is something to the contrary, I may reasonably expect to do it again this year, and I am in possession of the field.

5. *Respect for rightful claims.* Possession is a matter of fact and not a matter of right. A claim may realise itself in the facts whether it is rightful or wrongful. Yet its rightfulness, or rather a public conviction of its rightfulness, is an important element in the acquisition of possession. A rightful claim will readily obtain that general acquiescence which is essential to *de facto* security, but a wrongful claim will have to make itself good without any assistance from the law-abiding spirit of the community. An owner will possess his property on much easier terms than those on which a thief will possess his plunder (t). The two forms of security, *de facto* and *de jure*, tend to coincidence. Possession tends to draw ownership after it, and ownership attracts possession.

6. *The manifestation of the animus domini.* An important element in the *de facto* security of a claim is the visibility of the claim. Possession essentially consists, it is true, not in the manifestation of the *animus*, but in the realisation of it. But a manifested intent is much more likely to obtain the security of general acquiescence than one which has never assumed a visible form. Hence the importance of such circumstances as entry, apprehension, and actual use (u).

7. *The protection afforded by the possession of other things.* The possession of a thing tends to confer possession of any other thing that is connected with the first or accessory to it. The possession of land confers a measure of security, which may amount to possession, upon all chattels situated upon it. The possession of a house may confer the possession of the chattels inside it. The possession of a box or packet may bring with it the possession of its contents. Not necessarily, however, in any of those cases. A man effectually gives delivery of a load of bricks by depositing them on my land, even in my absence; but he could not deliver a roll of banknotes by laying them upon my doorstep. In the former case the position of the thing is normal and secure; in the latter it is abnormal and insecure.

Notwithstanding some judicial dicta to the contrary, it does not seem to be true, at any rate as a proposition of fact, that the possession of land necessarily confers possession of all chattels that are on or under it. Whether the possession of one thing will bring with it the possession of another that is thus connected with it depends upon the circumstances of the particular case. A chattel may be upon my land, and yet I shall have no possession of it unless the *animus* and *corpus possessionis* both exist. I may have no *animus*; as when my neighbour's sheep, with or without my knowledge, stray into my field. There may be no *corpus*;

(t) Pollock and Wright, *Possession*, 15: "Physical or *de facto* possession readily follows the reputation of title."

(u) In the words of Ihering: "The visibility of possession is of decisive importance for its security." *Grund des Besitzschutzes*, 190.

as when I lose a jewel in my garden, and cannot find it again. There may be neither *corpus* nor *animus*; as when, unknown to me, there is a jar of coins buried somewhere upon my estate.

The rules of English law on this subject have occasioned much dispute, but at least one rule is reasonably clear.

(1) In the words of Pollock and Wright, "the possession of land carries with it in general, by our law, possession of everything which is attached to or under that land" (a). These words were quoted with approval by Lord Russell of Killowen in *South Staffordshire Waterworks Co. v. Sharman* (b), where the defendant was employed by the plaintiff company to clean out a pond upon their land, and in doing so he found certain gold rings at the bottom of it. It was held that the company was in first possession of these rings, and the defendant, therefore, had acquired no title to them.

Similarly in *Elwes v. Brigg Gas Co.* (c) the defendant company took a lease of land from the plaintiff for the purpose of erecting gas works, and in the process of excavation found a prehistoric boat six feet below the surface. It was held that the boat belonged to the landlord, and not to the tenants who discovered it. Chitty, J., says of the plaintiff: "Being entitled to the inheritance . . . and in lawful possession, he was in possession of the ground, not merely of the surface, but of everything that lay beneath the surface down to the centre of the earth, and consequently in possession of the boat. . . . In my opinion it makes no difference in these circumstances that the plaintiff was not aware of the existence of the boat" (d).

(2) It is doubtful whether a person is regarded as possessing in law a thing that is lying unattached on the surface of his land, or in his house, where the thing is not possessed by someone else.

In *Bridges v. Hawkesworth* (e) a parcel of banknotes was dropped on the floor of the defendant's shop, where they were found by the plaintiff, a customer. It was held that the plaintiff had a good title to them as against the defendant. For the plaintiff, and not the defendant, was the first to acquire possession of them. The defendant had not the necessary *animus*, for he did not know of their existence.

In *R. v. Moore* (f) a banknote was dropped in the shop of the

(a) *Possession in the Common Law*, 41.

(b) [1895] 2 Q. B. 44.

(c) (1886), 33 Ch. D. 562.

(d) Sir John Salmond argued that these cases do not necessarily support the view that possession of the chattel went with the possession of the land. He explained *Sharman's Case* on the ground that a person who finds as servant or agent for another, finds not for himself but for his employer. And he explained *Elwes v. Brigg Gas Co.* on the ground that the defendant company obtained the boat only by an act of trespass. Neither of these points were taken in the judgments, which proceeded on the principle that Salmond denied: see text and note (k), *infra*.

(e) (1851), 21 L. J. Q. B. 75.

(f) (1861), L. & C. 1.

prisoner, who on discovering it, picked it up and converted it to his own use, well knowing that the owner could be found. It was held that he was rightly convicted of larceny; from which it follows that he was not in possession of the note until he actually discovered it.

These two cases may seem to decide that a person who occupies a building does not for that reason alone possess things in the building; and from this it would follow *a fortiori* that a person who occupies land does not for that reason alone possess things that are loose on the surface of the land. The cases are not, however, very satisfactory. In *R. v. Moore* the question here discussed was neither argued by counsel nor noticed by the court. As for *Bridges v. Hawkesworth*, the judgment of Pattenon, J., is not at all explicit. Apparently it goes the whole length of saying that the occupier of a building does not possess things that have been left by another in the building, unless they were "intentionally deposited there". The last phrase seems to mean that the goods must have been deposited in the building with the purpose of putting them in the possession or under the charge of the occupier, as where a railway company delivers goods to the premises of the consignee, or where a guest at an inn deposits his luggage in his bedroom. This sweeping denial of possession in the occupier does not seem to have commended itself to most lawyers, for several attempts have been made to whittle it down by "explanations". Thus, Lord Russell of Killowen justified the decision in *Bridges v. Hawkesworth* by reference to the fact that the notes were found "in the public part of the shop" (g). This ground seems also to have been taken by Holmes, who suggested that there was no intent to exclude others from the place where the pocket-book was (h). Pollock and Wright expressed the matter rather differently by suggesting that the shopkeeper had no *de facto* control (i). Sir John Salmond, on the other hand, took the completely different point that the shopkeeper did not know of the existence of the notes, and so had no *animus*. None of these points was taken in the judgments. Dr. Goodhart, after a full discussion, makes bold to suggest that the case was wrongly decided (k), and it is submitted that this is the better opinion. From a practical point of view it is best to award possession to the occupier of the place where the thing is found, because in this way the loser, if he guesses where he dropped it, is most likely to come by his chattel again.

The more recent cases do not clarify the law to any appreciable extent, because they are in conflict and fail to consider some of the relevant authorities. *Bridges v. Hawkesworth* was followed in *Hannah v. Peel* (l),

(g) *South Staffordshire Waterworks Co. v. Sharman*, [1896] 2 Q. B. 44 at 47.

(i) *Possession in the Common Law*, 37 ff.

(k) "Three Cases on Possession", *Essays in Jurisprudence and the Common Law*, 75.

(l) [1945] K. B. 509. See the note by Winfield in (1945), 61 L. Q. R. 333, suggesting that the decision should have been based on the ground that the freeholder never had possession of the building before the discovery of the article.

and extended to a person who found a brooch in a house. Yet an opposite conclusion was reached in *Re Cohen* (m), where *Bridges v. Hawkesworth* does not appear to have been cited or considered.

§ 103. Relation of the Possessor to the Thing Possessed

The second element in the *corpus possessionis* is the relation of the possessor to the thing possessed, the first being that which we have just considered, namely, the relation of the possessor to other persons. To constitute possession the *animus domini* must realise itself in both of those relations. The necessary relation between the possessor and the thing possessed is such as to admit of his making such use of it as accords with the nature of the thing and of his claim to it. There must be no barrier between him and it, inconsistent with the nature of the claim he makes to it. If I desire to catch fish, I have no possession of them till I have them securely in my net or on my line. Till then my *animus domini* has not been effectively embodied in the facts.

(m) [1955] 1 W. L. R. 303. See for a further discussion David Riesman, Jr., "Possession and the Law of Finders" (1939), 52 H. L. R. 1105; Marshall in (1949), 2 *Current Legal Problems*, 68.

CHAPTER 14

POSSESSION (continued)

§ 104. Immediate and Mediate Possession

ONE person may possess a thing for and on account of some one else. In such a case the latter is in possession by the agency of him who so holds the thing on his behalf. The possession thus held by one man through another may be termed *mediate*, while that which is acquired or retained directly or personally may be distinguished as *immediate* or *direct*. If I go myself to purchase a book, I acquire direct possession of it; but if I send my servant to buy it for me, I acquire mediate possession of it through him, until he has brought it to me, when my possession becomes immediate.

Of mediate possession there are three kinds (a). The first is that which I acquire through an agent or servant; that is to say, through some one who holds solely on my account and claims no interest of his own. In such a case I undoubtedly acquire or retain possession; as, for example, when I allow my servant to use my tools in his work, or when I send him to buy or borrow a chattel for me, or when I deposit goods with a warehouseman who holds them on my account, or when I send my boots to a shoemaker to be repaired. In all such cases, though the immediate possession is in the servant, warehouseman, or artisan, the mediate possession is in me; for the immediate possession is held on my account, and my *animus domini* is therefore sufficiently realised in the facts.

The second kind of mediate possession is that in which the direct possession is in one who holds both on my account and on his own, but who recognises my superior right to obtain from him the direct possession whenever I choose to demand it. That is to

(a) The explicit recognition of mediate possession (*mittelbarer Besitz*) in its fullest extent is a characteristic feature of the German Civil Code (sects. 868—871): "If any one possesses a thing as usufructuary, pledgee, tenant, borrower, or depositary, or in any similar capacity by virtue of which he is entitled or bound with respect to some other person to keep possession of the thing for a limited time, then that other person has possession of it also (mediate possession)." See Dernburg, *Das bürgerliche Recht*, III. sect. 13. Windscheid, I. pp. 697—701.

say, it is the case of a borrower or tenant at will. I do not lose possession of a thing because I have lent it to some one who acknowledges my title to it and is prepared to return it to me on demand, and who in the meantime holds it and looks after it on my behalf. There is no difference in this respect between entrusting a thing to a servant or agent and entrusting it to a borrower. Through the one, as well as through the other, I retain as regards all other persons a due security for the use and enjoyment of my property. I myself possess whatever is possessed for me on those terms by another (b).

There is yet a third form of mediate possession, respecting which more doubt may exist, but which must be recognised by sound theory as true possession. It is the case in which the immediate possession is in a person who claims it for himself until some time has elapsed or some condition has been fulfilled, but who acknowledges the title of another for whom he holds the thing, and to whom he is prepared to deliver it when his own temporary claim has come to an end: as for example when I lend a chattel to another for a fixed time, or deliver it as a pledge to be returned on the payment of a debt. Even in such a case I retain possession of the thing, so far as third persons are concerned. The *animus* and the *corpus* are both present; the *animus*, for I have not ceased, subject to the temporary right of another person, to claim the exclusive use of the thing for myself; the *corpus*, inasmuch as through the instrumentality of the bailee or pledgee, who is keeping the thing safe for me, I am effectually excluding all other persons from it, and have thereby attained a sufficient security for its enjoyment. In respect of the effective realisation of the *animus domini*, there seems to be no essential difference between entrusting a thing to an agent, entrusting it to a bailee at will, and entrusting it to a bailee for a fixed term, or to a creditor by way of pledge. In all these cases I get the benefit

(b) In *Ancona v. Rogers* (1876), 1 Ex. D. at p. 292, it is said in the judgment of the Exchequer Chamber: "There is no doubt that a bailor who has delivered goods to a bailee to keep them on account of the bailor, may still treat the goods as being in his own possession, and can maintain trespass against a wrongdoer who interferes with them. It was argued, however, that this was a mere legal or constructive possession of the goods. . . . We do not agree with this argument. It seems to us that goods which have been delivered to a bailee to keep for the bailor, such as a gentleman's plate delivered to his banker, or his furniture warehoused at the Pantechnicon, would in a popular sense as well as in a legal sense be said to be still in his possession."

of the immediate possession of another person, who, subject to his own claim, if any, holds and guards the thing on my account. If I send a book to be bound, can my continued possession of it depend on whether the binder has or has not a lien over it for the price of the work done by him? If I lend a book to a friend, can my possession of it depend on whether he is to return it on demand or may keep it till to-morrow? Such distinctions are irrelevant, and in any alternative my possession as against third persons is unaffected.

The extent to which the above ideas are recognised in English law may be briefly noticed. An instance of mediate legal possession is to be found in the law of prescription. Title by prescription is based on long and continuous possession. But he who desires to acquire ownership in this way need not retain the *immediate* possession of the thing. He may let his land to a tenant for a term of years, and his possession will remain unaffected, and prescription will continue to run in his favour. If he desires to acquire a right of way by prescription, his tenant's use of it is equivalent to his own. For all the purposes of the law of prescription mediate possession in all its forms is as good as immediate. In *Haig v. West* (c) it is said by Lindley, L.J.: "The vestry by their tenants occupied and enjoyed the lanes as land belonging to the parish. . . . The parish have in our opinion gained a title to those parish lanes by the Statute of Limitations. The vestry have by their tenants occupied and enjoyed the lanes for more than a century."

In the case of chattels a further test of the legal recognition of mediate possession in all its forms is to be found in the law as to delivery by attornment. In *Elmore v. Stone* (d) A bought a horse from B, a livery stable keeper, and at the same time agreed that it should remain at livery with B. It was held that by this agreement the horse had been effectually delivered by B to A, though it had remained continuously in the physical custody of B. That is to say, A had acquired mediate possession, through the direct possession which B held on his behalf. The case of *Marvin v. Wallace* (e) goes still further. A bought a horse from B, and, without any change in the immediate possession, lent it to the seller to keep and use as a bailee for a month. It was held that the horse had been effectually delivered by B to A. This was mediate possession of the third kind, being acquired and retained through a bailee for a fixed term. Crompton, J., referring to *Elmore v. Stone*, says (f): "In the one case we have a bailment of a description different from the original

(c) [1893] 2 Q. B. 30, 31.

(d) (1809), 1 Taunt. 458; 10 R. R. 578.

(e) (1856), 6 El. & B. 726. See further Chalmers, *Sale of Goods Act*, 1893 (12th ed.) 29.

(f) At p. 735.

possession; here we have a loan; but in each case the possession of the bailee is the possession of the bailor; it would be dangerous to distinguish between such cases."

In larceny, where a chattel is stolen from a bailee, the "property", i.e., the possession that has been violated, may be laid either in the bailor or in the bailee, at any rate where the bailment is revocable by the bailor at his pleasure either unconditionally or upon a condition that he may satisfy at will (*g*). A bailor at will can also bring a civil action of trespass where a chattel is taken from his bailee (*h*); but a bailor for a term cannot do so (*i*). Thus the third form of mediate possession is not recognised for the purpose of the action of trespass. Also, where land is let, whether for a term of years or at will, the landlord cannot bring trespass so long as he is out of immediate possession; but after re-entry he can recover damages in respect of acts done even while he was out of possession (*k*).

In all cases of mediate possession two persons are in possession of the same thing at the same time. Every mediate possessor stands in relation to a direct possessor through whom he holds. If I deposit goods with an agent, he is in possession of them as well as I. He possesses for me, and I possess through him. A similar duplicate possession exists in the case of master and servant, landlord and tenant, bailor and bailee, pledgor and pledgee. There is, however, an important distinction to be noticed. For some purposes mediate possession exists as against third persons only, and not as against the immediate possessor. Immediate possession, on the other hand, is valid as against all the world, including the mediate possessor himself. Thus if I deposit goods with a warehouseman, I retain possession as against all other persons; because as against them I have the benefit of the warehouseman's custody. But as between the warehouseman and myself, he is in possession and not I. For as against him I have in no way realised my *animus possidendi* nor in any way obtained a security of use and enjoyment. So in the case of a pledge, the debtor continues to possess *quoad* the world at large; but as between debtor and creditor, possession is in the latter. The debtor's possession is mediate and relative; the

(*g*) Pollock and Wright, *Possession in the Common Law*, 145, 166; Archbold, *Criminal Pleading, Evidence and Practice* (33rd ed.) § 86.

(*h*) Salmond, *Torts* (11th ed.) 360. For the history see Holdsworth, *H. E. L.*, III. 348, VII. 430.

(*i*) *Gordon v. Harper* (1796), 7 T. R. 9.

(*k*) Salmond, *Torts* (11th ed.) 235-236.

creditor's is immediate and absolute. So also with landlord and tenant, bailor and bailee, master and servant, principal and agent, and all other cases of mediate possession.

Here also we may find a test in the operation of prescription. As between landlord and tenant, prescription, if it runs at all, will run in favour of the tenant; but at the same time it may run in favour of the landlord as against the true owner of the property. Let us suppose, for example, that possession for twelve years will in all cases give a good title to land, and that A takes wrongful possession of land from X, holds it for six years, and then allows B to have the gratuitous use of it as tenant at will. In six years more A will have a good title as against X, for, as against him, A has been continuously in possession. But in yet another six years B, the tenant, will have a good title as against his landlord, A, for as between these two the possession has been for twelve years in B (1).

To put the matter in a general form, prescription runs in favour of the immediate against the mediate possessor, but in favour of the mediate possessor as against third persons.

On the other hand, the transfer of the mediate possession of goods is regarded as a "delivery" of the goods even as between the two parties to the transfer.

§ 105. Concurrent Possession

It was a maxim of the civil law that two persons could not be in possession of the same thing at the same time. *Plures eandem rem in solidum possidere non possunt* (m). As a general proposition this is true; for exclusiveness is of the essence of possession. Two adverse claims of exclusive use cannot both be effectually realised at the same time. Claims, however, which are not adverse, and which are not, therefore, mutually destructive, admit of concurrent realisation. Hence there are several possible cases of duplicate possession.

1. Mediate and immediate possession coexist in respect of the same thing as already explained.

2. Two or more persons may possess the same thing in

(1) Actually the law is not quite so simple as this, for by the Limitation Act, 1939, s. 9 (1), the rule is in effect that time does not begin to run in favour of a tenant at will until the end of the first year of his tenancy. Therefore, in the above illustration, B would not obtain title until the lapse of thirteen years from the beginning of his tenancy. This complication does not affect the point explained in the text.

(m) D. 41. 2. 3. 5; cf. for English law Holdsworth, *H. E. L.*, III. p. 96.

common, just as they may own it in common. This is called *compossessio* by the civilians.

3. Corporeal and incorporeal possession may coexist in respect of the same material object, just as corporeal and incorporeal ownership may. Thus A may possess the land, while B possesses a right of way over it. For it is not necessary, as we have already seen, that A's claim of exclusive use should be absolute; it is sufficient that it is general.

§ 106. The Acquisition of Possession

Possession is acquired whenever the two elements of *corpus* and *animus* come into co-existence. The modes of acquisition are two in number, namely Taking and Delivery. Taking is the acquisition of possession without the consent of the previous possessor. The thing taken may or may not have been already in the possession of some one else, and in either case the taking of it may be either rightful or wrongful. Delivery, on the other hand, is the acquisition of possession with the consent and co-operation of the previous possessor. It is of two kinds, distinguished by English lawyers as actual and constructive (n). Actual delivery is the transfer of *immediate* possession; it is such a physical dealing with the thing as transfers it from the hands of one person to those of another. It is of two kinds, according as the *mediate* possession is or is not retained by the transferor. The delivery of a chattel by way of sale is an example of delivery without any reservation of mediate possession; the delivery of a chattel by way of loan or deposit is an instance of the reservation of mediate possession on the transfer of immediate. Actual delivery may be either to the deliverer himself or to a servant or agent for him (o), and the delivery of the key of a warehouse is regarded in law as an actual delivery of the goods in the warehouse, because it gives access to the goods (p).

(n) These terms, however, are not strictly accurate, inasmuch as the so-called constructive delivery is a perfectly real transfer of possession, and involves no element of fiction whatever.

(o) Thus by the Sale of Goods Act, 1893, s. 32 (1), delivery to a carrier is *prima facie* deemed to be delivery to the buyer.

(p) "The key is not a symbol, which would not do": *per* Lord Hardwicke in *Ward v. Turner* (1751), 2 Ves. Sen. 443. Cf. Pollock and Wright, *Possession in the Common Law*, 61 ff.; Barlow in (1956), 19 M. L. R. 394. It seems that the only circumstance in which the English lawyer admits that symbolic delivery is sufficient is the indorsement and delivery of a bill of lading,

Constructive delivery, on the other hand, is all which is not actual, and it is of three kinds. The first is that which the Roman lawyers termed *traditio brevi manu*, but which has no recognised name in the language of English law. It consists in the surrender of the mediate possession of a thing to him who is already in immediate possession of it. If, for example, I lend a book to some one, and afterwards, while he still retains it, I agree with him to sell it to him, or to make him a present of it, I can effectually deliver it to him in fulfilment of this sale or gift, by telling him that he may keep it. It is not necessary for him to go through the form of handing it back to me and receiving it a second time from my hands. For he has already the immediate possession of it, and all that is needed for delivery under the sale or gift is the destruction of the *animus* through which mediate possession is still retained by me (q).

The second form of constructive delivery is that which the commentators on the civil law have termed *constitutum possessorium* (that is to say, an agreement touching possession). This is the converse of *traditio brevi manu*. It is the transfer of mediate possession, while the immediate possession remains in the transferor. Any thing may be effectually delivered by means of an agreement that the possessor of it shall for the future hold it no longer on his own account but on account of some one else. No physical dealing with the thing is requisite, because by the mere agreement mediate possession is acquired by the transferee, through the immediate possession retained by the transferor and held on the other's behalf. Therefore, if I buy goods from a warehouseman, they are delivered to me so soon as he has agreed with me that he will hold them as warehouseman on my account. The position is then exactly the same as if I had first taken actual delivery of them, and then brought them back to the warehouse, and deposited them there for safe custody (r).

The third form of constructive delivery is that which is known to English lawyers as attornment (s). This is the transfer

which is regarded as a delivery of the cargo represented by it: *per* Bowen, L.J., in *Sanders v. Maclean* (1883), 11 Q. B. D. 327, at 341.

(q) For examples of *traditio brevi manu*, see *Winter v. Winter* (1861), 4 L. T. (N.S.) 639; *Cain v. Moon*, [1896] 2 Q. B. 283; *Richer v. Voyer* (1874), L. R. 5 P. C. 461.

(r) For examples of *constitutum possessorium*, see *supra*, § 104.

(s) *Constitutum possessorium*, also, may be termed attornment in a wide sense.

of mediate possession, while the immediate possession remains outstanding in some third person. The mediate possessor of a thing may deliver it by procuring the immediate possessor to agree with the transferee to hold it for the future on his account, instead of on account of the transferor. Thus if I have goods in the warehouse of A and sell them to B, I have effectually delivered them to B so soon as A has agreed with B to hold them for him, and no longer for me. Neither in this nor in any other case of constructive delivery is any physical dealing with the thing required, the change in the *animus* of the persons concerned being adequate in itself (t).

§ 107. The Commencement and Continuance of Possession

The rules hitherto considered have been principally concerned with the commencement of possession. It is now to be noticed that the continuance of possession, at any rate as a matter of English law, does not seem to be governed by the same strict rules as its commencement (u). Assuming that English law requires both *animus* and *corpus* in order to initiate possession, the possession once acquired may continue even though *animus* or *corpus*, or even both, disappear. For instance: I have a watch in my pocket, and have satisfied all the requisites for obtaining possession of it. I am now pursued by a horde of bandits who as I know will interfere with my use and control of the watch as soon as they overtake me, which they will do in a few seconds. It is clear that in law I still possess my watch, notwithstanding that there is no reasonable expectation of non-interference. On the other hand, if several persons are struggling for a watch and one of them momentarily grasps it, he will not be regarded as obtaining possession of it, because there is no reasonable expectation of non-interference. From this it follows that the reasonable expectation of non-interference, that is to say, the required relation between the possessor and other persons, applies only to the commencement of possession and not to its continuance.

(t) Delivery by attornment is provided for by the Sale of Goods Act, 1893, s. 29 (3): "Where the goods at the time of sale are in the possession of a third person, there is no delivery by seller to buyer unless and until such third person acknowledges to the buyer that he holds the goods on his behalf."

(u) Sir John Salmond denied this proposition for possession in fact.

Again: I am now in possession of the furniture in my house. The following events occur: (i) I go for a journey. This means that I lose part of the *corpus* of possession, for I cease to be in any special factual relation to my furniture. Until I return to the furniture I have no more power to make use of it than has anyone else in the world. (ii) I am informed, correctly, that there is an outbreak of mob violence and looting near my house. This means that I lose the other part of the *corpus* of possession, the reasonable expectation of non-interference. (iii) I go to sleep in the train. Now I have lost even the *animus possidendi*. Notwithstanding all these events it is clear that in law I still retain possession of my furniture. This illustration shows that all the requirements for commencement of possession may cease to exist without possession ceasing to exist for legal purposes (a).

There is a point, however, which it is not easy to fix with anything approaching precision, where the loss of an element of possession will put an end even to an acquired possession. An instance would be where a bird escapes from its cage, or a jewel is dropped into the sea. Probably, also, most people would say that a man who has dropped his wallet in the street has lost possession of it. Oddly enough, the criminal law does not take this view, for it is possible for a finder to commit larceny of the article he finds (b), which implies that the loser was still in possession of it.

§ 108. Incorporeal Possession

Hitherto we have limited our attention, in the main, to the case of corporeal possession. We have now to consider incorporeal, which was touched upon in § 98, and to seek the generic conception which includes both these forms. For I may possess not the land itself, but a way over it, or the access of light from it, or the support afforded by it to my land which adjoins it. So also I may possess powers, privileges, immunities, liberties, offices, dignities, services, monopolies. All these things may be possessed as well as owned. They may be possessed by

(a) The jurist Paul stated that possession could be retained solely by intention: D. 41. 2. 3. 7. (cf. Bracton, ff. 38b—39a), and also that it could be retained by a person who fell asleep: D. 41. 3. 31. 3. He did not expressly combine these two propositions. Cf. Buckland, *Text Book of Roman Law* (2nd ed.) 202.

(b) *R. v. Thurborn* (1849), 1 Den. 387.

one man, and owned by another. They may be owned and not possessed, or possessed and not owned.

Corporeal possession is, as we have seen, the continuing exercise of a claim to the exclusive use of a material object. Incorporeal possession is the continuing exercise of a claim to anything else. The thing so claimed may be either the non-exclusive use of a material object (for example, a way or other servitude over a piece of land) or some interest or advantage unconnected with the use of material objects (for example, a trade-mark, a patent, or an office of profit).

In each kind of possession there are the same two elements required, namely the *animus* and the *corpus*. The *animus* is the claim—the self-assertive will of the possessor. The *corpus* is the environment of fact in which this claim has realised, embodied, and fulfilled itself. Possession, whether corporeal or incorporeal, exists only when the *animus possidendi* has succeeded in establishing a continuing practice in conformity to itself. Nor can any practice be said to be continuing, unless some measure of future existence is guaranteed to it by the facts of the case. The possession of a thing is the *de facto* condition of its continuous and secure enjoyment.

In the case of corporeal possession the *corpus possessionis* consists, as we have seen, in nothing more than the continuing exclusion of alien interference, coupled with ability to use the thing oneself at will. Actual use of it is not essential. I may lock my watch in a safe, instead of keeping it in my pocket; and though I do not look at it for twenty years, I remain in possession of it none the less. For I have continuously exercised my claim to it, by continuously excluding other persons from interference with it. In the case of incorporeal possession, on the contrary, since there is no such claim of exclusion, actual continuous use and enjoyment is essential, as being the only possible mode of exercise. I can acquire and retain possession of a right of way only through actual and repeated use of it. In the case of incorporeal things continuing non-use is inconsistent with possession, though in the case of corporeal things it is consistent with it.

Incorporeal possession is commonly called the possession of a *right*, and corporeal possession is distinguished from it as the

possession of a thing. The Roman lawyers distinguish between *possessio juris* and *possessio corporis*, and the Germans between *Rechtsbesitz* and *Sachenbesitz*. Adopting this nomenclature, we may define incorporeal possession as the continuing exercise of a right, rather than as the continuing exercise of a claim (c). The usage is one of great convenience, but it must not be misunderstood. To exercise a right means to exercise a claim *as if it were a right*. There may be no right in reality; and where there is a right, it may be vested in some other person, and not in the possessor. If I possess a way over another's land, it may or may not be a right of way; and even if it is a right of way, it may be owned by some one else, though possessed by me. Similarly a trade-mark or a patent which is possessed and exercised by me may or may not be legally valid; it may exist *de facto* and not also *de jure*; and even if legally valid, it may be legally vested not in me, but in another (d).

(c) Thus in the Civil Code of France it is said (sect. 2228): *La possession est la détention ou la jouissance d'une chose ou d'un droit que nous tenons ou que nous exerçons par nous-mêmes ou par un autre qui la tient ou qui l'exerce en notre nom.*

The definition of the Italian Civil Code is similar (sect. 685): "Possession is the detention of a thing or the enjoyment of a right by any person either personally or through another who detains the thing or exercises the right in his name."

A good analysis of the generic conception of possession, and of the relation between its two varieties, is to be found in Baudry-Lacantinerie's *Traité de Droit Civil* (De la Prescription, sect. 199): "Possession is nothing else than the exercise or enjoyment, whether by ourselves or through the agency of another, of a real right which we have or claim to have over a thing. It makes no difference whether this right is one of ownership or one of some other description, such as *ususfructus*, *usus*, *habitat*io, or *servitus*. The old distinction between possession and quasi-possession, which was recognised by Roman law and is still to be found in the doctrine of Pothier, has been rejected, and rightly so. It was in our opinion nothing more than a result of that confusion between the right of ownership and the object of that right, which has been at all times prevalent. Possession is merely the exercise of a right, in reality it is not the thing which we possess, but the right which we have or claim to have over the thing. This is as true of the right of ownership as of the right of servitude and usufruct; and consequently the distinction between the possession of a thing and the quasi-possession of a right is destitute of foundation."

See to the same effect Ihering, *Grund des Besitzes*, 159: "Both forms of possession consist in the exercise of a right (*die Ausübung eines Rechts*)."
Bruns, also, recognises the figure of speech on which the distinction between corporeal and incorporeal possession is based, *Recht des Besitzes*, 477.

(d) Bruns rejects the definition of possession as consisting in the continuing exercise of a right, and defines it as the continuous possibility of exercising a right at will. "Just as corporeal possession," he says (*Recht des Besitzes*, 475), "consists not in actual dealing with the thing, but only in the power of dealing with it at will, so incorporeal possession consists

The distinction between corporeal and incorporeal possession is clearly analogous to that between corporeal and incorporeal ownership. Corporeal possession, like corporeal ownership, is that of a thing; while incorporeal possession, like incorporeal ownership, is that of a right.

§ 109. Relation between Possession and Ownership

"Possession", says Ihering (e), "is the objective realisation of ownership." It is in *fact* what ownership is in *right*. Possession is the *de facto* exercise of a claim; ownership is the *de jure* recognition of one. A thing is owned by me when my claim to it is maintained by the will of the state as expressed in the law; it is possessed by me, when my claim to it is maintained by my own self-assertive will. Ownership is the guarantee of the law; possession is the guarantee of the facts. It is well to have both forms of security if possible; and indeed they normally co-exist. But where there is no law, or where the law is against a man, he must content himself with the precarious security of the facts. Even when the law is in one's favour, it is well to have the facts on one's side also. *Beati possidentes*. Possession, therefore, is the *de facto* counterpart of ownership. It is the external form in which rightful claims normally manifest themselves. The separation of these two things is an exceptional incident, due to accident, wrong, or the special nature of the claims in question. Possession without ownership is the body of fact, uninformed by the spirit of right which usually accompanies it. Ownership without possession is right, unaccompanied by that environment of fact in which it normally realises itself. The two things tend mutually to coincide. Ownership strives to realise itself in possession, and possession endeavours to justify itself as ownership. The law of prescription determines the process by which, through the

not in the actual exercise of a right, but in the power of exercising it at will; and it is only because the existence of this power does not become visible as an objective fact until actual exercise of the right has taken place, that such actual exercise is recognised as an essential condition of the commencement of possession." This, however, seems incorrect. Possession consists not in the power of exercising a claim in the future, but in the power of continuing to exercise it from now onwards.

(e) *Grund des Besitz*. 179: Der Besitz die Thatsächlichkeit des Eigentums. See also at p. 192: Der Besitz ist die Thatsächlichkeit des Rechts.

influence of time, possession without title ripens into ownership, and ownership without possession withers away and dies (f).

Speaking generally, ownership and possession have the same subject-matter. Whatever may be owned may be possessed, and whatever may be possessed may be owned. This statement, however, is subject to important qualifications. There are claims which may be realised and exercised in fact without receiving any recognition or protection from the law, there being no right vested either in the claimant or in any one else. In such cases there is possession without ownership. For example, men might possess copyrights, trade-marks, and other forms of monopoly, even though the law refused to defend those interests as legal rights. Claims to them might be realised *de facto*, and attain some measure of security and value from the facts, without any possibility of support from the law.

Conversely there are many rights which can be owned, but which are not capable of being possessed. They are those which may be termed *transitory*. Rights which do not admit of continuing exercise do not admit of possession either. They cannot be exercised without being thereby wholly fulfilled and destroyed; therefore they cannot be possessed. A creditor, for example, does not possess the debt that is due to him; for this is a transitory right which in its very nature cannot survive its exercise. But a man may possess an easement over land, because its exercise and its continued existence are consistent with each other. It is for this reason that obligations generally (that is to say, rights in *personam* as opposed to rights in *rem*) do not admit of possession. It is to be remembered, however, that *repeated* exercise is equivalent in this respect to *continuing* exercise. I may possess a right of way through repeated acts of use, just as I may possess a right of light or support through continuous enjoyment. Therefore even obligations admit of possession, provided that they are of such a nature as to involve a series of repeated acts of performance. We may say that a landlord is in possession of his rents, an annuitant of his annuity, a bondholder of his interest, or a master of the services of his servant (g).

(f) In saying that possession is the *de facto* counterpart of ownership, it is to be remembered that we use both terms in their widest sense, as including both the corporeal and incorporeal forms. If we confine our attention to corporeal ownership and possession, the correspondence between them is incomplete. Many claims constitute corporeal possession if exercised *de facto*, but incorporeal ownership if recognised *de jure*. Thus tenants, bailees, and pledgees have corporeal possession but incorporeal ownership. They possess the land or the chattel, but own merely an encumbrance over it. The ownership of a book means the ownership of the *general or residuary right* to it; but the possession of a book means merely the possession of an *exclusive right to it for the time being*. That is to say, the figurative usage of speech is not the same in possession as in ownership, therefore much corporeal possession is the counterpart of incorporeal ownership.

(g) Windscheid, II. sect. 464: "If we ask what other rights, in addition to real rights, admit of possession, the answer is that in principle no right

We may note finally that, although incorporeal possession is possible in fact of all continuing rights, it by no means follows that the recognition of such possession, or the attribution of legal consequences to it, is necessary or profitable in law. To what extent incorporeal possession exists in law, and what consequences flow from it, are questions which are not here relevant, but touch merely the details of the legal system.

§ 110. Possessory Remedies

In English law possession is a good title of right against any one who cannot show a better. A wrongful possessor has the rights of an owner with respect to all persons except earlier possessors and except the true owner himself (*h*). Many other legal systems (*i*), however, go much further than this, and treat possession as a provisional or temporary title even against the true owner himself. Even a wrongdoer, who is deprived of his possession, can recover it from any person whatever, simply on the ground of his possession. Even the true owner, who takes his own, may be forced in this way to restore it to the wrongdoer, and will not be permitted to set up his own superior title to it (*k*). He must first give up possession, and then proceed in due course of law for the recovery of the thing on the ground of his ownership. The intention of the law is that every possessor shall be entitled to retain and recover his possession, until deprived of it by a judgment according to law.

Legal remedies thus appointed for the protection of possession even against ownership are called *possessory*, while those available for the protection of ownership itself may be distinguished as *proprietary*. In the modern and medieval civil law the distinction is expressed by the contrasted terms *petitorium* (a proprietary suit) and *possessorium* (a possessory suit).

is incapable of possession, which is capable of continuing exercise (dauernde Ausübung)."

So Ihering, *Grund des Besitzes*. 158: "The conception of possession is applicable to all rights which admit of realisation (Thatsächlichkeit), that is to say, which admit of a continuing visible exercise." Ihering defines possession generally (p. 160) as "Thatsächlichkeit der mit dauernder Ausübung verbundenen Rechte." See also Bruns, *Recht des Besitzes*, 479, 481.

(*h*) *Armory v. Delamirie* (1722), 1 Strange 505; 1 Smith L. C. (13th ed.) 393; *Asher v. Whitlock* (1865), L. R. 1 Q. B. 1; Holdsworth, *H. E. L.*, VII. 449 ff.

(*i*) See for example the German Civil Code, sects. 858, 861, 864, and the Italian Civil Code, sects. 694—697.

(*k*) He may, however, set up the fact that he was previously dispossessed of the property.

This duplication of remedies, with the resulting provisional protection of possession, has its beginnings in Roman law. It was taken up into the canon law, where it received considerable extensions, and through the canon law it became a prominent feature of medieval jurisprudence. It is still received in modern Continental systems; but although well known to the earlier law of England, it has been long since rejected by us as cumbrous and unnecessary.

There has been much discussion as to the reasons on which this provisional protection of possession is based. It would seem probable that the considerations of greatest weight are the three following.

1. The evils of violent self-help are deemed so serious that it must be discouraged by taking away all advantages which any one derives from it. He who helps himself by force even to that which is his own must restore it even to a thief. The law gives him a remedy, and with it he must be content. This reason, however, can be allowed as valid only in a condition of society in which the evils and dangers of forcible self-redress are much more formidable than they are at the present day. It has been found abundantly sufficient to punish violence in the ordinary way as a criminal offence, without compelling a rightful owner to deliver up to a trespasser property to which he has no manner of right, and which can be forthwith recovered from him by due course of law. In the case of chattels, indeed, our law has not found it needful to protect possession even to this extent. It seems that an owner who retakes a chattel by force acts within his legal rights. Forcible entry upon land, however, is a criminal offence.

2. A second reason for the institution of possessory remedies is to be found in the serious imperfections of the early proprietary remedies. The procedure by which an owner recovered his property was cumbrous, dilatory, and inefficient. The path of the claimant was strewn with pitfalls, and he was lucky if he reached his destination without disaster. The part of plaintiff in such an action was one of grave disadvantage, and possession was nine points of the law. No man, therefore, could be suffered to procure for himself by violence the advantageous position of defendant, and to force his adversary by such means

to assume the dangerous and difficult post of plaintiff. The original position of affairs must first be restored; possession must first be given to him who had it first; then, and not till then, would the law consent to discuss the titles of the disputants to the property in question. Yet however cogent such considerations may have been in earlier law, they are now of little weight. With a rational system of procedure the task of the plaintiff is as easy as that of the defendant. The law shows no favour to one rather than to the other.

3. A third reason for possessory remedies, closely connected with the second, is the difficulty of the proof of ownership. It is easy to prove that one has been in possession of a thing, but difficult (in the absence of any system of registration of title) to prove that one is the owner of it. Therefore it was considered unjust that a man should be allowed by violence to transfer the heavy burden of proof from his own shoulders to those of his opponent. Every man should bear his own burden. He who takes a thing by force must restore it to him from whom he has taken it; let him then prove, if he can, that he is the owner of it; and the law will then give to him what it will not suffer him to take for himself. But English law has long since discovered that it is possible to attain this end in a much more satisfactory and reasonable way. It adjusts the burden of proof of ownership with perfect equity, without recourse to any such anomaly as the protection of the possessor against the owner. This it does by the operation of the three following rules:

1. Prior possession is *prima facie* proof of title. Even in the ordinary proprietary action a claimant need do nothing more than prove that he had an older possession than that of the defendant; for the law will presume from this prior possession a better title. *Qui prior est tempore potior est jure*.

2. A defendant is always at liberty to rebut this presumption by proving that the better title is in himself.

3. A defendant who has violated the possession of the plaintiff is not allowed to set up the defence of *jus tertii*, as it is called; that is to say, he will not be heard to allege, as against the plaintiff's claim, that neither the plaintiff nor he himself, but some third person, is the true owner. Let every man come and defend his own title. As between A and B the right of C is

irrelevant. The only exceptions are (i) when the defendant defends the action on behalf and by the authority of the true owner; (ii) when he committed the act complained of by the authority of the true owner; and (iii) when he has already made satisfaction to the true owner by returning the property to him (l).

By the joint operation of these three rules the same purpose is effected as was sought in more cumbrous fashion by the early duplication of proprietary and possessory remedies.

SUMMARY OF CHAPTERS XIII AND XIV

Possession { In fact—*possessio naturalis*.
 { In law—*possessio civilis*.

Possession in law { Seisin.
 { Possession.

Possession { Corporeal—*possessio corporis*—*Sachenbesitz*.
 { Incorporeal—*possessio juris*—*Rechtsbesitz*.

Corporeal possession—the continuing exercise of a claim to the exclusive use of a material thing.

Elements of corporeal possession. { *Animus sibi habendi*.
 { *Corpus*.

Animus sibi habendi:

1. Not necessarily a claim of right.
 2. Must be exclusive.
 3. Not necessarily a claim to use.
 4. Not necessarily a claim on one's own behalf.
 5. Not necessarily specific.
- Bureau and letter cases.

Corpus—the effective realisation of the animus in a security for enjoyment.

Elements of the *corpus*:

1. A relation of the possessor to other persons, amounting to a security for their non-interference.

The grounds of such security:

1. Physical power.
2. Personal presence.
3. Secrecy.
4. Custom.
5. Respect for rightful claims.
6. Manifestation of the *animus*.
7. Protection afforded by other possessions.

The rights of a finder against the occupier of land

(l) Salmond, *Torts* (11th ed.) 236, 341.

2. A relation of the possessor to the thing possessed, amounting to an ability to use the thing at will.

Possession { Immediate—without the intervention of another person.
Mediate—through or by means of another person.

Mediate possession { 1. Through servants or agents.
2. Through bailees or tenants at will.
3. Through persons claiming temporary possession for themselves.

The relation between the mediate and immediate possessor.

The exclusiveness of possession.

Exceptional instances of duplicate possession:

1. Mediate and immediate possession.
2. Possession in common.
3. Corporeal and incorporeal possession.

The acquisition of possession:

1. Taking.
2. Delivery { Actual.
Constructive { *Traditio brevi manu.*
Constitutum possessorium.
Attornment.

The continuance of possession not governed by the same strict rules as its commencement.

Incorporeal possession:

Its nature—the continuing exercise of any claim, save one to the exclusive use of the corporeal thing.

Its relation to corporeal possession.

The generic conception of possession.

The relation between possession and ownership.

Possession the *de facto* exercise of a claim.

Ownership the *de jure* recognition of one.

The identity of the objects of ownership and possession.

Exceptions:

1. Things which can be possessed, but cannot be owned.
2. Things which can be owned, but cannot be possessed.

Possessory remedies:

1. Their nature.
2. Their objects.
3. Their exclusion from English law.

CHAPTER 15

PERSONS

§ 111. The Nature of Personality

THE purpose of this chapter is to investigate the legal conception of personality. It is not permissible to adopt the simple device of saying that a person means a human being, for even in the popular or non-legal use of the term there are persons who are not men. Personality is a wider and vaguer term than humanity. Gods, angels, and the spirits of the dead are persons, no less than men are. And in the law this want of coincidence between the class of persons and that of human beings is still more marked. In the law there may be men who are not persons; slaves, for example, are destitute of legal personality in any system which regards them as incapable of either rights or liabilities. Like cattle, they are things and the objects of rights; not persons and the subjects of them. Conversely there are, in the law, persons who are not men. A joint-stock company or a municipal corporation is a person in legal contemplation. So also, in Hindu law, idols are legal persons, and this has been recognised by the Privy Council (a). What, then, is the legal meaning of a "person"?

So far as legal theory is concerned, a person is any being whom the law regards as capable of rights or duties (b). Any being that is so capable is a person, whether a human being or not, and no being that is not so capable is a person, even though he be a man. Persons are the substances of which rights and duties are the attributes. It is only in this respect that persons possess juridical significance, and this is the exclusive point of view from which personality receives legal recognition.

Persons as so defined are of two kinds, distinguishable as natural and legal. A natural person is a human being. Legal persons are beings, real or imaginary, who for the purpose of

(a) *Pramatha Nath Mullick v. Pradyumna Kumar Mullick* (1925), L. R. 52 Ind. App. 245. See Duff, "The Personality of an Idol" (1927), 3 C. L. J. 42; Vesey-Fitzgerald, "Idolon Fori" (1925), 41 L. Q. R. 419.

(b) For a full discussion see Alexander Nékám, *The Personality Conception of the Legal Entity* (1938).

legal reasoning are treated in greater or less degree in the same way as human beings (c).

§ 112. The Legal Status of the Lower Animals

The only natural persons are human beings. Beasts are not persons, either natural or legal. They are merely things—often the objects of legal rights and duties, but never the subjects of them. Beasts, like men, are capable of acts and possess interests. Yet their acts are neither lawful nor unlawful; they are not recognised by the law as the appropriate subject-matter either of permission or of prohibition. Archaic codes did not scruple, it is true, to punish with death in due course of law the beast that was guilty of homicide. "If an ox gore a man or a woman that they die: then the ox shall be surely stoned and his flesh shall not be eaten" (d). A conception such as this pertains to a stage that is long since past; but modern law shows us a relic of it in the rule that a trespassing beast may be distrained damage feasant, and kept until its owner or some one else interested in the beast pays compensation (e). Distress damage feasant does not, however, in modern law involve any legal recognition of the personality of the animal.

A beast is as incapable of legal rights as of legal duties, for its interests receive no recognition from the law. *Hominum causa omne jus constitutum* (f). The law is made for men, and allows no fellowship or bonds of obligation between them and the lower animals. If these last possess moral rights—as utilitarian ethics at least need not scruple to admit—those rights are not recognised by any legal system. That which is done to the hurt of a beast may be a wrong to its owner or to the society of mankind, but it is no wrong to the beast. No animal can be the owner of any property, even through the medium of a human trustee. If a testator vests property in trustees for the maintenance of his favourite horses or dogs, he will thereby create no valid trust enforceable in any way by or on behalf of these non-human beneficiaries. The only effect of such provisions is to authorise the trustees, if they think fit, to expend the property

(c) Legal persons are also termed fictitious, juristic, artificial, or moral.

(d) Exodus xxi. 28. To the same effect see Plato's *Laws*, 873.

(e) Williams, *Liability for Animals*, chaps. 1, 7.

(f) D. 1. 5. 2.

or any part of it in the way so indicated; and whatever part of it is not so spent will go to the testator's representatives as undisposed of (g).

There are, however, two cases in which beasts may be thought to possess legal rights. In the first place, cruelty to animals is a criminal offence, and in the second place, a trust for the benefit of particular classes of animals, as opposed to one for individual animals, is valid and enforceable as a public and charitable trust; for example, a provision for the establishment and maintenance of a home for stray dogs or broken-down horses (h). Are we driven by the existence of these cases to recognise the legal rights and therefore the legal personality of beasts? There is no occasion for any such conflict with accustomed modes of thought and speech. These duties towards animals are conceived by the law as duties towards society itself. They correspond not to private rights vested in the immediate beneficiaries, but to public rights vested in the community at large—for the community has a rightful interest, legally recognised to this extent, in the well-being even of the dumb animals which belong to it. Where, however, the interests of animals conflict with those of human beings, the latter are preferred (i).

§ 113. The Legal Status of Dead Men

Dead men are no longer persons in the eye of the law. They have laid down their legal personality with their lives, and are now as destitute of rights as of liabilities. They have no rights because they have no interests. There is nothing that concerns them any longer, "neither have they any more a portion for ever in anything that is done under the sun". They do not even remain the owners of their property until their successors enter upon their inheritance. For instance, the goods of an intestate, before the grant of letters of administration, were formerly vested in the bishop of the diocese, and are now vested in the judge of the Court of Probate, rather than left to the dead until they are in truth acquired by the living (j).

(g) *Re Dean* (1889), 41 Ch. D. 552.

(h) *Ibid.*, p. 557.

(i) See, e.g., *National Anti-Vivisection Society v. I. R.*, [1928] A. C. 31.

(j) The concept of *hereditas iacens* in Roman law made some approach to the idea of continuing the deceased's personality. It was said that the inheritance, in the interval between the death and the entry of the *heres*,

Yet although all a man's rights and interests perish with him, he does when alive concern himself much with that which shall become of him and his after he is dead. And the law, without conferring rights upon the dead, does in some degree recognise and take account after a man's death of his desires and interests when alive. There are three things, more especially, in respect of which the anxieties of living men extend beyond the period of their deaths, in such sort that the law will take notice of them. These are a man's body, his reputation, and his estate. By a natural illusion a living man deems himself interested in the treatment to be awarded to his own dead body. To what extent does the law secure his desires in this matter? A corpse is the property of no one. It cannot be disposed of by will or any other instrument (*k*), and no wrongful dealing with it can amount to theft (*l*). The criminal law, however, secures decent burial for all dead men, and the violation of a grave is a criminal offence (*m*). "Every person dying in this country", it has been judicially declared (*n*), "has a right to Christian burial." On the other hand the testamentary directions of a man as to the disposal of his body are without any binding force (*o*), save that by statute he is given the power of protecting it from the indignity of anatomical uses (*p*). Similarly a permanent trust for the maintenance of his tomb is illegal and void, this being a purpose to which no property can be permanently devoted (*q*). Even a temporary trust for this purpose (not offending against the rule against perpetuities) has no other effect than that already noticed by us as attributed to trusts for animals, its fulfilment being

represented a *persona* (*personae vice fungitur*: D. 46. 1. 22). After some disagreement it became settled that the *persona* represented was that of the deceased; but it was so only for some purposes, not for all. See Buckland, *Text-Book of Roman Law* (2nd ed. 1933), 306 ff.; Buckland and McNair, *Roman Law and Common Law* (2nd ed.) 154-5; Duff, *Personality in Roman Private Law* (1938), Chap. VII.

(*k*) *Williams v. Williams* (1882), 20 Ch. D. 659.

(*l*) 2 East P. C. 652.

(*m*) *Foster v. Dodd* (1867), L. R. 3 Q. B. at p. 77: "Whether in ground consecrated or unconsecrated, indignities offered to human remains in improperly and indecently disinterring them, are the ground of an indictment."

(*n*) *R. v. Stewart* (1840), 12 Ad. & El. 773 at pp. 777-8. As to the lawfulness of cremation, see *R. v. Price* (1884), 12 Q. B. D. 247.

(*o*) *Williams v. Williams* (1882), 20 Ch. D. 659.

(*p*) Anatomy Act, 1832 (2 & 3 Will. 4, c. 75), s. 7.

(*q*) *Re Vaughan* (1886), 33 Ch. D. 187; *Hoare v. Osborne* (1866), 1 Eq. 585. There are ways of evading this prohibition, which need not concern us here.

lawful but not obligatory (r). Property is for the uses of the living, not of the dead.

The reputation of the dead receives some degree of protection from the criminal law. A libel upon a dead man will be punished as a misdemeanour—but only when its publication is in truth an attack upon the interests of living persons. The right so attacked and so defended is in reality not that of the dead, but that of his living descendants. To this extent, and in this manner only, has the maxim *De mortuis nil nisi bonum* obtained legal recognition and obligation (s).

By far the most important matter, however, in which the desires of dead men are allowed by the law to regulate the actions of the living is that of testamentary succession. For many years after a man is dead, his hand may continue to regulate and determine the disposition and enjoyment of the property which he owned while living. This, however, is a matter which will receive attention more fitly in another place.

§ 114. The Legal Status of Unborn Persons

Though the dead possess no legal personality, it is otherwise with the unborn. There is nothing in law to prevent a man from owning property before he is born. His ownership is necessarily contingent, indeed, for he may never be born at all; but it is none the less a real and present ownership. A man may settle property upon his wife and the children to be born of her. Or he may die intestate, and his unborn child will inherit his estate. Yet the law is careful lest property should be too long withdrawn in this way from the uses of living men in favour of generations yet to come; and various restrictive rules have been established to this end. No testator could now direct his fortune to be accumulated for a hundred years and then distributed among his descendants.

A child in its mother's womb is for many purposes regarded by a legal fiction as already born, in accordance with the maxim, *Nasciturus pro jam nato habetur*. In the words of Coke: "The

(r) *Re Dean* (1889), 41 Ch. D. 552, at 557.

(s) 5 Co. Rep. 125 a; *R. v. Labouchere* (1884), 12 Q. B. D. 320; Stephen, *Digest of Criminal Law*, § 345, 9th ed.; F. P. Walton, "Libel upon the Dead and the Bath Club Case" (1927), 9 *Journal of Comparative Legislation* 1; cf. (1928), 10 *ibid.* 136.

law in many cases hath consideration of him in respect of the apparent expectation of his birth" (t). Thus, in the law of property, there is a fiction that a child *en ventre sa mere* is a person in being for the purposes of (1) the acquisition of property by the child itself, or (2) being a life chosen to form part of the period in the rule against perpetuities (u).

To what extent an unborn person can possess personal as well as proprietary rights is a somewhat unsettled question. It has been held that a posthumous child is entitled to compensation under Lord Campbell's Act for the death of his father (a). Wilful or negligent injury inflicted on a child in the womb, by reason of which it dies after having been born alive, amounts to murder or manslaughter (b). A pregnant woman condemned to death is respited as of right, until she has been delivered of her child. On the other hand, in a case in which a claim was made by a female infant against a railway company for injuries inflicted upon her while in her mother's womb through a collision due to the defendant's negligence, it was held by an Irish court that no cause of action was disclosed (c). The decision of two of the four judges, however, proceeded upon the ground that the company owed no duty of care towards a person whose existence was unknown to them, and not upon the ground that an unborn child has in no case any right of immunity from personal harm.

The rights of an unborn person, whether proprietary or personal, are all contingent on his birth as a living human being. The legal personality attributed to him by way of anticipation falls away *ab initio* if he never takes his place among the living. Abortion and child destruction are crimes; but such acts do not amount to murder or manslaughter unless the child is born alive before he dies. A posthumous child may inherit; but if he dies in the womb, or is stillborn, his inheritance fails to take effect, and no one can claim through him, though it would be otherwise if he lived for an hour after his birth.

(t) 7 Co. Rep. 8 b. Compare D. 1. 5. 26: Qui in utero sunt in toto paene jure civili intelleguntur in rerum natura esse.

(u) See Winfield, "The Unborn Child" (1942), 4 Univ. of Toronto Law Journal 278 at 279, reprinted in (1942), 8 Cambridge Law Journal 76 at p. 77.

(a) *The George and Richard* (1871), L. R. 3 Ad. & Ecc. 466.

(b) *R. v. Senior* (1892), 1 Moody C. C. 344; *R. v. West* (1848), 2 Car. & Kir. 784.

(c) *Walker v. Great Northern Ry. of Ireland* (1890), 28 L. R. Ir. 69. See generally Winfield, *op. cit.*

§ 115. Double Capacity and Double Personality

English law recognises many different capacities in which a man may act. Often he has power to do an act in an official or representative capacity when he would have no power to do the act in his private capacity or on his own account. All sorts of difficult questions arise out of these distinctions: for instance, whether a person on a particular occasion was acting as trustee for fund A or as trustee for fund B; whether a director has the powers and duties of a trustee; whether an executor has turned into a trustee, and so on. These troubles need not concern us here; the only point to be noticed is that the mere fact that a man has two or more capacities does not give him the power to enter into a legal transaction with himself. Double capacity does not connote double personality. For instance, at common law a man could not sue himself (*d*), or contract with himself (*e*), or convey property to himself; and it made no difference that he was acting on each side in a different capacity. So rigorous was the rule that, if the same party appeared on both sides of a contract, even though accompanied by different parties in each case, the whole contract was void (*f*). In many cases the rule worked hardship, and its consequences had to be mitigated. For instance, where a creditor became his debtor's executor, the rule that he could not sue himself for the debt was mitigated by giving him a right of retainer. By statute, where a person purports to contract with himself and others, the contract is enforceable as if it had been entered into with the other persons alone (*g*). Also, by a historical accident, namely, the effect given to the Statute of Uses, it became possible for a man to convey to himself; and this power, which was found to be useful however theoretically anomalous, is preserved in the modern legislation that repeals the Statute of Uses (*h*). With these and other small exceptions, the rule that a person cannot enter into a legal transaction with himself remains unimpaired.

(*d*) "There is no principle by which a man can be at the same time plaintiff and defendant": *per* Best, C.J., in *Neale v. Turton* (1827), 4 Bing. 149 at 151. See R. L. Mosse, "Can a Person Sue Himself?" (1944), 94 L. J. Newsp. 262.

(*e*) *Ellis v. Kerr*, [1910] 1 Ch. 529; *Napier v. Williams*, [1911] 1 Ch. 361.

(*f*) Last note.

(*g*) Law of Property Act, 1925, s. 82 (1).

(*h*) Law of Property Act, 1925, s. 72.

§ 116. Legal Persons

A legal person is any subject-matter other than a human being to which the law attributes personality. This extension, for good and sufficient reasons, of the conception of personality beyond the class of human beings is one of the most noteworthy feats of the legal imagination, and the true nature and uses of it will form the subject of our consideration during the remainder of this chapter.

The law, in creating legal persons, always does so by personifying some real thing. There is, indeed, no theoretical necessity for this, since the law might, if it so pleased, attribute the quality of personality to a purely imaginary being, and yet attain the ends for which this fictitious extension of personality is devised. Personification, however, conduces so greatly to simplicity of thought and speech, that its aid is invariably accepted. The thing personified may be termed the *corpus* of the legal person so created (i), it is the body into which the law infuses the *animus* of a fictitious personality.

Although all legal personality involves personification, the converse is not true. Legal personality is a definite legal conception; personification, as such, is a mere artifice of speech devised for compendious expression. In popular language, and in legal language also, when strictness of speech is not called for, the device of personification is extensively used. We speak of the estate of a deceased person as if it were itself a person. We say that it owes debts, or has debts owing to it, or is insolvent. The law, however, recognises no legal personality in such a case. The rights and liabilities of a dead man devolve upon his heirs, executors, and administrators, not upon any fictitious person known as his estate. Similarly we speak of a piece of land as entitled to a servitude, such as a right of way over another piece. So, also, in the case of common interests and actions, we personify as a single person the group of individuals concerned, even though the law recognises no body corporate. We speak

(i) German writers term it the *substratum* or *Unterlage* of the fictitious person. Windscheid, I. sect. 57. Vangerow, I. sect. 53. Puchta, II. 192.

According to a different usage, the term "legal person" is applied also to natural persons, the argument being that all legal personality is the creation of law, so that it does not matter whether the *substratum* of the lawyer's "person" is a human being or something else. This is merely a question of terminology.

of a firm as a person distinct from the individual partners. We speak of a jury, a bench of judges, a public meeting, the community itself, as being itself a person instead of merely a group or society of persons. But legal personality is not reached until the law recognises, over and above the associated individuals, a single entity which in a manner represents them, but is not identical with them.

Legal persons, being the arbitrary creations of the law, may be of as many kinds as the law pleases. Those which are actually recognised by our own system, however, are of comparatively few types. Corporations are undoubtedly legal persons, and the better view is that registered trade unions and friendly societies are also legal persons though not verbally regarded as corporations. A corporation is a group or series of persons which by a legal fiction is regarded and treated as itself a person. A trade union is an association of workmen or employers for the purpose, among other things, of collective bargaining. A friendly society is a voluntary association formed for the purpose of raising, by the subscription of the members, funds out of which advances may be made for the mutual relief and the maintenance of the members and their families in sickness, infancy, old age, or infirmity. There are special statutory provisions by which registered trade unions and friendly societies can sue or be sued in the registered name, and their effect seems to be to make these groups legal entities distinct from their members (*j*). No other legal persons are at present recognised by English law. If, however, we take account of other systems than our own, we find that the conception of legal personality is not so limited in its application, and that there are several distinct varieties, of which three may be selected for special mention. They are distinguished by reference to the different kinds of things which the law selects for personification.

1. The first class of legal persons consists of corporations, as already defined, namely, those which are constituted by the personification of groups or series of individuals. The individuals who thus form the *corpus* of the legal person are termed its

(*j*) This was the prevailing opinion before *Bonsor v. Musicians' Union*, [1956] A. C. 104, and it is submitted that the majority opinions in that case bear it out. See the critical analysis by Prof. Dennis Lloyd in (1956), 19 M. L. R. 121.

members. We shall consider this form of legal personality more particularly in the sequel.

2. The second class is that in which the *corpus*, or object selected for personification, is not a group or series of persons, but an institution. The law may, if it pleases, regard a church or a hospital, or a university, or a library, as a person. That is to say, it may attribute personality, not to any group of persons connected with the institution, but to the institution itself. Our own law does not, indeed, so deal with the matter. The person known to the law of England as the University of London is not the institution that goes by that name, but a personified and incorporated aggregate of human beings, namely, the chancellor, vice-chancellor, fellows, and graduates. It is well to remember, however, that notwithstanding this tradition and practice of English law, legal personality is not limited by any logical necessity, or, indeed, by any obvious requirement of expediency, to the incorporation of bodies of individual persons (*k*).

3. The third kind of legal person is that in which the *corpus* is some fund or estate devoted to special uses—a charitable fund, for example, or a trust estate, or the property of a dead man or of a bankrupt. Here, also, English law prefers the process of incorporation. If it chooses to personify at all, it personifies, not the fund or the estate, but the body of persons who administer it. Yet the other way is equally possible, and may be equally expedient. The choice of the *corpus* into which the law shall breathe the breath of a legal personality is a matter of form rather than of substance, of lucid and compendious expression rather than of legal principle.

§ 117. Corporations

Corporations are of two kinds, distinguished in English law as corporations aggregate and corporations sole. "Persons", says

(*k*) Occasionally in the statute book we find so-called corporations which are in truth not corporations at all—having no incorporated members—but are merely personified institutions. The Commonwealth Bank of Australia, constituted by an Act of the Federal Parliament of Australia, is an example. See the Commonwealth Bank Act, 1911, s. 5: "A Commonwealth Bank, to be called the Commonwealth Bank of Australia, is hereby established." Sect. 6: "The Bank shall be a body corporate with perpetual succession and a common seal, and may hold land, and may sue and be sued in its corporate name."

Coke (l), "are of two sorts, persons natural created of God, . . . and persons incorporate or politique created by the policy of man (and therefore they are called bodies politique); and those be of two sorts, viz., either sole, or aggregate of many". A corporation aggregate is an incorporated *group* of co-existing persons, and a corporation sole is an incorporated *series* of successive persons. The former is that which has several members at a time, while the latter is that which has only one member at a time. Corporations aggregate are by far the more numerous and important. Examples are a registered company, consisting of all the shareholders, and a municipal corporation, consisting of the inhabitants of the borough. Corporations sole are found only when the successive holders of some public office are incorporated so as to constitute a single, permanent, and legal person. The Sovereign, for example, is said to be a corporation of this kind at common law (m), while the Postmaster-General (n), the Solicitor to the Treasury (o), the Secretary of State for War (p), the Minister of Town and Country Planning (q), and the Minister of Education (r), have been endowed by statute with the same nature (s).

It is essential to recognise clearly that in neither of these forms of incorporation is the legal person identical with any single human being. A company is in law something different from its shareholders or members (t). The property of the company is not in law the property of the shareholders. The

(l) Co. Litt. 2 a.

(m) See § 122.

(n) 8 Edw. 7, c. 48, s. 33.

(o) 39 & 40 Vict. c. 18, s. 1.

(p) 18 & 19 Vict. c. 117, s. 2.

(q) 6 & 7 Geo. 6, c. 5, s. 5.

(r) 7 & 8 Geo. 6, c. 31, s. 1.

(s) Corporations sole are not a peculiarity of English law. The distinction between the two forms of incorporation is well known to foreign jurists. See Windscheid, I. sect. 57. Vangerow, I. sect. 53. The English law as to corporations sole is extremely imperfect and undeveloped, but the conception itself is perfectly logical, and is capable of serious and profitable uses. Maitland has traced the history of this branch of the law in two articles in his *Selected Essays*, 73, 105; see also Holdsworth, *H. E. L.*, III, 481-2.

(t) Savigny, *System*, sect. 90: "The aggregate of the members who compose a corporation differs essentially from the corporation itself." *Great Eastern Ry. v. Turner* (1872), L. R. 8 Ch. at p. 152: "The Company is a mere abstraction of law." *Flitcroft's Case* (1882), 21 Ch. D. at p. 536: "The corporation is not a mere aggregate of shareholders." *Salomon v. Salomon & Co.*, [1897] A. C. at p. 51: "The company is at law a different person altogether from the subscribers to the memorandum."

debts and liabilities of the company are not attributed in law to its members. The company may become insolvent, while its members remain rich. Contracts may be made between the company and a shareholder, as if between two persons entirely distinct from each other. The shareholders may become so reduced in number that there is only one of them left; but he and the company will be distinct persons for all that (u).

May we not go further still, and say that a company is capable of surviving the last of its members? At common law indeed, a corporation is dissolved by the death of all its members (v). There is, however, no logical necessity for any such rule, and it does not apply to corporations sole, for beings of this sort lead a continuous life, notwithstanding the intervals between the death or retirement of each occupant of the office and the appointment of his successor. Nor is there any reason to suppose that such a ground of dissolution is known to the trading corporations which are incorporated under the Companies Acts. Being established by statute, they can be dissolved only in manner provided by the statute to which they owe their origin (a). The representatives of a deceased shareholder are not themselves members of the company, unless they become registered as such with their own consent. If, therefore, on the death of the last surviving members of a private company, their executors refuse or neglect to be registered in their stead, the company will no longer have any members. Is it, for that reason, *ipso jure* dissolved? If not, it is clear that since a company can survive its members and exist without them, it must be something entirely distinct from them (b).

In all those respects a corporation is essentially different from an unincorporated partnership. A firm is not a person in the eye of the law; it is nothing else than the sum of its individual members. There is no legal entity, standing over against the partners, as a company stands over against its shareholders. The property and debts of the firm are nothing else than those of the partners. A change in the list of partners is the substitution of a new firm for the old one, and there is no permanent legal

(u) D. 3. 4. 7. 2. Cum jus omniū in unum reciderit, et stet nomen universitatis. *Universitatis* is the generic title of a corporation in Roman law, a title retained to this day in the case of that particular form of corporation which we know as a university.

(v) Blackstone, I. 485; Holdsworth, *H. E. L.*, III. 489, IX. 62.

(a) Lindley, *Companies* (6th ed.) II. 822 "A company which is incorporated by act of parliament can be dissolved only as therein provided, or by another act of parliament."

(b) That a corporation may survive the last of its members is admitted by Savigny, *System*, sect. 89, and Windscheid, I. sect. 61.

unity, as in the case of the company (c). There can be no firm which consists of one partner only, as a company may consist of one member. The incorporation of a firm—that process by which an ordinary partnership is transmuted into a company—effects a fundamental change in the legal relations of its members. It is nothing less than the birth of a new being, to whom the whole business and property of the partnership is transferred—a being without soul or body, not visible save to the eye of the law, but of a kind whose power and importance, wealth and activity, are already great, and grow greater every day.

In the case of corporations sole, the purely legal nature of their personality is equally apparent. The chief difficulty in apprehending the true nature of a corporation of this description is that it bears the same name as the natural person who is its sole member for the time being, and who represents it and acts for it. Each of them is the Sovereign, or the Solicitor to the Treasury, or the Secretary of State for War. Nevertheless under each of these names two persons live. One is a human being, administering for the time being the duties and affairs of the office. He alone is visible to the eyes of laymen. The other is a mythical being whom only lawyers know of, and whom only the eye of the law can perceive. He is the true occupant of the office; he never dies or retires; the other, the person of flesh and blood, is merely his agent and representative, through whom he performs his functions. The living official comes and goes, but this offspring of the law remains the same for ever.

A vast and fruitless controversy has raged over the question whether corporations aggregate are "real" or "fictitious" persons. Sir John Salmond took the view that they were fictitious, but according to many German writers, whose theories were adopted by Maitland and others, corporate personality is a reality, and not a merely fictitious construction of the law. It is submitted that the question is a spurious one and that there is no issue of fact between the two sides. The "realists" say that an association of men is "real", but this the "fictionists" do not deny. The "realists" say further that an association of men is itself a "person"; but this is simply an assertion of the determination of these writers to use the word "person" in a certain way, not a proposition of fact relating to associations. Finally, the "realists" say that when men act in common they acquire

(c) Yet a partnership is an accounting unit and there are special rules with regard to the position of partners which give it the superficial appearance of a legal entity. See, e.g., *Green v. Hertzog*, [1954] 1 W. L. R. 1309 (C. A.).

a "group will", which is distinct from the sum of the wills of the individuals who take part. This proposition is either untrue or, once more, a mere announcement of a determination to use words in a certain way. If "will" means an aspect of mind the proposition is untrue, for an association of men has no single mind. If "will" means the resultant of the wills of individuals the proposition becomes true, but in this sense it is not denied by the "fictionists".

In any case, it is submitted that the controversy has no legal significance. Whether corporations aggregate are real persons or not (whatever that question may mean), it is undoubted that they are legal persons in English law (d).

§ 118. The Agents, Beneficiaries, and Members of a Corporation

A corporation, having neither soul nor body, cannot act save through the agency of some representative in the world of real men. For the same reason it can have no interests, save those which are attributed to it as a trustee for or otherwise on behalf of actual human beings (e). Whatever a company is reputed to do in law is done in fact by the directors or the shareholders as

(d) Sir John Salmond took the fictionist view, and his argument may be read in the corresponding section of the previous editions of this work. The leading advocate of this realist theory is Gierke, *Die Genossenschaftstheorie* (1887); *Deutsches Privatrecht* (1895). See also Dernburg, *Pandekten*, I. sect. 59, and Mestre, *Les Personnes Morales* (1889). In England it has received sympathetic exposition, if not express support from Maitland in the Introduction to his translation of part of Gierke's *Genossenschaftsrecht* (*Political Theories of the Middle Ages* (1900)). See also, to the same effect, Pollock, *Jurisprudence* (6th ed.) 116; Pollock, "Has the Common Law Received the Fiction Theory of Corporations?" (1911), 27 L. Q. R. 219, reprinted in his *Essays in the Law* 153; Brown, *Austinian Theory of Law*, Excursus A; E. H. Young, "The Legal Personality of a Foreign Corporation" (1906), 22 L. Q. R. 178; Laaki, "The Personality of Associations" (1916), 29 Harvard Law Review 404, reprinted in *The Foundations of Sovereignty* (1921) 139. Savigny and Windscheid are representative adherents of the older doctrine. For further discussions of this question see A. W. Machen, "Corporate Personality" (1911), 24 Harvard Law Review 253, 347; Geldart, "Legal Personality" (1911), 27 L. Q. R. 90; Wolff, "On the Nature of Legal Persons" (1938), 54 L. Q. R. 494; Gray, *Nature and Sources of the Law*, ch. 2; Saleilles, *De la personnalité juridique*; Hallis, *Corporate Personality*. See particularly, for a semantic analysis, H. L. A. Hart, "Definition and Theory in Jurisprudence" (1954), 70 L. Q. R. at 53 ff.

(e) The relation between a corporation and its beneficiaries may or may not amount to a trust in the proper sense of the term. A share in a company is not the beneficial ownership of a certain proportion of the company's property, but the benefit of a contract made by the shareholder with the company, under which he is entitled to be paid a share of the profits made by the company, and of the surplus assets on its dissolution. A share is a chose in action—an obligation between the company and the shareholder: *Colonial Bank v. Whinney* (1886), 11 App. Cas. 426.

its agents and representatives. Whatever interests, rights, or property it possesses in law are in fact those of its shareholders, and are held by it for their benefit. Every legal person, therefore, has corresponding to it in the world of natural persons certain agents or representatives by whom it acts, and certain beneficiaries on whose behalf it exists and fulfils its functions. Its representatives may or may not be different persons from its beneficiaries, for these two capacities may or may not be united in the same individuals. The shareholders of a company are not merely the persons for whose benefit it exists; they are also those by whom it acts. In the case of a corporation established for charitable purposes it is otherwise, for the beneficiaries may have no share whatever in the management of its affairs.

The representatives and beneficiaries of a corporation must not be confounded with its members. These last are, as we have seen, the individuals who form the group or series personified by the law, and who so constitute the *corpus* or body of the legal person thus created. Membership of a corporation does not in itself affect in any way the rights or liabilities of the members, for it is nothing more than a matter of form. A man's privileges and responsibilities in respect of a corporation depend on whether he is one of its representatives or beneficiaries, not on whether he is formally accounted by the law as one of its members. Municipal corporations are constituted by the incorporation of the inhabitants of boroughs; but if by statute it were declared that they should consist for the future of the mayor, aldermen, and councillors, the change would not affect the rights, powers, or liabilities of any human being.

It is worth notice that some or all of the members of a corporation may be corporations themselves. There is nothing to prevent the shares of a company from being held by other companies. In this case the idea of incorporation is duplicated, and the law creates a legal person by the personification of a group of persons who themselves possess a merely legal personality.

§ 119. The Acts and Liabilities of a Corporation

When a natural person acts by an agent, the authority of the agent is conferred, and its limits are determined, by the will and consent of the principal. In general only those acts of the agent

are imputed by the law to the principal, which are within the limits of the agent's authority as thus created and circumscribed. But in the case of a corporation it is necessarily otherwise. A legal person is as incapable of conferring authority upon an agent to act on its behalf, as of doing the act *in propria persona*. The authority of the agents and representatives of a corporation is therefore conferred, limited, and determined, not by the will of the principal, but either by (1) the wills of some human beings who are for this purpose identified in law with the corporation, or by (2) the law itself. A good illustration of (1) is afforded by companies incorporated under the Companies Acts. The first directors may be appointed by or in accordance with the articles of association, which may be drawn up by the promoters of the company; or they may be appointed at a meeting of the shareholders. The volition of the promoters, or of the persons empowered to appoint directors by the articles, or of the shareholders, is therefore the volition of the company for this purpose. When the directors are appointed they are themselves regarded for many purposes as the *alter ego* of the company, and their wills are, within the limits of the rules of law, regarded as the will of the company.

An important rule in connection with companies incorporated by special statute and companies incorporated under the general provisions of the Companies Acts is that their powers are restricted by law in a way that the powers of a human being are not. Any act which lies beyond these legally appointed limits will not be imputed to the corporation, even though done in its name and on its behalf. It is said to be *ultra vires* of the corporation, and as a corporate act it is null and void.

Speaking generally, we may say that such corporations can do those things only which are incidental to the fulfilment of the purposes for which the law created it. All its acts must be directed to its legally appointed end. Thus a company incorporated by special statute is limited to the powers conferred by the statute and those reasonably incidental thereto. The memorandum of association of a company registered under the Companies Acts must set forth the purposes for which it is established; and even the unanimous consent of the whole body of shareholders cannot effectively enable the company to act beyond the limits so marked out for its activity.

It is sometimes thought that the *ultra vires* rule is a necessary consequence of the fact that a corporation itself has no will (*f*). This, however, is not so, for, as we have seen, although the corporation has no will, the law can and does regard certain human beings as the equivalent of the corporation for certain purposes. There is nothing in logic to prevent the law from regarding the will of such human beings as the will of the corporation for *all* purposes, thus dispensing with an *ultra vires* rule. In fact, English law seems to do this in the case of ancient corporations where no charter can be traced (*g*).

It is well settled in the law of England that a corporation may be held liable for wrongful acts, and that this liability extends even to those cases in which malice, fraud, or other wrongful motive or intent is a necessary element. A company may be sued for libel, malicious prosecution, or deceit (*h*). Nor is this responsibility civil only. Corporations, no less than men, are within reach of the arm of the criminal law. They may be indicted or otherwise prosecuted for a breach of their statutory or common law duties, and punished by way of fine and forfeiture (*i*).

Although this is now established law, the theoretical basis of the liability of corporations is a matter of some difficulty and debate. For in the first place it may be made a question whether such liability is consistent with natural justice. To punish a body corporate, either criminally or by the enforcement of penal redress, is in reality to punish the beneficiaries on whose behalf its property is held, for the acts of the agents by whom it fulfils its functions. So far, therefore, as the beneficiaries and the agents are different persons, the liability of bodies corporate is an instance of vicarious responsibility, and it is to be justified on the same principles as are applicable to the vicarious liability of a

(*f*) This view was taken by Salmond.

(*g*) It is frequently said that no chartered company is subject to the *ultra vires* rule, but this is doubtful. See Street, *Ultra Vires* (1930) 18—22.

The Company Law Amendment Committee, 1945, recommended that registered companies should be given as regards third parties the powers of an individual, but this was not acted upon by Parliament. See, upon it, Horowitz, "Company Law Reform and the *Ultra Vires* Doctrine" (1946), 62 L. Q. R. 66.

(*h*) *Cornford v. Carlton Bank*, [1899] 1 Q. B. 392; [1900] 1 Q. B. 22. See also Salmond, *Torts* (11th ed.), § 17; Dernburg, *Pandekten*, I. sect. 66; Windscheid, I. sect. 59; Savigny, *System*, sects. 94, 95; D. 4. 3. 15. 1.

(*i*) *R. v. Birmingham and Gloucester Ry.* (1842), 3 Q. B. 223; *R. v. Great North of England Ry.* (1846), 9 Q. B. 315; *R. v. I. C. R. Haulage, Ltd.*, [1944] K. B. 551. It seems from this last case that *R. v. Cory Bros.*, [1927] 1 K. B. 810, will not now be followed. See also Williams, *Criminal Law: The General Part* (1953), ch. 22.

principal for the unauthorised acts of his agent—principles which will be considered by us at a later stage of our inquiry. For although the representatives of a corporation are in form and legal theory the agents of the legal person, yet in substance and fact they are the agents of the beneficiaries. A company is justly held liable for the acts of its directors, because in truth the directors are the servants of the shareholders.

A more serious difficulty in imposing liability upon bodies corporate arises from the following consideration. The wrongful acts so attributed by the law to legal persons are in reality the acts of their agents. Now we have already seen that, except possibly in the case of chartered corporations, the limits of the authority of those agents are determined by the law itself, and that acts beyond those limits will not be deemed in law to be the acts of the corporation. How, then, can an illegal act be imputed to a corporation? If illegal, it cannot be within the limits of lawful authority; and if not within these limits, it cannot be the act of the corporation (*k*). The solution of this difficulty is twofold. In the first place, it may be said that the argument does not extend to wrongful acts of *omission*, for these are done by the body politic in person, and not merely by its representatives. No legal person can do in person what by law it ought not to do, but it can in person fail to do what in law it ought. And in the second place, the liability of a corporation for the acts of its representatives is a perfectly logical application of the law as to an employer's liability for his servants. The responsibility of a master does not depend on any authority given to his servant to commit the wrongful act. It is the outcome of an absolute rule of law that the employer is himself answerable for all wrongs committed by his servant in the course and process of doing that which he is employed to do. I am liable for the negligence of my servant in driving my carriage, not because I authorised him to be negligent, but because I authorised him to drive the carriage. So in the case of the agents of a corporation: the law imputes to the corporation not only all acts

(*k*) For a development of this thesis see Goodhart, "Corporate Liability in Tort and the Doctrine of *Ultra Vires*" (1926), 2 Cambridge Law Journal 350, reprinted in his *Essays in Jurisprudence and the Common Law* 90, and note thereon in Salmond, *Torts* (10th ed.) 57, n. (x) (not repeated in the same form in the 11th ed.).

which its agents are lawfully authorised to do, but all unlawful acts which they do in or about the business so authorised. The corporation is responsible not only for what its agents do, being thereunto lawfully authorised, but also for the manner in which they do it. If its agents do negligently or fraudulently that which they might have done lawfully and with authority, the law will hold the corporation answerable. This justification, however, applies only in the law of tort. In general the criminal law knows no such doctrine as *respondeat superior*, and the criminal liability of corporations must therefore be looked upon as exceptional (1).

§ 120. The Uses and Purposes of Incorporation

There is probably nothing which the law can do by the aid of the conception of incorporation, which it could not do without it. But there are many things which it can by such aid do better and more easily than would otherwise be possible. Among the various reasons for admitting this extension of personality, we may distinguish one as of general and fundamental importance, namely, the difficulty which the law finds in dealing with common interests vested in large numbers of individuals and with common action in the management and protection of such interests. The normal state of things—that with which the law is familiar, and to which its principles are conformed—is individual ownership. With a single individual the law knows well how to deal, but common ownership is a source of serious and manifold difficulties. If two persons carry on a partnership, or own and manage property in common, complications arise, with which nevertheless the law can deal without calling in the aid of fresh conceptions. But what if there are fifty or a hundred joint-owners? With such a state of facts legal principles and conceptions based on the type of individual ownership are scarcely competent to deal. How shall this multitude manage its common interests and affairs? How shall it dispose of property or enter into contracts? What if some be infants, or insane, or absent? What shall be the effect of the bankruptcy or death of an individual member? How shall one of them sell or otherwise alienate his share? How shall the joint and

(1) For a further discussion of vicarious liability see below, § 152.

separate debts and liabilities of the partners be satisfied out of their property? How shall legal proceedings be taken by or against so great a number? These questions and such as these are full of difficulty even in the case of a private partnership, if the members are sufficiently numerous. The difficulty is still greater in the case of interests, rights, or property vested not in individuals or in definite associations of individuals, but in the public at large or in indeterminate classes of the public.

In view of these difficulties the aim of the law has been to reduce, so far as may be, the complex form of collective ownership and action to the simple and typical form of individual ownership and action. The law seeks some instrument for the effective expression and recognition of the elements of unity and permanence involved in the shifting multitude with whose common interests and activities it has to deal. There are two chief devices for this purpose, namely trusteeship and incorporation. The objects of trusteeship are various, and many of its applications have a source and significance that are merely historical. In general, however, it is used as a mode of overcoming the difficulties created by the incapacity, uncertainty, or multiplicity of the persons to whom property belongs. The property is deemed by the law to be vested, not in its true owners, but in one or more determinate individuals of full capacity, who hold it for safe custody on behalf of those uncertain, incapable, or multitudinous persons to whom it in truth belongs. In this manner the law is enabled to assimilate collective ownership to the simpler form of individual ownership. If the property and rights of a charitable institution or an unincorporated trading association of many members are held in trust by one or two individuals, the difficulties of the problem are greatly reduced.

It is possible, however, for the law to take one step further in the same direction. This step it has taken, and has so attained to the conception of incorporation. This may be regarded from one point of view as merely a development of the conception of trusteeship. For it is plain that so long as a trustee is not required to *act*, but has merely to serve as a depository of the rights of beneficiaries, there is no necessity that he should be a natural person at all. He may be a mere legal concept. And as between the real and the fictitious trustee there are, in large

classes of cases, important advantages on the side of the latter. He is *one* person, and so renders possible a complete reduction of common to individual ownership; whereas the objections to a single trustee in the case of natural persons are serious and obvious. The fictitious trustee, moreover, though not incapable of dissolution, is yet exempt from the inevitable mortality that afflicts mankind. He embodies and expresses, therefore, to a degree impossible in the case of natural trustees, the two elements of unity and of permanence which call for recognition in the case of collective interests. An incorporated company is a permanent unity, standing over against the multitudinous and variable body of shareholders whose rights and property it holds in trust.

It is true, indeed, that a fictitious trustee is incapable of acting in the matter of his trust in his proper person. This difficulty, however, is easily avoided by means of agency, and the agents may be several in number, so as to secure that safety which lies in a multitude of counsellors, while the unity of the trusteeship itself remains unaffected (*m*).

We have considered the general use and purpose of incorporation. Among its various special purposes there is one which has assumed very great importance in modern times, and which is not without theoretical interest. Incorporation is used to enable traders to trade with limited liability. As the law stands, he who ventures to trade in *propria persona* must put his whole fortune into the business. He must stake all that he has upon the success of his undertaking, and must answer for all losses to the last farthing of his possessions. The risk is a serious one even for him whose business is all his own, but it is far more serious for those who enter into partnership with others. In such a case a man may be called upon to answer with his whole fortune for the acts or defaults of those with whom he is disastrously associated.

It is not surprising, therefore, that modern commerce has

(*m*) The purposes of the corporation sole are analogous to those of the corporation aggregate. A corporation sole consists of the successive holders of an office, regarded by the law as a single person. The object of this device is to avoid the difficulties which are involved in the transmission from each officer to his successor of the property, liabilities, and contracts held, incurred or made by him in his official capacity. Such property, liabilities, and contracts are imputed by the law to the permanent corporation which never dies or retires from office, instead of the individual holders of the office for the time being.

seized eagerly upon a plan for eliminating this risk of ruin. Incorporation has proved admirably adapted to this end. They who wish to trade with safety need no longer be so rash as to act *in propria persona*, for they may act merely as the irresponsible agents of a legal entity, created by them for this purpose with the aid and sanction of the Companies Act. If the business is successful, the gains made by the company will be held on behalf of the shareholders; if unsuccessful, the losses must be borne by the company itself. For the debts of a corporation are not the debts of its members. *Si quid universitati debetur, singulis non debetur, nec quod debet universitas singuli debent* (n). The only risk run by its members is that of the loss of the capital with which they have supplied or undertaken to supply the company for the purpose of enabling it to carry on its business. To the capital so paid or promised, the creditors of the insolvent corporation have the first claim, but the liability of the shareholders extends no further.

The advantages which traders derive from such a scheme of limited liability are obvious. Nor does it involve any necessary injustice to creditors, for those who deal with companies know, or have the means of knowing, the nature of their security. The terms of the bargain are fully disclosed and freely consented to. There is no reason in the nature of things why a man should answer for his contracts with all his estate, rather than with a definite portion of it only, for this is wholly a matter of agreement between the parties.

§ 121. The Creation and Extinction of Corporations

The birth and death of legal persons are determined not by nature, but by the law. They come into existence at the will of the law, and they endure during its good pleasure. Corporations may be established by royal charter, by statute, by immemorial custom, and in recent years by agreement of their members expressed in statutory forms and subject to statutory provisions and limitations. They are in their own nature capable of indefinite duration, this being indeed one of their chief virtues as compared with humanity, but they are not incapable of destruction. The extinction of a body corporate is called its

(n) D. 3. 4. 7. 1.

dissolution—the severing of that legal bond by which its members are knit together into a unity. We have already noticed that a legal person does not of necessity lose its life with the destruction or disappearance of its *corpus* or bodily substance. There is no reason why a corporation should not continue to live, although the last of its members is dead; and a corporation sole is merely dormant, not extinct, during the interval between two successive occupants of the office (o).

§ 122. The State as a Corporation

Of all forms of human society the greatest is the state. It owns immense wealth and performs functions which in number and importance are beyond those of all other associations. Is it, then, recognised by the law as a person? Is the commonwealth a body politic and corporate, endowed with legal personality, and having as its members all those who owe allegiance to it and are entitled to its protection? This is the conclusion to which a developed system of law might be expected to attain. But the law of England has chosen another way. The community of the realm is an organised society, but it is no person or body corporate. It owns no property, is capable of no acts, and has no rights nor any liabilities imputed to it by the law. Whatever is said to the contrary is figure of speech, and not the literal language of our law.

How, then, are we to account for this failure of the law to make so obvious and useful an application of the conception of incorporation and legal personality? Why has it failed to recognise and express in this way the unity and permanence of the state? The explanation is to be found in the existence of monarchical government. The real personality of the monarch, who is the head of the state, has rendered superfluous, at any rate within Great Britain, any attribution of legal personality to the state itself. Most public property is in the eye of the law the property of the King—which word, since we are speaking of the sovereign generally, it is convenient to take as

(o) It is a somewhat curious circumstance that the legal persons created by one system of law received full recognition from other systems. A French corporation can sue and be sued in an English Court of justice as if it were a human being. *Dutch West India Co. v. Van Moses* (1724), 1 Str. 611; *Newby v. Van Oppen* (1872), L. R. 7 Q. B. 293.

including the Queen. Public liabilities are those of the King; it is he, and he alone, who owes the principal and interest of the national debt. Whatsoever is done by the state is in law done by the King. The public justice administered in the law courts is royal justice administered by the King through his servants, the judges. The laws are the King's laws, which he enacts with the advice and consent of his Parliament. The executive government of the state is the King's government, which he carries on by the hands of his ministers. The state has no army save the King's army, no navy save the King's navy, no revenues save the royal revenues, no territory save the dominions of the King. Treason and other offences against the state and the public interest are in law offences against the King, and the public peace is the King's peace. The citizens of the state are not fellow-members of one body politic and corporate, but fellow-subjects of one sovereign lord.

It is true that modern times have seen the growth of many exceptions to these principles. Local authorities are public bodies, but in legal theory they do not represent the King. Many other public and semi-public bodies, such as the Mersey Docks and Harbour Board (p) and the British Broadcasting Corporation, are legally distinct from the King, and are not considered as acting under his authority. Nevertheless a lawyer would not regard any of these bodies as identical with the state. In so far as the English lawyer thinks of the state as a whole, he expresses his thought by speaking of the King. This legal attitude reduces the need for recognising an incorporate commonwealth, *respublica*, or *universitas regni*. The King holds in his own hands most of the rights, powers and activities of the state. By his agency the state acts, and through his trusteeship it possesses property and exercises rights.

The King himself, however, is in law no mere mortal man. He has a double capacity, being not only a natural person, but a body politic, that is to say, a corporation sole. The visible wearer of the crown is merely the living representative and agent for the time being of this invisible and underlying *persona ficta*, in whom by our law the powers and prerogatives of the government of this realm are vested. When the King in his natural person

(p) *Mersey Docks and Harbour Board v. Gibbs* (1866), L. R. 1 H. L. 93.

dies, the property real and personal which he owns in right of his crown and as trustee for the state, and the debts and liabilities which in such right and capacity have been incurred by him, pass to his successors in office, and not to his heirs, executors, or administrators. For those rights and liabilities pertain to the King who is a corporation sole, and not to the King who is a mortal man (*q*).

In modern times it has become usual to speak of the Crown rather than of the King, when we refer to the King in his public capacity as a body politic. We speak of the property of the Crown, when we mean the property which the King holds in right of his crown. So we speak of the debts due by the Crown, of legal proceedings by and against the Crown, and so on. The usage is one of great convenience, because it avoids a difficulty which is inherent in all speech and thought concerning corporations sole, the difficulty, namely, of distinguishing adequately between the body politic and the human being by whom it is represented and whose name it bears. Nevertheless, we must bear in mind that this reference to the Crown is a mere figure of speech, and not the recognition by the law of any new kind of legal or fictitious person. The Crown is not itself a person in the law. The only legal person is the body corporate constituted by the series of persons by whom the crown is worn. There is no reason of necessity or even of convenience, indeed, why this should be so. It is simply the outcome of the resolute refusal of English law to recognise any legal persons other than corporations aggregate and sole. Roman law, according to one view of it, treated the treasure-chest of the Emperor (*fiscus*) as *persona ficta* (*r*), and clearly such an exercise of the legal imagination is no more difficult than in the case of the corporation aggregate.

(*q*) *Calvin's Case* (1608), 2 State Trials, at p. 624: "The King hath two capacities in him: one a natural body, being descended of the blood royal of the realm; and this body is of the creation of Almighty God, and is subject to death, infirmity, and such like: the other is a politick body or capacity, so called because it is framed by the policy of man; and in this capacity the King is esteemed to be immortal, invisible, not subject to death, infirmity, infancy." As to the history of this idea see Maitland, "The Crown as a Corporation", *Selected Essays* 104; Holdsworth, *H. E. L.*, III. 458-69; IV. 202-16; IX. 5-6. In general it may be said that the common law paid little more than lip-service to the idea of the Crown as a corporation sole; in so far as the idea has now become effectively realised in the law, it is the result of statute.

(*r*) But see Duff, *Personality in Roman Private Law*, Chap. II.

Just as our law refuses to personify and incorporate the empire as a whole, so it refuses to personify and incorporate the various constituent self-governing states of which the empire is made up. There is no such person known to the law of England as the state or government of Canada or of New Zealand (s). The King or the Crown represents not merely the empire as a whole, but each of its parts; and the result is a failure of the law to give adequate recognition and expression to the distinct existence of these parts (t). The property and liabilities of the government of New Zealand are in law those of the British Crown. The national debts of the colonies are at present owing by no person known to the law save the Queen of England. A contract between the governments of two colonies is in law a nullity, unless the Queen can make contracts with herself. All this would be otherwise, did the law recognise that the dependencies within the Commonwealth were bodies politic and corporate, each possessing a distinct personality of its own, and capable in its own name and person of rights, liabilities, and activities. Some of the older colonies were actually in this position, being created corporations aggregate by the royal charters to which they owed their origin: for example, Massachusetts, Rhode Island, and Connecticut. Even an unincorporated colony of the ordinary type may become incorporate and so possessed of separate personality, by virtue of its own legislation (u). In the absence of any such separate incorporation of the different portions of the empire, their separate existence can be recognised in law only by way of a doctrine of plural personality. Although the Queen represents the whole Commonwealth (with the exception of the "Republics within the

(s) *Sloman v. Government of New Zealand* (1876), 1 C. P. D. 563. This was an action brought in England against the "Governor and Government of the Colony of New Zealand". It failed because there was no such person or body corporate known to the law. The rule seems to have been overlooked in *Government of Gibraltar v. Kenney*, [1956] 3 W. L. R. 466.

(t) See *Williams v. Howarth*, [1905] A. C. 551.

(u) The Commonwealth of Australia, for example, and also the constituent Australian states are now to be deemed for certain purposes bodies politic and corporate. For by virtue of Australian legislation they can now sue and be sued in their own names, and possess other attributes of personality; thus an action will now lie at the suit of the State of Victoria against the State of New South Wales. The corporate character thus bestowed upon these states, however, is concurrent with, and not exclusive of the old common law principle which identifies the state with the King. Public lands in Australia for example, are still the lands of the Crown, except so far as they may be expressly vested in the corporate state by statute.

Commonwealth"), it is possible for the law to recognise a different personality in her in respect of each of its component parts. The Queen who owns the public lands in New Zealand is not necessarily in the eye of the law the same person who owns the public lands in England. The Queen, when she borrows money in her capacity as the executive government of Australia, may be deemed in law a different person from the Queen who owes the English national debt. How far this plural personality of the Crown is actually recognised by the common law of England is a difficult question which it is not necessary for us here to answer (x). It is sufficient to point out that, in the absence of any separate incorporation, this is the only effective way of recognising in law the separate rights, liabilities and activities of the different dependencies of the Crown.

SUMMARY

The nature of personality.

Persons { Natural.
 { Legal.

Natural persons—living human beings

The legal status of beasts.

The legal status of dead men.

The legal status of unborn persons.

Double capacity and double personality.

Legal persons.

Legal personality based on personification.

Personification without legal personality.

Main classes of Legal persons { 1. Corporations.
 { 2. Institutions.
 { 3. Funds or Estates.

(x) It has been expressly recognised by the High Court of Australia, so far as regards the Commonwealth of Australia and the constituent states: *Municipal Council of Sydney v. The Commonwealth* (1904), 1 Commonwealth L. R. at p. 231, per Griffith, C.J.: "It is manifest from the whole scope of the Constitution that just as the Commonwealth and State are regarded as distinct and separate sovereign bodies, . . . so the Crown as representing those several bodies is to be regarded not as one, but as several juristic persons." See also *Att.-Gen. v. Great Southern and Western Railway of Ireland*, [1925] A. C. 754; Pitt Cobbett, "'The Crown' as Representing 'The State'" (1904), 1 Commonwealth Law Review 23, 145; W. H. Moore, "The Crown as a Corporation" (1904), 20 L. Q. R. 351; G. L. Haggan, "The Function of the Crown" (1925), 41 L. Q. R. 182; Borchard, "Governmental Responsibility in Tort" (1927), 36 Yale L. J. at 774-80.

Corporations—the only legal persons known to English law.

Corporations aggregate and corporations sole.

The effect of incorporation.

The beneficiaries of a corporation.

The representatives of a corporation.

The members of a corporation.

Authority of a corporation's agents.

Liability of a corporation for wrongful acts.

The purposes of incorporation:

1. Reduction of collective to individual ownership and action.
2. Limited liability.

The creation and dissolution of corporations.

The personality of the state.

CHAPTER 16

TITLES

§ 123. Vestitive Facts

WE have seen in a former chapter that every right (using the word in a wide sense to include privileges, powers and immunities), involves a title or source from which it is derived. The title is the *de facto* antecedent, of which the right is the *de jure* consequent. If the law confers a right upon one man which it does not confer upon another, the reason is that certain facts are true of him which are not true of the other, and these facts are the title of the right. Whether a right is inborn or acquired, a title is equally requisite. The title to a debt consists in a contract, or a judgment, or other such transaction; but the title to life, liberty, or reputation consists in nothing more than in being born with the nature of a human being. Some rights the law gives to a man on his first appearance in the world; the others he must acquire for himself, for the most part not without labour and difficulty. But neither in the one case nor in the other can there be any right without a basis of fact in which it has its root and from which it proceeds.

Titles are of two kinds, being either *original* or *derivative*. The former are those which create a right *de novo*; the latter are those which transfer an already existing right to a new owner. The catching of fish is an original title of the right of ownership, whereas the purchase of them is a derivative title. The right acquired by the fisherman is newly created; it did not formerly exist in any one. But that which is acquired by the purchaser is in legal theory identical with that which is lost by the vendor. It is an old right transferred, not a new one created. Yet in each case the fact which vests the right is equally a title, in the sense already explained. For the essence of a title is not that it determines the creation of rights *de novo*, but that it determines the acquisition of rights new or old.

As the facts confer rights, so they take them away. All rights are perishable and transient. Some are of feeble vitality,

and easily killed by any adverse influence, the bond between them and their owners being fragile and easily severed. Others are vigorous and hardy, capable of enduring and surviving much. But there is not one of them that is exempt from possible extinction and loss. The first and greatest of all is that which a man has in his own life; yet even this the law will deny to him who has himself denied it to others.

The facts which thus cause the loss of rights may be called, after Bentham, *divestitive facts*. This term, indeed, has never been received into the accepted nomenclature of the law, but there seems no better substitute available. The facts which confer rights received from Bentham the corresponding name of *investitive facts*. The term already used by us, namely, title, is commonly more convenient, however, and has the merit of being well established in the law (a). As a generic term to include both investitive and divestitive facts the expression *vestitive fact* may be permissible (b). Such a fact is one which determines, positively or negatively, the *vesting* of a right in its owner.

We have seen that titles are of two kinds, being either original or derivative. In like manner divestitive facts are either *extinctive* or *alienative*. The former are those which divest a right by destroying it. The latter divest a right by transferring it to some other owner. The receipt of payment is divestitive of the right of the creditor to receive payment; so, also, is the act of the creditor in selling the debt to a third person; but in the former case the divestitive fact is extinctive, while in the latter it is alienative.

It is plain that derivative titles and alienative facts are not two different classes of fact, but are merely the same facts looked at from two different points of view (c). The transfer of a right is an event which has a double aspect. It is the acquisition of a right by the transferee, and the loss of it by the transferor. The vestitive fact, if considered with reference to the transferee, is a

(a) Title meant originally a mark, sign, or inscription; e.g., the title of a book; *titulus sepulchri*, an epitaph. "Pilate wrote a title and put it on the cross": John xix. 19. Thence more specifically it came to mean signs or evidence of right or ownership; e.g., *titulus*, a boundary-stone; *titulus*, a title-deed (Du Cange). Thence the *ground* of right or ownership, viz., an investitive fact.

(b) Bentham calls such facts *dispositive*.

(c) We may term them, with Bentham, *translative facts*.

derivative title, while from the point of view of the transferor it is an alienative fact. Purchase is a derivative title, but sale is an alienative fact; yet they are merely two different sides of the same event.

These distinctions and divisions are exhibited in the following Table:—

Vestitive Facts.	Investitive Facts or Titles.	Original Titles.	Creation of Rights.
		Derivative Titles.	Transfer of Rights.
	Divestitive Facts.	Alienative Facts.	
		Extinctive Facts.	Destruction of Rights.

These different classes of vestitive facts correspond to the three chief events in the life history of a right, namely, its creation, its extinction, and its transfer. By an original title a right comes first into existence, being created *ex nihilo*; by an extinctive fact it is wholly destroyed; by derivative titles and alienative facts, on the other hand—these being, as we have seen, the same facts viewed from different sides—the existence of the right is in no way affected. The transfer of a right does not in legal theory affect its personal identity; it is the same right as before, though it has now a different owner (*d*).

§ 124. Acts in the Law

Vestitive facts—whether they create, transfer, or extinguish rights—are divisible into two fundamentally distinct classes, according as they operate in pursuance of the will of the persons concerned, or independently of it. That is to say, the creation, transfer, and extinction of rights are either voluntary or involuntary. In innumerable cases the law allows a man to acquire or lose his rights by a manifestation or declaration of his will and intent directed to that end. In other cases it confers rights upon him, or takes them away without regard to any purpose or consent of his at all. If he dies intestate, the law itself will dispose of his estate as it thinks fit; but if he leaves a duly

(*d*) We here use the term transfer in its generic sense, as including both voluntary and involuntary changes of ownership. It has also a specific sense in which it includes only the former. Succession *ab intestato*, for example, is a transfer of rights in the wide sense, but not in the narrow.

executed will, in which he expresses his desires in the matter, the law will act accordingly (e). So if he sells his property, it passes from him in accordance with his declared intent, which the law adopts as its own; but if his goods are taken in execution by a creditor, or vested in a trustee on his bankruptcy, the transfer is an involuntary one, effected in pursuance of the law's purposes, and not of his at all.

The distinction between these two classes of vestitive facts may be variously expressed. We may make use, for example, of the contrasted expressions *act of the party* and *act of the law*. An act of the party is any expression of the will or intention of the person concerned, directed to the creation, transfer, or extinction of a right, and effective in law for that purpose; such as a contract or a deed of conveyance. An act of the law, on the other hand, is the creation, extinction, or transfer of a right by the operation of the law itself, independent of any consent thereto on the part of him concerned. The expression *act of the party* is one of some awkwardness, however, and it is more convenient in general to substitute for it the technical term *act in the law*, as contrasted with those acts of the law which we have already defined (f). There is a close connection between an act in the law and a legal power (g). Every act in the law is the exercise of a legal power, and the exercise of any legal power is an act in the law.

Acts in the law are of two kinds, which may be distinguished as *unilateral* and *bilateral*. A unilateral act is one in which there is only one party whose will is operative; as in the case of testamentary disposition, the exercise of a power of appointment, the revocation of a settlement, the avoidance of a voidable contract, or the forfeiture of a lease for breach of covenant. A bilateral act, on the other hand, is one which involves the consenting wills of two or more distinct parties; as, for example, a contract, a conveyance, a mortgage, or a lease. Bilateral

(e) Subject, now, to the power of the court to make provision out of the estate for the maintenance of a surviving spouse or child: Inheritance (Family Provision Act, 1938. For a general discussion of this type of legislation see the valuable symposium in (1935) 20 Iowa Law Review 332, 241, 317, 326.

(f) This nomenclature has been suggested and adopted by Sir Frederick Pollock, *Jurisprudence* (6th ed.) 144. Other writers prefer to indicate acts in the law by the term *juristic acts*. The Germans call them *Rechtsgeschäfte*.

(g) For powers see *supra*, § 79.

acts in the law are called *agreements* in the wide and generic sense of that term. There is, indeed, a narrow and specific use, in which agreement is synonymous with contract, that is to say, the creation of rights in *personam* by way of consent. The poverty of our legal nomenclature is such, however, that we cannot afford thus to use these two terms as synonymous. We shall therefore habitually use agreement in the wide sense, to include all bilateral acts in the law, whether they are directed to the creation, or to the transfer, or to the extinction of rights. In this sense conveyances (*h*), mortgages, leases, or releases are agreements no less than contracts are.

Unilateral acts in the law are divisible into two kinds in respect of their relation to the other party concerned. For in some instances they are adverse to him; that is to say, they take effect not only without his *consent*, but notwithstanding his *dissent*. His will is wholly inoperative and powerless in the matter. This is so, for example, in the case of a re-entry by a landlord upon a tenant for breach of covenant, or the exercise of a power of appointment, as against the persons entitled in default of appointment; or the avoidance of a voidable contract; or the exercise by a mortgagee of his power of sale. In other cases it is not so; the operation of the unilateral act is subject to the dissent of the other party affected by it, though it does not require his consent. In the meantime, pending the expression of his will, the act has merely a provisional and contingent operation. A will, for example, involves nothing save the unilateral intent and assent of the testator. The beneficiaries need know nothing of it; they need not yet be in existence. But if they subsequently dissent, and reject the rights so transferred to them, the testament will fail of its effect (*k*). If, on the other hand, they accept the provisions made on their behalf, the operation of the will forthwith ceases to be provisional and becomes absolute. Similarly, a settlement of property upon trust need not be known or consented to *ab initio* by the beneficiaries. It may be a purely unilateral act, subject, however,

(*h*) The term "conveyance" is here used to signify any voluntary transfer of a right. It has, however, a narrower and a wider meaning. More narrowly it means the transfer of a right of property that does not pass by delivery of a thing or mere agreement. More widely it means any alienative fact, *e.g.*, bankruptcy, which transfers the bankrupt's rights without his consent.

(*k*) But see *Mallott v. Wilson*, [1903] 2 Ch. 494.

to repudiation and avoidance by the persons intended to be benefited by it. So I may effectually grant a mortgage or other security to a creditor who knows nothing of it (l).

Where there are more than two parties concerned in any act in the law, it may be bilateral in respect of some of them and unilateral in respect of others. Thus a conveyance of property by A to B in trust for C may be bilateral as to A and B *inter se*—operating by the mutual consent of these two—while it may at the same time be unilateral as between A and B on the one side and C on the other—C having no knowledge of the transaction. So the exercise of a mortgagee's power of sale is bilateral as between mortgagee and purchaser, but unilateral so far as regards the mortgagor (m).

§ 125. Agreements

Of all vestitive facts, acts in the law are the most important; and among acts in the law, agreements are entitled to the chief place. Unilateral acts are comparatively infrequent and unimportant. The residue of this chapter will therefore be devoted to the consideration of the grounds, modes, and conditions of the operation of agreement as an instrument of the creation, transfer, and extinction of rights. A considerable portion of what is to be said in this connection will, however, be applicable *mutatis mutandis* to unilateral acts also.

The importance of agreement as a vestitive fact lies in the universality of its operation. There are few rights which cannot be acquired through the assent of the persons upon whom the correlative duties are to be imposed. There are few rights which cannot be transferred to another by the will of him in whom they are presently vested. There are few which are not extinguished when their owner no longer desires to retain them. Of that great multitude of rights and duties of which the adult member of a civilised community stands possessed, the great majority have their origin in agreements made by him with

(l) *Middleton v. Pollock* (1876), 2 Ch. D. 104; *Sharp v. Jackson*, [1899] A. C. 419.

(m) The terms unilateral and bilateral possess another signification distinct from that which is attributed to them in the text. In the sense there adopted all agreements are bilateral, but there is another sense in which some of them are bilateral and others unilateral. An agreement is bilateral, in this latter signification, if there is something to be done by each party to it, while it is unilateral if one party is purely passive and free from legal obligation, all the activity and obligation being on the other side. An agreement to lend money is bilateral, while an agreement to give money is unilateral.

other men. By agreements of contrary intent he may strip himself almost as destitute of rights and duties, as when in the scantiest of juridical vesture he made his first appearance before the law. *Invito beneficium non datur* (n), said the Romans.

By what reasons, then, is the law induced to allow this far-reaching operation to the fact of agreement? Why should the mere consent of the parties be permitted in this manner to stand for a title of right? Are not rights the subject-matter of justice, and is justice a mere matter of convention varying with the wills of men?

The reasons are two in number. Agreement is, in the first place, evidential of right, and, in the second place, constitutive of it. There is in general no better evidence of the justice of an arrangement than the fact that all persons whose interests are affected by it have freely and with full knowledge consented to it. Men are commonly good judges of their own interests, and in the words of Hobbes "there is not ordinarily a greater sign of the equal distribution of anything, than that every man is contented with his share". When, therefore, all interests are satisfied, and every man is content, the law may safely presume that justice has been done, and that each has received his own. This, however, assumes that the parties are in equal economic positions. If, as is too often the case, the economically strong are able to impose their will upon the economically weak, the resulting agreements may seem to the ordinary fair-minded observer to be unjust. For reasons good or bad, the law does not allow this question to be judicially investigated, and the plea that the contract was entered into through economic necessity is no defence to an action on the contract. In the second place, consent is in many cases truly constitutive of right, instead of merely evidential of it. It is one of the leading principles of justice to guarantee to men the fulfilment of their reasonable expectations. In all matters that are otherwise indifferent, expectation is of predominant influence in the determination of the rule of right, and of all the grounds of rational expectation there is none of such general importance as mutual consent. "The human will", says Aquinas, "is able by way

of consent to make a thing just; provided that the thing is not in itself repugnant to natural justice " (o).

There is an obvious analogy between agreement and legislation—the former being the private and the latter the public declaration and establishment of rights and duties. By way of legislation the state does for its subjects that which in other cases it allows them to do for themselves by way of agreement. As to the respective spheres of these two operations, the leading maxim is *Modus et conventio vincunt legem*. Save when the interests of the public at large demand a different rule, the autonomy of consenting parties prevails over what would otherwise be the legislative will of the state. So far as may be, the state leaves the rule of right to be declared and constituted by the agreement of those concerned with it. So far as possible, it contents itself with executing the rules which its subjects have made for themselves. And in so doing it acts wisely. For, in the first place, the administration of justice is enabled in this manner to escape in a degree not otherwise attainable the disadvantages inherent in the recognition of rigid principles of law. Such principles we must have; but if they are established *pro re nata* by the parties themselves, they will possess a measure of adaptability to individual cases which is unattainable by the more general legislation of the state itself. And in the second place, men are commonly better content to bear the burdens which they themselves have taken up, than those placed upon them by the will of a superior.

§ 126. The Classes of Agreements

Agreements are divisible into three classes, for they either create rights, or transfer them, or extinguish them. Those which create rights are themselves divisible into two sub-classes, distinguishable as *contracts* and *grants*. A contract is an agreement which creates an obligation or right *in personam* between the parties to it. A grant is an agreement which creates a right of any other description; examples being grants of leases, easements, charges, patents, franchises, powers, licences, and so forth. An agreement which transfers a right may be termed generically an *assignment*. One which extinguishes a right is a *release, discharge, or surrender*.

As already indicated, a contract is an agreement intended to create and actually creating a right *in personam* between the contracting parties. No agreement is a contract unless its effect is to bind the parties to each other by the *vinculum juris* of a

(o) *Summa*, 2. 2. q. 57, art. 2.

newly created personal right. It commonly takes the form of a promise or set of promises. That is to say, a declaration of the consenting wills of two persons that one of them shall henceforth be under an obligation to the other naturally assumes the form of an undertaking by the one with the other to fulfil the obligation so created. Not every promise, however, amounts to a contract. To constitute a contract there must be not merely a promise to do a certain act, but a promise, express or implied, to do this act as a legal duty. When I accept an invitation to dine at another man's house, I make him a promise, but enter into no contract with him. The reason is that our wills, though consenting, are not directed to the creation of any legal right or to any alteration of our legal relations towards each other. The essential form of a contract is not: I promise this to you; but: I agree with you that henceforth you shall have a legal right to demand and receive this from me. Promises that are not reducible to this form are not contracts. Therefore the consent that is requisite for the creation of rights by way of contract is essentially the same as that required for their transfer or extinction. The essential element in each case is the express or tacit reference to the legal relations of the consenting parties.

Taking into account the two divisions of the consensual creation of rights, there are, therefore, four distinct kinds of agreements:—

1. Contracts—creating rights *in personam*.
2. Grants—creating rights of any other kind.
3. Assignments—transferring rights.
4. Releases—extinguishing rights.

It often happens that an agreement is of a mixed nature, and so falls within two or more of these classes at the same time. Thus the sale of a specific chattel is both a contract and an assignment, for it transfers the ownership of the chattel and at the same time creates an obligation to pay the price. So a lease is both a grant and a contract, for it creates real and personal rights at the same time.

A frequent result of the difference between law and equity, and between legal and equitable rights and ownership, is that the same agreement has one effect in law and another in equity. In law it may be a mere contract, and in equity an assignment or a grant. Thus a written agreement for the sale of land is in law nothing more than a contract imposing upon the seller a personal obligation

to execute a conveyance under seal, but not in itself amounting to a transfer of the ownership of the land. In equity, on the other hand, such an agreement amounts to an assignment. The equitable ownership of the land passes under it to the purchaser forthwith, and the vendor holds the legal ownership in trust for him. Similarly a contract to grant a *legal* lease or mortgage or servitude is itself the actual grant of an *equitable* lease, mortgage, or servitude. For it is a maxim of Chancery that equity regards that as already done which ought to be done.

There are some cases in law in which, although in fact there is no agreement, the law regards an agreement as existing. These cases are particularly prominent in contract. Thus if A makes an offer to B, and then writes a letter to B purporting to revoke the offer, and B accepts A's offer before A's revocation has come to his notice, there is a valid contract, notwithstanding that there has never been a *consensus ad idem* at a single point of time. Again, if A leads B to suppose that he is agreeing, when in fact he does not agree, he is estopped from setting up his real intention. These cases have led to the formulation of an "objective" theory of contract, in opposition to the traditional "subjective" one. According to the objective theory, a contract is not an agreement, a subjective meeting of the minds, but is a series of external acts giving the objective semblance of agreement (p). It is submitted that this theory goes too far one way, just as a purely subjective theory would go too far the other way. The truth is that there are some cases in which the law takes a subjective view, and some cases in which it takes an objective view, according to the policy of the particular case. In the present work the word "agreement" will be used, where the context so admits, to cover not only genuine agreement, but also conduct which in law is regarded as the equivalent of agreement.

§ 127. Void and Voidable Agreements

In respect of their legal efficacy agreements are of three kinds, being either *valid*, *void*, or *voidable*. A valid agreement is one which is fully operative in accordance with the intent of the parties. A void agreement is one which entirely fails to receive

(p) See Williston, "Mutual Assent in the Formation of Contracts" (1919), 14 Illinois Law Review 85, reprinted in *Selected Readings on the Law of Contracts* (1931) 119.

legal recognition or sanction, the declared will of the parties being wholly destitute of legal efficacy (*q*). A voidable agreement stands midway between these two cases. It is not a nullity, but its operation is conditional and not absolute. By reason of some defect in its origin it is liable to be destroyed or cancelled at the option of one of the parties to it. On the exercise of this power the agreement not only ceases to have any efficacy, but is deemed to have been void *ab initio*. The avoidance of it relates back to the making of it. The hypothetical or contingent efficacy which has hitherto been attributed to it wholly disappears, as if it had never existed. In other words, a voidable agreement is one which is void or valid at the election of one of the parties to it. A lease determinable on notice or on re-entry for breach of covenant is not for that reason voidable; because, when determined, it is destroyed not *ab initio*, but merely from then onwards (*r*).

Void and voidable agreements may be classed together as *invalid*. The most important causes of invalidity are six in number, namely, (1) incapacity, (2) informality, (3) illegality, (4) error, (5) coercion, and (6) want of consideration.

1. *Incapacity*. Certain classes of persons are wholly or partially destitute of the power of determining their rights and liabilities by way of consent. They cannot, at least to the same extent as other persons, supersede or supplement the common law by subjecting themselves to conventional law of their own making. In the case of minors, lunatics, and convicts, for example, the common law is peremptory, and not to be derogated from or added to by their agreement. So the agreements of an incorporated company may be invalid because *ultra vires*, or beyond the capacity conferred upon it by law.

(*q*) In some cases, however, an agreement, though said to be void, is given a limited legal efficacy. Thus, if A bets his watch against B's watch on the result of a horse race, the agreement does not operate to create a contract. The apparent contract is void as a wager, and no legal *obligatio* comes into existence. Nevertheless if A loses and hands over his watch, his delivery of the watch, made in pursuance of the previous agreement to deliver it in the event of losing the bet, will pass the property in the watch. Thus the agreement is void as a contract but, coupled with the delivery, is valid as a conveyance. Again, a void contract may operate as a licence to enter land.

(*r*) In respect of the efficacy of contracts, there is a special case which requires a word of notice. A contract may be neither void nor voidable, but yet *unenforceable*. That is to say, no action will lie for the enforcement of it. The obligation created by it is imperfect. See *ante*, § 81.

2. *Informality.* Agreements are of two kinds, which may be distinguished as *simple* and *formal*. A simple agreement is one in which nothing is required for its effective operation beyond the manifestation, in whatever fashion, of the consenting wills of the parties. A formal agreement, on the other hand, is one in which the law requires not merely that consent shall exist, but that it shall be manifested in some particular form, in default of which it is held of no account. Thus the intent of the parties may be held effective only if expressed in writing signed by them, or in writing authenticated by the more solemn form of sealing; or it must be embodied in some appointed form of words; or it must be acknowledged in the presence of witnesses, or recorded by some form of public registration; or it must be accompanied by some formal act, such as the delivery of the subject-matter of the agreement.

The leading purpose of all such forms is twofold. They are, in the first place, designed as pre-appointed evidence of the fact of consent and of its terms, to the intent that this method of determinating rights and liabilities may be provided with the safeguards of permanence, certainty, and publicity. In the second place their purpose is that all agreements may by their help be the outcome of adequate reflection. Any necessary formality has the effect of drawing a sharp line between the preliminary negotiations and the actual agreement, and so prevents the parties from drifting by inadvertence into unconsidered consent.

3. *Illegality.* In the third place an agreement may be invalid by reason of the purposes with which it is made. To a very large extent men are free to agree together upon any matter as they please; but this autonomous liberty is not absolute. Limitations are imposed upon it, partly in the interests of the parties themselves, and partly on behalf of the public. There are many matters in which the common law will admit of no abatement, and many in which it will admit of no addition, by way of conventional law. It is true in great part that *Modus et conventio vincunt legem*; but over against this principle we must set the qualification, *Privatorum conventio juri publico non derogat*. By *jus publicum* is here meant that part of the law which concerns the public interest, and which for this reason the agreements of

private persons cannot be allowed to infringe upon (s). Agreements which in this way overpass the limits allowed by the law are said in a wide sense to be illegal, or to be void for illegality. They may or may not be illegal in a narrower sense, as amounting in their making or in their performance to a criminal or civil wrong.

4. *Error or mistake.* Error or mistake, as a ground of invalidity, is of two kinds, which are distinguishable as *essential* and *unessential*. Essential error is that which is of such a nature as to prevent the existence of any real consent, and therefore of any real agreement. The parties have not in reality meant the *same* thing, and therefore have not in reality agreed to *any* thing. Their agreement exists in appearance only, and not in reality. This is the case if A makes an offer to B which is accepted in mistake by C; or if A agrees to sell land to B, but A is thinking of one piece of land, and B is thinking of another. The effect of error of this kind is to make the agreement wholly void, inasmuch as there is in truth no agreement at all, but only the external semblance and form of one (t).

There is, however, an exception to this rule when the error is due to the negligence of one of the parties and is unknown to the other. For in such a case he who is in fault will be estopped by his own carelessness from raising the defence of essential error, and will be held bound by the agreement in the sense in which the other party understood it (u).

Unessential error, on the other hand, is that which does not relate to the nature or contents of the agreement, but only to some external circumstance, serving as one of the inducements which led to the making of it; as when A agrees to buy B's horse because he believes it to be sound, whereas it is in reality unsound. This is not essential error, for there is a true *consensus ad idem*. The parties have agreed to the same thing in the same sense, though one of them would not have made the agreement had he not been under a mistake. The general rule is that unessential error has no effect on the validity of an agreement. Neither party is in any way concerned in law with the reasons which

(s) D. 50. 17. 45. 1.

(t) *Cundy v. Lindsay* (1878), 3 App. Cas. 459; *Raffles v. Wichelhaus* (1864), 2 H. & C. 906; *Phillips v. Brooks, Ltd.*, [1919] 2 K. B. 243.

(u) *King v. Smith*, [1900] 2 Ch. 425; *ante*, § 126.

induced the other to give his consent. That which men consent to they must abide by, whether their reasons are good or bad. And this is so even though one party is well aware of the error of the other (x).

This rule, however, is subject to an important exception, for even unessential error will in general make an agreement voidable at the option of the mistaken party, if it has been caused by the misrepresentation of the other party. He who is merely mistaken is none the less bound by his agreement; but he who is misled has a right to rescind the agreement so procured (a).

5. *Coercion*. In order that consent may be justly allowed as a title of right, it must be free. It must not be the product of any form of compulsion or undue influence; otherwise the basis of its legal operation fails. Freedom, however, is a matter of degree, and it is no easy task to define the boundary line that must be recognised by a rational system of law. We can only say generally, that there must be such liberty of choice as to create a reasonable presumption that the party exercising it has chosen that which he desires, and not merely submitted to that which he cannot avoid. We cannot usefully enter here into any examination of the actual results that have been worked out in this matter by English law.

6. *Want of consideration*. A further condition very commonly required by English law for the existence of fully efficacious consent is that which is known by the technical name of *consideration*. This requirement is, however, almost wholly confined to the law of contract, other forms of agreement being generally exempt from it.

A consideration in its widest sense is the reason, motive, or inducement, by which a man is moved to bind himself by an agreement. It is not for nothing that he consents to impose an obligation upon himself, or to abandon or transfer a right. It is in *consideration* of such and such a fact that he agrees to bear new burdens or to forgo the benefits which the law already allows

(x) *Smith v. Hughes* (1871), L. R. 6 Q. B. 597.

(a) In addition to the case of misrepresentation, unessential error affects any agreement which has been expressly or impliedly made conditional on the existence of the fact erroneously supposed to exist. A contract of sale, for example, is conditional on the present existence of the thing sold; if it is already destroyed, the contract for the purchase of it is void.

him. If he sells his house, the consideration of his agreement is the receipt or promise of the purchase money. If he makes a settlement upon his wife and children, it is in consideration of the natural love and affection which he has for them. If he promises to pay a debt incurred by him before his bankruptcy, the consideration of his promise is the moral obligation which survives his legal indebtedness to his creditors. Using the term in this wide sense, it is plain that no agreement made with knowledge and freedom by a rational man can be destitute of some species of consideration. All consent must proceed from some efficient cause. What, then, is meant by saying that the law requires a consideration as a condition of the validity of an agreement? The answer is that the consideration required by the law is a consideration of a kind which the law itself regards as sufficient. It is not enough that it should be deemed sufficient by the parties, for the law has itself authoritatively declared what facts amount to a valid and sufficient consideration for consent, and what facts do not. If men are moved to agreement by considerations which the law refuses to recognise as good, so much the worse for the agreement. *Ex nudo pacto non oritur actio*. To bare consent, proceeding from no lawfully sanctioned source, the law allows no operation.

What considerations, then, does the law select and approve as sufficient to support a contract? Speaking generally, we may say that none are good for this purpose save those which are *valuable*. By a valuable consideration is meant something of value given or promised by one party in exchange for the promise of the other. By English law no promise (unless under seal or of record) is binding unless the promisor receives a *quid pro quo* from the promisee. Contracts which are purely unilateral, all the obligation being on one side, and nothing either given or promised on the other, are destitute of legal operation. Every valid contract (*b*) is reducible to the form of a bargain that if I do something for you, you will do something for me.

The thing thus given by way of consideration must be of some *value*. That is to say, it must be material to the interests of one or other or both of the parties. It must either involve

(b) With the exception of contracts under seal and contracts of record, to which the doctrine of consideration is inapplicable.

some gain or benefit to the promisor by way of recompense for the burden of his promise, or it must involve some loss or disadvantage to the promisee for which the benefit of the promise is a recompense. Commonly it possesses both of these qualities at once, but either of them is sufficient by itself. Thus if I promise gratuitously to take care of property which the owner deposits with me, I am bound by that promise, although I receive no benefit in recompense for it, because there is a sufficient consideration for it in the detriment incurred by the promisee in entrusting his property to my guardianship. But if the thing given by way of consideration is of no value at all, being completely indifferent to both parties, it is insufficient, and the contract is invalid; as, for example, the doing of something which one is already bound to the other party to do, or the surrender of a claim which is known to be unfounded.

In certain exceptional cases, however, considerations which are not valuable are nevertheless accepted as good and sufficient by the law. Thus the existence of a legal obligation may be a sufficient consideration for a promise to fulfil it; as in the case of a promissory note or other negotiable instrument given for the amount of an existing debt. At one time it was supposed to be the law that a merely moral obligation was in the same manner a sufficient basis for a promise of performance, and though this is no longer true as a general proposition, certain particular applications of the principle still survive, while others have been abolished by statute. Thus a promise made by a discharged bankrupt to pay a creditor in full was formerly a binding contract, because made in consideration of the moral obligation which survives the legal indebtedness of an insolvent. For the same reason, a promise made after majority to pay debts incurred during infancy was binding, until the law was altered in this respect by legislation.

With respect to the rational basis of this doctrine, it is to be noticed that the requirement of consideration is not absolute, but conditional on the absence of a certain formality, namely that of a sealed writing. Form and consideration are two alternative conditions of the validity of contracts and of certain other kinds of agreements. It may be surmised, therefore, that they are founded on the same reasons and fulfil the same functions. They are intended as a precaution against the risk

of giving legal efficacy to unconsidered promises and to the levities of speech. The law selects certain reasons and inducements, which are normally sufficient for reasoned and deliberate consent, and holds valid all agreements made on these grounds, even though informal. In all other cases it demands the guarantee of solemn form. There can be little doubt, however, that our law has shown itself too scrupulous in this matter; in other legal systems no such precaution is known, and its absence seems to lead to no ill results (c). Even English law has recently shown a tendency to mitigate the rigours of the doctrine of consideration by introducing a principle of equitable estoppel (cc).

Although the doctrine of consideration, in the form received by English law, is unknown elsewhere, it is simply a modification of a doctrine known to the civil law and to several modern systems, more especially to that of France. Article 1131 of the French Civil Code provides that: "L'obligation sans cause, ou sur une fausse cause, ou sur une cause illicite, ne peut avoir aucun effet" (d). This *cause* or *causa* is a synonym for consideration, and we find the terms used interchangeably in the earlier English authorities (e). There is, however, an essential difference between the English and the Continental principle. Unlike the former, the latter never rejects any cause or consideration as *insufficient*. Whatever motive or inducement is enough to satisfy the contracting parties is enough to satisfy the law, even though it is nothing more than the *causa liberalitatis* of a voluntary gift. By an obligation *sans cause*, or contract without consideration, French law does not mean a contract made without any motive or inducement (for there are none such), nor a contract made from an inadequate motive or inducement (for the law makes no such distinctions), but a contract made for a consideration which has failed—*causa non secuta*, as the Romans called it. The second ground of invalidity mentioned in the Article cited is the *falsity* of the consideration (*falsa causa*). A consideration may be based on a mistake, so that it is imaginary and not real; as when I agree to buy a horse which, unknown to me, is already dead, or a ship which has been already wrecked, or give a promissory note for a debt which is not truly owing. Finally, a *causa turpis*, or illegal consideration, is as fatal to a contract in French and Roman law as in English.

(c) Cf. D. 44. 4. 2. 3. Si quis sine causa ab aliquo fuerit stipulatus, deinde ex ea stipulatione experiatur, exceptio utique doli mali ei nocebit. See also D. 12. 7. 1. pr.; Buckland and McNair, *Roman Law and Common Law* (2nd ed.) 221 ff.

(cc) Cheshire and Fifoot, *Law of Contract* (4th ed.) 77 ff.

(d) Salmond, *Essays in Jurisprudence and Legal History* 219.

(e) For a criticism of the doctrine, with suggestions for reform, see the report of the Law Revision Committee, Cmd. 5449 of 1937.

In English law the failure of consideration (*causa non secuta*) and its unreality due to error (*causa falsa*) are grounds of invalidity, only when the absence of such failure or error is expressly or impliedly made a condition of the contract. In a contract for the sale of a chattel, for example, the present existence of the chattel is an implied condition of the validity of the sale (*f*).

SUMMARY

Vestitive Facts.	Investitive Facts or Titles.	Original Titles.	Creation of Rights.
		Derivative Titles.	Transfer of Rights.
	Divestitive Facts	Alienative Facts.	
		Extinctive Facts.	
Vestitive Facts.	Acts of the law.	Unilateral.	Bilateral, or Agreements.
	Acts in the law.		
Agreements	1. Contracts—creating rights in <i>personam</i> .		
	2. Grants—creating rights of other descriptions.		
	3. Assignments—transferring rights.		
	4. Releases—extinguishing rights.		
Grounds of the operation of agreements.			
Comparison of agreement and legislation.			
The objective theory of contract.			
Agreements.	Valid.	Void.	Voidable.
	Invalid.		
The causes of invalidity.			
	1. Incapacity.		
	2. Informality.		
	3. Illegality.		
	4. Error.		
	5. Coercion.		
	6. Want of consideration.		

(f) The French law as to the cause or consideration of a contract will be found in Pothier, *Obligations*, sects. 42–46, and Baudry-Lacantinerie, *Obligations*, sects. 295–327. See also Amos and Walton, *Introduction to French Law* 162 ff.; Walton, "Cause and Consideration in Contracts" (1925), 41 L. Q. R. 306. Whether the English doctrine of consideration is historically connected with the *causa* of the civil law is a matter of dispute, and there is much to be said on both sides. See Holdsworth, *H. E. L.* VIII. 5; Barbour, *The History of Contract in Early English Equity* (Oxford Studies in Social and Legal History, IV.) 63 ff.

CHAPTER 17

LIABILITY

§ 128. The Nature and Kinds of Liability

HE who commits a wrong is said to be liable or responsible for it. Liability or responsibility is the bond of necessity that exists between the wrongdoer and the remedy of the wrong. This *vinculum juris* has its source in the supreme will of the state, vindicating its supremacy by way of physical force in the last resort against the unconforming will of the individual (a).

The purpose of this chapter and of the two which follow it is to consider the general theory of liability. We shall investigate the leading principles which determine the existence, the incidence, and the measure of responsibility for wrongdoing. The special rules which relate exclusively to particular kinds of wrongs will be disregarded.

Liability is in the first place either civil or criminal, and in the second place either remedial or penal. The nature of these distinctions has been already sufficiently considered in a previous chapter on the Administration of Justice (b). Here it need only be recalled that in the case of penal liability the purpose of the law, direct or ulterior, is or includes the punishment of a wrongdoer; in the case of remedial liability, the law has no such purpose at all, its sole intent being the enforcement of the plaintiff's right, and the idea of punishment being wholly irrelevant. The liability of a borrower to repay the money borrowed by him is remedial; that of the publisher of a libel to be imprisoned, or to pay damages to the person injured by him, is penal. All criminal liability is penal; civil liability, on the other hand, is sometimes penal and sometimes remedial.

§ 129. The Theory of Remedial Liability

The theory of remedial liability presents little difficulty. It might seem at first sight that, whenever the law creates a duty,

(a) We have already seen that the term liability has another sense, in which it is the correlative of any legal power. *Supra*, § 79.

(b) *Supra*, §§ 30, 36.

it should enforce the specific fulfilment of it. There are, however, several cases where, for various reasons, duties are not specifically enforced. They may be classified as follows:—

1. In the first place, there are duties of imperfect obligation—duties the breach of which gives no cause of action, and creates no liability at all, either civil or criminal, penal or remedial. A debt barred by the statute of limitations is a legal debt, but the payment of it cannot be compelled by any legal proceedings (c).

2. Secondly, there are many duties which from their nature cannot be specifically enforced after having once been broken. When a libel has already been published, or an assault has already been committed, it is too late to compel the wrongdoer to perform his duty of refraining from such acts. Wrongs of this description may be termed transitory; once committed they belong to the irrevocable past. Others, however, are continuing; for example, the non-payment of a debt, the commission of a nuisance, or the detention of another's property. In such cases the duty violated is in its nature capable of specific enforcement, notwithstanding the violation of it.

3. In the third place, even when the specific enforcement of a duty is possible, it may be, or be deemed to be, more expedient to deal with it solely through the criminal law, or through the creation and enforcement of a substitutive sanctioning duty of pecuniary compensation. It is only in special cases, for example, that the law will compel the specific performance of a contract, instead of the payment of damages for the breach of it.

§ 130. The Theory of Penal Liability

We now proceed to the main subject of our inquiry, namely, the general principles of penal liability. We have to consider the legal theory of punishment, in its application both to the criminal law and to those portions of the civil law in which the idea of punishment is relevant and operative. We have already, in a former chapter, dealt with the purposes of punishment, and we there saw that its end is fourfold, being deterrent, disabling, retributive, and reformative. The first of these purposes, however, is primary and essential, the others being merely secondary.

In our present investigation, therefore, we shall confine our attention to punishment as deterrent. The inquiry will fall into three divisions, relating (1) to the conditions, (2) to the incidence, and (3) to the measure of penal liability (d).

The general conditions of penal liability are indicated with sufficient accuracy in the legal maxim, *Actus non facit reum, nisi mens sit rea*—The act alone does not amount to guilt; it must be accompanied by a guilty mind. That is to say, there are two conditions to be fulfilled before penal responsibility can rightly be imposed. The one is the doing of some act by the person to be held liable. A man is to be accounted responsible only for what he himself does, not for what other persons do, or for events independent of human activity altogether. The other is the *mens rea* or guilty mind with which the act is done. It is not enough that a man has done some act which on account of its mischievous results the law prohibits; before the law can justly punish the act, an inquiry must be made into the mental attitude of the doer. For although the act may have been objectively wrongful, the mind and will of the doer may have been innocent.

We shall see later that the *mens rea* or guilty mind includes two, and only two, distinct mental attitudes of the doer towards the deed. These are intention and recklessness. Generally speaking, a man is penally responsible only for those wrongful acts which he does either wilfully or recklessly. Then and only then is the act accompanied by the *mens rea*. Apart from *mens rea* in the strict sense, there is the form of fault known as inadvertent negligence, which sometimes attracts penal liability (e). Where neither *mens rea* nor inadvertent negligence is present, punishment is generally unjustifiable. Hence inevitable accident or mistake—the absence both of wrongful intention or recklessness and of culpable negligence—is in general a sufficient ground of exemption from penal responsibility. *Impunitus est*, said the Romans, *qui sine culpa et dolo malo casu quodam damnum committit* (f).

(d) Division (1) is considered from this section to § 151, division (2) in § 152, and division (3) in §§ 153, and 154.

(e) Sir John Salmond regarded inadvertent negligence as a form of *mens rea*, but the consensus of opinion at the present day is that this is not so. See § 135.

(f) *Gaius*, III, 211.

We shall consider separately these two conditions of liability, analysing first the conception of an act, and secondly that of *mens rea* (in its two forms of intention and recklessness) and the residual form of fault known as inadvertent negligence.

§ 131. Acts

The term act is one of ambiguous import, being used in various senses of different degrees of generality. When it is said, however, that an act is one of the essential conditions of liability, we use the term in the widest sense of which it is capable. We mean by it any event which is subject to the control of the human will. Such a definition is, indeed, not ultimate, but it is sufficient for the purpose of the law. As to the nature of the will and of the control exercised by it, it is not for lawyers to dispute, this being a problem of psychology or physiology, not of jurisprudence.

(1) *Positive and Negative acts.* Of acts as so defined there are various species. In the first place, they are either positive or negative, either acts of commission or acts of omission. A wrongdoer either does that which he ought not to do, or leaves undone that which he ought to do. The term act is often used in a narrow sense to include merely positive acts, and is then opposed to omissions or forbearances instead of including them. This restriction, however, is inconvenient. Adopting the generic sense, we can easily distinguish the two species as positive and negative; but if we restrict the term to acts of commission, we leave ourselves without a name for the genus, and are compelled to resort to an enumeration of the species.

(2) *Internal and external acts.* In the second place, acts are either internal or external. The former are acts of the mind, while the latter are acts of the body. In each case the act may be either positive or negative, lying either in bodily activity or passivity, or in mental activity or passivity. To think is an internal act; to speak is an external act. To work out an arithmetical problem in one's head is an act of the mind; to work it out on paper is an act of the body. Every external act involves an internal act which is related to it; but the converse is not true, for there are many acts of the mind which never

realise themselves in acts of the body. The term act is very commonly restricted to external acts, but this is inconvenient for the reason already given in respect of the distinction between positive and negative acts.

(3) *Intentional and unintentional acts.* Acts are further distinguishable as being either intentional or unintentional. The nature of intention is a matter to which particular attention will be devoted later, and it is sufficient to say here that an act is intended or intentional when it is the outcome of a determination of the actor's will directed to that end. In other words, it is intentional when it was foreseen and desired by the doer, and this foresight and desire realised themselves in the act through the operation of the will. It is unintentional, on the other hand, when, and in so far as, it is not the result of any determination of the will towards what actually takes place as the desired issue.

In both cases the act may be either internal or external, positive or negative. The term omission, while often used in a wide sense to include all negative acts, is also used in a narrower signification to include merely unintentional negative acts. It is then opposed to a forbearance, which is an intentional negative act. If I fail to keep an appointment through forgetfulness, my act is unintentional and negative; that is to say, an omission. But if I remember the appointment, and resolve not to keep it, my act is intentional and negative; that is to say, a forbearance.

The term act is very commonly restricted to intentional acts, but this restriction is inadmissible in law. Intention is not a necessary condition of legal liability, and therefore cannot be an essential element in those acts which produce such liability. An act is an event subject to the control of the will; but it is not essential that this control should be actually exercised; there need be no actual determination of the will, for it is enough that such control or determination is possible. If the control of the will is actually exercised, the act is intentional; if the will is dormant, the act is unintentional; but in each case, by virtue of the existence of the power of control, the event is equally an act. The movements of a man's limbs are acts; those of his heart are not. Not to move his arms is an act; not

to move his ears is not. To meditate is an act; to dream is not. It is the power possessed by me of determining the issue otherwise which makes any event *my act*, and is the ground of my responsibility for it.

Every act is made up of three distinct factors or constituent parts. These are (1) its *origin* in some mental or bodily activity or passivity of the doer, (2) its *circumstances*, and (3) its *consequences*. Let us suppose that in practising with a rifle I shoot some person by accident. The material elements of my act are the following: its origin or primary stage, namely a series of muscular contractions, by which the rifle is raised and the trigger pulled; secondly, the circumstances, the chief of which are the facts that the rifle is loaded and in working order, and that the person killed is in the line of fire; thirdly, the consequences, the chief of which are the fall of the trigger, the explosion of the powder, the discharge of the bullet, its passage through the body of the man killed, and his death. A similar analysis will apply to all acts for which a man is legally responsible. Whatever act the law prohibits as being wrongful is so prohibited in respect of its origin, its circumstances and its consequences. For unless it has its origin in some mental or physical activity or passivity of the defendant, it is not his act at all; and apart from its circumstances and results it cannot, in general, be legally wrongful. All acts are, in respect of their origin, indifferent. No bodily motion is in itself illegal. To crook one's finger may be a crime, if the finger is in contact with the trigger of a loaded pistol; but in itself it is not a matter which the law is in any way concerned to take notice of.

Circumstances and consequences are of two kinds, according as they are relevant or irrelevant to the question of liability. Out of the infinite array of circumstances and the endless chain of consequences the law selects some few as material. They and they alone are constituent parts of the wrongful act. All the others are irrelevant and without legal significance. They have no bearing or influence on the guilt of the doer. It is for the law, at its own good pleasure, to select and define the relevant and material facts in each particular species of wrong. In theft the hour of the day is irrelevant; in burglary it is material.

An act has no *natural* boundaries, any more than an event or a place has. Its limits must be artificially defined for the

purpose in hand for the time being. It is for the law to determine, in each particular case, what circumstances and what consequences shall be counted within the compass of the act with which it is concerned. To ask what act a man has done is like asking in what place he lives.

By some writers the term act is limited to that part of the act which we have distinguished as its origin. According to this opinion the only acts, properly so called, are movements of the body. "An act", it has been said (g), "is always a voluntary muscular contraction and nothing else". That is to say, the circumstances and consequences of an act are not part of it, but are wholly external to it. This limitation, however, seems no less inadmissible in law than contrary to the common usage of speech. We habitually include all material and relevant circumstances and consequences under the name of the act. The act of the murderer is the shooting or poisoning of his victim, not merely the muscular contractions by which this result is effected. To trespass on another man's land is a wrongful act; but the act includes the circumstance that the land belongs to another man, no less than the bodily movements by which the trespasser enters upon it (h).

It may be suggested that although an act must be taken to include some of its consequences, it does not include all of them, but only those which are direct or immediate. Any such distinction, however, between direct and indirect, proximate and remote consequences, is nothing more than an indeterminate difference of degree. The distinction between an act and its consequences, between doing a thing and causing a thing, is a merely verbal one, a matter of convenience of speech. There is no firm line between the act of killing a man and the act of doing something which results (however remotely) in his death (i).

(g) Holmes, *Common Law*, p. 91. So Austin, p. 419: "The bodily movements which immediately follow our desires of them are the only human acts, strictly and properly so called."

(h) It is unfortunate that there is no recognised name for the origin or initial stage of the act, as contrasted with the totality of it. Bentham calls the former the act and the latter the action. *Principles*, ch. 8, sect. 2. *Works*, I. 40. But in common usage these two terms are synonymous, and to use them in this special sense would only lead to confusion.

(i) For another discussion of the act in criminal law see Williams, *Criminal Law: The General Part*, ch. 1.

§ 132. Two Classes of Wrongful Acts

Every wrong is an act which is mischievous in the eye of the law—an act to which the law attributes harmful consequences. These consequences, however, are of two kinds, being either actual or merely anticipated. In other words, an act may be mischievous in two ways—either in its actual results or in its tendencies. Hence it is, that legal wrongs are of two kinds. The first consists of those in which the act is wrongful only by reason of accomplished harm which in fact ensues from it. The second consists of those in which the act is wrongful by reason of its mischievous tendencies, as recognised by the law, irrespective of the actual issue. In the first case there is no wrong or cause of action without proof of actual damage; in the second case it is sufficient to prove the act itself, even though in the event no harm has followed it.

For example, if A breaks his contract with B, it is not necessary for B to prove that he was thereby disappointed in his reasonable expectations, or otherwise suffered actual loss, for the law takes notice of the fact that breach of contract is an act of mischievous tendency, and therefore treats it as wrongful irrespective of the actual issue. The loss, if any, incurred by B is relevant to the measure of damages, but not to the existence of a cause of action. So if I walk across another man's field, or publish a libel upon him, I am responsible for the act without any proof of actual harm resulting from it. For trespass and libel belong to the class of acts which are judged wrongful in respect of their tendencies, and not merely in respect of their results. In other cases, on the contrary, actual damage is essential to the cause of action. Slander, for example, is in general not actionable without proof of some loss sustained by the plaintiff, although libel is actionable *per se*. So if by negligent driving I expose others to the risk of being run over, I am not deemed guilty of any civil wrong until an accident actually happens. The dangerous tendency of the act is not in this case considered a sufficient ground of civil liability.

With respect to this distinction between wrongs which do and those which do not, require proof of actual damage, it is to be noticed that criminal wrongs commonly belong to the latter class. Criminal liability is usually sufficiently established by

proof of some act which the law deems dangerous in its tendencies, even though the issue is in fact harmless. The formula of the criminal law is usually: "If you do this, you will be held liable in all events", and not: "If you do this you will be held liable if any harm ensues". An unsuccessful attempt is a ground of criminal liability, no less than a completed offence. So also dangerous and careless driving are criminal offences, though no damage ensues (*k*). This, however, is not invariably so, for criminal responsibility, like civil, sometimes depends on the accident of the event. If I am negligent in the use of fire-arms, and kill some one in consequence, I am criminally liable for manslaughter; but if by good luck my negligence results in no accomplished mischief, I am free from all responsibility.

As to civil liability, no corresponding general principle can be laid down. In some cases proof of actual damage is required, while in other cases there is no such necessity; and the matter pertains to the detailed exposition of the law, rather than to legal theory. It is to be noted, however, that whenever this requirement exists, it imports into the administration of civil justice an element of capriciousness from which the criminal law is commonly free. In point of criminal responsibility men are judged by their acts and by the mischievous tendencies of them, but in point of civil liability they are often judged by the actual event. If I attempt to execute a wrongful purpose, I am criminally responsible whether I succeed or not; but my civil liability will often depend upon the accident of the result. Failure in a guilty endeavour amounts to innocence. Instead of saying: "Do this, and you will be held accountable for it", the civil law often says: "Do this if you wish, but remember that you do it at your peril, and if evil consequences chance to follow, you will be answerable for them."

§ 133. *Damnum sine Injuria*

Although all wrongs are, in fact or in legal theory, mischievous acts, the converse is not true. All damage done is not wrongful. There are cases in which the law will suffer a man knowingly and wilfully to inflict harm upon another, and will not hold him accountable for it. Harm of this description--

(*k*) Road Traffic Act, 1930, ss. 11—12.

mischief that is not wrongful because it does not fulfil even the material conditions of responsibility—is called *damnum sine injuria*, the term *injuria* being here used in its true sense of an act contrary to law (*in jus*), not in its modern and corrupt sense of harm.

Cases of *damnum sine injuria* fall under two heads. There are, in the first place, instances in which the harm done to the individual is nevertheless a gain to society at large. The wrongs of individuals are such only because, and only so far as, they are at the same time the wrongs of the whole community; and so far as this coincidence is imperfect, the harm done to an individual is *damnum sine injuria*. The special result of competition in trade may be ruin to many; but the general result is, or is deemed to be, a gain to society as a whole. Competitors, therefore, do each other harm but not injury. So a landowner may do many things on his own land, which are detrimental to the interests of adjoining proprietors. He may so excavate his land as to withdraw the support required by the buildings on the adjoining property; he may prevent the access of light to the windows of those buildings; he may drain away the water which supplies his neighbour's well. These things are harmful to individuals; but it is held to serve the public interest to allow a man, within wide limits, to do as he pleases with his own (l).

The second head of *damnum sine injuria* includes all those cases in which, although real harm is done to the community, yet, owing to its triviality, or to the difficulty of proof, or to any other reason, it is considered inexpedient to attempt its prevention by the law. The mischief is of such a nature that the legal remedy would be worse than the disease (m).

§ 134. The Place and Time of an Act

Chiefly, though not exclusively, in consequence of the territorial limits of the jurisdiction of courts, it is often material to determine the place in which an act is done. In general this inquiry presents

(l) For the relevance of evil motive, see *infra*, § 137.

(m) In the sphere of criminal law only certain acts are made crimes, all other harmful kinds of conduct belonging to the class of *damnum sine injuria*. It is disputed whether a similar principle holds true of tort, or whether there is a general theory of tortious liability for harmful acts. See Winfield, *Text-book of the Law of Tort* (6th ed.) 13; Goodhart, "The Foundation of Tortious Liability" (1938), 2 M. L. R. 1; Williams, "The Foundation of Tortious Liability" (1939), 7 C. L. J. 111.

no difficulty, but there are two cases which require special consideration. The first is that in which the act is done partly in one place and partly in another. If a man standing on the English side of the Border fires at and kills a man on the Scotch side, has he committed murder in England or in Scotland? If a contract is made by correspondence between a merchant in London and another in Paris, is the contract made in England or in France? If by false representations made in Melbourne a man obtains goods in Sydney, is the offence of obtaining goods by false pretences committed in Victoria or in New South Wales? As a matter of fact and of strict logic the correct answer in all these cases is that the act is not done either in the one place or in the other. He who in England shoots a man in Scotland commits murder in Great Britain, regarded as a unity, but not in either of its parts taken in isolation. But no such answer is allowable in law; for, so long as distinct territorial areas of jurisdiction are recognised, the law must assume that it is possible to determine with respect to every act the particular area within which it is committed.

What locality, therefore, does the law attribute to acts which thus fall partly within one territorial division and partly within another? There are three possible answers. It may be said that the act is committed in both places, or solely in that in which it has its commencement, or solely in that in which it is completed. The law is free to choose such one of these three alternatives as it thinks fit in the particular case. The last of them seems to be that which is adopted for most purposes. It has been held that murder is committed in the place in which the death occurs (*n*), and not also in the place in which the act causing the death is done, but the law on these points is not free from doubt (*o*). A contract is made in the place where it is completed, that is to say, where the offer is accepted (*p*) or the last necessary signature to the document is affixed (*q*). The offence of obtaining goods by false pretences is committed in the place in which the goods are obtained (*r*) and not in the place where the false pretence is made (*s*).

(*n*) *Reg. v. Coombes* (1786), 1 *Lea. Cr. C.* 388.

(*o*) *Reg. v. Armstrong* (1875), 13 *Cox C. C.* 184; *Reg. v. Keyn* (1876), 2 *Ex. D.* 63. Berge, "Criminal Jurisdiction and the Territorial Principle" (1932) 30 *Mich. L. Rev.* 238, argues that every state in which part of the act or its consequence occurs has or should have concurrent jurisdiction. See also Hanbury in (1951), 37 *Trans. Grotius Society* 171.

(*p*) *Cowan v. O'Connor* (1888), 20 *Q. B. D.* 640.

(*q*) *Muller & Co.'s Margarine, Ltd. v. Inland Revenue Commissioners*, [1900] 1 *Q. B.* 310; [1901] *A. C.* 217.

(*r*) *Reg. v. Ellis*, [1899] 1 *Q. B.* 230.

(*s*) The question is fully discussed in the case of *Reg. v. Keyn* (1876), 2 *Ex. D.* 63, in which the captain of a German steamer was tried in England for manslaughter by negligently sinking an English ship in the channel and drowning one of the passengers. One of the minor questions in the case was that of the place in which the offence was committed. Was it on board the English ship,

A second case in which the determination of the locality of an act gives rise to difficulty is that of negative acts. In what place does a man omit to pay a debt or to perform a contract? The true answer is apparently that a negative act takes place where the corresponding positive act *ought* to have taken place. An omission to pay a debt occurs in the place where the debt is payable (t). If I make in England a contract to be performed in France, my failure to perform it takes place in France and not in England. The presence of a negative act is the absence of the corresponding positive act, and the positive act is absent from the place in which it ought to have been present.

The time of an act. The position of an act in time is determined by the same considerations as its position in space. An act which begins to-day and is completed to-morrow is in truth done neither to-day nor to-morrow, but in that space of time which includes both. But if necessary the law may date it from its commencement, or from its completion, or may regard it as continuing through both periods. For most purposes the date of an act is the date of its completion, just as its place is the place of its completion (u).

A negative act is done at the time at which the corresponding positive act ought to have been done. The date of the non-payment of a debt is the day on which it becomes payable.

§ 135. Mens Rea

We have seen that the conditions of penal liability are sufficiently indicated by the maxim, *Actus non facit reum, nisi*

or on board the German steamer, or on board neither of them? Four of the Judges of the Court for Crown Cases Reserved, namely, Denman, J., Bramwell, B., Coleridge, C.J., and Cockburn, C.J., agreed that if the offence had been wilful homicide it would have been committed on the English ship. Denman, J., and Coleridge, C.J., applied the same rule to negligent homicide. Cockburn, C.J., doubted as to negligent homicide. Bramwell, B., said (p. 150): "If the act was wilful, it is done where the will intends it should take effect; aliter when it is negligent". For a further discussion of the matter, see Stephen's *History of Criminal Law*, II. 9-12, and Oppenhoff's annotated edition of the *German Criminal Code* (13th ed. 1896) 28. The German doctrine is that an act is committed in the place where it is begun. See also Terry, *Principles of Anglo-American Law*, 598-606, and *Edmundson v. Render*, [1905] 2 Ch. 320.

(t) *Northey Stone Co. v. Gidney*, [1894] 1 Q. B. 99.

(u) If the law dates the commission of a wrong from the completion of it, it follows that there are cases in which a man may commit a wrong after his death. If A excavates his own land so as to cause, after an interval, the subsidence of the adjoining land of B, there is no wrong done until the subsidence happens; *Backhouse v. Bonomi* (1861), 9 H. L. C. 503; *Darley Main Colliery Co. v. Mitchell* (1886), 11 App. Cas. 137. What shall be said, then, if A is dead in the meantime? The wrong, it seems, is not done by his successors in title: *Hall v. Duke of Norfolk*, [1900] 2 Ch. 493; *Greenwell v. Low Beechburn Colliery*, [1897] 2 Q. B. 165. The law, therefore, must hold either that there is no wrong at all, or that it is committed by a man who is dead at the date of its commission.

mens sit rea. A man is responsible, not for his acts in themselves, but for his acts coupled with the *mens rea* or guilty mind with which he does them. Before imposing punishment, the law must be satisfied of two things: first, that an act has been done which by reason of its harmful tendencies or results is fit to be repressed by way of penal discipline; and secondly, that the mental attitude of the doer towards his deed was such as to render punishment effective as a deterrent for the future, and therefore just. The *mens rea* may assume one or other of two distinct forms, namely, wrongful intention or recklessness. The offender may either have done the wrongful act on purpose, or he may have done it recklessly, and in each case the mental attitude of the doer is such as to make punishment effective. If he intentionally chose the wrong, penal discipline will furnish him with a sufficient motive to choose the right instead for the future. If, on the other hand, he committed the forbidden act without wrongful intent, but yet realising the possibility of the harmful result, punishment will be an effective inducement to better conduct in the future.

Yet there are exceptional cases in which, for sufficient or insufficient reasons, the law sees fit to break through the rule as to *mens rea*. One of these, where there is inadvertent negligence, has already been noticed. A person may be held responsible for some crimes if he did not do his best as a reasonable man to avoid the consequence in question (v). Sometimes the law goes even beyond this; holding a man responsible for his acts, independently altogether of any wrongful state of mind or culpable negligence. Wrongs which are thus independent of fault may be distinguished as wrongs of *strict liability*.

It follows that in respect of the requirement of fault, wrongs are of three kinds:—

(1) Intentional or. Reckless Wrongs, in which the *mens rea* amounts to intention, purpose, design, or at least foresight.

(2) Wrongs of Negligence, in which the *mens rea* assumes the less serious form of mere carelessness, as opposed to wrongful intent or foresight.

(v) Sir John Salmond, indeed, regarded inadvertent negligence as a form of *mens rea*; but since inadvertent negligence does not require any particular state of mind, this may be said with some confidence to be a mistake, and the author's text has been editorially altered in conformity with this view.

(3) Wrongs of Strict Liability, in which the *mens rea* is not required, neither wrongful intent nor culpable negligence being recognised as a necessary condition of responsibility.

We shall deal with these three classes of wrongs, and these three forms of liability, in the order mentioned.

SUMMARY

Liability { Criminal { Remedial.
 { Civil { Penal.

Remedial liability:

Specific enforcement the general rule.

Exceptions:

1. Non-actionable wrongs
2. Transitory wrongs.
3. Continuing wrongs in which sanctional enforcement is more expedient than specific.

Penal liability { Its conditions.
 { Its incidence.
 { Its measure.

Conditions of penal liability { *Actus*.
 { *Mens rea*.

The nature of an act:

1. Positive and negative acts.
2. Internal and external acts.
3. Intentional and unintentional acts.

The circumstances and consequences of acts.

The relation between *injuria* and *damnum*.

1. All wrongs are mischievous acts

Wongs { In which proof of damage is required.
 { In which such proof is not required.

2. All mischievous acts are not wrongs.

Damnum sine injuria.

(a) Loss of individual a gain to society at large.

(b) Legal remedy inexpedient.

The place and time of an act.

Mens rea as a condition of penal liability { Intention.
 { Recklessness.

Wongs { 1. Of Intention or Recklessness.
 { 2. Of Negligence } exceptions to the require-
 { 3. Of Strict Liability } ment of *mens rea*.

CHAPTER 18

INTENTION AND NEGLIGENCE

§ 136. The Nature of Intention

INTENTION is the purpose or design with which an act is done. It is the foreknowledge of the act, coupled with the desire of it, such foreknowledge and desire being the cause of the act, inasmuch as they fulfil themselves through the operation of the will. An act is intentional if, and in so far as, it exists in idea before it exists in fact, the idea realising itself in the fact because of the desire by which it is accompanied (a).

An act may be wholly unintentional, or wholly intentional, or intentional in part only. It is wholly unintentional if no part of it is the outcome of any conscious purpose or design, no part of it having existed in idea before it became realised in fact. I may omit to pay a debt, because I have completely forgotten that it exists. An act is wholly intentional, on the other hand, when every part of it corresponds to the precedent idea of it, which was present in the actor's mind, and of which it is the outcome and realisation. The issue falls completely within the boundaries of the intent. Finally, an act may be in part intentional and in part unintentional. The idea and the fact, the will and the deed, the design and the issue, may be only partially coincident. If I throw stones, I may intend to break a window but not to do personal harm to any one; yet in the result I may do both of these things.

An act, and therefore a wrong, which is intended only in part, must be classed as unintended, just as a thing which is completed only in part is incomplete. If any constituent element or essential factor of the complete wrong falls outside the limits of the doer's intent, he cannot be dealt with on the footing of

(a) Holmes, *The Common Law*, 53: "Intent will be found to resolve itself into two things; foresight that certain consequences will follow from an act, and the wish for those consequences working as a motive which induces the act."

wilful wrongdoing. If liability in such a case exists at all, it must be either absolute or based on negligence (b).

A wrong is intentional only when the intention extends to all the elements of the wrong, and therefore to its circumstances no less than to its origin and its consequences. We cannot say, indeed, that the circumstances are intended or intentional; but the act is intentional with respect to the circumstances, inasmuch as they are included in that precedent idea which constitutes the intention of the act. So far, therefore, as the knowledge of the doer does not extend to any material circumstance, the wrong is, as to that circumstance, unintentional. To trespass on A's land believing it to be one's own is not a wilful wrong. The trespasser intended, indeed, to enter upon the land, but he did not intend to enter upon land belonging to A. His act was unintentional as to the circumstance that the land belonged to A. So if a woman marries again during the lifetime of her former husband, but believing him to be dead, she does not wilfully commit the crime of bigamy, for one of the material circumstances lies outside her intention. With respect to that circumstance the will and the deed are not coincident (c).

Intention does not necessarily involve *expectation*. I may intend a result which I well know to be extremely improbable. So an act may be intentional with respect to a particular circumstance, although the chance of the existence of that circumstance is known to be exceedingly small. Intention is the foresight of a desired issue, however improbable—not the foresight of an undesired issue, however probable. If I fire a rifle in the direction of a man a mile away, I may know perfectly well that the chance of hitting him is not one in a thousand; I may fully expect to miss him; nevertheless I intend to hit him if I desire to do so. He who steals a letter containing a cheque, intentionally steals the cheque also if he hopes that the letter may contain one, even though he well knows that the odds against the existence of such a circumstance are very great.

(b) It is to be noticed, however, that the part which was intended may constitute in itself an independent intentional wrong included in the larger and unintentional wrong of which it forms a part. Intentionally to discharge firearms in a public street is a wilful wrong, if such an act is prohibited by law. But accidentally to kill a person by the intentional discharge of firearms in a public street is a wrong of negligence.

(c) These cases are termed cases of mistake, and will be considered in § 150.

Conversely, expectation does not in itself amount to intention. An operating surgeon may know very well that his patient will probably die of the operation; yet he does not intend the fatal consequence which he expects. He intends the recovery which he hopes for but does not expect.

A thing may be desired and therefore intended, not in itself or for its own sake, but merely as the means to an end. If I desire and intend a certain end, I also desire and intend the means by which it is to be obtained, though in themselves those means may be indifferent or even objects of aversion. If I kill a man in order to rob him, I desire and intend his death, even though I deeply regret, in his interests or in my own, the necessity of it.

Suppose that I push a man over a cliff because his presence at the moment is, for some reason, inconvenient to me. He falls to what I realise is certain death. Would I be allowed to say that I did not intend his death, because all that I desired, from any point of view, was his temporary removal from the scene? It is clear that such an argument would not be allowed. The rule is most clearly expressed by saying that a consequence foreseen as the *certain* result of the actor's conduct is, in law, taken to have been intended (*d*). If this is so, the definition of intention is twofold: it means either desire of the consequence of one's conduct, or foresight of the certainty of such consequence.

The rule does not extend to mere knowledge of statistical probability where there is no certainty in the concrete instance. A manufacturer establishes a factory in which he employs many workmen who are daily exposed to the risk of dangerous machinery or processes. He knows for a certainty that from time to time fatal accidents will, notwithstanding all precautions, occur to the workmen so employed. Does he then intend their deaths? A military commander orders his troops into action, well knowing that many of them will lose their lives. Does he intentionally cause their deaths? These questions are to be answered in the negative. Such consequences fall, if anywhere, within the concept of recklessness; but, as will be shown, an act is not reckless unless it is negligent. It is not necessarily negligent to incur a risk if an adequate social advantage is to be gained from the enterprise.

Both in this special connection and generally, however, it is to be observed that the law may, and sometimes does, impute

(d) Williams, *Criminal Law: The General Part*, § 13.

liability, outside the strict definition of intention, for what is called constructive intention. Consequences which are in fact the outcome of negligence merely are sometimes in law dealt with as intentional. Thus he who intentionally does grievous bodily harm to another, though with no desire to kill him, or certain expectation of his death, is guilty of murder if death ensues. It does not seem possible to lay down any general principle as to the cases in which such a constructive intention beyond the scope of his actual intention is thus imputed by law to a wrongdoer. This is a matter pertaining to the details of the legal system. It is sometimes said, indeed, that a person is presumed in law to intend the natural or necessary results of his actions (e). This, however, is much too wide a statement, for, if true, it would eliminate from the law the distinction between intentional and negligent wrongdoing, merging all negligence in constructive wrongful intent. A statement much nearer the truth is that the law frequently—though by no means invariably—treats as intentional all consequences due to that form of negligence which is distinguished as recklessness—all consequences, that is to say, which the actor foresees as the probable results of his wrongful act (f).

It may also be observed that in English law, especially criminal law, the intention that is material is usually the generic and not the specific intent. Thus if A shoots at B intending to kill him, but the shot actually kills C, this is held to be murder of C. So also if A throws a stone at one window and breaks another, it is held to be malicious damage to the window actually broken (g). This doctrine, which is known as the doctrine of transferred malice, applies only where the harm intended and the harm done are of the same kind. If A throws

(e) *R. v. Harvey* (1823), 2 B. & C. p. 264: "A party must be considered in point of law to intend that which is the necessary or natural consequence of that which he does". Cf. *Freeman v. Pope* (1870), 5 Ch. App. p. 540; *Ex parte Mercer* (1886), 17 Q. B. D. p. 298. See the discussion in Williams, *op. cit.*, § 27.

(f) Thus, in criminal law, crimes of "malice" can be committed either intentionally or recklessly (*infra*, § 138); but some crimes, such as attempt, conspiracy, rape and treason, generally require intention and cannot be committed by recklessness merely (Williams, *op. cit.*, § 16). In the law of tort, recklessness is equated with intention in deceit (*Derry v. Peck* (1889), 14 App. Cas. 337).

(g) Cf. *R. v. Latimer* (1886), 17 Q. B. D. 359 (maliciously striking at B and wounding C held to be a malicious wounding of C).

a stone at a human being and unintentionally breaks a window, he cannot be convicted of malicious damage to the window (*h*).

§ 137. Intention and Motive

A wrongful act is seldom intended and desired for its own sake. The wrongdoer has in view some ulterior object which he desires to obtain by means of it. The evil which he does to another, he does and desires only for the sake of some resulting good which he will obtain for himself. He *intends* the attainment of this ulterior object no less than he intends the wrongful act itself. His intent, therefore, is twofold, and is divisible into two distinct portions, which we may distinguish as his immediate and his ulterior intent. The former is that which relates to the wrongful act itself; the latter is that which passes beyond the wrongful act, and relates to the object or series of objects for the sake of which the act is done. The immediate intent of the thief is to appropriate another person's money, while his ulterior intent may be to buy food with it or to pay a debt. The ulterior intent is called the *motive* of the act.

The immediate intent is that part of the total intent which is coincident with the wrongful act itself; the ulterior intent or motive is that part of the total intent which lies outside the boundaries of the wrongful act. For just as the act is not necessarily confined within the limits of the intent, so the intent is not necessarily confined within the limits of the act. The wrongdoer's immediate intent, if he has one, is his purpose to *commit* the wrong; his ulterior intent, or motive, is his purpose *in committing* it. Every wrongful act may raise two distinct questions with respect to the intent of the doer. The first of these is: *How* did he do the act—intentionally or accidentally? The second is: If he did it intentionally, *why* did he do it? The first is an inquiry into his immediate intent; the second is concerned with his ulterior intent, or motive.

(*h*) *R. v. Pembliton* (1874), 2 C. C. R. 119. Cf. Williams, *op. cit.*, Ch. 4. For a discussion of the concept of "kind", see Williams, "Language and the Law" (1945), 61 L. Q. R. 189 ff., especially at 193-4. For a further discussion of intention and recklessness in criminal law, see J. W. C. Turner, "Mens Rea and Motorists" (1933), 5 C. L. J. 61; same, "The Mental Element in Crimes at Common Law", in *The Modern Approach to Criminal Law*, 195.

The ulterior intention of one wrongful act may be the commission of another. I may make a die with intent to coin bad money; I may coin bad money with intent to utter it; I may utter it with intent to defraud. Each of these acts is or may be a distinct criminal offence, and the intention of any one of them is immediate with respect to that act itself, but ulterior with respect to all that go before it in the series.

A person's ulterior intent may be complex instead of simple; he may act from two or more concurrent motives instead of from one only. He may institute a prosecution, partly from a desire to see justice done, but partly also from ill-will towards the defendant. He may pay one of his creditors preferentially on the eve of bankruptcy, partly from a desire to benefit him at the expense of the others, and partly from a desire to gain some advantage for himself. Now the law, as we shall see later, sometimes makes liability for an act depend upon the motive with which it is done. The Bankruptcy Act, for example, regards as fraudulent any payment made by a debtor immediately before his bankruptcy with intent to prefer one of his creditors to the others. In all such cases the presence of mixed or concurrent motives raises a difficulty of interpretation. The phrase "with intent to", or its equivalents, may mean any one of at least four different things:—(1) That the intent referred to must be the sole or exclusive intent; (2) that it is sufficient if it is one of several concurrent intents; (3) that it must be the chief or dominant intent, any others being subordinate or incidental; (4) that it must be a determining intent, that is to say, an intent in the absence of which the act would not have been done, the remaining purposes being insufficient motives by themselves. It is a question of construction which of those meanings is the true one in the particular case (i).

§ 138. Malice

Closely connected with the law and theory of intentional wrongdoing is the legal use of the word malice. In a narrow and popular sense this term means ill-will, spite, or malevolence; but its legal signification is much wider. Malice means in law wrongful intention or recklessness (k). Any act done with one of these mental elements is, in the language of the law, malicious, and this legal usage has etymology in its favour. The Latin

(i) For a discussion of this matter, see *Ex p. Hill* (1883), 23 Ch. D. 695, at 704, per Bowen, L.J.; also *Ex p. Taylor* (1886), 18 Q. B. D. 295; *Crofter Hand Woven Harris Tweed Co. v. Veitch*, [1942] A. C. 435, at 445, per Viscount Simon, L.C., and at 473, per Lord Wright.

(k) See J. Ll. J. Edwards, *Mens Rea in Statutory Offences* (1955), Ch. 1; Williams, *Criminal Law: The General Part*, § 23.

malitia (l) means badness, physical or moral—wickedness in disposition or in conduct—not specifically or exclusively ill-will or malevolence; hence the malice of English law, including all forms of evil purpose, design, intent or motive.

We have seen, however, that intent is of two kinds, being either immediate or ulterior, the ulterior intent being commonly distinguished as the motive. The term malice is applied in law to both these forms of intent, and the result is a somewhat puzzling ambiguity which requires careful notice. When we say that an act is done maliciously, we mean one of two distinct things. We mean either that it is done intentionally (or alternatively recklessly), or that it is done with some wrongful motive. In the phrases malicious homicide and malicious injury to property, malicious is merely a collective term for intention and recklessness. I burn down a house maliciously if I burn it on purpose, or realising the possibility that what I do will set it on fire. There is here no reference to any ulterior purpose or motive. But, on the other hand, malicious prosecution does not mean any intentional prosecution; it means, more narrowly, a prosecution inspired by some motive of which the law disapproves. A prosecution is malicious, for example, if its ulterior intent is the extortion of money from the accused. So, also, with the malice which is needed to make a man liable for defamation on a privileged occasion; I do not utter defamatory statements maliciously simply because I utter them intentionally (m).

Although the word *malitia* is not unknown to the Roman lawyers, the usual and technical name for wrongful intent is *dolus*, or more specifically *dolus malus*. *Dolus* and *culpa* are the two forms of *mens rea*. In a narrower sense, however, *dolus* includes merely that particular variety of wrongful intent which we term fraud—that is to say, the intent to deceive (n). From this limited sense it was extended to cover all forms of wilful wrongdoing. The English term fraud has never received an equally wide extension. It resembles *dolus*, however, in having a double use. In its narrower sense it means

(l) See for example D. 4. 3. 1 pr.

(m) It is to malice in one only of these two uses that the well-known definition given in *Bromage v. Prosser* (1825), 4 Barn. & C. 247, is applicable: "Malice in common acceptation means ill-will against a person; but in its legal sense it means a wrongful act done intentionally, without just cause or excuse". See, to the same effect, *Mogul Steamship Co. v. McGregor, Gow & Co.* (1889), 23 Q. B. D. at p. 612, per Bowen, L.J.; and *Allen v. Flood*, [1898] A. C. at p. 94, per Lord Watson.

(n) D. 4. 3. 1. 2.

deceit, as we have just said, and is commonly opposed to force. In a wider sense it includes all forms of dishonesty, that is to say, all wrongful conduct inspired by a desire to derive profit from the injury of others. In this sense fraud is commonly opposed to malice in its popular sense. I act fraudulently when the motive of my wrongdoing is to derive some material gain for myself, whether by way of deception, force, or otherwise. But I act maliciously when my motive is the pleasure of doing harm to another, rather than the acquisition of any advantage for myself. To steal property is fraudulent; to damage or destroy it is malicious.

§ 139. Relevance and Irrelevance of Motives

We have already seen in what way and to what extent a man's immediate intent is material in a question of liability. As a general rule no act is a sufficient basis of responsibility unless it is done either wilfully or negligently. Intention and negligence are the two alternative conditions of penal liability.

We have now to consider the relevance or materiality, not of the immediate, but of the ulterior intent. To what extent does the law take into account the motives of a wrongdoer? To what extent will it inquire, not merely what the defendant has done, but why he has done it? To what extent is malice, in the sense of improper motive, an element in legal wrongdoing?

In answer to this question we may say generally (subject, however, to very important qualifications) that in law a man's motives are irrelevant. As a general rule no act otherwise lawful becomes unlawful because done with a bad motive; and conversely no act otherwise unlawful is excused or justified because of the motives of the doer, however good. The law will judge a man by what he does, not by the reasons for which he does it.

"It is certainly", says Lord Herschell (o), "a general rule of our law that an act *prima facie* lawful is not unlawful and actionable on account of the motives which dictated it." So it has been said (p): "No use of property which would be legal if due to a proper motive can become illegal because it is prompted by a motive which is improper or even malicious." "Much more harm than good", says Lord Macnaghten (q), "would be done by encouraging or permitting inquiries into motives when the immediate act alleged to have caused the loss for which redress is sought is in itself innocent

(o) *Allen v. Flood*, [1898] A. C. at p. 123.

(p) *Corporation of Bradford v. Pickles*, [1895] A. C. 587, at p. 598.

(q) *Allen v. Flood*, [1898] A. C. 92, at p. 152.

or neutral in character and one which anybody may do or leave undone without fear of legal consequences. Such an inquisition would I think be intolerable."

An illustration of this irrelevance of motives is the right of a landowner to do harm to adjoining proprietors in certain defined ways by acts done on his own land. He may intercept the access of light to his neighbour's windows, or withdraw by means of excavation the support which his land affords to his neighbour's house, or drain away the water which would otherwise supply his neighbour's well. His right to do all these things depends in no way on the motive with which he does them. The law cares nothing whether his acts are inspired by an honest desire to improve his own property, or by a malevolent impulse to damage that of others. He may do as he pleases with his own (*r*).

§ 140. Other Exceptions to the Irrelevance of Motives

Criminal attempts constitute the first of the exceptions to the rule that a person's ulterior intent or motive is irrelevant in law. Every attempt is an act done with intent to commit the offence so attempted. The existence of this ulterior intent or motive is of the essence of an attempt. A second exception comprises all those cases in which a particular intent forms part of the definition of a criminal offence. Burglary, for example, consists in breaking and entering a dwelling-house by night with intent to commit a felony therein. So forgery consists in making a false document with intent to defraud. In all such instances the ulterior intent is the source, in whole or in part, of the mischievous tendency of the act, and is therefore material in law.

In civil as opposed to criminal liability the ulterior intent is

(*r*) The Roman law as to the rights of adjoining proprietors was different. Harm done *animo nocendi*, that is to say, with a malicious motive, was frequently actionable. D. 39. 3. 1. 12. The German Civil Code, sect. 226, provides quite generally that the exercise of a right is unlawful when its only motive is to harm another person, and a similar rule has been recognised in France to some extent. See Gutteridge, "Abuse of Rights" (1933), 5 C. L. J. 22. The English rule has been subjected to a great deal of adverse academic criticism: see Gutteridge, *op. cit.*; Allen, "Legal Morality and the *Jus Abutendi*", *Legal Duties* 95 ff., reprinted from (1924), 40 L. Q. R. 164; Williams, "The Foundation of Tortsious Liability" (1939), 7 C. L. J. 111, at 125 ff., and literature there cited; Pound, *The Spirit of the Common Law* 209; Sullivan in (1955), 8 Current Legal Problems, 61.

very seldom relevant. In almost all cases the law looks to the act alone, and makes no inquiries into the motives from which it proceeds. There are, however, certain exceptions even in the civil law. There are cases where it is thought expedient in the public interest to allow certain specified kinds of harm to be done to individuals, so long as they are done for some good and sufficient reason; but the ground of this privilege falls away so soon as it is abused for bad ends. In such cases, therefore, malice is an essential element in the cause of action. Examples of wrongs of this class are defamation (in cases of privilege) and malicious prosecution. In these instances the plaintiff must prove malice, because in all of them the defendant's act is one which falls under the head of *damnum sine injuria* so long, but so long only, as it is done with good intent.

§ 141. *Jus necessitatis*

We shall conclude our examination of the theory of wilful wrongdoing by considering a special case in which motive operates as a ground of excuse. This is the case of the *jus necessitatis*. So far as the abstract theory of responsibility is concerned, an act which is necessary is not wrongful, even though done with full and deliberate intention. It is a familiar proverb that necessity knows no law: *Necessitas non habet legem*.

It may be said that in one use of language nothing is necessary to be done, for there is always a choice—even though one of the possible lines of conduct will result in the death of the actor and perhaps of many other people as well. A situation of so-called necessity is, in analysis, one in which there is a competition of values—on the one hand, the value of obedience to the general principles of law, and, on the other hand, some value regarded as possessing a higher claim in the particular circumstances. Here, the law itself permits a departure from its own general rules. For example, it would be lawful in an emergency to imperil one or two lives in order to save a score of lives.

Another factor operating to admit the defence of necessity is that it commonly involves the presence of some motive of such exceeding strength as to overcome any fear that can be inspired by the threat of legal penalties. The *jus necessitatis* is the right of a man to do that from which he cannot be dissuaded by any

terror of legal punishment. Where threats are necessarily ineffective, they should not be made, and their fulfilment is the infliction of needless and uncompensated evil.

The common illustration of this right of necessity where punishment would be ineffective is the case of two drowning men clinging to a plank that will not support more than one of them. It may be the moral duty of him who has no one dependent on him to sacrifice himself for the other who is a husband or a father; it may be the moral duty of the old to give way to the young. But it is idle for the law to lay down any other rule save this, that it is the right of the stronger to use his strength for his own preservation. Another familiar case of necessity is that in which shipwrecked sailors are driven to choose between death by starvation on the one side and murder and cannibalism on the other. A third case is that of crime committed under the pressure of illegal threats of death or grievous bodily harm. "If", says Hobbes (f), "a man by the terror of present death be compelled to do a fact against the law, he is totally excused; because no law can oblige a man to abandon his own preservation."

It is to be noticed that the test of necessity in these cases is not the powerlessness of any possible, but that of any reasonable punishment. It is enough if the lawless motives to an act will necessarily countervail the fear of any penalty which it is just and expedient that the law should threaten. If burning alive were a fit and proper punishment for petty theft, the fear of it would probably prevent a starving wretch from stealing a crust of bread; and the *jus necessitatis* would have no place. But we cannot place the rights of property at so high a level. There are cases, therefore, in which the motives to crime cannot be controlled by any reasonable punishment. In such cases the philosophy of utilitarianism demands that no punishment be administered, from which it follows that there is no sufficient basis of legal liability.

It may be submitted that where necessity involves a choice of some value higher than the value of obedience to the letter of the law, it is always a legal defence. Where, however, the issue is merely one of the futility of punishment, evidential difficulties

(f) *Leviathan*, ch. 27; *Eng. Works*, III. 288.

prevent any but the most limited scope being permitted to the *ius necessitatis*. In how few cases can we say with any approach to certainty that the possibility of self-control is really absent, that there is no true choice between good and evil, and that the deed is one for which the doer is rightly irresponsible. In this conflict between the requirements of theory and the difficulties of practice the law has resorted to compromise. While in some few instances necessity is admitted as a ground of excuse, as for example in treason (g), it is in most cases regarded as relevant to the measure rather than to the existence of liability. It is acknowledged as a reason for the reduction of the penalty, even to a nominal amount, but not for its total remission. Homicide in the blind fury of irresistible passion is not innocent, but neither is it murder; it is reduced to the lower level of manslaughter. Shipwrecked sailors who kill and eat their comrades to save their own lives are in law guilty of murder itself; but the clemency of the Crown will commute the capital sentence to a short term of imprisonment (h).

§ 142. Negligence: Advertent and Inadvertent

We have considered the first of the three classes into which injuries are divisible, namely those which are intentional or wilful, and we have now to deal with the second, namely wrongs of negligence (i).

Negligence is culpable carelessness. "It is", says Willes, J. (k), "the absence of such care as it was the duty of the defendant to use." What then is meant by carelessness? It is clear, in the first place, that it excludes wrongful intention. These are two contrasted and mutually inconsistent mental attitudes of a person towards his acts and their consequences. No result which is due to carelessness can have been also

(g) *R. v. M'Growther* (1746), Foster 13; 18 St. Tr. 391.

(h) *R. v. Dudley* (1884), 14 Q. B. D. 273. The law as to compulsion and necessity is discussed by Williams in (1953), 6 Current Legal Problems, 216 and in *Criminal Law: The General Part*, chs. 17, 18.

(i) In Roman law negligence is signified by the terms *culpa* and *negligentia*, as contrasted with *dolus* or wrongful intention. Care, or the absence of *negligentia*, is *diligentia*. The use of the word diligence in this sense is obsolete in modern English, though it is still retained as an archaism of legal diction. In ordinary usage, diligence is opposed to idleness, not to carelessness.

(k) *Grill v. General Iron Screw Colliery Co.* (1866), L. R. 1 C. P. at p. 612.

intended. Nothing which was intended can have been due to carelessness (l).

It is to be observed, in the second place, that carelessness or negligence does not necessarily consist in thoughtlessness or inadvertence. This is doubtless the commonest form of it, but it is not the only form. If I do harm, not because I intended it, but because I was thoughtless and did not advert to the dangerous nature of my act, or foolishly believed that there was no danger, I am certainly guilty of negligence. But there is another form of negligence, in which there is no thoughtlessness or inadvertence whatever. If I drive furiously down a crowded street, I may be fully conscious of the serious risk to which I expose other persons. I may not intend to injure any of them, but I knowingly and intentionally expose them to the danger. Yet if a fatal accident happens, I am liable, at the most, not for wilful, but for negligent homicide. When I consciously expose another to the risk of wrongful harm, but without any wish to harm him, and harm actually ensues, it is inflicted not wilfully, since it was not desired, nor inadvertently, since it was foreseen as possible or even probable, but nevertheless negligently (m).

It follows that negligence is of two kinds, according as it is or is not accompanied by inadvertence. Advertent negligence is commonly termed wilful negligence or recklessness. Inadvertent negligence may be distinguished as simple. In the former the harm done is foreseen as possible or probable, but it is not willed. In the latter it is neither foreseen nor willed. The physician who treats a patient improperly through ignorance or forgetfulness is guilty of simple or inadvertent negligence; but if he does

(l) *Kettlewell v. Watson* (1882), 21 Ch. D. 685, at p. 706: "Fraud imports design and purpose; negligence imports that you are acting carelessly and without that design".

(m) It is held by some that negligence consists essentially in inadvertence. See Austin, Lecture XX; Birkmeyer, *Strafrecht*, § 17; Clark, *Analysis of Criminal Liability*, ch. 9. The issue seems to be purely one of terminology. There are in reality three forms of fault: namely, (1) that in which the consequences are foreseen and wrongfully intended; (2) that in which they are not intended but are foreseen and should have been avoided; and (3) that in which they are neither foreseen nor intended, but ought to have been foreseen and avoided. In the present work (1) is called intention, (2) is called advertent negligence (or recklessness), and (3) is called inadvertent negligence. The suggestion now being considered is that the term negligence should be confined to case (3) alone. The objection to the suggestion is that it runs counter to ordinary usage and that it would, if accepted, rob us of a useful generic term for cases (2) and (3), which are sometimes, though by no means always, classed together in law.

the same in order to save himself trouble, or by way of a scientific experiment, with full recognition of the dangers so incurred, his negligence is advertent or wilful (n). The practical importance of the distinction is that, as already seen, recklessness is frequently for legal purposes classed with intention.

§ 143. The Duty of Care

Carelessness is not culpable, or a ground of legal liability, save in those cases in which the law has imposed a duty of carefulness. In all other cases complete indifference as to the interests of others is allowable. No general principle can be laid down, however, with regard to the existence of this duty, for this is a matter pertaining to the details of the concrete legal system, and not to abstract theory. Carelessness is lawful or unlawful, as the law sees fit to provide. In the criminal law liability for negligence is quite exceptional. Speaking generally, crimes are wilful wrongs, the alternative form of *mens rea* being deemed an insufficient ground for the rigour of criminal justice. This, however, is not invariably the case, negligent homicide, for example, being a criminal offence. In the civil law, on the other hand, no such distinction is commonly drawn between the two forms of *mens rea*. In general we may say that whenever an act would be a civil wrong if done intentionally, it is also a civil wrong if done negligently. When there is a legal duty not to do a thing on purpose, there is commonly a legal duty to take care not to do it accidentally. To this rule, however, there are certain exceptions—instances in which wrongful intent, or at least recklessness, is the necessary basis even of civil liability. In these cases a person is civilly responsible for doing harm wilfully, but is not bound to take any care not to do it. He must not, for example, deceive another by any wilful or reckless falsehood, but unless there is some special ground of obligation in the case, he is not answerable for false statements which he honestly believes to be true, however negligent he may be in making them (o).

(n) The distinction between these two forms of negligence is well explained by Merkel, *Strafrecht*, sect. 33 (3).

(o) *Candler v. Crane, Christmas & Co.*, [1951] 2 K. B. 164 (C. A.). Similarly an arbitrator is liable for fraud, but not for negligence or want of skill. *Tharsis Sulphur and Copper Co. v. Loftus* (1873), L. R. 8 C. P. 1. For a

§ 144. The Standard of Care

Carelessness may exist in any degree, and in this respect it differs from the other form of *mens rea*. Intention either exists or it does not; there can be no question of the degree in which it is present. The degree of carelessness varies directly with the risk to which other persons are exposed by the act in question. He is careless, who, without intending evil, nevertheless exposes others to the danger of it, and the greater the danger the greater the carelessness. The risk depends, in its turn, on two things: first, the magnitude of the threatened evil, and second, the probability of it. The greater the evil is, and the nearer it is, the greater is the indifference or carelessness of him who creates the danger.

Inasmuch, therefore, as carelessness varies in degree, it is necessary to know what degree of it is requisite to constitute culpable negligence. What measure of care does the law demand? What amount of anxious consideration for the interests of others is a legal duty, and within what limits is indifference lawful?

We have first to notice a possible standard of care which the law might have adopted but has not. It does not demand the highest degree of care of which human nature is capable. I am not liable for harm ignorantly done by me, merely because by some conceivable exercise of prudential foresight I might have anticipated the event and so avoided it. Nor am I liable because, knowing the possibility of harm, I fail to take every possible precaution against it. The law demands not that which is possible, but that which is reasonable in view of the magnitude of the risk. Were men to act on any other principle than this, excess of caution would paralyse the business of the world. The law, therefore, allows every man to expose his fellows to a certain measure of risk, and to do so even with full knowledge. If an explosion occurs in my powder mill, I am not necessarily liable to those injured inside the mill (*q*), even though I established and carried on the industry with full knowledge of its dangerous character. This is a degree of indifference to the safety of other

further discussion of the duty concept in Roman and English law see W. W. Buckland, "The Duty to Take Care" (1935), 51 L. Q. R. 637; cf. Buckland and McNair, *Roman Law and Common Law* (1936), 367 ff.

(*q*) *Read v. Lyons*, [1947] A. C. 156.

men's lives and property which the law deems permissible because not excessive. Inasmuch as the carrying of firearms and the driving of automobiles are known to be the occasions of frequent harm, extreme care and the most scrupulous anxiety as to the interests of others would prompt a man to abstain from those dangerous forms of activity. Yet it is expedient in the public interest that those activities should go on, and therefore that men should be exposed to the incidental risks of them. Consequently the law does not insist on any standard of care which would include them within the limits of culpable negligence. It is for the law to draw the line as best it can, so that while prohibiting unreasonable carelessness, it does not at the same time demand unreasonable care.

On the other hand it is not sufficient that I have acted in good faith to the best of my judgment and belief, and have used as much care as I myself believed to be required of me in the circumstances of the case. The question in every case is not whether I honestly thought my conduct sufficiently careful, but whether in fact it attained the standard of due care established by law.

What standard then does the law actually adopt? It demands the amount of care which is reasonable in the circumstances of the particular case (r). This obligation to use reasonable care is very commonly expressed by reference to the conduct of a "reasonable man" or of an "ordinarily prudent man", meaning thereby a reasonably prudent man. "Negligence", it has been said, (s), "is the omitting to do something that a reasonable man would do, or the doing something which a reasonable man would not do." "We ought", it has been said (t), "to adhere to the rule which requires in all cases a regard to caution such as a man of ordinary prudence would observe. . . . The care taken by a prudent man has always been the rule laid down." The reference to the "ordinary man" does not mean that it is in all cases a defence to show that the defendant behaved as the average man would have behaved, for there are instances where the court has considered that even the usual

(r) *Ford v. L. & S. W. Ry.* (1862), 2 F. & F. 730.

(s) *Blyth v. Birmingham Water Works Co.* (1856), 25 L. J. Ex. at 213.

(t) *Vaughan v. Menlove* (1837), 3 Bing. N. C. p. 475.

standard of conduct falls short of the "reasonable" minimum (u). "Reasonable" in short, seems to refer not to the average standard, but to the standard that the jury or judge think ought to have been observed in the particular case.

In determining the standard to be required, there are two chief matters for consideration. The first is the magnitude of the risk to which other persons are exposed, while the second is the importance of the object to be attained by the dangerous form of activity. The reasonableness of any conduct will depend upon the proportion between these two elements. To expose others to danger for a disproportionate object is unreasonable, whereas an equal risk for a better cause may lawfully be run without negligence. By driving trains at the rate of fifty miles an hour, railway companies have caused many fatal accidents which could quite easily have been avoided by reducing the speed to ten miles, but this additional safety would be attained at too great a cost of public convenience, and therefore in neglecting this precaution the companies do not fall below the standard of reasonable care and are not guilty of negligence (a).

In conclusion, a word may be said upon the maxim *Imperitia culpae adnumeratur* (b). It is a settled principle of law that want of skill or of professional competence amounts to negligence. He who will exercise any trade or profession must bring to the exercise of it such a measure of skill and knowledge as will suffice for reasonable efficiency, and he who has less than this practises at his own risk. At first sight this maxim may seem to require a degree of care far in excess of what is reasonably to be expected of the ordinary person, but further consideration will show that this is not so. The ignorant physician who kills his patient, or the unskilled blacksmith who lames the horse shod by him, is legally responsible, not because he is ignorant or unskilful—for skill and knowledge may be beyond his reach—but because, being unskilful or ignorant, he ventures to undertake a business which calls for qualities which he does not possess. No man is bound in law to be a good surgeon or a capable attorney, but all men are bound not to act as surgeons or attorneys until and unless they are good and capable as such.

(u) Salmond, *Torts* (11th ed.), 509-510.

(a) *Ford v. L. & S. W. Ry.* (1862), 2 F. & F. 730.

(b) *Just. Inst.* 4. 3. 7.

§ 145. Degrees of Negligence

We have said that English law recognises only one standard of care and therefore only one degree of negligence. Whenever a person is under a duty to take any care at all, he is bound to take that amount of it which is deemed reasonable under the circumstances; and the absence of this care is culpable negligence. Although this is probably a correct statement of English law, attempts have been made to establish two or even three distinct standards of care and degrees of negligence. Some authorities, for example, distinguish between gross negligence (*culpa lata*) and slight negligence (*culpa levis*), holding that a person is sometimes liable for the former only, and at other times even for the latter. In some cases we find even a threefold distinction maintained, negligence being either gross, ordinary, or slight (c). These distinctions are based partly upon Roman law, and partly upon a misunderstanding of it, and notwithstanding some judicial dicta to the contrary we may say with some confidence that no such doctrine is known to the law of England (d). The distinctions so drawn are hopelessly indeterminate and impracticable. On what principle are we to draw the line between gross negligence and slight? Even were it possible to establish two or more standards, there seems no reason of justice or expediency for doing so. The single standard of English law is sufficient for all cases. Why should any man be required to show more care than is reasonable under the circumstances, or excused if he shows less?

(c) See, for example, Smith's *Leading Cases* (13th ed.) I 190 (Notes to *Coggs v. Bernard*).

(d) See *Hinton v. Dibbin* (1842), 2 Q. B. at p. 661, per Denman, C.J.: "It may well be doubted whether between gross negligence and negligence merely any intelligible distinction exists". *Wilson v. Brett* (1843), 11 M. & W. at p. 113, per Rolfe, B.: "I said I could see no difference between negligence and gross negligence, that it was the same thing with the addition of a vituperative epithet". *Grill v. General Iron Screw Colliery Co.* (1866), L. R. 1 C. P. at p. 612, per Willes, J.: "No information has been given us as to the meaning to be attached to gross negligence in this case, and I quite agree with the dictum of Lord Cranworth in *Wilson v. Brett* that gross negligence is ordinary negligence with a vituperative epithet, a view held by the Exchequer Chamber in *Beal v. South Devon Ry.*" *Doorman v. Jenkins* (1834), 2 Ad. & El. at p. 265, per Denman, C.J.: "I thought and I still think it impossible for a judge to take upon himself to say whether negligence is gross or not". Salmond, *Torts* (11th ed.) 511; Pollock, *Torts* (15th ed.) 339; Street, *Foundations of Legal Liability*, I. 98. See, however, for a full discussion of the matter, and an expression of the contrary opinion, Beven on *Negligence*, I. ch. II.

In connection with this alleged distinction between gross and slight negligence it is necessary to consider the celebrated doctrine of Roman law to the effect that the former (*culpa lata*) is equivalent to wrongful intention (*dolus*)—a principle which receives occasional expression and recognition in English law also. *Magna culpa dolus est (e)*, said the Romans. In its literal interpretation, indeed, this is untrue, for we have already seen that the two forms of *mens rea* are wholly inconsistent with each other, and that no degree of carelessness can amount to design or purpose. Yet the proposition, though inaccurately expressed, has a true signification. Although *real* negligence, however gross, cannot amount to intention, *alleged* negligence may. Alleged negligence which, if real, would be exceedingly gross, is probably not negligence at all, but wrongful purpose. Its grossness raises a presumption against its reality. For we have seen that carelessness is measured by the magnitude and imminence of the threatened mischief. Now the greater and more imminent the mischief, the more probable is it that it is intended. Genuine carelessness is very unusual and unlikely in extreme cases. Men are often enough indifferent as to remote or unimportant dangers to which they expose others, but serious risks are commonly avoided by care unless the mischief is desired and intended. The probability of a result tends to prove intention and therefore to disprove negligence. If a new-born child is left to die from want of medical attention or nursing, it *may* be that its death is due to negligence only, but it is more probable that it is due to wrongful purpose and malice aforethought. He who strikes another on the head with an iron bar *may* have meant only to wound or stun, and not to kill him, but the probabilities are the other way (*f*).

In certain cases, as has already been indicated in dealing with the nature of intention, the presumption of fact that a person intends the probable consequences of his actions has hardened into a presumption of law and become irrebuttable. In those cases that which is negligence in fact is deemed wrongful intent in law. It is constructive, though not actual intent. The law of homicide supplies us with an illustration. Murder is wilful homicide, and manslaughter is negligent homicide, but the boundary line as drawn by the law is not fully coincident with that which exists in fact. Thus, an intent to cause grievous bodily harm is imputed as an intent to kill, if death ensues.

(e) D. 50. 16. 226. See also D. 17. 1. 29. pr., D. 47. 4. 1 2., D. 11. 6. 1. 1.: *Lata culpa plane dolo comparabitur*.

(f) In *Le Lievre v. Gould*, [1893] 1 Q. B. at p. 500, it is said by Bowen, L.J.: "If the case had been tried with a jury, the judge would have pointed out to them that gross negligence might amount to evidence of fraud, if it were so gross as to be incompatible with the idea of honesty, but that even gross negligence, in the absence of dishonesty, did not of itself amount to fraud". Literally read, this implies that, though gross negligence cannot be fraud, it may be evidence of it, but this of course is impossible. If two things are inconsistent with each other, one of them cannot be evidence of the other. The true meaning is that alleged or admitted negligence may be so gross as to be a ground for the inference that it is in reality fraud and not negligence at all: see also *Kettlewell v. Watson* (1892), 21 Ch. D. at p. 706, *per* Fry, J.

The justification of such conclusive presumptions of intent is twofold. In the first place, as already indicated, very gross negligence is probably in truth not negligence at all, but wrongful purpose; and in the second place, even if it is truly negligence, yet by reason of its grossness it is as bad as intent, in point of moral deserts, and therefore may justly be treated and punished as if it were intent. The law, accordingly, will sometimes say to a defendant: "Perhaps, as you allege, you were merely negligent and had no actual wrongful purpose; nevertheless you will be dealt with just as if you had, and it will be conclusively presumed against you that your act was wilful. For your deserts are no better than if you had in truth intended the mischief which you have so recklessly caused. Moreover it is exceedingly probable, notwithstanding your disclaimer, that you did indeed intend it; therefore no endeavour will be made on your behalf to discover whether you did or not."

§ 146. The Subjective and Objective Theories of Negligence

There are two rival theories of the meaning of the term negligence. According to the one, negligence is a state of mind; according to the other, it is not a state of mind but merely a type of conduct. These opposing views may conveniently be distinguished as the subjective and objective theories of negligence. The one view was adopted by Sir John Salmond, the other by Sir Frederick Pollock. We shall consider in turn the arguments for each view, and then attempt a reconciliation of them.

(1) *The subjective theory of negligence.* Sir John Salmond's view was that a careless person is a person who does not *care*. Although negligence is not synonymous with thoughtlessness or inadvertence, it is nevertheless, on this view, essentially an attitude of *indifference*. Now indifference is exceedingly apt to produce thoughtlessness or inadvertence; but it is not the same thing, and may exist without it. If I am indifferent as to the results of my conduct, I shall very probably fail to acquire adequate foresight and consciousness of them; but I may, on the contrary, make a very accurate estimate of them, and yet remain equally indifferent with respect to them.

Negligence, therefore, on this view, essentially consists in the *mental attitude of undue indifference with respect to one's conduct and its consequences (g).*

(g) Sir John Salmond quoted Merkel's *Lehrbuch des deutschen Strafrechts*, sects. 32 and 33.

This definition of negligence has the merit of making clear the distinction between intention and negligence. The wilful wrongdoer desires the harmful consequences, and therefore does the act in order that they may ensue. The negligent wrongdoer is careless (if not wholly, yet unduly) whether they ensue or not, and therefore does the act notwithstanding the risk that they may ensue. The wilful wrongdoer is liable because he desires to do the harm; the negligent wrongdoer is liable because he does not sufficiently desire to avoid it. He who will excuse himself on the ground that he meant no evil is still open to the reply: Perhaps you did not, but at all events you might have avoided it, if you had sufficiently desired so to do; and you are held liable not because you desired the mischief, but because you were careless and indifferent whether it ensued or not.

(2) *The objective theory of negligence.* The other theory is that negligence is not a subjective, but an objective fact. It is not a particular state of mind or form of the *mens rea* at all, but a particular kind of conduct. It is a breach of the duty of taking care, and to take care means to take precautions against the harmful results of one's actions, and to refrain from unreasonably dangerous kinds of conduct (h). To drive at night without lights is negligence, because to carry lights is a precaution taken by all reasonable and prudent men for the avoidance of accidents. To take care, therefore, is no more a mental attitude or state of mind than to take cold is. This view obtains powerful support from the law of tort, where it is clearly settled that negligence means a failure to achieve the objective standard of the reasonable man (i). If the defendant has failed to achieve this standard it is no defence for him to show that he was anxious to avoid doing harm and took the utmost care of which he was capable. The same seems to hold good in criminal law.

(3) *Reconciliation of the two theories.* The solution of the controversy here suggested is that the term negligence has two meanings, and that each theory represents one of these meanings.

(h) Pollock, *Torts* (15th ed.) 336: "Negligence is the contrary of diligence, and no one describes diligence as a state of mind." It may be answered that this simply plays upon two meanings of the word "diligence". Diligence to-day means activity, which is not a state of mind; but originally and in contrast to negligence it meant care, which has at least a mental element. Cf. *ante*, p. 421, n. (i).

(i) *Supra*, § 144.

"Negligence" is used to point one or other of two contrasts, and its meaning depends upon the particular contrast that is being made.

As contrasted with intention, negligence is necessarily subjective. Wrongful intention is a state of mind, and its contrast, negligence, is so also. Cases of apparent negligence may, upon examination of the party's state of mind, turn out to be cases of wrongful intention. A trapdoor may be left unbolted, in order that one's enemy may fall through it and so die. Poison may be left unlabelled, with intent that some one may drink it by mistake. A ship captain may wilfully cast away his ship by the neglect of the ordinary rules of good seamanship. A father who neglects to provide medicine for his sick child may be guilty of wilful murder, rather than of mere negligence. In none of these cases, nor indeed in any others, can we distinguish between intentional and negligent wrongdoing, save by looking into the mind of the offender and observing his subjective attitude towards his act and its consequences. Externally and objectively, the two classes of offences are indistinguishable.

As contrasted with inevitable accident, negligence is a particular type of conduct. If wrongful intention is not in issue, and the question is simply whether the defendant caused the harm without any fault on his part, or by his unintentional fault, the question is to be settled by ascertaining whether his conduct conformed to the standard of the reasonable man. In this case the state of his mind is quite irrelevant.

SUMMARY

The nature of Intention:

Foresight accompanied by desire.

Intention distinguished from expectation.

Intended consequences not always expected.

Expected consequences not always intended.

Constructive intention.

Intention { Immediate.
 { Ulterior—Motive.

Malice—wrongful intention.

Ambiguity of the term "malice", which relates either to the immediate or remote intention.

Concurrent motives.

The irrelevance of motives in law.

Exceptions to this principle.

The *jus necessitatis*.

Its theory.

Its allowance in practice.

The nature of Negligence.

Negligence and intention opposed and inconsistent.

Negligence not necessarily inadvertence.

Negligence { Wilful or advertent (recklessness).
 { Simple or inadvertent.

The duty of carefulness:

The necessary basis of liability for negligence.

When it exists in the criminal and civil law.

The standard of care:

Not the highest possible.

That of the reasonably careful man.

Negligence and want of skill.

Degrees of negligence.

Distinction between gross and slight negligence not recognised
by English law.

Culpa lata dolus est.

Significance of this proposition.

Negligence and constructive intent.

The subjective and objective theories of negligence.

(1) The subjective theory.

(2) The objective theory.

(3) Their reconciliation.

CHAPTER 19

LIABILITY (*continued*)

§ 147. The Theory of Strict Liability

WE now proceed to consider the third class of wrongs, namely those of strict liability (a). These are the acts for which a man is responsible irrespective of the existence of either wrongful intent or negligence. They are the exceptions to the general requirement of fault. It may be thought, indeed, that in the civil as opposed to the criminal law, strict liability should be the rule rather than the exception. It may be said: "It is clear that in the criminal law liability should in all ordinary cases be based upon the existence of *mens rea*. No man should be punished criminally unless he knew that he was doing wrong, or unless, at least, a reasonable person in his shoes could have avoided the harmful result by taking reasonable care. In no other case than these two can punishment be effective, and therefore in no other case is it justifiable. Inevitable mistake or accident should be a good defence. But why should the same principle apply to civil liability? If I do another man harm, why should I not be made to pay for it? What does it matter to him whether I did it wilfully, or negligently, or by inevitable accident? In either case I have actually done the harm, and therefore should be bound to *undo* it by paying compensation. For the essential aim of civil proceedings is redress for harm suffered by the plaintiff, not punishment for wrong done by the defendant; therefore the rule of *mens rea* should be deemed inapplicable."

It is clear, however, that this is not the law of England, and it seems equally clear that there is no sufficient reason why it should be. In all those judicial proceedings which fall under the head of penal redress, the determining purpose of the law is not redress, but punishment. Redress is in those

(a) The expression formerly used was "absolute" liability, but since exceptions are always recognised to so-called absolute liability, Sir Percy Winfield suggested that a better term was "strict" liability ("The Myth of Absolute Liability" (1926), 42 L. Q. R. 37), and this suggestion has since been judicially adopted (*Northwestern Utilities v. London Guarantee, etc., Co.* [1936] A. C. 108, 118, 119, 126).

cases merely the instrument of punishment. In itself it is not a sufficient ground or justification for such proceedings at all. Unless damages are at the same time a deserved penalty inflicted upon the defendant, they are not to be justified as being a deserved recompense awarded to the plaintiff. For they in no way undo the wrong or restore the former state of things. The wrong is done and cannot be undone. If by accident I burn down another man's house, the only result of enforcing compensation is that the loss has been transferred from him to me; but it remains as great as ever for all that. The mischief done has been in no degree abated. If I am not in fault, there is no more reason why I should insure other persons against the harmful issues of my own activity, than why I should insure them against lightning or earthquakes. Unless some definite gain is to be derived by transferring loss from one head to another, sound reason, as well as the law, requires that the loss should lie where it falls (b).

§ 148. The Extent of Strict Liability

Although the requirement of fault is general throughout the civil and criminal law, there are numerous exceptions to it. The considerations on which these are based are various, but the most important is the difficulty of procuring adequate proof of intention or negligence. In the majority of instances, indeed, justice requires that this difficulty be honestly faced; but in certain special cases it is allowable to circumvent it by means of a conclusive presumption of the presence of this condition of liability. In this way we shall certainly punish some who are innocent, but in the case of civil liability this is not a very serious matter—since men know that in such cases they act at their peril, and are content to take the risk—while in respect of criminal liability such a presumption is generally resorted to only in the case of comparatively trivial offences (c). Whenever, therefore, the strict doctrine of *mens rea* would too

(b) The question is discussed in Holmes's *Common Law*, 81-96, and in Pollock's *Law of Torts* (15th ed.) 96 ff.

(c) As to *mens rea* in criminal responsibility, see *R. v. Tolson* (1873), 23 Q. B. D. 168; *R. v. Prince* (1875), L. R. 2 C. C. 154; *Chisholm v. Doulton* (1889), 22 Q. B. D. 736; Kenny, *Outlines of Criminal Law* (ed. Turner 1952) 20 ff; R. M. Jackson, "Absolute Prohibition in Statutory Offences", in *The Modern Approach to Criminal Law* 262, reprinted from (1936) 6 C. L. J. 83.

seriously interfere with the administration of justice by reason of the evidential difficulties involved in it, the law tends to establish a form of strict liability.

In proceeding to consider the chief instances of this kind of liability we find that the matter falls into three divisions, namely—(1) Mistake of Law, (2) Mistake of Fact, and (3) Accident.

§ 149. Mistake of Law

It is a principle recognised not only by our own but by other legal systems that ignorance of the law is no excuse for breaking it. *Ignorantia juris neminem excusat*. The rule is also expressed in the form of a legal presumption that every one knows the law. The presumption is irrebuttable: no diligence of inquiry will avail against it, and no inevitable ignorance or error will serve for justification. Whenever a man is thus held accountable for breaking a law which he did not know, and which he could not by due care have acquired a knowledge of, the case is one of strict liability.

The reasons rendered for this somewhat rigorous principle are three in number. In the first place, the law is in legal theory definite and knowable; it is the duty of every man to know that part of it which concerns him; therefore innocent and inevitable ignorance of the law is impossible. Men are conclusively presumed to know the law, and are dealt with as if they did know it, because in general they can and ought to know it.

In the second place, even if invincible ignorance of the law is in fact possible, as indeed it is, the evidential difficulties in the way of the judicial recognition of such ignorance are insuperable, and for the sake of any benefit derivable therefrom it is not advisable to weaken the administration of justice by making liability dependent on well-nigh inscrutable conditions touching knowledge or means of knowledge of the law. Who can say of any man whether he knew the law, or whether during the course of his past life he had an opportunity of acquiring a knowledge of it by the exercise of due diligence?

Thirdly and lastly, the law is in most instances derived from and in harmony with the rules of natural justice. It is a public declaration by the state of its intention to maintain by force

those principles of right and wrong which have already a secure place in the moral consciousness of men. The common law is in great part nothing more than common honesty and common sense. Therefore although a man may be ignorant that he is breaking the law, he knows very well in most cases that he is breaking the rule of right. If not to his knowledge lawless, he is at least dishonest and unjust. He has little ground of complaint, therefore, if the law refuses to recognise his ignorance as an excuse, and deals with him according to his moral deserts. He who goes about to harm others when he believes that he can do so within the limits of the law, may justly be required by the law to know those limits at his peril. This is not a form of activity that need be encouraged by any scrupulous insistence on the formal conditions of legal responsibility.

It must be admitted, however, that while each of these considerations is valid and weighty, they do not constitute an altogether sufficient basis for so stringent and severe a rule (*d*). None of them goes the full length of the rule. That the law is knowable throughout by all whom it concerns is an ideal rather than a fact in any system as indefinite and mutable as our own. That it is impossible to distinguish invincible from negligent ignorance of the law is by no means wholly true. It may be doubted whether this inquiry is materially more difficult than many which courts of justice undertake without hesitation. That he who breaks the law of the land disregards at the same time the principles of justice and honesty is in many instances far from the truth. In a complex legal system a man requires other guidance than that of common sense and a good conscience. The fact seems to be that the rule in question, while in general sound, does not in its full extent and uncompromising rigidity admit of any sufficient justification. Indeed, it may be said that certain exceptions to it are in course of being developed, particularly in respect of the defence of "claim of right" in criminal law (*e*).

(*d*) The rule is not limited to civil and criminal liability, but extends to other departments of the law. It prevents, for example, the recovery of money paid under a mistake of law, though that which is paid under a mistake of fact may be reclaimed.

(*e*) For an extended discussion, see Williams, *Criminal Law: The General Part*, ch. 11.

§ 150. Mistake of Fact

In respect of the influence of ignorance or error upon legal liability, we have inherited from Roman law a familiar distinction between law and fact. By reason of his ignorance of the law no man will be excused, but it is commonly said that inevitable ignorance of fact is a good defence (f). This, however, is far from an accurate statement of English law. It is much more nearly correct to say that mistake of fact is an excuse only within the sphere of the criminal law, while in the civil law responsibility is commonly strict in this respect. So far as civil liability is concerned, it is a general principle of our law that he who intentionally or semi-intentionally (see § 136) interferes with the person, property, reputation, or other rightful interests of another does so at his peril, and will not be heard to allege that he believed in good faith and on reasonable grounds in the existence of some circumstance which justified his act. If I trespass upon another man's land, it is no defence to me that I believed it on good grounds to be my own. If in absolute innocence and under an inevitable mistake of fact I meddle with another's goods, I am liable for all loss incurred by the true owner (g). If, intending to arrest A, I arrest B by mistake instead, I am liable to him, notwithstanding the greatest care taken by me to ascertain his identity. If I falsely but innocently make a defamatory statement about another, I am liable to him, however careful I may have been to ascertain the truth. There are, indeed, exceptions to this rule of strict civil liability for mistake of fact, but they are not of such number or importance as to cast any doubt on the validity of the general principle (h).

In the criminal law, on the other hand, the matter is otherwise, and it is here that the contrast between mistake of law and mistake of fact finds its true application. Absolute criminal responsibility for a mistake of fact is quite exceptional. An

(f) *Regula est juris quidem ignorantiam cuique nocere, facti vero ignorantiam non nocere.* D. 22. 6. 9. pr.

(g) *Hollins v. Fowler* (1874), L. R. 7 H. L. 757; *Consolidated Co. v. Curtis*, [1892] 1 Q. B. 495.

(h) It may be noted that, as regards the tort of negligence, an entirely innocent error as to facts may make an act which would otherwise be negligent non-negligent. Thus an act which would be negligent if it were known that a third party was present and would be imperilled may not be negligent if the defendant was innocently (i.e., without breach of duty to come to know) ignorant of this fact.

instance of it is the liability of him who abducts a girl under the legal age of consent. Inevitable mistake as to her age is no defence; he must take the risk (i).

A word may be said as to the historical origin of this failure of English law to recognise inevitable mistake as a ground of exemption from civil liability. Ancient modes of procedure and proof were not adapted for inquiries into mental conditions. By the practical difficulties of proof early law was driven to attach exclusive importance to overt acts. The subjective elements of wrongdoing were largely beyond proof or knowledge, and were therefore disregarded as far as possible. It was a rule of our law that intent and knowledge were not matters that could be proved or put in issue. "It is common learning", said one of the judges of King Edward IV, "that the intent of a man will not be tried, for the devil himself knoweth not the intent of a man" (k). The sole question which the courts would entertain was whether the defendant did the act complained of. Whether he did it ignorantly or with guilty knowledge was entirely immaterial. This rule, however, was restricted to civil liability. It was early recognised that criminal responsibility was too serious a thing to be imposed upon an innocent man simply for the sake of avoiding a difficult inquiry into his knowledge and intention. In the case of civil liability, on the other hand, the rule was general. The success with which it has maintained itself in modern law is due in part to its undeniable utility in obviating inconvenient or even impracticable inquiries, and in part to the influence of the conception of redress in minimising the importance of fault as a condition of penal liability.

§ 151. Accident

Unlike mistake, inevitable accident is commonly recognised by our law as a ground of exemption from liability. It is needful, therefore, to distinguish accurately between these two things, for they are near of kin. Every act which is not done intentionally is done either accidentally or by mistake. It is done accidentally when it is unintentional in respect of its *consequences*. It is done by mistake, when it is intentional in respect of its consequences, but unintentional in respect of some material *circumstance*. If I drive over a man in the dark, because I do not know that he is in the road, I injure him accidentally; but if I procure his arrest, because I mistake him for some one who is liable to arrest, I injure him, not accidentally, but by mistake. In the former case I did not

(i) *R. v. Prince* (1875), L. R. 2 C. C. 154.

(k) Y. B. 17 Edw. IV. 2.

intend the harm at all, while in the latter case I fully intended it, but falsely believed in the existence of a circumstance which would have served to justify it. So if by insufficient care I allow my cattle to escape into my neighbour's field, their presence there is due to accident; but if I put them there because I wrongly believe that the field is mine, their presence is due to mistake. In neither case did I intend to wrong my neighbour, but in the one case my intention failed as to the consequence, and in the other as to the circumstance.

Accident, like mistake, is either culpable or inevitable. It is culpable when due to negligence, but inevitable when the avoidance of it would have required a degree of care exceeding the standard demanded by the law. Culpable accident is no defence, save in those exceptional cases in which wrongful intent is the exclusive and necessary ground of liability. Inevitable accident is commonly a good defence, both in the civil and in the criminal law.

To this rule, however, there are, at least, in the civil law, important exceptions. These are cases in which the law insists that a man shall act at his peril, and shall take his chance of accidents happening. If he desires to keep wild beasts (*l*), or to construct a reservoir of water (*n*), or to accumulate upon his land any substance which will do damage to his neighbours if it escapes (*o*), he will do all these things *suo periculo* (though none of them are *per se* wrongful), and will answer for all ensuing damage, notwithstanding consummate care. So also every man is strictly responsible for the trespasses of his cattle (*p*). If my horse or my ox escapes from my land to that of another man, I am answerable for it without any proof of negligence.

The history of the principle of strict liability has been the subject of some controversy. It is universally agreed that in primitive law a man was, in general, strictly liable for his own acts, though there were cases where the law came quite early to make some inquiry into the question of fault (*q*). The dispute has turned on the question of liability for the acts of one's slaves or servants, animals, and inanimate objects. According to one view, early law started with strict liability for these acts also, and the course of legal development

(*l*) *Filburn v. Aquarium Co.* (1890), 25 Q. B. D. 258.

(*n*) *Rylands v. Fletcher* (1868), L. R. 3 H. L. 330.

(*o*) *Pickard v. Smith* (1861), 10 C. B. (n.s.) 470.

(*p*) *Ellis v. Loftus Iron Co.* (1874), L. R. 10 C. P. 10.

(*q*) Winfield, "The Myth of Absolute Liability" (1926), 42 L. Q. R. 37.

was in the direction of a relaxation of the early rules. According to the other view the opposite was the case: early law had in general no conception of vicarious liability for servants or of liability for chattels, and the course of legal development was in the direction of establishing and strengthening such liability. The first view was propounded in Germany by Brunner (*r*) and in the United States by Dean Wigmore (*s*); in England it was adopted by Sir John Salmond (*t*) and Sir William Holdsworth (*u*), and received the somewhat hesitating adherence of Pollock and Maitland (*a*). The second view was sponsored by a minority school in Germany (*b*) and in the United States by Mr. Justice Holmes (*c*). The editor of the present edition has elsewhere argued in favour of the second view (*d*).

§ 152. Vicarious Responsibility

Hitherto we have dealt exclusively with the conditions of liability, and it is needful now to consider its incidence. Normally and naturally the person who is liable for a wrong is he who does it. Yet both ancient and modern law admit instances of vicarious liability in which one man is made answerable for the acts of another. Criminal responsibility, indeed, is never vicarious at the present day, except in very special circumstances and in certain of its less serious forms (*e*). In more primitive systems, however, the impulse to extend vicariously the incidence of liability receives free scope in a manner altogether alien to modern notions of justice. It is in barbarous times considered a very natural thing to make every man answerable for those who are kin to him. In the Mosaic legislation it is deemed necessary to lay down the express rule that "The fathers shall not be put to death for the children, neither shall the children be put to death for the fathers; every man shall be put to death for his own sin" (*f*). Plato in his *Laws* does not deem it needless to

(*r*) Brunner, "Ueber absichtlose Missethat im altdutschen Strafrechte", *Forschungen* 487 ff.; *Deutsche Rechtsgeschichte* (2nd ed.) II. 723 ff.

(*s*) "Responsibility for Tortious Acts: Its History", *Essays in Anglo-American Legal History*, III. 474.

(*t*) 7th ed. § 148.

(*u*) *H. E. L.* VIII. 466, 469.

(*a*) *H. E. L.* 2nd ed. II. 472.

(*b*) See Schwerin's note in the 2nd ed. of Brunner's *Deutsche Rechtsgeschichte* 723, and the authorities there cited.

(*c*) *The Common Law*, ch. I. Cf. Jenks in (1903), 19 *L. Q. R.* 23-9.

(*d*) Williams, *Liability for Animals*, ch. 15.

(*e*) *Chisholm v. Doulton* (1889), 22 *Q. B. D.* 736; *Parker v. Alder*, [1899] 1 *Q. B.* 20.

(*f*) *Deut.* xxiv. 16.

emphasise the same principle (g). Furthermore, so long as punishment is conceived rather as expiative, retributive, and vindictive, than as deterrent and reformatory, there seems no reason why the incidence of liability should not be determined by consent, and therefore why a guilty man should not provide a substitute to bear his penalty and to provide the needful satisfaction to the law. Guilt must be wiped out by punishment, but there is no reason why the victim should be one person rather than another. Such modes of thought have long since ceased to pervert the law; but that they were at one time natural is rendered sufficiently evident by their survival in popular theology. They also survive in international relations, for it is still commonly thought right and proper that innocent persons should participate in suffering for an international wrong perpetrated by their compatriots (h).

Modern civil law recognises vicarious liability in two chief classes of cases. In the first place, masters are responsible for the acts of their servants done in the course of their employment. In the second place, representatives of dead men are liable for deeds done in the flesh by those whom they represent. We shall briefly consider each of these two forms.

It has been sometimes said that the responsibility of a master for his servant has its historical source in the responsibility of an owner for his slave. This, however, is certainly not the case. The English doctrine of employer's liability is of comparatively recent growth. It has its origin in the legal presumption, gradually become conclusive, that all acts done by a servant in and about his master's business are done by his master's express or implied authority, and are therefore in truth the acts of the master for which he may be justly held responsible (i). No employer will be allowed to say that he did not authorise the act complained of, or even that it was done against his express injunctions, for he is liable none the less. This

(g) *Laws* 856. On the vicarious responsibility of the kindred in early law, see Lea, *Superstition and Force* (4th ed.) 13-20, and Tarde, *La Philosophie Pénale* 136-140.

(h) See Kelsen, *Law and Peace in International Relations* (1942) 96-101.

(i) Salmond, *Essays in Jurisprudence and Legal History* 161-163; Wigmore, "Responsibility for Tortsious Acts", *Select Essays in Anglo-American Legal History* III. 520-537; Street, *Foundations of Legal Liability*, II., ch. 41-43; Holdsworth, *H. E. L.* VIII. 472 ff.

conclusive presumption of authority has now, after the manner of such presumptions, disappeared from the law, after having permanently modified it by establishing the principle of employer's liability. Historically, as we have said, this is a fictitious extension of the principle, *Qui facit per alium facit per se*. Formally, it has been reduced to the laconic maxim, *Respondeat superior*.

The rational basis of this form of vicarious liability is in the first place evidential. There are such immense difficulties in the way of proving actual authority, that it is necessary to establish a conclusive presumption of it. A word, a gesture, or a tone may be a sufficient indication from a master to his servant that some lapse from the legal standard of care or honesty will be deemed acceptable service. Yet who could prove such a measure of complicity? Who could establish liability in such a case, were evidence of authority required, or evidence of the want of it admitted?

A further reason for the vicarious responsibility of employers is that employers usually are, while their servants usually are not, financially capable of the burden of civil liability. It is felt, probably with justice, that a man who is able to make compensation for the hurtful results of his activities should not be enabled to escape from the duty of doing so by delegating the exercise of these activities to servants or agents from whom no redress can be obtained. Such delegation confers upon impecunious persons means and opportunities of mischief which would otherwise be confined to those who are financially competent. It disturbs the correspondence which would otherwise exist between the capacity of doing harm and the capacity of paying for it. It is requisite for the efficacy of civil justice that this delegation of powers and functions should be permitted only on the condition that he who delegates them shall remain answerable for the acts of his servants, as he would be for his own (k).

A second form of vicarious responsibility is that of living representatives for the acts of dead men. There is no doubt

(k) This reason is not given full effect to by the law, for vicarious liability in English law does not generally extend to the acts of independent contractors. For a further discussion of the justifications, real or supposed, of vicarious liability, see Baty, *Vicarious Liability*.

that criminal responsibility must die with the wrongdoer himself, but with respect to penal redress the question is not free from difficulty. For in this form of liability there is a conflict between the requirements of the two competing principles of punishment and compensation. The former demands the termination of liability with the life of the wrongdoer, while the latter demands its survival. In this dispute the older common law approved the first of those alternatives. The received maxim was: *Actio personalis moritur cum persona* (1). A man cannot be punished in his grave; therefore it was held that all actions for penal redress, being in their true nature instruments of punishment, must be brought against the living offender and must die with him. Modern opinion rejects this conclusion, and by various statutory provisions the old rule has been almost entirely abrogated. It is considered that although liability to afford redress ought to depend in point of *origin* upon the requirements of punishment, it should depend in point of *continuance* upon those of compensation. For when this form of liability has once come into existence, it is a valuable right of the person wronged; and it is expedient that such rights should be held upon a secure tenure, and should not be subject to extinction by a mere irrelevant accident such as the death of the offender. There is no sufficient reason for drawing any distinction in point of survival between the right of a creditor to recover his debt and the right of a man who has been injured by assault or defamation to recover compensation for the loss so suffered by him.

As a further argument in the same sense, it is to be observed that it is not strictly true that a man cannot be punished after his death. Punishment is effective not at the time it is inflicted, but at the time it is threatened. A threat of evil to be inflicted upon a man's descendants at the expense of his estate will undoubtedly exercise a certain deterrent influence upon him; and the apparent injustice of so punishing his descendants for the offences of their predecessor is in most cases no more than apparent. The right of succession is merely the right to acquire the dead man's estate, subject to all charges which, on any grounds, and apart altogether from the interests of the successors themselves, may justly be imposed upon it.

(1) On the history of this maxim see Holdsworth, *H. E. L.* III. 576-84.

There is a second application of the maxim, *Actio personalis moritur cum persona*, which seems equally destitute of justification. According to the common law an action for penal redress died not merely with the wrongdoer but also with the person wronged. This rule also has been abrogated by statute in large part. There can be little doubt that in all ordinary cases, if it is right to punish a person at all, his liability should not cease simply by reason of the death of him against whom his offence was committed. The right of the person injured to receive redress should descend to his representatives like any other proprietary interest.

§ 153. The Measure of Criminal Liability

We have now considered the conditions and the incidence of penal liability. It remains to deal with the measure of it, and here we must distinguish between criminal and civil wrongs, for the principles involved are fundamentally different in the two cases.

In considering the measure of criminal liability it will be convenient to bestow exclusive attention upon the deterrent purpose of the criminal law, remembering, however, that the conclusions so obtained are subject to possible modification by reference to those subordinate and incidental purposes of punishment which we thus provisionally disregard.

Were men perfectly rational, so as to act invariably in accordance with an enlightened estimate of consequences, the question of the measure of punishment would present no difficulty. A draconian simplicity and severity would be perfectly just and perfectly effective. It would be possible to act on the Stoic paradox that all offences involve equal guilt, and to visit with the utmost rigour of the law every deviation, however slight, from the appointed way. In other words, if the deterrent effect of severity were certain and complete, the best law would be that which by the most extreme and indiscriminating severity effectually extinguished crime. Were human nature so constituted that a threat of burning all offenders alive would with certainty prevent all breaches of the law, then this would be the just and fitting penalty for all offences from high treason to petty larceny. So greatly, however, are men moved by the impulse of the moment, rather than by a rational estimate of future good and evil, and so ready are they to face any future evil which

falls short of the inevitable, that the utmost rigour is sufficient only for the diminution of crime, not for the extinction of it. It is needful, therefore, in judging the merits of the law, to subtract from the sum of good which results from the partial prevention of offences, the sum of evil which results from the partial failure of prevention and the consequent necessity of fulfilling those threats of evil by which the law had hoped to effect its purpose. The perfect law is that in which the difference between the good and the evil is at a maximum in favour of the good, and the rules as to the measure of criminal liability are the rules for the attainment of this maximum. It is obvious that it is not attainable by an indefinite increase of severity. To substitute hanging for imprisonment as the punishment for petty theft would doubtless diminish the frequency of this offence, but it is certain that the evil so prevented would be far outweighed by that which the law would be called on to inflict in the cases in which its threats proved unavailing.

In every crime there are three elements to be taken into account in determining the appropriate measure of punishment. These are (1) the motives to the commission of the offence, (2) the magnitude of the offence, and (3) the character of the offender.

1. *The motive of the offence.* Other things being equal, the greater the temptation to commit a crime the greater should be the punishment. This is an obvious deduction from the first principles of criminal liability. The object of punishment is to counteract by the establishment of contrary and artificial motives the natural motives which lead to crime. The stronger these natural motives the stronger must be the counteractives which the law supplies. If the profit to be derived from an act is great, or the passions which lead men to it are violent, a corresponding strength or violence is an essential condition of the efficacy of repressive discipline. We shall see later, however, that this principle is subject to a very important limitation, and that there are many cases in which extreme temptation is a ground of extenuation rather than of increased severity of punishment.

2. *The magnitude of the offence.* Other things being equal, the greater the offence, that is to say the greater the sum of its

evil consequences or tendencies, the greater should be its punishment. At first sight, indeed, it would seem that this consideration is irrelevant. Punishment, it may be thought, should be measured solely by the profit derived by the offender, not by the evils caused to other persons; if two crimes are equal in point of motive, they should be equal in point of punishment, notwithstanding the fact that one of them may be many times more mischievous than the other. This, however, is not so, and the reason is twofold.

(a) The greater the mischief of any offence the greater is the punishment which it is profitable to inflict with the hope of preventing it. For the greater this mischief the less is the proportion which the evil of punishment bears to the good of prevention, and therefore the greater is the punishment which can be inflicted before the balance of good over evil attains its maximum. Assuming the motives of larceny and of homicide to be equal, it may be profitable to inflict capital punishment for the latter offence, although it is certainly unprofitable to inflict it for the former. The increased measure of prevention that would be obtained by such severity would, in view of the comparatively trivial nature of the offence, be obtained at too great a cost.

(b) A second and subordinate reason for making punishment vary with the magnitude of the offence is that, in those cases in which different offences offer themselves as alternatives to the offender, an inducement is thereby given for the preference of the least serious. If the punishment of burglary is the same as that of murder, the burglar has obvious motives for not stopping at the lesser crime. If an attempt is punished as severely as a completed offence, why should any man repent of his half-executed purposes?

3. *The character of the offender.* The worse the character or disposition of the offender the more severe should be his punishment. Badness of disposition is constituted either by the strength of the impulses to crime, or by the weakness of the impulses towards law-abiding conduct. One man may be worse than another because of the greater strength and prevalence within him of such anti-social passions as anger, covetousness, or malice; or his badness may lie in a deficiency of those social

impulses and instincts which are the springs of right conduct in normally constituted men. In respect of all the graver forms of law-breaking, for one man who abstains from them for fear of the law there are thousands who abstain by reason of quite other influences. Their sympathetic instincts, their natural affections, their religious beliefs, their love of the approbation of others, their pride and self-respect, render superfluous the threatenings of the law. In the degree in which these impulses are dominant and operative, the disposition of a man is good; in the degree in which they are wanting or inefficient, it is bad.

In both its kinds badness of disposition is a ground for severity of punishment. If a man's emotional constitution is such that normal temptation acts upon him with abnormal force, it is for the law to supply in double measure the counteractive of penal discipline. If he is so made that the natural influences towards well-doing fall below the level of average humanity, the law must supplement them by artificial influences of a strength that is needless in ordinary cases.

Any fact, therefore, which indicates depravity of disposition is a circumstance of aggravation, and calls for a penalty in excess of that which would otherwise be appropriate to the offence. One of the most important of these facts is the repetition of crime by one who has been already punished. The law rightly imposes upon habitual offenders penalties which bear no relation either to the magnitude or to the profit of the offence. A punishment adapted for normal men is not appropriate for those who, by their repeated defiance of it, prove their possession of abnormal natures (*m*). A second case in which the same principle is applicable is that in which the mischief of an offence is altogether disproportionate to any profit to be derived from it by the offender. To kill a man from mere wantonness, or merely in order to facilitate the picking of his pocket, is a proof of extraordinary depravity beyond anything that is imputable to him who commits homicide only through the stress of passionate indignation or under the influence of great temptation. A third case is that of offences from which normal humanity is adequately dissuaded by such influences as those of natural affection. To kill one's father is in point of magnitude

(*m*) The preventive function of punishment is an additional reason for sentencing habitual offenders to such punishments as long terms of imprisonment.

no worse a crime than any other homicide, but it has at all times been viewed with greater abhorrence, and by some laws punished with greater severity, by reason of the depth of depravity which it indicates in the offender. Lastly it is on the same principle that wilful offences are punished with greater rigour than those which are due merely to negligence.

An additional and subordinate reason for making the measure of liability depend upon the character of the offender is that badness of disposition is commonly accompanied by deficiency of sensibility. Punishment must increase as sensibility diminishes. The more depraved the offender the less he feels the shame of punishment; therefore the more he must be made to feel the pain of it. A certain degree of even physical insensibility is said to characterise those who commit crimes of violence; and the indifference with which death itself is faced by those who in the callousness of their hearts have not scrupled to inflict it upon others is a matter of amazement to normally constituted men.

We are now in a position to deal with a question which we have already touched upon but deferred for fuller consideration, namely the apparent paradox involved in the rule that punishment must increase with the temptation to the offence. As a general rule this proposition is true; but it is subject to a very important qualification. For in certain cases the temptation to which a man succumbs may be of such a nature as to rebut that presumption of bad disposition which would in ordinary circumstances arise from the commission of the offence. He may, for example, be driven to the act not by the strength of any bad or self-regarding motives, but by that of his social or sympathetic impulses. In such a case the greatness of the temptation, considered in itself, demands severity of punishment, but when considered as a disproof of the degraded disposition which usually accompanies wrongdoing it demands leniency; and the latter of these two conflicting considerations may be of sufficient importance to outweigh the other. If a man remains honest until he is driven in despair to steal food for his starving children, it is perfectly consistent with the deterrent theory of punishment to deal with him less severely than with him who steals from no other motive than cupidity. He who commits homicide from motives of petty gain, or to attain some trivial purpose, deserves

to be treated with the utmost severity, as a man thoroughly callous and depraved. But he who kills another in retaliation for some intolerable insult or injury need not be dealt with according to the measure of his temptations, but should rather be excused on account of them.

§ 154. The Measure of Civil Liability

Penal redress is that form of penal liability in which the law uses the compulsory compensation of the person injured as an instrument for the punishment of the offender. It is characteristic of this form of punishment that it takes account of one only of the three considerations which, as we have seen, rightly determine the measure of penal responsibility. It is measured exclusively by the magnitude of the offence, that is to say, by the amount of loss inflicted by it. It takes no account of the character of the offender, and so visits him who does harm through some trivial want of care with as severe a penalty as if his act had been prompted by deliberate malice. Similarly it takes no account of the motives of the offence; he who has everything and he who has nothing to gain are equally punished, if the damage done by them is equal. Finally, it takes no account of probable or intended consequences, but solely of those which actually ensue; wherefore the measure of a wrongdoer's liability is not the evil which he meant to do, but that which he has succeeded in doing; and his punishment is determined not by his fault, but by the accident of the result. If one man is dealt with more severely than another, it is not because he is more guilty, but because he has had the misfortune to be more successful in his wrongful purposes, or less successful in the avoidance of unintended issues.

Serious as are these lapses from the due standard of penal discipline, it is not to be suggested that this form of civil liability is unjustifiable. The use of redress as an instrument of punishment possesses advantages more than sufficient to counterbalance any such objections to it. More especially it possesses this, that while other forms of punishment, such as imprisonment, are uncompensated evil, penal redress is the gain of him who is wronged as well as the loss of the wrongdoer. Further, this form of remedy gives to the persons injured a

direct interest in the efficient administration of justice—an interest which is almost absent in the case of the criminal law. It is true, however, that the law of penal redress, taken by itself, falls so far short of the requirements of a rational scheme of punishment that it would by itself be totally insufficient. In all modern and developed bodies of law its operation is supplemented, and its deficiencies made good, by a co-ordinate system of criminal liability. These two together, combined in due proportions, constitute a very efficient instrument for the maintenance of justice.

SUMMARY

Wrongs of strict liability—*Mens rea* not required.

Exceptional nature of such wrongs.

Penal redress justified not as redress but as punishment.

Mistake of law.

Commonly no defence.

Reasons for the rule.

Criticism of it.

Mistake of fact.

A defence in criminal but commonly not in civil cases.

Accident.

Distinction between accident and mistake.

Accident and mistake { Culpable.
Inevitable.

Inevitable accident commonly a defence.

Exceptions.

The incidence of Penal Liability.

Vicarious liability.

1. Employer's liability.

Its rational basis.

2. Liability of representatives of dead men.

Its rational basis.

The Measure of Penal Liability.

1. Criminal liability.

Reasons against indiscriminate severity.

The end to be attained.

The considerations to be taken account of.

(a) The motive of the offence.

(b) The magnitude of the offence.

(c) The character of the offender.

2. Civil liability.

Merits and demerits of the use of compulsory compensation as an instrument of punishment.

CHAPTER 20

THE LAW OF PROPERTY

§ 155. Meanings of the Term Property

THE substantive civil law (a) is divisible into three great departments, namely the law of property, the law of obligations, and the law of status. The first deals with proprietary rights *in rem*, the second with proprietary rights *in personam*, and the third with personal or non-proprietary rights, whether *in rem* or *in personam*. In this chapter we shall consider in outline the first of these branches, and we shall then proceed to deal in the same manner with the law of obligations. The law of status, on the other hand, is not of such a nature as to require or repay any further consideration from the point of view of general theory.

The term property, which we here use as meaning proprietary rights *in rem*, possesses a singular variety of different applications having different degrees of generality. These are the following:—

1. *All legal rights.* In its widest sense, property includes all a person's legal rights, of whatever description. A man's property is all that is *his in law*. This usage, however, is obsolete at the present day, though it is common enough in the older books. Thus Blackstone speaks of the property (*i.e.* right) which a master has in the person of his servant, and a father in the person of his child. "The inferior", he says (b) "hath no kind of property in the company, care, or assistance of the superior, as the superior is held to have in those of the inferior." So Hobbes says (c): "Of things held in propriety, those that are dearest to a man are his own life and limbs; and in the next degree, in most men, those that concern conjugal affection; and after them riches and means of living". In like

(a) Substantive law, as opposed to the law of procedure; civil law, as opposed to criminal.

(b) Blackstone, III. 143. "The child hath no property in his father or guardian as they have in him." *Ibid.*

(c) *Leviathan*, ch. xxx; *Eng. Wks.* III. 329.

manner Locke (d) tells us that "every man has a property in his own person", and he speaks elsewhere (e) of a man's right to preserve "his property, that is, his life, liberty, and estate".

2. *Proprietary rights (dominium and status)*. In a second and narrower sense, property includes not all a person's rights, but only his proprietary as opposed to his personal rights. The former constitute his estate or property, while the latter constitute his status or personal condition. In this sense a man's land, chattels, shares, and the debts due to him are his property; but not his life or liberty or reputation. In this sense we may oppose to Locke's statement, that a man has a property in his own person, the saying of Ulpian: *Dominus membrorum suorum nemo videtur* (f). This is probably the most frequent application of the term at the present day, but in the case of a word having so many recognised varieties of usage it is idle to attempt to single out any one of them as exclusively correct.

3. *Proprietary rights in rem (dominium and obligatio)*. In a third application, which is that adopted in this chapter, the term includes not even all proprietary rights, but only those which are both proprietary and *in rem*. The law of property is the law of proprietary rights *in rem*, the law of proprietary rights *in personam* being distinguished from it as the law of obligations. According to this usage a freehold or leasehold estate in land, or a patent or copyright, is property; but a debt or the benefit of a contract is not.

4. *Corporeal property (dominium corporis and dominium juris)*. Finally, in the narrowest use of the term, it includes nothing more than corporeal property—that is to say, the right of ownership in a material object, or that object itself. Thus property is defined by Ahrens (g) as "a material object subject to the immediate power of a person", and Bentham (h) considers as metaphorical and improper the extension of the term to include other rights than those which relate to material things.

(d) *Treatise on Civil Government*, II. ch. v, sect. 27.

(e) *Ibid.* ch. vii, sect. 87.

(f) D. 9. 2. 13. pr.

(g) *Droit Naturel*, II. sect. 55.

(h) *Principles*, 231; *Works*. I. 108. So Puchta, sect. 231: Nur an körperlichen Gegenständen ist Eigenthum möglich.

§ 156. Kinds of Property

All property is, as we have already seen (i), either corporeal or incorporeal. Corporeal property is the right of ownership in material things; incorporeal property is any other proprietary right *in rem*. Incorporeal property is itself of two kinds, namely (1) *jura in re aliena* or encumbrances, whether over material or immaterial things (for example, leases, mortgages, and servitudes), and (2) *jura in re propria* over immaterial things (for example, patents, copyrights, and trade-marks). The resulting threefold division of property appears in the following Table:—

Property	<i>Jura in re propria</i>	Material things	Land Chattels	Corporeal property.
		Immaterial things	Patents Copyrights Trade-marks &c.	
	<i>Jura in re aliena</i>	Leases	Incorporeal property.	
		Servitudes Securities &c.		

§ 157. The Ownership of Material Things

The owner of a material object is he who owns a right to the aggregate of its uses. He who has merely a special and definitely limited right to the use of it, such as a right of way or other servitude, is not an owner of the thing but merely an encumbrancer of it. The definition, however, must not be misunderstood. Ownership is the right of *general* use, not that of absolute or unlimited use. He is the owner of a thing who is entitled to all those uses of it which are not specially excepted and cut off by the law. No such right as that of absolute and unlimited use is known to the law. All lawful use is either general (that

(i) *Supra*, §§ 89-90.

is to say, residuary) or specific, the former being ownership, and the latter encumbrance.

The limits thus imposed upon an owner's right of use are of two kinds. The first are the various limits imposed upon ownership by the general law. They are the various applications of the maxim: *Sic utere tuo ut alienum non laedas*—a legal principle whose function it is to restrain within due bounds the opposing maxim that a man may do as he pleases with his own. In the interests of the public or of a man's neighbours many uses of the things which are his are wholly excluded from his right of ownership.

The second class of restrictions upon an owner's right of use consists of those which flow from the existence of encumbrances vested in other persons. My land may be mortgaged, leased, charged, bound by restrictive covenants, and so on, yet I remain the owner of it none the less. For I am still entitled to the residue of its uses, and whatever right over it is not specifically vested in some one else is vested in me. The residuary use so left to me may be of very small dimensions; some encumbrancer may own rights over it much more valuable than mine; but the ownership of it is in me and not in him. Were his right to determine to-morrow in any manner, my own, relieved from the encumbrance which now weighs it down, would forthwith spring up to its full stature and have again its full effect. No right loses its identity because of an encumbrance vested in some one else. That which is a right of ownership when there are no encumbrances, remains a right of ownership notwithstanding any number of them.

Inasmuch as the right of ownership is a right to the aggregate of the uses of the thing, it follows that ownership is necessarily permanent. No person having merely a temporary right to the use of a thing can be the owner of the thing, however general that right may be while it lasts. He who comes after him is the owner; for it is to him that the residue of the uses of the thing pertains. It is to be understood, however, that by a permanent right is meant nothing more than a right which is capable of lasting as long as the thing itself which is its subject-matter, however long or short that duration may be.

Even as the generality of ownership involves its permanence,

so its permanence involves the further essential feature of inheritance. The only permanent rights which can be owned by a mortal man are those which can be handed down by him to his successors or representatives on his death. All others are temporary, their duration being necessarily limited to the lifetime of him in whom they are vested. The right of ownership, therefore, is essentially an inheritable right. It is capable of surviving its owner for the time being. It belongs to the class of rights which are divested by death but are not extinguished by it.

Summing up the conclusions to which we have attained, we may define the right of ownership in a material thing as the general, permanent, and inheritable right to the uses of that thing (*k*).

According to the ancient English doctrine there can be no owner of *land* except the Crown itself. The fee simple of land—the greatest right in it which a subject can possess—is not in truth ownership, but a mere encumbrance upon the ownership of the Crown. Although this theory is still sometimes maintained in words it now has no practical consequences. Before 1926 it had a consequence in the distinction between escheat and the taking of goods as *bona vacantia*. When a tenant in fee simple died without leaving an heir or devisee, the land reverted or escheated to the Crown, or, if it had been held of a mesne lord, to the mesne lord. That is to say, the interest of the Crown or mesne lord, which had never been divested, but had merely been encumbered by the fee simple, would through the destruction of this encumbrance become once more an interest in demesne. In the case of chattels it was otherwise. They could be owned by the subject no less than by the Crown. It is true that if the owner of them died intestate without kin, they would go to the Crown as *bona vacantia*, just as land held of the Crown would go to the Crown as an escheat. But between these two processes there was a profound difference in legal theory. In the case of chattels the Crown succeeded to the right which was vested in the dead man; his ownership was continued in the Crown, just as it would have been continued in his next-of-kin had there been any. But in the case of escheat, as already said, the right

(*k*) The full power of alienation and disposition is an almost invariable element in the right of ownership, but cannot be regarded as essential, or included in the definition of it. A married woman subject to a restraint on anticipation is none the less the owner of her property, though she cannot alienate or encumber it.

Austin (3rd ed.) 817 defines the right of ownership as a "right indefinite in point of user, unrestricted in point of disposition, and unlimited in point of duration, over a determinate thing".

of the dead man had come to an end, and the Crown succeeded to no right of his, but simply came into its own again.

This distinction has been abolished by sections 45 and 46 of the Administration of Estates Act, 1925, which provide that on the death of a person intestate and without next-of-kin entitled under the new rules of descent, his land shall not escheat but shall go to the Crown as *bona vacantia*. At the present day, therefore, there is nothing to prevent us from speaking of the fee simple of land as the ownership of it, the right of the Crown being viewed, accordingly, not as vested and continuing ownership subject to an encumbrance, but as a contingent right of succession to an intestate owner.

§ 158. Movable and Immovable Property

Among material things the most important distinction is that between movables and immovables, or, to use terms more familiar in English law, between chattels and land. In all legal systems these two classes of objects are to some extent governed by different rules, though in no system is the difference so great as in our own.

Considered in its legal aspect, an immovable, that is to say, a piece of land, includes the following elements:—

1. A determinate portion of the earth's surface.
2. The ground beneath the surface down to the centre of the world. All the pieces of land in England meet together in one terminable point at the earth's centre.
3. Possibly the column of space above the surface *ad infinitum*. "The earth", says Coke, "hath in law a great extent upwards, not only of water as hath been said, but of ayre and all other things even up to heaven; for *Cujus est solum, ejus est usque ad coelum*" (l). The authenticity of this doctrine, however, is not wholly beyond dispute. It would prohibit as an actionable trespass all use of the air-space above the appropriated surface of the earth, at whatever height this use took place, and however little it could affect the interests of the landowner. It may be that the law recognises no right of ownership in the air-space at all, or at least no right of exclusive use, but merely prohibits all acts which by their nature or their proximity interfere with the full enjoyment and use of the surface (m). By the

(l) Co. Litt. 4 a. On the maxim see note in (1931) 47 L. Q. R. 14.

(m) On this question see *Pickering v. Rudd* (1815), 4 Camp. 219; *Fay v. Prentice* (1845), 1 C. B. 828; *Wandsworth Board of Works v. United Telegraph*

German Civil Code (Art. 905), the owner of land owns the space above it, but has no right to prohibit acts so remote from the surface that they in no way affect his interests. In England it is now expressly provided by statute (n) that the flight of aircraft at a reasonable height above the ground is not actionable at the suit of the owner or occupier of the land below.

4. All objects which are on or under the surface in its natural state; for example, minerals and natural vegetation. All these are part of the land, even though they are in no way physically attached to it. Stones lying loose upon the surface are in the same category as the stone in a quarry.

5. Lastly, all objects placed by human agency on or under the surface, with the intention of permanent annexation. These become part of the land, and lose their identity as separate movables or chattels; for example, buildings, walls, and fences. *Omne quod inaedificatur solo cedit*, said the Roman law (o). Provided that the requisite intent of permanent annexation is present, no physical attachment to the surface is required. A wall built of stones without mortar or foundations is part of the land on which it stands (p). Conversely, physical attachment, without the intent of permanent annexation, is not in itself enough. Carpets, tapestries, or ornaments nailed to the floor or walls of a house are not thereby made part of the house (q). Money buried in the ground is as much a chattel as money in its owner's pocket (r).

Co. (1884), 13 Q. B. D. 904; *Ellis v. Loftus Iron Co.* (1874), L. R. 10 C. P. 10; McNair, *Law of the Air*, ch. 2.

(n) Civil Aviation Act, 1949, s. 40, repeating the Air Navigation Act, 1920.

(o) Just. Inst. 2. 1. 29. See also Gaius, 2. 73; *Superficies solo cedit*.

(p) *Monti v. Barnes*, [1901] 1 K. B. 205.

(q) Similar law is contained in Article 95 of the German Civil Code: "Things are not part of the land, which are attached to it simply for a temporary purpose". It is only by slow degrees and with imperfect consistency that our law has worked out any intelligible principle on this difficult matter; and although the rule as stated in the text may be accepted as the main guiding principle, it cannot be said even yet that English law has succeeded in establishing any uniform doctrine applicable to all cases. Even where a chattel has become a fixture, and so part of the land, persons other than the owner of the land may have rights of removal. Thus tenants for life or for years have certain rights of removing chattels affixed by themselves for trade, ornamental, and domestic purposes.

(r) Unlike a chattel, a piece of land has no natural boundaries. Its separation from the adjoining land is purely arbitrary and artificial, and it

It is clear that the distinction between movables and immovables is in truth and in fact applicable to material objects only. Yet the law has made an unfortunate attempt to apply it to *rights* also. Rights no less than things are conceived by the law as having a local situation, and as being either movable or permanently fixed in a definite locality. The origin of this illogical conception is to be found in the identification of rights of ownership with the material things which are the objects of them. I am said to own land and chattels, as well as easements, shares, debts, contracts, and patents. All these things are equally property, and since some of them have a local situation and can be truly classed as movable or immovable, the law has been led by inadvertence to attribute these qualities to all of them. It has recognised in things which are incorporeal certain attributes which in truth pertain to things corporeal only. It has divided the whole sphere of proprietary rights by reference to a distinction which is truly applicable not to rights at all, but to physical objects. Nor is this merely a peculiarity of English law, for it is found in Continental systems also (*s*).

On what principle, then, does the law determine whether a right is to be classed as immovable or as movable? The general rule is that a right has in this respect the same quality as its subject-matter. All rights over immovable things, whether rights in *re propria* or rights in *re aliena*, are themselves to be classed as immovable property; unless, indeed, as in the case of mortgages, they are merely accessory to debts or other *bona mobilia*, in which case they may partake, for some purposes at least, of the quality of the thing to which they are appurtenant. Similarly all rights over movables are *bona mobilia* themselves. So far there is no difficulty. What shall we say, however, of those rights which have no material objects at all, such as a copyright, a patent, the good-will of a business, a trademark, or the benefit of a contract? The answer is that all such rights are classed by the law as movable. For the class of movable property is residuary, and includes all rights which can make good no claim to be classed as immovable.

The law not merely classifies rights as movable and immovable, but goes further in the same direction, and attributes local situation to

is capable of subdivision and separate ownership to any extent that may be desired. The lines of subdivision are usually vertical, but may be horizontal. The surface of land, for example, may belong to one man and the substrata to another. Each story of a house may have a different owner. In *Midland Ry. v. Wright*, [1901] 1 Ch. 738, it was held that a right has been acquired by prescription to the surface of land belonging to a railway company, although a tunnel beneath the surface remained the property of the company as having been continuously in its occupation.

(*s*) Baudry-Lacantinerie, *Des Biens*, sect. 123, "We know that rights, regarded as incorporeal things, are properly speaking neither movables nor immovables. But by a fiction the law classes them as one or the other according to the nature of their subject-matter". See also Dernburg's *Pandekten*, I. sect. 74.

them. It undertakes to say not merely *whether* a right exists, but *where* it exists. Nor is this a difficult task in the case of those rights which have determinate material things as their objects. A servitude or other *jus in re aliena* over a piece of land is situated in law where the land is situated in fact. A right over a chattel is movable property, and where the chattel goes the right goes also. But where there is no material object at all, what are we to say as to the local situation of the right? Where is a debt situated, or a share in a company, or the benefit of a contract, or a copyright? Such questions can be determined only by more or less arbitrary rules based upon analogy, and it is to be regretted that it has been thought needful to ask and answer them at all. As the law stands, however, it contains several rules based on the assumption that all property which exists must exist *somewhere* (f), and for the application of these rules the determination of the local situation of rights is necessary, even though it leads into the region of legal fictions. "The legal conception of property", says Lord Lindley (u), "appears to me to involve the legal conception of existence somewhere. . . . To talk of property as existing nowhere is to use language which to me is unintelligible."

The leading principle as to the local situation of rights is that they are situated where they are exercised and enjoyed. Rights over material things, therefore, have the same situation as those things themselves. The good-will of a business is situated in the place where the business is carried on (a). Debts are in general situated in the place where the debtor resides, since it is there that the creditor must go to get his money (c).

(f) For example, the jurisdiction of English courts in the administration of deceased persons' estates depends on the deceased having left property in England. Portions of revenue law and of private international law are also based on the assumption that all proprietary rights possess a local situation.

(u) *Inland Revenue Commissioners v. Muller & Co.'s Margarine, Ltd.*, [1901] A. C. at p. 236.

(a) *Inland Revenue Commissioners v. Muller & Co.'s Margarine, Ltd.*, [1901] A. C. at p. 236.

(c) There are certain cases, however, which have been decided on the assumption that incorporeal property possesses no local situation at all. For this reason it was held in *Smelting Co. of Australia v. Commissioners of Inland Revenue*, [1897] 1 Q. B. 172, that a share of a New South Wales patent, together with the exclusive right of using it within a certain district of that colony, was not property "locally situated out of the United Kingdom" within the meaning of sect. 59 (1) of the Stamp Act, 1891. "I do not see", says Lopes, L.J., at p. 181, "how a share in a patent, or a licence to use a patent, which is not a visible or tangible thing, can be said to be locally situate anywhere". See, however, as to this case, the observations of Vaughan Williams, L.J., in *Muller & Co.'s Margarine, Ltd. v. Inland Revenue Commissioners*, [1900] 1 Q. B. at p. 322, and of Lord Lindley on appeal in the House of Lords, [1901] A. C. at p. 237. See further, as to the local situation of incorporeal property, *Att.-Gen. v. Dimond* (1831), 1 Cr. & J. 356; *Commr. of Stamps v. Hope*, [1891] A. C. 476; *Danubian Sugar Factories v. Commissioners of Inland Revenue*, [1901] 1 K. B. 545; *Re Clark*, [1904] 1 Ch. 294.

§ 159. Real and Personal Property

Derived from and closely connected with the distinction between immovable and movable property is that between real and personal property. These are two cross divisions of the whole sphere of proprietary rights. Real property and immovable property form intersecting circles which are very nearly though not quite coincident. The law of real property is almost equivalent to the law of land, while the law of personal property is all but identical with the law of movables. The partial failure of coincidence is due not to any logical distinction, but to the accidental course of legal development; and to this extent the distinction between real and personal property is purely arbitrary and possesses no scientific basis. Real property comprises all rights over land, with such additions and exceptions as the law has seen fit to establish. All other proprietary rights, whether *in rem* or *in personam*, pertain to the law of personal property.

The distinction between real and personal property has no logical connection with that between rights *in rem* and *in personam*. There is, however, an historical relation between them, inasmuch as they are both derived from the same source, namely the Roman distinction between actions *in rem* and actions *in personam*. Real property meant originally that which was recoverable in a real action, while personal property was that which was recoverable in a personal action, and this English distinction between real and personal actions was derived by Bracton and the other founders of our law from the *actiones in rem* and *in personam* of Justinian, though not without important modifications of the Roman doctrine (*d*).

In connection with the distinctions between movable and immovable, and between real and personal property, we must notice the legal significance of the term chattel. This word has apparently three different meanings in English law:—

1. A movable physical object; for example, a horse, a book, or a shilling, as contrasted with a piece of land.

(*d*) In English law the real action was one that gave the *res* back to the plaintiff: personal actions did not originally do this (Holdsworth, *H. E. L.* II. 247). In classical Roman law the *condemnatio* even in an *actio in rem* was primarily for a sum of money (Gaius IV. 48; Buckland, *Text-book of Roman Law* (2nd ed. 1932) 658). Another difference was that the English real action was confined to the recovery of certain interests in land held by free tenure (Holdsworth, *H. E. L.* II. 261); the Roman *actio in rem* was not thus limited. See generally T. C. Williams, "The Terms Real and Personal in English Law" (1888), 4 *L. Q. R.* 394.

2. Movable property, whether corporeal or incorporeal; that is to say, chattels in the first sense together with all proprietary rights except those which are classed as immovable. In this usage debts, shares, contracts, and other choses in action are chattels, no less than furniture or stock-in-trade. So also are patents, copyrights, and other rights *in rem* which are not rights over land. This double use of the word chattel to indicate both material things and rights is simply an application, within the sphere of movable property, of the metonymy which is the source of the distinction between corporeal and incorporeal property.

3. Personal property, whether movable or immovable, as opposed to real property. In this sense leaseholds are classed as chattels, because of the special rule by which they are excluded from the domain of real property.

§ 160. Rights in re propria in Immaterial Things

The subject-matter of a right of property is either a material or an immaterial thing. A material thing is a physical object, an immaterial thing is anything else which may be the subject-matter of a right (*e*). It is to things of the former class that the law of property almost wholly relates. In the great majority of cases a right of property is a right to the uses of a material object (*f*). It is the chief purpose of this department of the law to allot to every man his portion in the material instruments of human well-being—to divide the earth and the fullness of it among the men who live in it. The only immaterial things which are recognised by law as the subject-matter of rights of

(*e*) Under the head of material things we must class the *qualities* of matter, so far as they are capable in law of being in themselves the objects of rights. The qualities which thus admit of separate legal appropriation are two in number, namely force and space. Electricity is in law a chattel, which can be owned, sold, stolen, and otherwise rightfully and wrongfully dealt with. Definite portions of empty space are capable of appropriation and ownership, no less than the material objects with which other portions of space are filled. The interior of my house is as much mine as are the walls and the roof. It is commonly said that the owner of land owns also the space above the surface *usque ad coelum*. Whether this is truly so is a doubtful point as the law stands, but there is no theoretical difficulty in allowing the validity of such a claim to the ownership of empty space.

(*f*) The material object that is the subject-matter of the right of property may be valued not for its own sake but as a means to the acquisition of other objects or of services. This is true of coins and bank notes, cheques, shares and bonds. The last three are a compound of proprietary right *in rem* and *in personam*: *in rem* in respect of the piece of paper, and *in personam* in respect of the money to which the holder of the paper is entitled. It will be remembered that in the present chapter proprietary rights *in personam* are not being considered.

this description are the various *immaterial products of human skill and labour*. Speaking generally we may say that in modern law every man owns that which he creates. That which he produces is his, and he has an exclusive right to the use and benefit of it. The immaterial product of a man's brains may be as valuable as his land or his goods. The law, therefore, gives him a proprietary right in it, and the unauthorised use of it by other persons is a violation of his ownership, no less than theft or trespass is. These immaterial forms of property are of five kinds (g) :—

1. *Patents*. The subject-matter of a patent-right is an invention. He whose skill or labour produces the idea of a new process, instrument, or manufacture, has that idea as his own in law. He alone is entitled to use it and to draw from it the profit inherent in it.

2. *Literary copyright*. The subject-matter of this right is the literary expression of facts or thoughts. He to whose skill or labour this expression is due has in it a proprietary right of exclusive use.

3. *Artistic copyright*. Artistic design in all its various forms, such as drawing, painting, sculpture, and photography, is the subject-matter of a right of exclusive use analogous to literary copyright. The creations of an artist's skill or of a photographer's labour are his exclusive property. The object of this right is not the material thing produced, but the *form* impressed upon it by the maker. The picture, in the concrete sense of the material paint and canvas, belongs to him who purchases it; but the picture, in the abstract sense of the artistic form made visible by that paint and canvas, belongs to him who made it. The former is material property, the latter is immaterial. The right in each case is one of exclusive use. The right to the material picture is infringed by destroying it or taking it away. The right to the immaterial picture is infringed by making material pictures which embody it.

(g) The distinction formerly noticed by us (§ 91) between *corporeal* and *incorporeal* things must not be confounded with the present distinction between *material* and *immaterial* things. The latter is a logical distinction, but the former is a mere artifice of speech. An incorporeal thing is a kind of right, namely any right which is not identified with some material thing which is its subject-matter. An immaterial thing is not a right but the subject-matter of one. It is any subject-matter of a right except a material object.

4. *Musical and dramatic copyright.* A fourth class of immaterial things consists of musical and dramatic works. The immaterial product of the skill of the musician or the playwright is the subject-matter of a proprietary right of exclusive use which is infringed by any unauthorised performance or representation.

5. *Commercial good-will; trade-marks and trade-names.* The fifth and last species of immaterial things includes commercial good-will and the special forms of it known as trade-marks and trade-names. He who by his skill and labour establishes a business acquires thereby an interest in the good-will of it, that is to say, in the established disposition of customers to resort to him. To this good-will he has an exclusive right which is violated by any one who seeks to make use of it for his own advantage, as by falsely representing to the public that he is himself carrying on the business in question. Special forms of this right of commercial good-will are rights to trade-names and trade-marks. Every man has an exclusive right to the name under which he carries on business or sells his goods—to this extent at least that no one is at liberty to use that name for the purpose of deceiving the public and so injuring the owner of it. He has a similar right to the exclusive use of the marks which he impresses upon his goods, and by which they are known and identified in the market as his.

§ 161. Leases

Having now considered the different kinds of rights *in re propria* which fall within the law of property, we proceed to deal with the various rights *in re aliena* to which they may be subject. As already stated (*h*), the chief of these are four in number, namely Leases, Servitudes, Securities, and Trusts. The nature of a trust has been sufficiently examined in another connection (*i*), and it is necessary here to consider the other three types only (*j*). And first of leases or tenancies.

(h) *Supra*, § 86.

(i) *Supra*, § 93.

(j) Encumbrances are not confined to the law of property, but pertain to the law of obligations also. Choses in action may be mortgaged, settled in trust, or otherwise made the subject-matter of *jura in re aliena*, no less than land and chattels. Much, therefore, of what is to be said here touching the nature of the different forms of encumbrance is equally applicable to the law of rights *in personam*.

Although a lease of land and a bailment of chattels are transactions of essentially the same nature, there is no term which, in its recognised use, is sufficiently wide to include both. The term bailment is never applied to the tenancy of land, and although the term lease is not wholly inapplicable in the case of chattels, its use in this connection is subject to arbitrary limitations. It is necessary, therefore, in the interests of orderly classification, to do some violence to received usage, in adopting the term lease as a generic expression to include not merely the tenancy of land, but all kinds of bailments of chattels, and all encumbrances of incorporeal property which possess the same essential nature as a tenancy of land.

A lease, in this generic sense, is that form of encumbrance which consists in a right to the possession and use of property owned by some other person (*k*). It is the outcome of the rightful separation of ownership and possession. We have seen that possession is the continuing exercise of a right, and that although a right is normally exercised by the owner of it, it may in special cases be exercised by some one else. This separation of ownership and possession may be either rightful or wrongful, and if rightful it is an encumbrance of the owner's title (*l*).

The right which is thus encumbered by a lease is usually the ownership of a material object, and more particularly the ownership of land. Here as elsewhere the material object is identified in speech with the right itself. We say that the *land* is leased, just as we say that the land is owned or possessed. The lessee of land is he who rightfully possesses it, but does not own it. The lessor of land is he who owns it, but who has transferred the possession of it to another. Encumbrance by way of lease is not confined, however, to the right of ownership of a material

(*k*) A licence to use property is traditionally distinguished from a lease in the respect that a licensee does not have possession. But this distinction has recently been blurred by English courts, which have recognised the possibility of a possessory licence. See the criticism by A. D. Hargreaves in (1953), 69 *L. Q. R.* 466.

(*l*) We have already seen that freehold estates in land less than the fee simple are regarded as parts of ownership and not as encumbrances upon ownership (*supra*, § 90). This contrast between, say, the estate for life (otherwise called life interest), which is regarded as part of ownership, and the lease for a term of years, which is regarded as an encumbrance upon ownership, is a peculiarity of English law. In Roman law the usufruct (the analogy of our estate for life), was regarded as an encumbrance.

Possession by way of security only, e.g., a pledge is from one point of view a lease, and from another point of view a security.

object. All rights may be leased which can be possessed, that is to say, which admit of continuing exercise; and no rights can be leased which cannot be possessed, that is to say, which are extinguished by their exercise. A servitude appurtenant to land, such as a right of way, is leased along with the land itself. The owner of a lease may encumber it with a sub-lease. The owner of a patent or copyright may grant a lease of it for a term of years, entitling the lessee to the exercise and use of the right but not to the ownership of it. Even obligations may be encumbered in the same fashion, provided that they admit of continuing or repeated exercise; for example, annuities, shares, money in the public funds, or interest-bearing debts. All these may be rightfully possessed without being owned, and owned without being possessed, as when they are settled in trust for a tenant for life with remainder to some one else.

Is it essential that a lease should be of less duration than the right which is subject to it? This is almost invariably the case; land is leased for a term of years or for life, but not in perpetuity; the owner of a thing owns it for ever, but the lessee of it possesses it for a time. We may be tempted, therefore, to regard this difference of duration as essential, and to define a lease as a right to the temporary exercise of a right vested in some one else. But this is not so. There is no objection in principle to a lease of land in perpetuity, or to a lease of a patent or copyright for the full term of its existence. It may be objected that a lease of this description would not be a true lease or encumbrance at all, but an assignment of the right itself; that the grantee would become the owner of the right, and not a mere encumbrancer; and in favour of this contention it may be pointed out that a sub-lease for the whole term is construed in English law as an assignment of the term, a sub-lease being necessarily shorter than the term, if only by a single day (*m*).

Whatever the actual rule of English law may be, however, there is nothing in legal theory to justify us in asserting that any such difference of duration is essential to the existence of a true lease. A lease exists whenever the rightful possession of a thing is separated from the ownership of it; and although this separation is usually temporary, there is no difficulty in supposing it permanent. I may own a permanent right to exercise another right without owning the latter right itself. The ownership may remain dormant, deprived of any right of exercise and enjoyment, in the hands of the lessor. I am not necessarily the owner of a patent, because I have acquired by contract with the owner a right to the exclusive use of it during the whole term of its duration. So far as legal principle is con-

(*m*) *Beardman v. Wilson* (1868), L. R. 4 C. P. 57.

cerned, I may still remain the owner of a lease, although I may have granted a sub-lease to another for the whole residue of the term. To assign a lease and to sub-let it for the whole term are in the intention of the parties and in legal theory two entirely different transactions. The assignment is a substitution of one tenant for another, the assignor retaining no rights whatever. The sub-lease, on the contrary, is designed to leave the original relation of landlord and tenant untouched, the sub-lessee being the tenant of the lessee and not of the original lessor (n).

§ 162. Servitudes

A servitude is that form of encumbrance which consists in a right to the limited use of a piece of land without the possession of it; for example, a right of way over it, a right to the passage of light across it to the windows of a house on the adjoining land, a right to depasture cattle upon it, or a right to derive support from it for the foundations of an adjoining building (o).

It is an essential characteristic of a servitude that it does not involve the possession of the land over which it exists. This is the difference between a servitude and a lease. A lease of land is the rightful possession and use without the ownership of it, while a servitude over land is the rightful use without either the ownership or the possession of it. There are two distinct methods in which I may acquire a road across another man's property. I may agree with him for the exclusive possession of a defined strip of the land; or I may agree with him for the use of such a strip for the sole purpose of passage, without any exclusive possession or occupation of it. In the first case I acquire a lease; in the second a servitude (p).

(n) An example of a lease in perpetuity is the *emphyteusis* of Roman law. In consequence of its perpetuity the Roman lawyers were divided in opinion as to the true position of the tenant or *emphyteuta*, some regarding him as an owner and others as an encumbrancer. The law was finally settled in the latter sense. *Just. Inst.* III, 24. 3.

(o) The term servitude (*servitus*) is derived from Roman law, and has scarcely succeeded in obtaining recognition as a technical term of English law. It is better, however, than the English *easement*, inasmuch as easements are in the strict sense only one class of servitudes as above defined. The present discussion must be taken as confined to English law. No attempt is made to state the Roman law of servitudes.

(p) In English law it is only over land that servitudes are recognised. Land is of such a nature as to admit readily of non-possessory uses, whereas the use of a chattel usually involves the possession of it for the time being, however brief that time may be. The non-possessory use of chattels, even when it exists, is not recognised by the law as an encumbrance of the ownership, so as to run with it into the hands of assignees. A possible exception

Servitudes are of two kinds, which may be distinguished as private and public. A private servitude is one vested in a determinate individual; for example, a right of way, of light, or of support, vested in the owner of one piece of land over an adjoining piece or a right granted to one person of fishing in the water of another, or of mining in another's land. A public servitude is one vested in the public at large or in some class of indeterminate individuals; for example, the right of the public to a highway over land in private ownership, the right of the public to navigate a river of which the bed belongs to some private person, the right of the inhabitants of a parish to use a certain piece of private ground for the purposes of recreation.

Servitudes are further distinguishable in the language of English law as being either appurtenant or in gross. A servitude appurtenant is one which is not merely an encumbrance of one piece of land, but is also accessory to another piece. It is a right of using one piece for the benefit of another; as in the case of a right of way from A's house to the high road across B's field, or a right of support for a building, or a right to the access of light to a window. The land which is burdened with such a servitude is called the servient land or tenement; that which has the benefit of it is called the dominant land or tenement. The servitude runs with each of the tenements into the hands of successive owners and occupiers. Both the benefit and the burden of it are concurrent with the ownership of the lands concerned. A servitude is said to be in gross, on the other hand, when it is not so attached and accessory to any dominant tenement for whose benefit it exists. An example is a public right of way or of navigation or of recreation, or a private right of fishing, pasturage, or mining (q).

in equity is indicated by the decision of the Privy Council in *Lord Strathcona S.S. Co. v. Dominion Coal Co.*, [1926] A. C. 108, though it is not certain whether it will be followed by English courts. The continuing rights of patentees in respect of chattels manufactured under their licence may also be mentioned (see *National Phonograph Co. v. Menck*, [1911] A. C. 336), but the rights reserved are generally in respect of price-maintenance, not user. In Roman law servitudes in respect of chattels were possible, e.g., the usufruct of a slave.

(q) An *easement*, in the strictest sense, means a particular kind of servitude, namely a private and appurtenant servitude which is not a right to take any profit from the servient land. A right of way or of light or of support is an easement; but a right to pasture cattle or to dig for minerals is in English law a distinct form of servitude known as a profit. This distinction is unknown in other systems, and it has no significance in juridical theory. Its practical

§ 163. Securities

A security is an encumbrance, the purpose of which is to ensure or facilitate the fulfilment or enjoyment of some other right (usually though not necessarily a debt) vested in the same person (r). Such securities are of two kinds, which may be distinguished as mortgages and liens, if we use the latter term in its widest permissible sense (s). In considering the nature of this distinction we must first notice a plausible but erroneous explanation. A mortgage, it is sometimes said, is a security created by the *transfer* of the debtor's property to the creditor, while a lien is merely an encumbrance of some sort created in favour of the creditor over property which remains vested in the debtor; a mortgagee is the owner of the property, while a pledgee or other lienee is merely an encumbrancer of it. This, however, is not a strictly accurate account of the matter, though it is true in the great majority of cases. A mortgage may be created by way of encumbrance, no less than by way of transfer (t); and a mortgagee does not necessarily become the owner of the property mortgaged. A lease, for example, is mortgaged at law, not by the assignment of it, but by the grant of a sub-lease to the creditor, so that the mortgagee becomes not the owner of the lease but an encumbrancer of it. Similarly, the legal fee simple in freehold land is mortgaged at law by the grant to the mortgagee of a long term of years (u). A mortgage by transfer is now possible in England only in the case of chattels.

Inasmuch, therefore, as a mortgage is not necessarily the transfer of the property to the creditor, what is its essential characteristic? The question is one of considerable difficulty,

importance lies in the rule that an easement must (it seems) be appurtenant, while a profit may be either appurtenant or in gross.

(r) The term security is also used in a wider sense to include not only securities over property, but also the contract of suretyship or guarantee—a mode of ensuring the payment of a debt by the addition of a second and accessory debtor, from whom payment may be obtained on default of the principal debtor. With this form of security we are not here concerned, since it pertains not to the law of property, but to that of obligations.

(s) The word lien has not succeeded in attaining any fixed application as a technical term of English law. Its use is capricious and uncertain, and we are at liberty, therefore, to appropriate it for the purpose mentioned in the text, i.e., to include all forms of security except mortgages.

(t) As we shall see, a mortgage by way of transfer is none the less an encumbrance also—an encumbrance, that is to say, of the beneficial ownership which remains vested in the mortgagor.

(u) Law of Property Act, 1925, ss. 85, 86.

but the true solution is apparently this. A lien is a right which is in its own nature a security for a debt and nothing more; for example, a right to retain possession of a chattel until payment, a right to distrain for rent, or a right to receive payment out of a certain fund. A mortgage, on the contrary, is a right which is in its own nature an independent or principal right, and not a mere security for another right, but which is artificially cut down and limited, so that it may serve in the particular case as a security and nothing more; for example, the fee simple of land, a lease of land for a term of years, or the ownership of a chattel. The right of the lienee is vested in him *absolutely*, and not merely by way of security; for it is itself nothing more than a security. The right of a mortgagee, on the contrary, is vested in him conditionally and *by way of security only*, for it is in itself something more than a mere security. A lien cannot survive the debt secured; it ceases and determines *ipso jure* on the extinction of the debt. It is merely the shadow, so to speak, cast by the debt upon the property of the debtor (a). But the right vested in a mortgagee has an independent existence. It will, or may, remain outstanding in the mortgagee even after the extinction of the debt. When thus left outstanding, it must be re-transferred or surrendered to the mortgagor, and the right of the mortgagor to this re-assignment or surrender is called his right or equity of redemption. The existence of such an equity of redemption is therefore the test of a mortgage. In liens there is no such right, for there is nothing to redeem. The creditor owns no right which he can be bound to give back or surrender to his debtor. For his right of security has come to its natural and necessary termination with the termination of the right secured (b).

(a) Of course, if the lienor has in pursuance of his rights taken possession of the property, the discharge of the debt will not *ipso facto* destroy the possession, but merely his right to retain it against the debtor. Henceforth the lienor holds as bailee at will from the debtor; as against third parties he has possession for many purposes, e.g., theft.

(b) It is not essential to a mortgage that the right vested in the mortgagee should in actual fact survive the right secured by it, so as to remain outstanding and redeemable. It is sufficient that in its nature it should be capable of doing so, and therefore requires to be artificially restricted by an obligation or condition of re-assignment or surrender. This re-assignment or surrender may be effected by act of the law, no less than by the act of the mortgagee. The creation of a term of years in land by way of security is necessarily a mortgage and not a lien, even though by sect. 116 of the Law

Mortgages are created either by the transfer of the debtor's right to the creditor, or by the encumbrance of it in his favour. The first of these methods is peculiar to mortgages, for liens can be created only by way of encumbrance. Whenever a debtor *transfers* his right to the creditor by way of security, the result is necessarily a mortgage; for there can be no connection between the duration of the debt so secured and the natural duration of the right so transferred. The right transferred may survive the debt, and the debtor therefore retains the right of redemption which is the infallible test of a mortgage. When on the other hand a debtor *encumbers* his right in favour of the creditor, the security so created is either a mortgage or a lien according to circumstances. It is a mortgage, if the encumbrance so created is independent of the debt secured in respect of its natural duration; for example, a term of years or a permanent servitude. It is a lien, if the encumbrance is in respect of its natural duration dependent on, and coincident with the debt secured; for example, a pledge, a vendor's lien, a landlord's right of distress, or an equitable charge on a fund.

Speaking generally, any alienable and valuable right whatever may be the subject-matter of a mortgage. Whatever can be transferred can be transferred by way of mortgage; whatever can be encumbered can be encumbered by way of mortgage. Whether I own land, or chattels, or debts, or shares, or patents, or copyrights, or leases, or servitudes, or equitable interests in trust funds, or the benefit of a contract, I may so deal with them as to constitute a valid mortgage security. Even a mortgage itself may be transferred by the mortgagee to some creditor of his own by way of mortgage, such a mortgage of a mortgage being known as a sub-mortgage.

In a mortgage by way of transfer the debtor, though he assigns the property to his creditor, remains none the less the

of Property Act, 1925, such a term comes to an end *ipso jure* on the payment of the debt.

A new type of security was created by the Law of Property Act, 1925, s. 87, in the charge by deed by way of legal mortgage. On the face of it this might seem to be a lien, not a mortgage; yet it is provided that "the mortgagee shall have the same protection, powers and remedies" as if a mortgage term had been created. It is generally supposed that these words have not the effect of creating a mortgage term in law, and accordingly that the creation of a legal charge over a lease is not a breach of a covenant against underletting.

beneficial or equitable owner of it himself (c). A mortgagor, by virtue of his equity of redemption, has more than a mere personal right against the mortgagee to the re-conveyance of the property; he is already the beneficial owner of it. This double ownership of mortgaged property is merely a special form of trust. The mortgagee holds in trust for the mortgagor, and has himself no beneficial interest, save so far as is required for the purposes of an effective security. On the payment or extinction of the debt the mortgagee becomes a mere trustee and nothing more; the ownership remains vested in him, but is now bare of any vestige of beneficial interest. A mortgage, therefore, has a double aspect and nature. Viewed in respect of the *nudum dominium* vested in the mortgagee, it is a transfer of the property; viewed in respect of the beneficial ownership which remains vested in the mortgagor, it is merely an encumbrance of it.

The prominence of mortgage as the most important form of security is a peculiarity of English law. In Roman law, and in the modern Continental systems based upon it, the place assumed by mortgages in our system is taken by the lien (*hypotheca*) in its various forms. The Roman mortgage (*fiducia*) fell wholly out of use before the time of Justinian, having been displaced by the superior simplicity and convenience of the *hypotheca* (d); and in this respect modern Continental law has followed the Roman. There can be no doubt that a similar substitution of the lien for the mortgage would immensely simplify and improve the law of England. The complexity and difficulty of the English law of security—due entirely to the adoption of the system of mortgages—must be a source of amazement to a French or German lawyer. Whatever can be done by way of mortgage in securing a debt can be done equally well by way of lien, and the lien avoids all that extraordinary disturbance and complication of legal relations which is essentially involved in the mortgage. The best type of security is that which combines the most efficient protection of the creditor with the least interference with the rights of the debtor, and in this latter respect the mortgage falls far

(c) In the case of the mortgage of a legal estate in freehold land by demise, which is the only form of legal mortgage of a legal estate in freehold now possible, the mortgagor is the legal owner of the freehold interest and the beneficial or equitable owner of the leasehold interest created by way of mortgage.

(d) Buckland and McNair, *Roman Law and Common Law* (2nd ed.) 314 ff.

short of the ideal. The true form of security is a lien, leaving the full legal and equitable ownership in the debtor, but vesting in the creditor such rights and powers (as of sale, possession, and so forth) as are required, according to the nature of the subject-matter, to give the creditor sufficient protection, and lapsing *ipso jure* with the discharge of the debt secured (e).

Liens are of various kinds, none of which present any difficulty or require any special consideration.

1. *Possessory liens*—consisting in the right to retain possession of chattels or other property of the debtor. A power of sale may or may not be combined with this right of possession. Examples are pledges of chattels, and the liens of innkeepers, solicitors, and vendors of goods.

2. *Rights of distress or seizure*—consisting in the right to take possession of the property of the debtor, with or without a power of sale. Examples are the right of distress for rent, and the right of the occupier of land to distrain cattle trespassing on it.

3. *Powers of sale*. This is a form of security seldom found in isolation, for it is usually incidental to the right of possession conferred by one or other of the two preceding forms of lien. There is no reason, however, why it should not in itself form an effective security.

4. *Powers of forfeiture*—consisting in a power vested in the creditor of destroying in his own interest some adverse right vested in the debtor. Examples are a landlord's right of re-entry upon his tenant, and a vendor's right of forfeiting the deposit paid by the purchaser.

5. *Charges*—consisting in the right of a creditor to receive payment out of some specific fund or out of the proceeds of the realisation of specific property. The fund or property is said to be charged with the debt which is thus payable out of it.

Formerly a charge was always of specific property. Modern commerce has, however, developed a form of security that does not at its inception attach to any specific property. This is known as the floating charge. It is a type of security possessed by the debenture-holder in a company, and leaves the property of the company free to be dealt with by the company until the charge becomes a fixed charge. This occurs when the money secured becomes payable and the debenture-holder takes some step to enforce his security.

§ 164. Modes of Acquisition: Possession

Having considered the various forms which proprietary rights *in rem* assume, we proceed to examine the modes of their

(e) This is one of the reforms effected by the Torrens system of real property law in force in Australasia. The so-called mortgages of land under that system are in reality merely liens.

acquisition. An attempt to give a complete list of these titles would here serve no useful purpose, and we shall confine our attention to four of them which are of primary importance. These are the following: Possession, Prescription, Agreement, and Inheritance.

The possession of a material object is a title to the ownership of it. He who claims a chattel or a piece of land as his, and makes good his claim in *fact* by way of possession, makes it good in *law* also by way of ownership. There is, however, an important distinction to be drawn. For the thing so possessed may, or may not, already belong to some other person. If, when possession of it is taken by the claimant, it is as yet the property of no one—*res nullius* as the Romans said—the possessor acquires a title good against all the world. The fish of the sea and the fowls of the air belong by an absolute title to him who first succeeds in obtaining possession of them. This mode of acquisition is known in Roman law as *occupatio*.

On the other hand, the thing of which possession is taken may already be the property of some one else. In this case the title acquired by possession is good, indeed, against all third persons, but is of no validity at all against the true owner. Possession, even when consciously wrongful, is allowed as a title of right against all persons who cannot show a better, because a prior, title in themselves. Save with respect to the rights of the original proprietor, my rights to the watch in my pocket are much the same, whether I bought it honestly, or found it, or abstracted it from the pocket of some one else. If it is stolen from me, the law will help me to the recovery of it. I can effectually sell it, lend it, give it away, or bequeath it, and it will go on my death intestate to my next of kin. Whoever acquires it from me, however, acquires in general nothing save my limited and imperfect title to it, and holds it, as I do, subject to the superior claims of the original owner.

A thing owned by one man and thus adversely possessed by another has in truth two owners. The ownership of the one is absolute and perfect, while that of the other is relative and imperfect, and is often called, by reason of its origin in possession, possessory ownership.

If a possessory owner is wrongfully deprived of the thing by

a person other than the true owner, he can recover it. For the defendant cannot set up as a defence his own possessory title, since it is later than, and consequently inferior to, the possessory title of the plaintiff. Nor can he set up as a defence the title of the true owner—the *jus tertii*, as it is called; the plaintiff has a better, because an earlier, title than the defendant, and it is irrelevant that the title of some other person, not a party to the suit, is better still. The expediency of this doctrine of possessory ownership is clear. Were it not for such a rule, force and fraud would be left to determine all disputes as to possession, between persons of whom neither could show an unimpeachable title to the thing as the true owner of it (f).

§ 165. Prescription

Prescription (g) may be defined as the effect of lapse of time in creating and destroying rights; it is the operation of time as a vestitive fact. It is of two kinds, namely (1) positive or acquisitive prescription and (2) negative or extinctive prescription. The former is the creation of a right, the latter is the destruction of one, by the lapse of time. An example of the former is the acquisition of a right of way by the *de facto* use of it for twenty years. An instance of the latter is the destruction of the right to sue for a debt after six years from the time at which it first became payable.

Lapse of time, therefore, has two opposite effects. In positive prescription it is a title of right, but in negative prescription it is a divestitive fact. Whether it shall operate in the one way or in the other depends on whether it is or is not

(f) Applications of the rule of possessory ownership may be seen in the cases of *Armory v. Delamirie* (1722), 1 Str. 504; 1 Smith L. C. (13th ed) 393; *Asher v. Whitlock* (1865), L. R. 1 Q. B. 1; and *Perry v. Glissold*, [1907] A. C. 73. For the contrasting rules of Roman law see Buckland and McNair, *Roman Law and Common Law* (2nd ed.) 62 ff.

(g) The term prescription (*praescriptio*) has its origin in Roman law. It meant originally a particular part of the *formula* or written pleadings in a law suit—that portion, namely, which was written first (*praescriptum*) by way of a preliminary objection on the part of the defendant. *Praescriptio fori*, for example, meant a preliminary plea to the jurisdiction of the court. So *praescriptio longi temporis* was a plea that the claim of the plaintiff was barred by lapse of time. Hence, by way of abbreviation and metonymy (other forms of prescription being forgotten) prescription in the modern sense. For a comparison of the Roman and English rules of prescription see Buckland and McNair, *Roman Law and Common Law* (2nd ed.) 117 ff., 413 ff.

accompanied by *possession*. Positive prescription is the investitive operation of lapse of time *with* possession, while negative prescription is the divestitive operation of lapse of time *without* possession. Long possession creates rights, and long want of possession destroys them. If I possess an easement for twenty years without owning it, I begin at the end of that period to own as well as to possess it. Conversely if I own land for twelve years without possessing it, I cease on the termination of that period either to own or to possess it. In both forms of prescription, fact and right, possession and ownership, tend to coincidence. *Ex facto oritur jus*. If the root of fact is destroyed, the right growing out of it withers and dies in course of time. If the fact is present, the right will in the fullness of time proceed from it (*h*).

In many cases the two forms of prescription coincide. The property which one person loses through long dispossession is often at the same time acquired by some one else through long possession. Yet this is not always so, and it is necessary in many instances to know whether legal effect is given to long possession, in which case the prescription is positive, or to long want of possession, in which case the prescription is negative. I may, for example, be continuously out of possession of my land for twelve years, without any other single person having continuously held possession of it for that length of time. It may have been in the hands of a series of trespassers against me and against each other. In this case, if the legally recognised form of prescription is positive, it is inoperative, and I retain my ownership. But if the law recognises negative prescription instead of positive (as in this case our own system does) my title will be extinguished. Who in such circumstances will acquire the right which I thus lose, depends not on the law of prescription, but on the rules as to the acquisition of things which have no owner. The doctrine that prior possession is a good title against all but the true owner, will confer on the first of a series of adverse possessors a good title against all the world so soon as the title of the true owner has been extinguished by negative prescription (*i*).

(*h*) For a criticism of the English rules of positive prescription see Holdsworth, *Historical Introduction to the Land Law*, 279 ff.

(*i*) *Asher v. Whitlock* (1865), L. R. 1 Q. B. 1. But if the first adverse

The rational basis of prescription is to be found in the presumption of the coincidence of possession and ownership, of fact and of right. Owners are usually possessors, and possessors are usually owners. Fact and right are normally coincident; therefore the former is evidence of the latter. That a thing is possessed *de facto* is evidence that it is owned *de jure*. That it is not possessed raises a presumption that it is not owned either. Want of possession is evidence of want of title. The longer the possession or want of possession has continued, the greater is its evidential value. That I have occupied land for a day raises a very slight presumption that I am the owner of it; but if I continue to occupy it for twenty years, the presumption becomes indefinitely stronger. If I have a claim of debt against a man, unfulfilled and unenforced, the lapse of six months may have but little weight as evidence that my claim is unfounded or that it has been already satisfied; but the lapse of ten years may amount to ample proof of this.

If, therefore, I am in possession of anything in which I claim a right, I have evidence of my right which differs from all other evidence, inasmuch as it grows stronger instead of weaker with the lapse of years. The tooth of time may eat away all other proofs of title. Documents are lost, memory fails, witnesses die. But as these become of no avail, an efficient substitute is in the same measure provided by the probative force of long possession. So also with long want of possession as evidence of want of title; as the years pass, the evidence in favour of the title fades, while the presumption against it grows ever stronger.

Here, then, we have the chief foundation of the law of prescription. For in this case, as in so many others, the law has deemed it expedient to confer upon a certain species of evidence conclusive force. It has established a conclusive presumption in favour of the rightfulness of long possession, and

possessor took under an instrument of conveyance executed by a person who had no right to convey, he will be estopped from denying the validity of the deed as against other beneficiaries under it: *Dalton v. Fitzgerald*, [1897] 2 Ch. 86.

For other consequences of the rule that prescription by adverse occupation of land is negative, not positive, see *Tichborne v. Weir* (1892), 67 L. T. 735, and *Re Nisbet and Potts' Contract*, [1905] 1 Ch. 391, both commented upon by Holdsworth, *Historical Introduction to the Land Law*, 286 ff.

against the validity of claims which are vitiated by long want of possession. Lapse of time is recognised as creative and destructive of rights, instead of merely as evidence for and against their existence. In substance, though not always in form, prescription has been advanced from the law of evidence to a place in the substantive law.

The conclusive presumption on which prescription is thus founded falls, like all other conclusive presumptions, more or less wide of the truth. Yet in the long run, if used with due safeguards, it is the instrument of justice. It is not true as a matter of fact that a claim unenforced for six years is always unfounded, but it may be wise for the law to act as if it were true. For the effect of thus exaggerating the evidential value of lapse of time is to prevent the persons concerned from permitting such delays as would render their claims in reality doubtful. In order to avoid the difficulty and error that necessarily result from the lapse of time, the presumption of the coincidence of fact and right is rightly accepted as final after a certain number of years. Whoever wishes to dispute this presumption must do so within that period; otherwise his right, if he has one, will be forfeited as a penalty for his neglect. *Vigilantibus non dormientibus jura subveniunt.*

Prescription is not limited to rights *in rem*. It is found within the sphere of obligations as well as within that of property. Positive prescription, however, is possible only in the case of rights which admit of possession—that is to say, continuing exercise and enjoyment. Most rights of this nature are rights *in rem*. Rights *in personam* are commonly extinguished by their exercise, and therefore cannot be possessed or acquired by prescription. And even in that minority of cases in which such rights do admit of possession, and in which positive prescription is therefore theoretically possible, modern law, at least, has seen no occasion for allowing it. This form of prescription, therefore, is peculiar to the law of property. Negative prescription, on the other hand, is common to the law of property and to that of obligations. Most obligations are destroyed by the lapse of time, for since the ownership of them cannot be accompanied by the possession of them, there is nothing to

preserve them from the destructive influence of delay in their enforcement (*k*).

Negative prescription is of two kinds, which may be distinguished as perfect and imperfect. The latter is commonly called the limitation of actions, the former being then distinguished as prescription in a narrow and specific sense. Perfect prescription is the destruction of the principal right itself, while imperfect prescription is merely the destruction of the accessory *right of action*, the principal right remaining in existence. In other words, in the one case the right is wholly destroyed, but in the other it is merely reduced from a perfect and enforceable right to one which is imperfect and unenforceable. In the case of the mere limitation of actions the still subsisting right may act as a defence, though not as a ground of action; and subsequent events, such as a later promise to pay the "barred" debt, may revive the right of action.

An example of perfect prescription is the destruction of the ownership of land through dispossession for twelve years. The owner of land who has been out of possession for that period does not merely lose his right of action for the recovery of it, but also loses the right of ownership itself (*l*). So also the title to chattels is now extinguished as soon as the right of action for wrongful conversion or detention is extinguished (*m*). An example of imperfect prescription, on the other hand, is the case of the creditor. He loses in six years his right of action for the debt; but the debt itself is not extinguished, and continues to be due and owing (*n*).

§ 166. Agreement

We have already considered the general theory of agreement as a title of right. It will be remembered that we used the term to include not merely contracts but all other bilateral acts in the law, that is to say, all expressions of the consenting wills of two or more persons directed to an alteration of their legal relations.

(*k*) It is clear, however, that until a debt or other obligation is actually due and enforceable, no presumption against its validity can arise through the lapse of time. Therefore prescription runs, not from the day on which the obligation first arises, but from that on which it first becomes enforceable. *Agere non valenti non currit praescriptio*.

(*l*) This rule is now contained in the Limitation Act, 1939, s. 16.

(*m*) Limitation Act, 1939, s. 3 (2), altering the previous law.

(*n*) Limitation Act, 1939, s. 2.

Agreement in this wide sense is no less important in the law of property than in that of obligations.

As a title of proprietary rights *in rem*, agreement is of two kinds, namely assignment and grant. By the former, existing rights are transferred from one owner to another; by the latter, new rights are created by way of encumbrance upon the existing rights of the grantor. The grant of a lease of land is the creation by agreement, between grantor and grantee, of a leasehold vested in the latter and encumbering the freehold vested in the former. The assignment of a lease, on the other hand, is the transfer by agreement of a subsisting leasehold from the assignor to the assignee.

Agreement is either formal or informal. We have already sufficiently considered the significance of this formal element in general. There is, however, one formality known to the law of property which required special notice, namely, the delivery of possession. That *traditio* was an essential element in the voluntary transfer of *dominium* was a fundamental principle of Roman law. *Traditionibus et usucapionibus dominia rerum, non nudis pactis transferuntur* (o). So in English law, until the year 1845, land could in theory be conveyed by no other method than by the delivery of possession. No deed of conveyance was in itself of any effect. It is true that in practice this rule was for centuries evaded by taking advantage of that fictitious delivery of possession which was rendered possible by the Statute of Uses. But it is only by virtue of a modern statute (p), passed in the year mentioned, that the ownership of land can in legal theory be transferred without the possession of it. In the case of chattels the common law itself succeeded, centuries ago, in cutting down to a very large extent the older principle. Chattels can be assigned by deed without delivery, and also by sale without delivery. The equitable ownership in both land and chattels can be transferred by mere declaration of trust, without transfer of possession. But a gift of chattels to take effect at law requires to this day to be completed by the transfer of possession (q).

In this requirement of *traditio* we may see a curious remnant of an earlier phase of thought. It is a relic of the times when

(o) C. 2. 3. 20.

(p) Stat. 8 & 9 Vict. c. 106, s. 2.

(q) *Cochrane v. Moore* (1890), 25 Q. B. D. 57.

the law attributed to the fact of possession a degree of importance which at the present day seems altogether disproportionate. Ownership seems to have been deemed little more than an accessory of possession. An owner who had ceased to possess had almost ceased to own, for he was deprived of his most important rights. A person who had not yet succeeded in obtaining possession was not an owner at all, however valid his claim to the possession may have been. The transfer of a thing was conceived as consisting essentially in the transfer of the possession of it. The transfer of *rights*, apart from the visible transfer of *things*, had not yet been thought of.

So far as the requirement of *traditio* is still justifiably retained by the law, it is to be regarded as a formality accessory to the agreement, and serving the same purposes as other formalities. It supplies evidence of the agreement, and it preserves for the parties a *locus poenitentiae*, lest they be prematurely bound by unconsidered consent (r).

It is a leading principle of law that the title of a grantee or assignee cannot be better than that of his grantor or assignor. *Nemo plus juris ad alium transferre potest, quam ipse haberet* (s). No man can transfer or encumber a right which is not his. To this rule, however, there is a considerable number of important exceptions. The rule is ancient, and most of the exceptions are modern; and we may anticipate that the future course of legal development will show further derogations from the early principle. There are two conflicting interests in the matter. The older rule is devised for the security of established titles. Under its protection he who succeeds in obtaining a perfect title may sit down in peace and keep his property against all the world. The exceptions, on the contrary, are established in the interests of those who seek to *acquire* property, not of those who seek to *keep* it. The easier it is to acquire a title with safety, the more difficult it is to keep one in safety; and the law must make a compromise between these two adverse interests. The modern tendency is more and more to sacrifice the security of tenure given by the older rule, to the facilities

(r) D. 50. 17. 54.

(s) See further on *traditio*, Buckland and McNair, *Roman Law and Common Law* (2nd ed.) 110 ff.

for safe and speedy acquisition and disposition given by the exceptions to it.

These exceptions are of two kinds: (1) those due to the separation of legal from equitable ownership, and (2) those due to the separation of ownership from possession. We have seen already that when the legal ownership is in one man and the equitable in another, the legal owner is a trustee for the equitable. He holds the property on behalf of that other, and not for himself; and the obligation of this trusteeship is an encumbrance upon his title. Yet he may, none the less, give an unencumbered title to a third person, provided that that person gives value for what he gets, and has at the time no knowledge of the existence of the trust. This rule is known as the equitable doctrine of purchase for value without notice. No man who ignorantly and honestly purchases a defective legal title can, in general, be affected by any adverse equitable title vested in any one else. To this extent a legal owner can transfer to another more than he has himself, notwithstanding the maxim, *Nemo dat qui non habet*.

The second class of exceptions to the general principle includes the cases in which the possession of a thing is in one person and the ownership of it in another. Partly by the common law, and partly by various modern statutes, the possessor is in certain cases enabled to give a good title to one who deals with him in good faith believing him to be the owner. The law allows men in these cases to act on the presumption that the possessor of a thing is the owner of it; and he who honestly acts on this presumption will acquire a valid title in all events. The most notable example is the case of negotiable instruments. The possessor of a bank-note may have no title to it; he may have found it or stolen it; but he can give a good title to any one who takes it from him for value and in good faith. Similarly mercantile agents, in possession of goods belonging to their principals, can effectively transfer the ownership of them (t) whether they are authorised thereto or not (u).

(t) The Factors Act, 1889.

(u) Continental systems carry much further than our own the doctrine that the possessor of a chattel may confer a good title to it. Article 2279 of the French Civil Code lays down the general principle that *En fait de meubles la possession vaut titre*. In other words the ownership of a chattel involves no *droit de suite* or *jus sequelae*, no right of following the thing into the hands of

§ 167. Inheritance

The fourth and last mode of acquisition that we need consider is Inheritance. In respect of the death of their owners all rights are divisible into two classes, being either inheritable or uninheritable. A right is inheritable if it survives its owner; uninheritable if it dies with him. This division is to a large extent, though far from completely, coincident with that between proprietary and personal rights. The latter are in almost all cases so intimately connected with the personality of him in whom they are vested, that they are incapable of separate and continued existence. They are not merely *divested* by death (as are rights of every sort), but are wholly *extinguished*. In exceptional cases, however, this is not so. Some personal rights are inheritable, just as property is, an instance being the status of hereditary nobility and the political and other privileges accessory thereto.

Proprietary rights, on the other hand, are usually inheritable. In respect of them death is a divestitive, but not an extinctive fact. The exceptions, however, are numerous. A lease may be for the life of the lessee instead of for a fixed term of years. Joint ownership is such that the right of him who dies first is wholly destroyed, the survivor acquiring an exclusive title by the *jus accrescendi* or right of survivorship. In the great majority of cases, however, death destroys merely the ownership of a proprietary right, and not the right itself. Even rights of action now survive the death of both parties as a general rule (a).

The rights which a dead man thus leaves behind him vest in his *representative*. They pass to some person whom the dead man, or the law on his behalf, has appointed to represent him in the world of the living. This representative bears the person of the deceased, and therefore has vested in him all the inheritable rights, and has imposed upon him all the inheritable liabilities of the deceased. Inheritance is in some sort a legal and fictitious

third persons who have obtained it in good faith. The rule, however, is subject to important exceptions, for it does not apply either to chattels stolen or to chattels lost. Speaking generally, therefore, it is applicable only where an owner has voluntarily entrusted the possession of the thing to some one else, as a pledgee, borrower, depositee, or agent, who has wrongfully disposed of it to some third person. Baudry-Lacantinerie, *De la Prescription*, ch. 20. See also, for very similar law, the German Civil Code, sects. 932-935, and the Italian Civil Code, sects. 707-708.

(a) Law Reform (Miscellaneous Provisions) Act, 1934, s. 1.

continuation of the personality of the dead man, for the representative is in some sort identified by the law with him whom he represents. The rights which the dead man can no longer own or exercise in *propria persona*, and the obligations which he can no longer in *propria persona* fulfil, he owns, exercises, and fulfils in the person of a living substitute. To this extent, and in this fashion, it may be said that the legal personality of a man survives his natural personality, until, his obligations being duly performed, and his property duly disposed of, his representation among the living is no longer called for (b).

The representative of a dead man, though the property of the deceased is vested in him, is not necessarily the beneficial owner of it. He holds it on behalf of two classes of persons, among whom he himself may or may not be numbered. These are the creditors and the beneficiaries of the estate. Just as many of a man's rights survive him, so also do many of his liabilities; and these inheritable obligations pass to his representative, and must be satisfied by him. Being, however, merely the representative of another, he is not liable in *propria persona*, and his responsibility is limited by the amount of the property which he has acquired from the deceased (c). He possesses a double capacity, and that which is due from him in right of his executorship cannot be recovered from him in his own right.

The beneficiaries, who are entitled to the residue after satisfaction of the creditors, are of two classes: (1) those nominated by the last will of the deceased, and (2) those appointed by the law in default of any such nomination. The succession of the former is testamentary (*ex testamento*); that of the latter is intestate (*ab intestato*). As to the latter there is nothing that need here be said, save that the law is now chiefly guided by the presumed desires of the dead man (d), and confers the estate upon his relatives in order of proximity. In default of any known relatives the property of an intestate is claimed by the state itself, and goes as *bona vacantia* to the Crown.

(b) *Hereditas . . . personam . . . defuncti sustinet*. D. 41. 1. 34. See Holmes, *Common Law*, 341—353. Maine, *Ancient Law*, 181—182.

(c) This rule was not originally recognised in Roman law, but was in substance introduced by Justinian. See Buckland and McNair, *Roman Law and Common Law* (2nd ed.) 149 ff.

(d) Before the succession rules in the Administration of Estates Act, 1925, were drafted, many wills were examined in Somerset House in order to determine the average testamentary provision made by those with small estates.

Testamentary succession, on the other hand, demands further consideration. Although a dead man has no rights, a man while yet alive has the right, or speaking more exactly, the power, to determine the disposition after he is dead of the property which he leaves behind him. His last will, duly declared in the document which we significantly call by that name, is held inviolable (generally speaking) by the law. For half a century and more, the rights and responsibilities of living men may thus be determined by an instrument which was of no effect until the author of it was in his grave and had no longer any concern with the world or its affairs. This power of the dead hand (*mortua manus*) is so familiar a feature in the law that we accept it as a matter of course, and have some difficulty in realising what a singular phenomenon it in reality is.

It is clear that some limitation must be imposed by the law upon this power of the dead over the living, and these restrictions are of three chief kinds:

(1) *Limitations of time.* It is only during a limited period after his death that the directions of a testator as to the disposition of his property are held valid. He must so order the destination of his estate that within this period the whole of it shall become vested absolutely in some one or more persons, free from all testamentary conditions and restrictions. Any attempt to retain the property in *manu mortua* beyond that limit makes the testamentary disposition of it void. In English law the period is determined by a set of elaborate rules which we need not here consider.

(2) *Limitations of amount.* A second limitation of testamentary power imposed by most legal systems is that a testator can deal with a certain proportion of his estate only, the residue being allotted by the law to those to whom he owes a duty of support, namely, his wife and children. In England this restriction upon testamentary power is found only in a very

(See Cherry, *The New Property Act: A Series of Lectures* (1926) 99.) The rules were modified by the Intestates' Estates Act, 1952, as a result of changes in the value of money since the war. In early times there was no such solicitude for the probable intention of the testator. Thus the rule of primogeniture for real property was created in the interest of the lord (Pollock and Maitland, *History of English Law before Edward I* (2nd ed. 1898) II. 262 ff.). In earlier Roman law the intestacy rules were so peculiar as to create a strong dislike of intestacy (Buckland and McNair, *op. cit.*, 160, 191 ff.).

qualified form. By the Inheritance (Family Provision) Act, 1938, a dependant for whom a will does not make "reasonable provision" may apply to the court for maintenance out of part of the estate. The attitude of the courts is that this Act does not cast on testators a duty to make provision for their dependants, and that dispositions can be interfered with only if they are unreasonable (e).

(3) *Limitations of purpose.* The power of testamentary disposition is given to a man that he may use it for the benefit of other men who survive him; and to this end only can it be validly exercised. The dead hand will not be suffered to withdraw property from the uses of the living. No man can validly direct that his lands shall lie waste, or that his money shall be buried with him or thrown into the sea (f).

SUMMARY

Divisions of the substantive civil law:

1. Law of Property—Proprietary rights *in rem*.
2. Law of Obligations—Proprietary rights *in personam*.
3. Law of Status—Personal rights.

Meanings of the term property:

1. All legal rights.
2. All proprietary rights.
3. All proprietary rights *in rem*.
4. Rights of ownership in material things.

Divisions of the law of property:

1. Ownership of material things—Corporeal property.
2. Rights *in re propria* in immaterial things: e.g., patents and trade-marks.
3. Rights *in re aliena* over material or immaterial things: e.g., leases, trusts, and securities.

The ownership of material things.

Its essential qualities:

1. Generality.
2. Permanence.
3. Inheritance.

Ownership of land in English law.

(e) *Per* Bennett, J., in *Re Brownbridge* (1942), 193 L. T. Jo. 185. For historical and comparative discussions see Gold, Robson, Kahn-Freund, and Breslauer, "Freedom of Testation" (1938), 1 Mod. L. Rev. 296; Unger, "The Inheritance Act and the Family" (1943), 6 Mod. L. Rev. 215; and a valuable symposium in (1935) 20 Iowa L. Rev. 180 ff. For Roman law see Buckland and McNair, *Roman Law and Common Law* (2nd ed.) 167-8.

(f) *Brown v. Burdett* (1882), 21 Ch. D. 667.

Movable and immovable property. Land and chattels.

Movable and immovable rights.

The local situation of rights.

Real and personal property.

Meanings of the term chattel.

Rights in *re propria* in immaterial things:

1. Patents.
2. Literary copyright.
3. Artistic copyright.
4. Musical and dramatic copyright.
5. Good-will, trade-marks, and trade-names.

Encumbrances over property:

1. Leases.
 - Their nature.
 - Their subject-matter.
 - Their duration.
2. Servitudes.
 - Their nature.
 - Their kinds.
 1. Public and private.
 2. Appurtenant and in gross.
3. Securities.
 - Their nature.
 - Mortgages and Liens.
 - The essential nature of a mortgage.
 - Equities of redemption.
 - Mortgages {
 - By way of assignment.
 - By way of encumbrance.
 - The double ownership of mortgaged property.
 - The reduction of mortgages to liens.
 - The kinds of liens.

Modes of acquiring property:

- I. Possession.
 1. Absolute title to *res nullius*. Absolute ownership.
 2. Relative title to *res aliena*. Possessory ownership.
- II. Prescription.
 1. Positive or acquisitive.
 2. Negative or extinctive.
 - Rational basis of prescription.
 - Presumption of coincidence of possession and ownership.
 - Classes of rights subject to prescription.
 - Prescription {
 - Perfect.
 - Imperfect—the limitation of actions.

III. Agreement.

- { 1. Assignment.
- { 2. Grant.
- { 1. Formal.
- { 2. Informal.

The efficacy of agreement.

Nemo dat qui non habet.

Exceptions:

1. Separation of legal and equitable ownership.

2. Separation of ownership and possession.

IV. Inheritance.

Rights { Inheritable.
 { Uninheritable.

The representatives of dead men.

The creditors of dead men.

The beneficiaries of dead men.

1. *Ab intestato*.

2. *Ex testamento*.

The limits of testamentary power.

CHAPTER 21

THE LAW OF OBLIGATIONS

§ 168. The Nature of Obligations

OBLIGATION in its popular sense is merely a synonym for duty. Its legal sense, derived from Roman law, differs from this in several respects. In the first place, obligations are merely one class of duties, namely, those which are the correlatives of rights *in personam*. An obligation is the *vinculum juris*, or bond of legal necessity, which binds together two or more determinate individuals (a). It includes, for example, the duty to pay a debt, to perform a contract, or to pay damages for a tort, but not the duty to refrain from interference with the person, property, or reputation of others. Secondly, the term obligation is in law the name, not merely of the duty, but also of the correlative right. It denotes the legal relation or *vinculum juris* in its entirety, including the right of the one party, no less than the liability of the other. Looked at from the point of view of the person entitled, an obligation is a right; looked at from the point of view of the person bound, it is a duty. We may say either that the creditor acquires, owns, or transfers an obligation, or that the debtor has incurred or been released from one. Thirdly and lastly, all obligations pertain to the sphere of *proprietary* rights. They form part of the estate of him who is entitled to them. Rights which relate to a person's *status*, such as those created by marriage, are not obligations, even though they are rights *in personam*. An obligation, therefore, may be defined as a proprietary right *in personam* or a duty which corresponds to such a right.

The person entitled to the benefit of an *obligatio* was in Roman law termed *creditor*, while he who was bound by it was called *debitor*. We may venture to use the corresponding

(a) *Obligatio est juris vinculum, quo necessitate adstringimur alicuius solvendae rei, secundum nostrae civitatis iura.* Inst. 3. 13, pr. For a comparison of Roman and English rules relating to obligations see Buckland and McNair, *Roman Law and Common Law* (2nd ed.) 193 ff.

English terms creditor and debtor in an equally wide sense. We shall speak of every obligation, of whatever nature, as vested in or belonging to a creditor, and availing against a debtor. There is, of course, a narrower sense, in which these terms are applicable only to those obligations which constitute *debts*; that is to say, obligations to pay a definite or liquidated sum of money.

A technical synonym for obligation is *chose in action* or *thing in action*. A chose in action means, in our modern use of it, a proprietary right *in personam*; for example, a debt, a share in a joint-stock company, money in the public funds, or a claim for damages for a tort. A non-proprietary right *in personam*, such as that which arises from a contract to marry, or from the contract of marriage, is no more a chose in action in English law than it is an *obligatio* in Roman law.

Choses in action are opposed to choses in possession, though the latter term has all but fallen out of use. The true nature of the distinction thus expressed has been the subject of much discussion. At the present day, if any logical validity at all is to be ascribed to it, it must be identified with that between real and personal rights, that is to say, with the Roman distinction between *dominium* and *obligatio*. A chose in action is a proprietary right *in personam*. All other proprietary rights (including such objects of rights as are identified with the rights themselves) are choses in possession. If we regard the matter historically, however, it becomes clear that this is not the original meaning of the distinction. In its origin a chose in possession was any thing or right which was accompanied by *possession*; while a chose in action was any thing or right of which the claimant had no possession, but which he must obtain, if need be, by way of an *action* at law. Money in a man's purse was a thing in possession; money due to him by a debtor was a thing in action. This distinction was largely, though not wholly, coincident with that between real and personal rights, for real rights are commonly possessed as well as owned, while personal rights are commonly owned but not possessed. This coincidence, however, was not complete. A chattel, for example, stolen from its owner was reduced, so far as he was concerned, to a thing in action; but his right of ownership was not thereby reduced to a mere *obligatio* (b).

The extraordinary importance attributed to the fact of possession was a characteristic feature of our early law. As this importance diminished, the original significance of the distinction between things in possession and things in action was lost sight of, and these terms gradually acquired a new meaning. Originally shares and annuities

(b) Jacob's *Law Dictionary*, cited by Sweet in (1894), 10 L. Q. R. at p. 308 n.

would probably have been classed as things in possession, but they are now things in action. Conversely lands and chattels are now things in possession, whether the owner retains possession of them or not. Obligations were always the most important species of things in action, and they are now the only species. Neither the old law nor the new gives any countenance to the suggestion made by some that immaterial property, such as patents, copyrights, and trade-marks, should be classed as choses in action (c).

§ 169. Solidary Obligations

The normal type of obligation is that in which there is one creditor and one debtor. It often happens, however, that there are two or more creditors entitled to the same obligation, or two or more debtors under the same liability. The case of two or more creditors gives rise to little difficulty, and requires no special consideration. It is, in most respects, merely a particular instance of co-ownership, the co-owners holding either jointly or in common, according to circumstances. The case of two or more debtors, however, is of some theoretical interest, and calls for special notice.

Examples of it are debts owing by a firm of partners, debts owing by a principal debtor and guaranteed by one or more sureties, and the liability of two or more persons who together commit a tort. In all such cases each debtor is liable for the whole amount due. The creditor is not obliged to divide his claim into as many different parts as there are debtors. He may exact the whole sum from one, and leave that one to recover from his co-debtors, if possible and permissible, a just proportion of the amount so paid. A debt of £100 owing by two partners, A and B, is not equivalent to one debt of £50 owing by A and another of the same amount owing by B. It is a single debt of £100 owing by each of them, in such fashion that each of them may be compelled to pay the whole of it, but that when it is once paid by either of them, both are discharged from it (d).

Obligations of this description may be called solidary, since

(c) As to the nature of choses in action, see Blackstone, II. 396; *Colonial Bank v. Whinney* (1885), 30 Ch. D. 261 and (1886) 11 App. Cas. 426; and a series of articles by different writers in the L. Q. R.: IX. 311, by Sir Howard Elphinstone; X. 143, by T. C. Williams; X. 303, by C. Sweet; XI. 64, by S. Brodhurst; XI. 223, by T. C. Williams; XI. 238, by C. Sweet.

(d) As we shall see, the creditor is not always entitled to sue one alone of the debtors; but when he has obtained judgment against all, he can always, by way of execution, obtain payment of the whole from any one.

in the language of Roman law, each of the debtors is bound in *solidum* instead of *pro parte*; that is to say, for the whole, and not for a proportionate part (e). A solidary obligation, therefore, may be defined as one in which two or more debtors owe the same thing to the same creditor. In English law they are of three distinct kinds, being either (1) several, (2) joint, or (3) joint and several.

1. Solidary obligations are several when, although the thing owed is the same in each case, there are as many distinct obligations and causes of action as there are debtors. Each debtor is bound to the creditor by a distinct and independent *vinculum juris*, the only connection between them being that in each case the subject-matter of the obligation is the same, so that performance by one of the debtors necessarily discharges all the others also.

2. Solidary obligations are joint, on the other hand, when, though there are two or more debtors, there is only one debt or other cause of action, as well as only one thing owed. The *vinculum juris* is single, though it binds several debtors to the same creditor. The chief effect of this unity of the obligation is that all the debtors are discharged by anything which discharges any one of them. When the *vinculum juris* has once been severed as to any of them, it is severed as to all. Where, on the contrary, solidary obligations are several and not joint, performance by one debtor will release the others, but in all other respects the different *vincula juris* are independent of each other.

3. The third species of solidary obligations consists of those which are both joint and several. As their name implies, they stand half-way between the two extreme types which we have already considered. They are the product of a compromise between two competing principles. For some purposes the law treats them as joint, and for other purposes as several. For some purposes there is in the eye of the law only one single obligation and cause of action, while for other purposes the law consents to recognise as many distinct obligations and causes of action as there are debtors.

(e) For a further discussion of this terminology see Williams, *Joint Obligations*, 1. n. 1.

On what principle, then, does the law determine the class to which any solidary obligation belongs? Speaking generally, we may say that such obligations are several when, although they have the same subject-matter, they have different sources; they are several in their nature, if they are distinct in their origin. They are joint, on the other hand, when they have not merely the same subject-matter, but the same source. Joint and several obligations, in the third place, are those joint obligations which the law, for special reasons, chooses to treat in special respects as if they were several. Like those which are purely and simply joint, they have the same source as well as the same subject-matter; but the law does not regard them consistently as comprising a single *vinculum juris*.

The following are examples of solidary obligations which are several in their nature:—

(1) The liability of a principal debtor and that of his surety, provided that the contract of suretyship is subsequent to, or otherwise independent of the creation of the debt so guaranteed. But if the two debts have the same origin, as where the principal debtor and the surety sign a joint bond, the case is one of joint obligation.

(2) The liability of two or more co-sureties who guarantee the same debt independently of each other (*f*). They may make themselves joint, or joint and several debtors, on the other hand, by joining in a single contract of guarantee.

(3) Separate judgments obtained in distinct actions against two or more persons liable for the same debt. Two persons, for example, jointly and severally liable on the same contract may be separately sued, and judgment may be obtained against each of them. In such a case they are no longer jointly liable at all; each is now severally liable for the amount of his own judgment; but these two obligations are solidary, inasmuch as the satisfaction of one will discharge the other.

(4) The liability of independent wrongdoers whose acts cause the same damage. This is a somewhat rare case, but is perfectly possible. Two persons are not joint wrongdoers, simply because they both act wrongfully and their acts unite to cause a single mischievous result. They must have committed a joint act; that is to say, they must have acted together with some common purpose. If not, they may be liable *in solidum* and severally for the common harm to which their separate acts contribute; but they are not liable as joint wrongdoers. In *Thompson v. The London County Council* (*g*) the plaintiff's house was

(*f*) *Ward v. The National Bank* (1883), 8 App. Cas. 755.

(*g*) [1899] 1 Q. B. 840. Cf. *Williams, Joint Torts and Contributory Negligence* (1951), § 5.

injured by the subsidence of its foundations, this subsidence resulting from excavations negligently made by A, taken in conjunction with the negligence of B, a water company, in leaving a water-main insufficiently stopped. It was held that A and B, inasmuch as their acts were quite independent of each other, were not joint wrongdoers, and could not be joined in the same action. It was said by Lord Justice Collins (h): "The damage is one, but the causes of action which have led to that damage are two, committed by two distinct personalities." The liability of the parties was solidary, but not joint. So also successive acts of wrongful conversion may be committed by two or more persons in respect of the same chattel. Each is liable in the action of trover to the owner of the chattel for its full value. But they are liable severally, and not jointly. The owner may sue each of them in different actions; though payment of the value by any one of them will discharge the others (i).

Examples of joint obligations are the debts of partners (k), and all other solidary obligations *ex contractu* which have not been expressly made joint and several by the agreement of the parties.

Examples of joint and several obligations are the liabilities of those who jointly commit a tort (l) or (perhaps) a breach of trust (m), and also all contractual obligations which are expressly made joint and several by the agreement of the parties.

§ 170. The Sources of Obligations

Classed in respect of their sources or modes of origin, the obligations recognised by English law are divisible into the following four classes:—

- (1) Contractual—*Obligationes ex contractu*.
- (2) Delictal—*Obligationes ex delicto*.
- (3) Quasi-contractual—*Obligationes quasi ex contractu*.
- (4) Innominate.

§ 171. Obligations arising from Contracts

The first and most important class of obligations consists of those which are created by contract. We have in a former

(h) At p. 845.

(i) *Morris v. Robinson* (1824), 3 B. & C. 196.

(k) Partnership Act, 1890, s. 9; Lindley, *Partnership* (11th ed.) 265 ff., 298 ff.

(l) But the meaning of this phrase as applied to torts differs somewhat from its meaning in contract. See Williams, *op. cit.*, 37, 63 n. 1.

(m) It is commonly said that the liability for breach of trust is joint and several (see, e.g., Underhill, *Trusts* (10th ed.) Art. 90), but it may be questioned whether this means anything more than that the obligation is a solidary obligation that is several in its nature.

chapter sufficiently considered the nature of a contract (n), and we there saw that it is, in general, that kind of agreement which creates rights in *personam* between the parties to it. Now of rights in *personam* obligations are the most numerous and important kind, and of those which are not obligations comparatively few have their source in the agreement of the parties. The law of contract, therefore, is almost wholly comprised within the law of obligations, and for the practical purposes of legal classification it may be placed there with sufficient accuracy. The coincidence, indeed, is not logically complete: a promise of marriage, for example, being a contract which falls within the law of status, and not within that of obligations. Neglecting, however, this small class of *personal* contracts, the general theory of contract is simply a combination of the general theory of agreement with that of obligation, and does not call for any further examination in this place (o).

§ 172. Obligations arising from Torts

The second class of obligations consists of those which may be termed delictal, or in the language of Roman law *obligationes ex delicto*. By an obligation of this kind is meant the duty of making pecuniary satisfaction for that species of wrong which is known in English law as a *tort*. Etymologically this term is merely the French equivalent of the English wrong—*tort* (*tortum*), being that which is twisted, crooked, or wrong; just as right (*rectum*) is that which is straight. As a technical term of English law, however, *tort* has become specialised in meaning, and now includes merely one particular class of civil wrongs.

A *tort* may be defined as a civil wrong, for which the remedy is an action for damages, and which is not solely the breach of a contract or the breach of a trust or other merely equitable obligation. This definition contains four essential elements, there being four kinds of wrongs excluded by it from the sphere of *tort*.

1. A *tort* is a civil wrong; crimes are wrongs, but are not in themselves *torts*, though there is nothing to prevent the same act from belonging to both these classes at once.

(n) *Supra*, § 126.

(o) It is advisable to point out that the obligation to pay damages for a breach of contract is itself to be classed as contractual, no less than the original obligation to perform the contract.

2. Even a civil wrong is not a tort, unless the appropriate remedy for it is an action for damages. There are several other forms of civil remedy besides this; for example, injunctions, specific restitution of property, and the payment of liquidated sums of money by way of penalty or otherwise. Any civil injury which gives rise exclusively to one of these other forms of remedy stands outside the class of torts. The obstruction of a public highway, for example, is to be classed as a civil injury, inasmuch as it may give rise to civil proceedings instituted by the Attorney-General for an injunction; but although a civil injury, it is not a tort, save in those exceptional instances in which, by reason of special damage suffered by an individual, it gives rise to an action for damages at his suit.

3. No civil wrong is a tort, if it is exclusively the breach of a contract. The law of contracts stands by itself, as a separate department of our legal system, over against the law of torts; and to a large extent liability for breaches of contract and liability for torts are governed by different principles. It may well happen, however, that the same act is both a tort and a breach of contract, and this is so in at least two classes of cases.

(a) The first and simplest of these is that in which a man undertakes by contract the performance of a duty which lies on him already, independently of any contract. Thus he who refuses to return a borrowed chattel commits both a breach of contract and also the tort known as conversion: a breach of contract, because he promised expressly or impliedly to return the chattel; but not *merely* a breach of contract, and therefore also a tort, because he would have been equally liable for detaining another man's property, even if he had made no such contract at all.

(b) The second class of cases is one which involves considerable difficulty, and the law on this point cannot yet be said to have been thoroughly developed. In certain instances the breach of a contract made with one person creates liability towards another person, who is no party to the contract. It is a fundamental principle, indeed, that no person can sue on an *obligatio ex contractu*, except a party to the contract; nevertheless it sometimes happens that one person can sue *ex delicto* for the breach of a contract which was not made with him, but from

the breach of which he has suffered unlawful damage. That is to say, a man may take upon himself, by a contract with A, a duty which does not already or otherwise rest upon him, but which, when it has once been undertaken, he cannot break without doing such damage to B, a third person, as the law deems actionable. Thus, if X lends his horse to Y, who delivers it to Z, a livery-stable keeper, to be looked after and fed, and the horse is injured or killed by insufficient feeding, presumably Z is liable for this, not only in contract to Y, but also in tort to X, the owner of the horse. It is true that, apart from his contract with Y, Z was under no obligation to feed the animal; apart from the contract, this was a mere omission to do an act which he was not bound to do. Yet having taken this duty upon himself, he has thereby put himself in such a situation that he cannot break the duty without inflicting on the owner of the horse damage of a kind which the law deems wrongful. The omission to feed the horse, therefore, although a breach of contract, is not exclusively such, and is therefore a tort, inasmuch as it can be sued on by a person who is no party to the contract. How far damage thus caused to one man by the breach of a duty undertaken by contract with another is actionable as a tort at the suit of the former, is a question to be determined by the detailed rules of the concrete legal system, and need not be here considered (p).

Before the abolition of forms of action the relation between contract and tort was complicated and obscured by the existence of a class of fictitious torts—wrongs which were in reality pure breaches of contract and nothing more, and which nevertheless were remediable by delictal forms of action. Forms of action were classed as either contractual or delictal, but contractual actions were illogically allowed in cases in which there was no true contract, but only a quasi-contract; and delictal actions in cases in which there were no true tort, but a mere breach of contract. There seems to be no longer any occasion for recognising the existence of such quasi-torts, for they were merely a product of historical accident, which may and should be now eliminated from the law. They are a relic of the days when

(p) A similar relation exists between breaches of contract and crimes. Breach of contract is not in itself a crime, any more than it is in itself a tort; yet by undertaking a contractual duty, a man may often put himself in such a position, that he cannot break the duty without causing such damage to third persons, as will create criminal liability. For example, a signalman's breach of his contractual duty to attend to the signals may amount to the crime of manslaughter if a fatal accident results from it.

contractual remedies were so imperfectly developed that they had to be supplemented by the use of delictal remedies in cases of breach of contract. The contractual action of *assumpsit* is, in its origin, merely a variant of the delictal action of *case*. It is not surprising, therefore, that until the abolition of all forms of action, our law failed to draw with accuracy the line between torts and breaches of contract (q).

4. The fourth and last class of wrongs which are not torts consists of breaches of trusts or other equitable obligations. The original reason for their exclusion and separate classification is the historical fact that the law of trusts and equitable obligations originated and developed in the Court of Chancery, and was wholly unknown to those courts of common law in which the law of torts grew up. But even now, although the same courts administer both law and equity, it is still necessary to treat breaches of trust as a form of wrong distinct from torts, and to deal with them along with the law of trusts itself, just as breaches of contract are dealt with along with the law of contract. Torts, contracts, and trusts developed separately, the principles of liability in each case are largely different, and they must be retained as distinct departments of the law.

By some writers a tort has been defined as the violation of a right *in rem*, giving rise to an obligation to pay damages. There is a tempting simplicity and neatness in this application of the distinction between rights *in rem* and *in personam*, but it may be gravely doubted whether it does in truth conform to the actual contents of the English law of torts. Most torts undoubtedly are violations of rights *in rem*, because most rights *in personam* are created by contract. But there are rights *in personam* which are not contractual, and the violation of which, if it gives rise to an action for damages, must be classed as a tort. Thus where a duty of care is created by contract, the breach of it is in some cases actionable as a tort; yet the duty is owed *in personam*. The refusal of an innkeeper to receive a traveller is perhaps a tort (r), yet it is merely the breach of a non-contractual

(q) Salmond's *Law of Torts* (11th ed.) § 1-3.

(r) Blackstone (*Commentaries*, III. 165) classified this as a breach of quasi-contractual obligation. Street (*Foundations of Legal Liability*, II. 236-237) called it liability in quasi-*assumpsit*. Winfield (*Province of the Law of Tort*, 153, 238) regards it as a tort, and asserts that although the right of a traveller to be admitted is *in personam*, the duty of the innkeeper to admit is *in rem*; hence the case falls within his definition of a tort as a breach of a duty *in rem*. It is submitted with respect that this last is a false analysis. An innkeeper is not under a present duty to admit all travellers; he is under a duty to admit only such as ask for admittance. When the request for admittance is made the innkeeper's duty to admit is a duty *in personam* owed to the particular traveller who asks for admittance. In other words there is no duty *in rem*

right *in personam*. So with any actionable refusal or neglect on the part of a public official to perform his statutory duties on behalf of the plaintiff (s).

§ 173. Obligations arising from Quasi-Contracts

Both in Roman and in English law there are certain obligations which are not in truth contractual in the sense of resting on agreement (t), but which the law treats as if they were. They are contractual in law, but not in fact, being the subject-matter of a fictitious extension of the sphere of contract to cover obligations which do not in reality fall within it. The Romans called them *obligationes quasi ex contractu*. English lawyers call them quasi-contracts or implied contracts, or often enough contract simply and without qualification. We are told, for example, that a judgment is a contract, and that a judgment debt is a contractual obligation (u). "Implied [contracts]," says Blackstone (a), "are such as reason and justice dictate, and which, therefore, the law presumes that every man undertakes to perform." "Thus it is that every person is bound, and hath virtually agreed, to pay such particular sums of money as are charged on him by the sentence, or assessed by the interpretation, of the law" (b). So the same author speaks, much too widely indeed, of the "general implication and intendment of the courts of judicature that every man hath engaged to perform what his duty or justice requires" (c).

From a quasi-contract, or contract implied in law, we must carefully distinguish a contract implied in fact. The latter is a true contract, though its existence is only inferred from the conduct of the parties, instead of being expressed. Thus when I enter an omnibus, I impliedly, yet actually, agree to pay the usual fare. A contract implied in law, on the contrary, is merely

to admit travellers; there is only a subjection (liability) *in rem* to be asked for admittance. Hence, if the innkeeper's refusal to admit be regarded as a tort, it follows that a tort is not necessarily the breach of a duty *in rem*.

(s) For a further discussion of the definition of tort see Winfield, *Province of the Law of Tort* (1931).

(t) It has been seen that in some cases even contracts proper may exist without agreement: *supra*, § 126. The line between contracts proper and quasi-contract is therefore somewhat arbitrary.

(u) *Grant v. Easton* (1883), 13 Q. B. D. 302.

(a) *Commentaries*, II. 443.

(b) *Ibid.* III. 159.

(c) *Ibid.* III. 162.

fictitious, for the parties to it have not agreed at all, either expressly or tacitly.

In what cases, then, does the law recognise this fiction of quasi-contract? What classes of obligations are regarded as contractual in law, though they are not so in fact? To this question it is not possible to give any complete answer here. We can, however, single out two classes of cases which include most, though not all, of the quasi-contractual obligations known to English law.

1. In the first place, we may say in general that in the theory of the common law all *debts* are deemed to be contractual in origin. A debt is an obligation to pay a liquidated sum of money, as opposed to an obligation to pay an unliquidated amount, and as opposed also to all non-pecuniary obligations. Most debts are *obligationes ex contractu* in truth and in fact, but there are many which have a different source. A judgment creates a debt which is non-contractual; so, also, does the receipt of money paid by mistake or obtained by fraud. Nevertheless, in the eye of the common law they all fall within the sphere of contract; for the law conclusively presumes that every person who owes a debt has promised to pay it. "Whatever, therefore", says Blackstone (d), "the laws order any one to pay, that becomes instantly a debt which he hath beforehand contracted to discharge."

Hence it is, that a judgment debtor is in legal theory liable *ex contractu* to satisfy the judgment. "The liability of the defendant", says Lord Esher (e), "arises upon the implied contract to pay the amount of the judgment." Similarly all pecuniary obligations of restitution are in theory contractual, as in the case of money paid by mistake, or obtained by fraud or duress. "If the defendant", says Lord Mansfield (f), "be under an obligation, from the ties of natural justice, to refund, the law implies a debt, and gives this action founded on the equity of the plaintiff's case, as it were upon a contract (*quasi ex contractu*, as the Roman law expresses it)." So also with pecuniary obligations of indemnity; when, for example, the goods of a stranger are distrained and sold by a landlord for rent due by his tenant, the law implies a promise by the tenant to repay their value to the owner thus deprived of them (g). A similar fictitious promise is the ground on which the law bases obligations of

(d) *Commentaries*, III. 160.

(e) *Grant v. Easton* (1883), 13 Q. B. D. at p. 303.

(f) *Moses v. Macferlan* (1760), 2 Burr. 1005, at p. 1009.

(g) *Exall v. Partridge* (1799), 8 T. R. 308.

contribution. If, for example, two persons acting independently of each other guarantee the same debt, and one of them is subsequently compelled to pay the whole, he can recover half of the amount from the other, as due to him under a contract implied in law, although there is clearly none in fact. A similar obligation of contribution is now imposed by statute as between joint tortfeasors and tortfeasors whose independent wrongs cause the same damage. (*h*).

2. The second class of quasi-contracts includes all those cases in which a person injured by a tort is allowed by the law to waive the tort and sue in contract instead. That is to say, there are certain obligations which are in truth delictal, and not contractual, but which may, at the option of the plaintiff, be treated as contractual if he so pleases. Thus if one wrongfully takes away my goods and sells them, he is guilty of the tort known as trespass, and his obligation to pay damages for the loss suffered by me is in reality delictal. Nevertheless, I may, if I think it to my interest, waive the tort, and sue him on a fictitious contract, demanding from him the payment of the money so received by him as having rightly sold the goods as my agent, and therefore as being indebted to me in respect of the price received by him; and he will not be permitted to plead his own wrongdoing in bar of any such claim (*i*). So if a man obtains money from me by fraudulent misrepresentation, I may sue him either in tort for damages for the deceit, or on a fictitious contract for the return of the money.

The reasons which have induced the law to recognise the fiction of quasi-contractual obligations are various. The chief of them, however, are the three following:—

(1) The traditional classification of the various forms of personal actions, as being based either on contract or on tort. This classification could be rendered exhaustive and sufficient only by forcing all liquidated pecuniary obligations into the contractual class, regardless of their true nature and origin (*k*) until quite recently.

(*h*) Law Reform (Married Women and Tortfeasors) Act, 1935.

(*i*) *Smith v. Baker* (1873), L. R. 8 C. P. 350. See further as to the waiver of torts, *Lightly v. Clouston* (1808), 1 Taunt. 112; *Phillips v. Homfray* (1883), 24 Ch. D. at p. 461; Salmond, *Law of Torts* (11th ed.) § 58.

(*k*) This classification of actions is discussed by Maitland in an appendix to *Pollock's Law of Torts* and by Winfield, *The Province of the Law of Tort*. Its importance under the County Courts Acts has largely disappeared with the amendments made by the Act of 1955; but it may still give difficulty under s. 46 of the County Courts Act, 1934.

(2) The desire to supply a theoretical basis for new forms of obligation established by judicial decision. Here as elsewhere, legal fictions are of use in assisting the development of the law. It is easier for the courts to say that a man is bound to pay because he must be taken to have so promised, than to lay down for the first time the principle that he is bound to pay whether he has promised or not.

(3) The desire of plaintiffs to obtain the benefit of the superior efficiency of contractual remedies. In more than one respect, it was better in the old days of formalism to sue on contract than on any other ground. The contractual remedy of *assumpsit* was better than the action of debt, for it did not allow to the defendant the resource of wager of law. It was better than trespass and other delictal remedies, for it did not die with the person of the wrongdoer, but was available against his executors. Therefore plaintiffs were allowed to allege fictitious contracts, and to sue on them in *assumpsit*, whereas in truth their appropriate remedy was debt or some action *ex delicto*.

It seems clear that a rational system of law is free to get rid of the conception of quasi-contractual obligation altogether. No useful purpose is served by it at the present day. It still remains, however, part of the law of England, and requires recognition accordingly (1).

§ 174. Innominate Obligations

The foregoing classification of obligations as either contractual, delictal, or quasi-contractual, is not exhaustive, for it is based on no logical scheme of division, but proceeds by simple enumeration only. Consequently, it is necessary to recognise a final and residuary class which we may term innominate, as having no comprehensive and distinctive title (*m*). Included in this class are the obligations of trustees towards their beneficiaries, a species, indeed, which would be sufficiently important and distinct to be classed separately as co-ordinate with the others which have been named, were it not for the fact that trusts are more appropriately treated in another branch of the law, namely, in that of property.

SUMMARY

Obligations defined.

Choses in action.

(1) For the history of quasi-contract see R. M. Jackson, *History of Quasi-Contract*. There is a monograph on the present law by Winfield (1952).

(*m*) Contracts which have no specific name are called by the civilians *contractus innominati*.

Solidary obligations.

 Their nature.

 Their kinds:

1. Several.
2. Joint.
3. Joint and several.

Contractual obligations.

Delictal obligations:

 The nature of a tort:

1. A civil wrong.
2. Actionable by way of damages.
3. Not a mere breach of contract.
4. Not a mere breach of trust or other equitable obligation.

Quasi-contractual obligations:

 The nature of quasi-contract.

 Instances of quasi-contracts.

 Reasons of their recognition.

Innominate obligations.

CHAPTER 22

THE LAW OF PROCEDURE

§ 175. Substantive Law and the Law of Procedure

It is no easy task to state with precision the exact nature of the distinction between substantive law and the law of procedure (a), and it will conduce to clearness if we first consider a plausible but erroneous explanation. In view of the fact that the administration of justice in its typical form consists in the application of remedies to the violations of rights, it may be suggested that substantive law is that which defines the *rights*, while procedural law determines the *remedies*. This application, however, of the distinction between *jus* and *remedium* is inadmissible. For, in the first place, there are many rights (in the wide sense) which belong to the sphere of procedure; for example, a right of appeal, a right to give evidence on one's own behalf, a right to interrogate the other party, and so on. In the second place, rules defining the remedy may be as much a part of the substantive law as are those which define the right itself. No one would call the abolition of capital punishment, for instance, a change in the law of criminal procedure. The substantive part of the criminal law deals, not with crimes alone, but with punishments also. So in the civil law, the rules as to the measure of damages pertain to the substantive law, no less than those declaring what damage is actionable; and rules determining the classes of agreements which will be specifically enforced are as clearly substantive as are those determining the agreements which will be enforced at all. To define procedure as concerned not with rights, but with remedies, is to confound the remedy with the process by which it is made available.

What, then, is the true nature of the distinction? The law of procedure may be defined as that branch of the law which governs the process of litigation. It is the law of actions—*jus quod ad actiones pertinet*—using the term action in a wide sense to include all legal proceedings, civil or criminal. All the

(a) For a fuller discussion of this topic see W. W. Cook, "Substance and 'Procedure' in the Conflicts of Laws" (1933), 42 Yale L. J. 333.

residue is substantive law, and relates, not to the process of litigation, but to its purposes and subject-matter. Substantive law is concerned with the ends which the administration of justice seeks; procedural law deals with the means and instruments by which those ends are to be attained. The latter regulates the conduct and relations of courts and litigants in respect of the litigation itself; the former determines their conduct and relations in respect of the matters litigated.

A glance at the actual contents of the law of procedure will enable us to judge of the accuracy of this explanation. Whether I have a right to recover certain property is a question of substantive law, for the determination and the protection of such rights are among the ends of the administration of justice; but in what courts and within what time I must institute proceedings are questions of procedural law, for they relate merely to the modes in which the courts fulfil their functions. What facts constitute a wrong is determined by the substantive law; what facts constitute proof of a wrong is a question of procedure. For the first relates to the subject-matter of litigation, the second to the process merely. Whether an offence is punishable by fine or by imprisonment is a question of substantive law, for the existence and measure of criminal liability are matters pertaining to the end and purpose of the administration of justice. But whether an offence is punishable summarily or only on indictment is a question of procedure. Finally, it may be observed that, whereas the abolition of capital punishment would be an alteration of the substantive law, the abolition of imprisonment for debt was merely an alteration in the law of procedure. For punishment is one of the ends of the administration of justice, while imprisonment for debt was merely an instrument for enforcing payment.

So far as the administration of justice is concerned with the application of remedies to violated rights, we may say that the substantive law defines the remedy and the right, while the law of procedure defines the modes and conditions of the application of the one to the other.

Although the distinction between substantive law and procedure is sharply drawn in theory, there are many rules of procedure which, in their practical operation, are wholly or substantially equivalent to rules of substantive law. In such

cases the difference between these two branches of the law is one of form rather than of substance. A rule belonging to one department may by a change of form pass over into the other without materially affecting the practical issue. In legal history such transitions are frequent, and in legal theory they are not without interest and importance.

Of these equivalent procedural and substantive principles there are at least three classes sufficiently important to call for notice here.

1. An exclusive evidential fact is practically equivalent to a constituent element in the title of the right to be proved. The rule of evidence that a contract can be proved only by a writing corresponds to a rule of substantive law that a contract is void unless reduced to writing.

2. A conclusive evidential fact is equivalent to, and tends to take the place of, the fact proved by it. All conclusive presumptions pertain in form to procedure, but in effect to the substantive law. That a child under the age of eight years is incapable of criminal intention is a rule of evidence, but differs only in form from the substantive rule that no child under that age is punishable for a crime. That the acts of a servant done about his master's business are done with his master's authority is a conclusive presumption of law, and pertains to procedure; but it is the forerunner and equivalent of our modern substantive law of employer's liability. A bond (that is to say, an admission of indebtedness under seal) was originally operative as being conclusive proof of the existence of the debt so acknowledged; but it is now itself creative of a debt; for it has passed from the domain of procedure into that of substantive law.

3. The limitation of actions is the procedural equivalent of the prescription of rights. The former is the operation of time in severing the bond between right and remedy; the latter is the operation of time in destroying the right. The former leaves an imperfect right subsisting; the latter leaves no right at all. But save in this respect their practical effect in English domestic law is the same, although their form is different (*d*).

(*d*) There is, however, an important difference in the English system of Conflict of Laws, for the limitation of actions is governed by the *lex fori*, while the prescription of rights is governed by the proper law of the transaction. See Cheshire, *Private International Law* (4th ed.) 641 ff.

The normal elements of judicial procedure are five in number, namely, Summons, Pleading, Proof, Judgment, and Execution. The object of the first is to secure for all parties interested an opportunity of presenting themselves before the court and making their case heard. Pleading formulates for the use of the court and of the parties those questions of fact or law which are in issue. Proof is the process by which the parties supply the court with the *data* necessary for the decision of those questions. Judgment is this decision itself, while execution, the last step in the proceeding, is the use of physical force in the maintenance of the judgment when voluntary submission is withheld. Of these five elements of judicial procedure one only, namely, proof, is of sufficient theoretical interest to repay such abstract consideration as is here in place. The residue of this chapter, therefore, will be devoted to an analysis of the essential nature of the law of evidence.

§ 176. Evidence

One fact is evidence of another when it tends in any degree to render the existence of that other probable. The quality by virtue of which it has such an effect may be called its *probative force*, and evidence may therefore be defined as any fact which possesses such force. Probative force may be of any degree of intensity. When it is great enough to form a rational basis for the inference that the fact so evidenced really exists, the evidence possessing it is said to constitute *proof*.

It is convenient to be able to distinguish shortly between the fact which is evidence, and the fact of which it is evidence. The former may be termed the *evidential fact*, the latter the *principal fact*. Where, as is often the case, there is a chain of evidence, A being evidence of B, B of C, C of D, and so on, each intermediate fact is evidential in respect of all that follow it and principal in respect of all that precede it.

1. Evidence is of various kinds, being, in the first place, either *judicial* or *extrajudicial*. Judicial evidence is that which is produced to the court; it comprises all evidential facts that are actually brought to the personal knowledge and observation of the tribunals. Extrajudicial evidence is that which does not come directly under judicial cognisance, but nevertheless constitutes an intermediate link between judicial evidence and the fact

requiring proof. Judicial evidence includes all testimony given by witnesses in court, all documents produced to and read by the court, and all things personally examined by the court for the purposes of proof. Extrajudicial evidence includes all evidential facts which are known to the court only by way of inference from some form of judicial evidence. Testimony is extrajudicial when it is judicially known only through the relation of a witness who heard it. A confession of guilt, for example, is judicial evidence if made to the court itself, but extrajudicial if made elsewhere and proved to the court by some form of judicial evidence. Similarly, a document is judicial evidence if produced, extrajudicial if known to the court only through a copy, or through the report of a witness who has read it. So the *locus in quo* or the material subject-matter of a suit becomes judicial evidence when personally viewed by the court, but is extrajudicial when described by witnesses.

It is plain that in every process of proof some form of judicial evidence is an essential element. Extrajudicial evidence may or may not exist. When it is present, it forms an intermediate link or a series of intermediate links in a chain of proof, the terminal links of which are the principal fact at one end and the judicial evidence at the other. Judicial evidence requires production merely; extrajudicial evidence stands itself in need of proof.

2. In the second place, evidence is either *personal* or *real*. Personal evidence is otherwise termed *testimony*. It includes all kinds of statements regarded as possessed of probative force in respect of the facts stated. This is by far the most important form of evidence. There are few processes of proof that do not contain it—few facts that are capable of being proved in courts of justice otherwise than by the testimony of those who know them. Testimony is either oral or written, and either judicial or extrajudicial. There is a tendency to restrict the term to the judicial variety, but there is no good reason for this limitation. It is better to include under the head of testimony or personal evidence all statements, verbal or written, judicial or extrajudicial, so far as they are possessed of probative force. Real evidence, on the other hand, includes all the residue of evidential facts. Anything which is believed for any other reason than that someone has said so, is believed on real evidence. This,

too, is either judicial or extrajudicial, though here also there is a tendency to restrict the term to the former use.

3. Evidence is either *primary* or *secondary*. Other things being equal, the longer any chain of evidence the less its probative force, for with each successive inference the risk of error grows. In the interests of truth, therefore, it is expedient to shorten the process, to cut out as many as possible of the intermediate links of extrajudicial evidence, and to make evidence assume the judicial form at the earliest practicable point. Hence the importance of the distinction between primary and secondary evidence. Primary evidence is evidence viewed in comparison with any available and less immediate instrument of proof. Secondary evidence is that which is compared with any available and more immediate instrument of proof. Primary evidence of the contents of a written document is the production in court of the document itself; secondary evidence is the production of a copy or of oral testimony as to the contents of the original. Primary evidence that A assaulted B is the judicial testimony of C that he saw the assault; secondary evidence is the judicial testimony of D that C told him that he saw the assault. That secondary evidence should not be used when primary evidence is available is, in its general form, a mere counsel of prudence; but in particular cases, the most important of which are those just used as illustrations, this counsel has hardened into an obligatory rule of law. Subject to certain exceptions, the courts will receive no evidence of a written document save the document itself, and will listen to no hearsay testimony (e).

4. Evidence is either *direct* or *circumstantial*. This is a distinction important in popular opinion rather than in legal theory. Direct evidence is testimony relating immediately to the principal fact. All other evidence is circumstantial. In the former case the only inference required is one from testimony to the truth of it. In the latter the inference is of a different nature, and is generally not single but composed of successive steps. The testimony of A that he saw B commit the offence charged, or the confession of B that he is guilty, constitutes

(e) These and other rules of evidence here discussed are peculiar to English law. Continental systems admit opinions and secondary evidence much more freely. Cf. Mannheim, "Trial by Jury in Modern Continental Criminal Law" (1937), 53 L. Q. R. at 388-9.

direct evidence. If we believe the truth of the testimony or confession, the matter is concluded, and no further process of proof or inference is required. On the other hand, the testimony of A that B was seen by him leaving the place where the offence was committed, and having the instrument of the offence in his possession, is merely circumstantial evidence; for even if we believe this testimony, it does not follow without a further inference, and therefore a further risk of error, that B is guilty. Direct evidence is commonly considered to excel the other in probative force. This, however, is not necessarily the case, for it is usually more difficult to fabricate a convincing chain of circumstantial evidence than to utter a direct lie. Circumstantial evidence of innocence may well prevail over direct evidence of guilt; and circumstantial evidence of guilt may be indefinitely stronger than direct evidence of innocence.

§ 177. The Valuation of Evidence

The law of evidence comprises two parts. The first of these consists of rules for the measurement or determination of the *probative force* of evidence. The second consists of rules determining the modes and conditions of the *production* of evidence. The first deals with the effect of evidence when produced, the second with the manner in which it is to be produced. The first is concerned with evidence in all its forms, whether judicial or extrajudicial; the second is concerned with judicial evidence alone. The two departments are intimately connected, for it is impossible to formulate rules for the production of evidence without reference and relation to the effect of it when produced. Nevertheless the two are distinct in theory, and for the most part distinguishable in practice. We shall deal with them in their order.

In judicial proceedings, as elsewhere, the accurate measurement of the evidential value of facts is a condition of the discovery of truth. Except in the administration of justice, however, this task is left to common sense and personal discretion. Rules and maxims, when recognised at all, are recognised as proper for the *guidance* of individual judgment, not for the *exclusion* of it. But in this, as in every other part of judicial procedure, law has been generated, and, in so far as it extends,

has made the estimation of probative force or the weighing of evidence a matter of inflexible rules excluding judicial discretion. These rules constitute the first and most characteristic portion of the law of evidence. They may be conveniently divided into five classes, declaring respectively that certain facts amount to:—

1. Conclusive proof—in other words, raise a conclusive presumption;

2. Presumptive proof—in other words, raise a conditional or rebuttable presumption;

3. Insufficient evidence—that is to say, do not amount to proof, and raise no presumption, conclusive or conditional;

4. Exclusive evidence—that is to say, are the only facts which in respect of the matter in issue possess any probative force at all;

5. No evidence—that is to say, are destitute of evidential value.

I. *Conclusive presumptions*.—By conclusive proof is meant a fact possessing probative force of such strength as not to admit of effective contradiction. In other words, this fact amounts to proof irrespective of the existence or non-existence of any other facts whatsoever which may possess probative force in the contrary direction. By a conclusive presumption is meant the acceptance or recognition of a fact by the law as conclusive proof.

Presumptive or conditional proof, on the other hand, is a fact which amounts to proof, only so long as there exists no other fact amounting to disproof. It is a provisional proof, valid until overthrown by contrary proof. A conditional or rebuttable presumption is the acceptance of a fact by the law as conditional proof (f).

One of the most singular features in early systems of procedure is the extent to which the process of proof is dominated by conclusive presumptions. The chief part of the early law of evidence consists of rules determining the species of proof which is necessary, and sufficient in different cases, and allotting the benefit or burden of such

(f) A conclusive presumption is sometimes called a *presumptio juris et de jure*, while a rebuttable presumption is distinguished as a *presumptio juris*. I am not aware of the origin or ground of this nomenclature. The so-called *presumptio facti* is not a legal presumption at all, but a mere provisional inference drawn by the court in the exercise of its unfettered judgment from the evidence before it.

proof between the parties. He who would establish his case must maintain it, for example, by success in that judicial battle the issue of which was held to be the judgment of Heaven (*judicium Dei*); or he must go unscathed through the ordeal, and so make manifest his truth or innocence; or he must procure twelve men to swear in set form that they believe his testimony to be true; or it may be sufficient if he himself makes solemn oath that his cause is just. If he succeeds in performing the conditions so laid upon him, he will have judgment; if he fails even in the slightest point, he is defeated. His task is to satisfy the requirements of the law, not to convince the court of the truth of his case. What the court thinks of the matter is nothing to the point. The whole procedure seems designed to take away from the tribunals the responsibility of investigating the truth, and to cast this burden upon providence or fate. Only gradually and reluctantly did our law attain to the conclusion that there is no such royal road in the administration of justice, that the heavens are silent, that the battle goes to the strong, that oaths are naught and that there is no just substitute for the laborious investigation of the truth of things at the mouths of parties and witnesses (g).

The days are long since past in which conclusive presumptions played any great part in the administration of justice. They have not, however, altogether lost their early importance. They are indeed, almost necessarily more or less false, for it is seldom possible in the subject-matter of judicial procedure to lay down with truth a general principle that any one thing is conclusive proof of the existence of any other. Nevertheless such principles may be just and useful even though not wholly true. We have already seen how they are often merely the procedural equivalents of substantive rules which may have independent validity. They have also been of use in developing and modifying by way of legal fictions the narrow and perverted principles of the early law. As an illustration of their employment in modern law we may cite the maxim *Res judicata pro veritate accipitur*. A judgment is conclusive evidence as between the parties, and sometimes as against all the world, of the matters adjudicated upon. The courts of justice may make mistakes, but no one will be heard to say so. For their function is to terminate disputes, and their decisions must be accepted as final and beyond question.

II. *Conditional presumptions*.—The second class of rules for the determination of probative force are those which establish

(g) For the development of the judicial functions of the jury see Holdsworth, *H. E. L.*, I. 317 ff., 332 ff.

rebuttable presumptions. For example, a person shown not to have been heard of for seven years by those who would naturally have heard of him if he had been alive, is presumed to be dead. So also a negotiable instrument is presumed to have been given for value. So also a person accused of any offence is presumed to be innocent.

Many of these presumptions are based on no real estimate of probabilities, but are established for the purpose of placing the burden of proof upon the party who is best able to bear it, or who may most justly be made to bear it. Persons accused of crime are probably guilty, but the presumption of their innocence is in most cases and with certain limitations clearly expedient (*h*).

III. *Insufficient evidence*.—In the third place the law contains rules declaring that certain evidence is insufficient, that its probative force falls short of that required for proof, and that it is therefore not permissible for the courts to act upon it. An example is the rule that in certain kinds of treason the testimony of one witness is insufficient—almost the sole recognition by English law of the general principle, familiar in legal history, that two witnesses are necessary for proof.

IV. *Exclusive evidence*.—In the fourth place there is an important class of rules declaring certain facts to be exclusive evidence, none other being admissible. The execution of a document which requires attestation can be proved in no other way than by the testimony of an attesting witness, unless owing to the death or some other circumstance his testimony is unavailable. A written contract can generally be proved in no other way than by the production of the writing itself, whenever its production is possible. Certain kinds of contracts, such as a contract of guarantee, cannot (in general) be proved except by writing, no verbal testimony being of virtue enough in the law to establish the existence of them.

It is only in respect of very special kinds of contracts that written evidence can wisely be demanded by the law. In the case of all ordinary mercantile agreements such a requirement does more harm than good; and the law does well in accepting the principle that a man's word is as good as his bond.

(*h*) Cf. C. K. Allen, "The Presumption of Innocence", *Legal Duties* (1931) 258 ff. For a further discussion of presumptions in general see Sir Alfred Denning, "Presumptions and Burdens" (1945), 61 L. Q. R. 379.

V. *Facts which are not evidence.*—Fifthly and lastly there are rules declaring that certain facts are not evidence, that is to say, are destitute of any probative force at all. Such facts are not to be produced to the court, and if produced no weight is to be attributed to them, for no accumulation of them can amount to proof. For example, hearsay is (in general) no evidence, the bond of connection between it and the principal fact so reported at second hand being in the eye of the law too slight for any reliance to be justly placed upon it. Similarly the general bad character of an accused person is no evidence that he is guilty of any particular offence charged against him; although his good character is evidence of his innocence.

These rules of exclusion or irrelevancy assume two distinct forms, characteristic respectively of the earlier and later periods in the development of the law. At the present day they are almost wholly rules for the exclusion of *evidence*; in earlier times they were rules for the exclusion of *witnesses*. The law imposed testimonial incapacity upon certain classes of persons on the ground of their antecedent incredibility. No party to a suit, no person possessing any pecuniary interest in the event of it, no person convicted of any infamous offence, was a competent witness. His testimony was deemed destitute of evidential value on account of the suspicious nature of its source. The law has now learned that it is not in this fashion that the truth is to be sought for and found. It has now more confidence in individual judgment and less in general rules. It no longer condemns witnesses unheard, but receives the testimony of all, placing the old grounds of exclusion at their proper level as reasons for suspicion but not for antecedent rejection.

§ 178. The Production of Evidence

The second part of the law of evidence consists of rules regulating its production. It deals with the process of adducing evidence, and not with the effect of it when adduced. It comprises every rule relating to evidence, except those which amount to legal determinations of probative force. It is concerned for example with the manner in which witnesses are to be examined and cross-examined, not with the weight to be attributed to their testimony. In particular it includes several important rules of

exclusion based on grounds independent of any estimate of the probative force of the evidence so excluded. Considerations of expense, delay, vexation, and the public interest require much evidence to be excluded which is of undoubted evidential value. A witness may be able to testify to much that is relevant and important in respect of the matters in issue, and nevertheless may not be compelled or even permitted to give such testimony. A public official, for example, cannot be compelled to give evidence as to affairs of state, nor is a legal adviser permitted or compellable to disclose communications made to him by or on behalf of his client.

The most curious and interesting of all these rules of exclusion is the maxim, *Nemo tenetur se ipsum accusare*. No man, not even the accused himself, can be compelled to answer any question the answer to which may tend to prove him guilty of a crime. No one can be used as the unwilling instrument of his own conviction. He may confess, if he so pleases, and his confession will be received against him; but if tainted by any form of physical or moral compulsion, it will be rejected. The favour with which this rule has been received is probably due to the recoil of English law from the barbarities of the old Continental system of torture and inquisitorial process. Even as contrasted with the modern Continental procedure, in which the examination of the accused seems to English eyes too prominent and too hostile, the rule of English law is not without merits. It confers upon a criminal trial an aspect of dignity, humanity, and impartiality, which the contrasted inquisitorial process is too apt to lack. Nevertheless it seems impossible to resist Bentham's conclusion that the rule is destitute of any rational foundation, and that the compulsory examination of the accused is an essential feature of sound criminal procedure. Even its defenders admit that the English rule is extremely favourable to the guilty, and in a proceeding the aim of which is to convict the guilty, this would seem to be a sufficient condemnation. The innocent have nothing to fear from compulsory examination, and everything to gain; the guilty have nothing to gain, and everything to fear. A criminal trial is not to be adequately conceived as a fight between the accused and his accuser; and there is no place in it for maxims whose sole foundation is a supposed duty of

generous dealing with adversaries. Subject always to the important qualification that a good *prima facie* case must first be established by the prosecutor, every man should be compellable to answer with his own lips the charges that are made against him (k).

A matter deserving notice in connection with this part of the law of evidence is the importance still attached to the ceremony of the oath. One of the great difficulties involved in the process of proof is that of distinguishing between true testimony and false. By what test is the lying witness to be detected, and by what means is corrupt testimony to be prevented? Three methods commended themselves to the wisdom of our ancestors. These were the judicial combat, the ordeal, and the oath. The first two of these have long since been abandoned as ineffective, but the third is still retained as a characteristic feature of judicial procedure, though we may assume with some confidence that its rejection will come in due time, and will in no way injure the cause of truth and justice.

Trial by battle, so soon as it acquired a theory at all, became in reality a form of ordeal. In common with the ordeal commonly so called, it is the *judicium Dei*; it is an appeal to the God of battles to make manifest the right by giving the victory to him whose testimony is true. Successful might is the divinely appointed test of right. So in the ordeal, the party or witness whose testimony is impeached calls upon Heaven to bear witness to his truth by saving him harmless from the fire. The theory of the oath is generically the same. "An oath", says Hobbes (l), "is a form of speech added to a promise; by which he that promiseth, signifieth that unless he perform, he renounceth the mercy of his God, or calleth to him for vengeance on himself. Such was the heathen form, Let Jupiter kill me else, as I kill this beast. So is our form, I shall do thus and thus, so help me God". The definition is correct save that it is restricted to promissory, instead of including also declaratory,

(k) See Bentham, *Works*, VII. 445—463, and Dumont, *Treatise on Judicial Evidence*, Book VII. ch. 11: "If all the criminals of every class had assembled, and framed a system after their own wishes, is not this rule the very first which they would have established for their security? . . . One could be tempted to believe that those notions had been taken from the laws of honour which regulate private combats." For a further discussion see Williams, *The Proof of Guilt* (1955), ch. 3.

(l) *Leviathan*, ch. 14, *Eng. Works*, III. 122.

oaths. A man may swear not only that he will speak the truth, but that certain statements are the truth.

The idea of the oath, therefore, is that his testimony is true who is prepared to imprecate Divine vengeance on his own head in case of falsehood. Yet it needs but little experience of courts of justice to discover how ineffective is any such check on false witness and how little likely is the retention of it to increase respect either for religion or for the administration of justice. The true preventive of false testimony is an efficient law for its punishment as a crime (*m*).

SUMMARY

Law { Substantive—relating to the subject-matter of litigation.
Procedural—relating to the process of litigation.

The occasional equivalence of substantive and procedural rules.

Procedure. Its elements: Summons, Pleading, Proof, Judgment, and Execution.

The Law of Evidence.

Evidence and proof defined.

Kinds of Evidence	{	Judicial and Extrajudicial.
		Personal and Real.
		Primary and Secondary.
		Direct and Circumstantial.

Divisions of the Law of Evidence.

I. Rules determining probative force.

1. Conclusive proof.
2. Conditional proof.
3. Insufficient evidence.
4. Exclusive evidence.
5. No evidence.

II. Rules determining the production of evidence.

Nemo tenetur se ipsum accusare.

Oaths.

(*m*) On the history of oaths, see Lea, *Superstition and Force*, Part I. ch. 2—8; *Encyclopædia Britannica*, *sub voc.* Oath; Hirzel, *Der Eid* (1902); Robson, *Civilisation and the Growth of Law* (1935) 145–60. As to their utility, see Bentham's *Works*, VI. 308–325.

APPENDIX I

THE THEORY OF SOVEREIGNTY

IN discussing the theory of the state, we noticed the distinction between sovereign and subordinate power (a). The former is that which, within its own sphere, is absolute and uncontrolled, while the latter is that which is subject to the control of some power superior and external to itself. We have now to consider in relation to this distinction a celebrated doctrine which we may term Hobbes's theory of sovereignty. It was not, indeed, originated by the English philosopher, but is due rather to the celebrated French publicist Bodin, from whom it first received definite recognition as a central element of political doctrine. In the writings of Hobbes, however, it assumes greater prominence and receives more vigorous and clear-cut expression, and it is to his advocacy and to that of his modern followers that its reception in England must be chiefly attributed.

The theory in question may be reduced to three fundamental propositions:—

1. That sovereign power is essential in every state;
2. That sovereign power is indivisible;
3. That sovereign power is unlimited and illimitable.

The first of these propositions must be accepted as correct, but the second and third would seem to have no solid foundation. The matter, however, is one of very considerable obscurity and complexity, and demands careful consideration.

1. *Sovereignty essential.* It seems clear that every political society involves the presence of supreme power. For otherwise all power would be subordinate, and this supposition involves the absurdity of a series of superiors and inferiors *ad infinitum*. Yet although this is so, there is nothing to prevent the sovereignty which is thus essential from being wholly or partly *external* to the state. It is, indeed, only in the case of those states which are both independent and fully sovereign that the sovereignty is wholly internal, no part of it being held or exercised *ab extra* by any other authority. When a state is dependent, that is to say, merely a separately organised portion of a larger body politic, the sovereign power is vested wholly or in part in the larger unity, and not in the dependency itself. Similarly when a state, though independent, is only semi-sovereign, its autonomy is impaired through the possession and exercise of a partial sovereignty by the superior state. In all cases, therefore, sovereign power is necessarily present somewhere, but

(a) *Supra*, § 43.

it is not in all cases to be found in its entirety within the borders of the state itself.

2. *Indivisible sovereignty.* Every state, it is said, necessarily involves not merely sovereignty, but a *sovereign*, that is to say, one person or one body of persons in whom the totality of sovereign power is vested. Such power, it is said, cannot be shared between two or more persons. It is not denied that the single supreme body may be composite, as the English Parliament is. But it is alleged that whenever there are in this way two or more bodies of persons in whom sovereign power is vested, they necessarily possess it as joint tenants of the whole, and cannot possess it as tenants in severalty of different parts. The whole sovereignty may be in A, or the whole of it in B, or the whole of it in A and B jointly, but it is impossible that part of it should be in A and the residue in B.

We may test this doctrine by applying it to the British constitution. We shall find that this constitution in no way conforms to the principles of Hobbes on this point, but is on the contrary a clear instance of divided sovereignty. The *legislative* sovereignty resides in the Crown and the two Houses of Parliament, but the *executive* sovereignty resides in the Crown by itself, the Houses of Parliament having no share in it. It will be understood that we are here dealing exclusively with the law or legal theory of the constitution. The practice is doubtless different; for in practice the House of Commons has obtained complete control over the executive government. In practice the ministers are the servants of the legislature and responsible to it. In law they are the servants of the Crown, through whom the Crown exercises that sovereign executive power which is vested in it by law, independently of the legislature altogether.

In law, then, the executive power of the Crown is sovereign, being absolute and uncontrolled within its own sphere. This sphere is not indeed unlimited. There are many things which the Crown cannot do; it cannot pass laws or impose taxes. But what it can do it does with sovereign power. By no other authority in the state can its powers be limited, or the exercise of them controlled, or the operation of them annulled. It may be objected by the advocates of the theory in question that the executive is under the control of the legislature, and that the sum-total of sovereign power is therefore vested in the latter, and is not divided between it and the executive. The reply is that the Crown is not merely itself a part of the legislature, but a part without whose consent the legislature cannot exercise any fragment of its own power. No law passed by the two Houses of Parliament is operative unless the Crown consents to it. How, then, can the legislature control the executive? Can a man be subject to himself? A power over a person, which cannot be exercised without that person's consent, is no power over him at all. A person is subordinate to a body of which he is himself a member, only if that body has power to act notwithstanding his dissent. A dissenting

minority, for example, may be subordinate to the whole assembly. But this is not the position of the Crown.

The English constitution, therefore, recognises a sovereign executive, no less than a sovereign legislature. Each is supreme within its own sphere; and the two authorities are kept from conflict by the fact that the executive is one member of the composite legislature. The supreme legislative power is possessed jointly by the Crown and the two Houses of Parliament, but the supreme executive power is held in severalty by the Crown. When there is no Parliament, that is to say, in the interval between the dissolution of one Parliament and the election of another, the supreme legislative power is non-existent, but the supreme executive power is retained unimpaired by the Crown.

This is not all, however, for, until the passing of the Parliament Act, 1911, the British constitution recognised a supreme judicature, as well as a supreme legislature and executive. The House of Lords in its judicial capacity as a court of final appeal was sovereign. Its judgments were subject to no further appeal, and its acts were subject to no control. What it declared for law no other authority known to the constitution could dispute. Without its own consent its judicial powers could not be impaired or controlled, nor could their operation be annulled. The consent of this sovereign judicature was no less essential to legislation, than was the consent of the sovereign executive. The House of Lords, therefore, held in severalty the supreme judicial power, while it shared the supreme legislative power with the Crown and the House of Commons (b).

3. *Illimitable sovereignty.* Sovereign power is declared by the theory in question to be not merely essential and indivisible, but also illimitable. Not only is it uncontrolled within its own province, but that province is infinite in extent. "It appeareth plainly to my understanding", says Hobbes (c), "both from reason and Scripture, that the sovereign power, whether placed in one man, as in monarchy, or in one assembly of men, as in popular and aristocratical commonwealths, is as great as possibly men can be imagined to make it. . . . And whosoever, thinking sovereign power too great, will seek to make it less, must subject himself to the power that can limit it; that is to say, to a greater." So Austin (d): "It follows from the essential difference of a positive law and from the nature of sovereignty and independent political society, that the power of a monarch properly so called or the power of a sovereign number in its collegiate and

(b) As to the divisibility of sovereign power, see Bryce, *Studies*, II. 70: "Legal sovereignty is divisible, i.e., different branches of it may be concurrently vested in different persons or bodies, co-ordinate altogether, or co-ordinate partially only, though acting in different spheres". For a statement of the contrary opinion see Brown, *Austinian Theory of Law*, 174.

(c) *Leviathan*, ch. 20, Eng. Works, III. 194.

(d) I. 270.

sovereign capacity, is incapable of legal imitation. . . . Supreme power limited by positive law is a flat contradiction in terms".

This argument confounds the limitation of power with the subordination of it. That sovereignty cannot within its own sphere be subject to any control is self-evident, for it follows from the very definition of this species of power. But that this sphere is necessarily universal is a totally different proposition, and one which cannot be supported. It does not follow that if a man is free from the constraint of any one stronger than himself, his physical power is therefore infinite.

In considering this matter we must distinguish between power in fact and power in law. For here as elsewhere that which is true in law may not be true in fact, and *vice versa*. A *de facto* limitation of sovereign power may not be also a *de jure* limitation of it, and conversely the legal theory of the constitution may recognise limitations which are non-existent in fact (e).

That sovereign power may be, and indeed necessarily is, limited *de facto* is sufficiently clear. Great as is the power of the government of a modern and civilised state, there are many things which it not merely ought not to do, but cannot do. They are in the strictest sense of the term beyond its *de facto* competence. For the power of a sovereign depends on and is measured by two things: first, the physical force which he has at his command, and which is the essential instrument of his government; and second, the disposition of the members of the body politic to submit to the exercise of this force against themselves. Neither of these two things is unlimited in extent, therefore the *de facto* sovereignty which is based upon them is not unlimited either. This is clearly recognised by Bentham (f). "In this mode of limitation", he says, "I see not what there is that need surprise us. By what is it that any degree of power (meaning political power) is established? It is neither more nor less . . . than a habit of and a disposition to obedience. . . . This disposition it is as easy, or I am much mistaken, to conceive as being absent with regard to one sort of acts, as present with regard to another. For a body, then, which is in other respects supreme, to be conceived as being with respect to a certain sort of acts limited, all that is necessary is that this sort of acts be in its description distinguishable from every other. . . . These bounds the supreme body in question has marked out to its authority: of such a demarcation, then, what is the effect? Either none at all, or this: that the disposition to obedience confines itself within these bounds. Beyond them the disposition is stopped from extending; beyond them the subject is no more prepared to obey the governing body of his own state than that

(e) The distinction between *de jure* or legal and *de facto* or practical sovereignty—sovereign power in law and sovereign power in fact—is admirably expressed and analysed in Bryce, *Studies*, II. 49–73.

(f) *Fragment on Government*, ch. 4, sects. 35, 36.

of any other. What difficulty, I say, there should be in conceiving a state of things to subsist, in which the supreme authority is thus limited—what greater difficulty in conceiving it with this limitation, than without any, I cannot see. The two states are, I must confess, to me alike conceivable: whether alike expedient, alike conducive to the happiness of the people, is another question."

The follower of Hobbes may admit the *de facto*, but deny the *de jure* limitation of sovereign power. He may contend that even if there are many things which the sovereign has no power to do in fact, there is and can be nothing whatever which he has no power to do in law. The law, he may say, can recognise no limitations in that sovereign power from which the law itself proceeds.

In reply to this it is to be observed that the law is merely the theory of things as received and operative within courts of justice. It is the reflection and image of the outer world seen and accepted as authentic by the tribunals of the state. This being so, whatever is possible in fact is possible in law, and more also. Whatsoever limitations of sovereign power may exist in fact may be reflected in and recognised by the law. To allow that *de facto* limitations are possible is to allow the possibility of corresponding limitations *de jure*. If the courts of justice habitually act upon the principle that certain functions or forms of activity do not, according to the constitution, pertain to any organ in the body politic, and therefore lie outside the scope of sovereign power as recognised by the constitution, then that principle is by virtue of its judicial application a true principle of law, and sovereign power is limited in law no less than in fact.

The contrary view is based on that unduly narrow view of the nature of law which identifies it with the command of the sovereign issued to his subjects. In this view, law and legal obligation are co-extensive, and the legal limitation of supreme power appears to involve the subjection of the possessor of it to legal obligations in respect to the exercise of it. This, of course, conflicts with the very definition of sovereign power, and is clearly impossible (g). That sovereign power may be legally controlled within its own province is a self-contradictory proposition; that its province may have legally appointed bounds is a distinct and valid principle.

There is one application of the doctrine of illimitable sovereignty which is of sufficient importance and interest to deserve special notice. Among the chief functions of sovereign power is legislation. It follows from the theory in question, that in every political society there necessarily exists some single authority possessed of unlimited legislative power. This power is, indeed, alleged to be the infallible test of sovereignty. In seeking for that sovereign who, according to

(g) We have already seen that the State may and does owe legal duties to its subjects, but that these duties are necessarily imperfect and unenforceable. *Supra*, § 82.

the doctrine of Hobbes, is to be found somewhere in every body politic, all that is necessary is to discover the person who possesses the power of making and repealing all laws without exception. He and he alone is the sovereign of the state, for he necessarily has power over all, and in all, and is subject to none.

As to this it is to be observed, that the extent of legislative power depends on and is measured by the recognition accorded to it by the tribunals of the state. Any enactment which the law-courts decline to recognise and apply is by that very fact *not law*, and lies beyond the legal competence of the body whose enactment it is. And this is so, whether the enactment proceeds from a borough council or from the supreme legislature. As the law of England actually stands, there are no legal limitations on the legislative power of the Imperial Parliament. No statute passed by it can be rejected as *ultra vires* by any court of law. This legal rule of legislative omnipotence may be wise or it may not; but it is difficult to see by what process of reasoning the jurist can demonstrate that it is theoretically necessary.

At no very remote period it was considered to be the law of England, that a statute made by Parliament was void if contrary to reason and the law of God (*h*). The rule has now been abandoned by the courts, but it seems sufficiently obvious that its recognition involves no theoretical absurdity or impossibility, however inexpedient it may be. Yet it clearly involves the limitation of the power of the legislature by a rule of law. To take another example, the most striking illustration of the legislative omnipotence of the English Parliament is its admitted power of extending the term for which an existing House of Commons has been elected. Delegates appointed by the people for a fixed time have the legal power of extending the period of their own delegated authority. It is difficult to see any theoretical objection to a rule of the opposite import. Why should not the courts of law recognise and apply the principle that an existing Parliament is sovereign only during the limited time for which it was originally appointed, and is destitute of any power of extending that time? And in such a case would not the authority of the supreme legislature be limited by a rule of law?

The exercise of legislative power is admittedly subject to legal conditions; why not, then, to legal limitations? If the law can regulate the manner of the exercise of legislative power, why not also its matter? As the law stands, Parliament may repeal a statute in the same session and in the same manner in which it was passed; only a majority of those voting is required to repeal it. What, then, would be the effect of a statute providing that no statute should be repealed save by an absolute majority of all the members in each House? Would it not create good law, and so prevent either itself or any other statute from being repealed save in manner so provided? What if it is provided further, that no statute shall be repealed until after

(h) For authorities, see § 43.

ten years from the date of its enactment? Is such a statutory provision void? And if valid, will it not be applied by the law-courts, so that any attempt to repeal either it or any other statute less than ten years old will be disregarded, as beyond the competence of Parliament? And if a statute can be made unrepealable for ten years, how is it *legally impossible* that it should be made unrepealable for ever? Such a rule may be very unwise, but by what argument are we to prove that it involves a logical absurdity? (i)

In respect of its legislative omnipotence the English Parliament is almost unique in modern times. Most modern constitutions impose more or less stringent limitations upon the powers of the legislature. In the United States of America neither Congress nor any State Legislature possesses unrestricted powers. They cannot alter the constitutions by which they have been established, and those constitutions expressly withdraw certain matters from their jurisdiction. Where, then, is the sovereignty vested? The reply made is that these constitutions contain provisions for their alteration by some other authority than the ordinary legislature, and that the missing legislative power is therefore to be found in that body to which the right of altering the constitution has been thus entrusted. In the United States the sovereignty, it is said, is vested not in Congress; but in a majority of three-fourths of the State Legislatures; this composite body has absolute power to alter the constitution, and is therefore unbound by any of the provisions of it, and is so possessed of unlimited legislative power.

Now, whenever the constitution has thus entrusted absolute powers of amendment to some authority other than the ordinary legislature, this is a perfectly valid reply. But what shall we say of a constitution which, while it prohibits alteration by the ordinary legislature, provides no other method of effecting constitutional amendments? There is no logical impossibility in such a constitution, yet it would be clearly unalterable in law. That it would be amended in defiance of the law cannot be doubted, for a constitution which will not bend will sooner or later break. But all questions as to civil and supreme power are questions as to what is possible within, not without, the limits of the constitution. If there is no constitution which meets with due observance, there is no body politic, and the theory of political government is deprived of any subject-matter to which it can apply. The necessary *datum* of all problems relating to sovereignty is the existence and observance of a definite scheme of organised structure and operation, and it is with this *datum* and presupposition that we must discuss the question of the extent of legislative power.

(i) The English view is that Parliament cannot fetter itself. See Coke, 4 *Inst.* 43; Blackstone, *Commentaries*, I. 90; Dicey, *Law and the Constitution* (9th ed.) 64 ff.; *Ellen Street Estates, Ltd. v. Minister of Health*, [1934] 1 K. B. 590. Other self-governing parts of the Commonwealth may refuse to accede to this doctrine. Cf. Jennings, *Parliament*, 2, and *supra*, § 43.

Even where a constitution is not wholly, it may be partly unchangeable in law. Certain portions of it may on their original establishment be declared permanent and fundamental, beyond the reach even of the authority to which in other respects the amendment of the constitution is entrusted. Article V of the Constitution of the United States of America provides that no state shall be deprived of its equal suffrage in the Senate without its own consent. Having regard to this provision, what body is there in the United States which has vested in it unlimited legislative power? The same Article provides that certain portions of the Constitution shall be unalterable until the year 1808. What became of sovereign power in the meantime? (k).

(k) As to the possibility of legal limitations of sovereign power, see Jellinek, *Das Recht des modernen Staates*, I. 432—441; Pollock, *Jurisprudence* (6th ed.) 270—273; Sidgwick, *Elements of Politics*, 23—29, 623—638; Bryce, *Studies*, II. 71. "Legal sovereignty", says Lord Bryce, "may be limited, i.e., the law of any given State may not have allotted to any one person or body, or to all the persons or bodies taken together, who enjoys or enjoy supreme legislative or executive power, the right to legislate or to issue special orders on every subject whatever." Brown, *Austinian Theory of Law* 158—164.

The theory of sovereignty occupies a large part of political philosophy. Its history may be studied in Eastwood and Keeton, *The Austinian Theories of Law and Sovereignty*; Bryce, *Studies*, II. 49 ff.; C. E. Merriam, *History of the Theory of Sovereignty since Rousseau* (1900); Holdsworth, *H. E. L.* II. 440—6; IV. 190 ff.; V. 428, 454, 474, 491 ff.; J. W. Jones, *Historical Introduction to the Theory of Law*, ch. 3. For the Middle Ages the classic discussion is Gierke's *Political Theories of the Middle Age*, translated with an Introduction by Maitland (1900). For modern discussions see Brown, *op. cit.* Excursus B; Laski, *Grammar of Politics* (1925), ch. 2; same, *The Foundations of Sovereignty* (1921); same, *Studies in Law and Politics* (1932); Cohen, *Recent Theories of Sovereignty* (1937); Bodenheimer, *Jurisprudence* (1940) 59—70; Pollock, *First Book of Jurisprudence* (6th ed. 1929), Part II, ch. 3; Lucas, *The Corporate Nature of English Sovereignty* (1911); same, *The Primordial Functions of Government and the Legal Status of Sovereignty* (1938); Krabbe, *The Modern Idea of the State* (1922), Intro. by Sabine and Shepard.

APPENDIX II

THE MAXIMS OF THE LAW

LEGAL maxims are the proverbs of the law. They have the same merits and defects as other proverbs, being brief and pithy statements of partial truths. They express general principles without the necessary qualifications and exceptions, and they are therefore much too absolute to be taken as trustworthy guides to the law. Yet they are not without their uses. False and misleading when literally read, these established formulae provide useful means for the expression of leading doctrines of the law in a form which is at the same time brief and intelligible. They constitute a species of legal shorthand, useful to the lawyer, but dangerous to anyone else; for they can be read only in the light of expert knowledge of that law of which they are the elliptical expression.

The language of legal maxims is almost invariably Latin, for they are commonly derived from the civil law, either literally or by adaptation, and most of those which are not to be found in the Roman sources are the invention of medieval jurists. The following is a list of the more familiar and important of them, together with brief comments and references.

1. ACTUS NON FACIT REUM NISI MENS SIT REA

Leges Henrici Primi, V. 28. (Thorpe's *Ancient Laws and Institutes of England*, I. 511.) Coke's *Third Institute*, f. 6.

The act alone does not make the doer of it guilty, unless it is done with a guilty mind. Material without formal wrongdoing is not a ground of liability. The presence either of wrongful intent or of culpable negligence is a necessary condition of responsibility. See §§ 130, 135, 147.

2. ADVERSUS EXTRANEOS VITIOSA POSSESSIO PRODESSE SOLET

D. 41, 2. 53.

Prior possession is a good title of ownership against all who cannot show a better. In the civil law, however, from which this maxim is derived, it has a more special application, and relates to the conditions of possessory remedies. See § 164.

3. APICES JURIS NON SUNT JURA

10 Co. Rep. 126. Cf. D. 17. 1. 29. 4: Non congruit de apicibus juris disputare.

Legal principles must not be carried to their most extreme consequences, regardless of equity and good sense. A principle valid within certain limits becomes false when applied beyond these limits. The law must avoid the falsehood of extremes.

4. CESSANTE RATIONE LEGIS CESSAT LEX IPSA

In the application of this maxim we must distinguish between common and statute law.

(1) *Common law.* A legal principle must be read in the light of the reason for which it was established. It must not be carried further than this reason warrants, and if the *ratio legis* wholly fails, the law will fail also.

(2) *Statute law.* To statute law the maxim has only a limited application, for such law depends upon the authority of the *littera legis*. It is only when the letter of the law is imperfect, that recourse may be had to the reason of it as a guide to its due interpretation. The maxim in question, therefore, is valid only as a rule of restrictive interpretation. The complementary rule of extensive interpretation is, *Ubi eadem ratio ibi idem jus*. See Vangerow, I. sect. 25.

5. COGITATIONIS POENAM NEMO PATITUR

D. 48. 19. 18.

The thoughts and intents of men are not punishable. The law takes notice only of the overt and external act. In exceptional cases, however, the opposite maxim is applicable: *Voluntas reputatur pro facto*—The law takes the will for the deed. See § 140.

6. COMMUNIS ERROR FACIT JUS

Coke's *Fourth Inst.* f. 240. *Cf.* D. 33. 10. 3. 5: *Error jus facit.*

A precedent, even though erroneous, will make valid law, if its authority has been so widely accepted and relied on that its reversal has become inexpedient in the interests of justice. See § 61.

7. CUIUS EST SOLUM EIUS EST USQUE AD COELUM

Co. Litt. 4 a. 9 Co. Rep. 54. See § 158.

8. DE MINIMIS NON CURAT LEX

Cro. Eliz. 353. *Cf.* the medieval maxim of the Civilians: *Minima non curat praetor*. Dernburg, *Pandekten*, I. § 140, n. 5.

The law takes no account of trifles. This is a maxim which relates to the ideal, rather than to the actual law. The tendency to attribute undue importance to mere matters of form—the failure to distinguish adequately between the material and the immaterial—is a characteristic defect of legal systems.

9. EX NUDO PACTO NON ORITUR ACTIO

Cf. D. 2. 14. 7. 4: *Nuda pactio obligationem non parit.* C. 4. 65. 27: *Ex nudo pacto . . . actionem jure nostro nasci non potuisse.*

In English law this maxim expresses the necessity of a legal consideration for the validity of a contract. *Nudum pactum* is *pactum sine causa promittendi*. In the civil law, however, the maxim means, on the contrary, that an agreement, to become binding, must fall within one of the recognised classes of legally valid contracts. There was no general principle that an agreement, as such, had the force of law. See § 127.

10. EX TURPI CAUSA NON ORITUR ACTIO

Cf. D. 47. 2. 12. 1: *Nemo de improbitate sua consequitur actionem.*

An agreement contrary to law or morals can give rise to no right of action in any party to it, either for the enforcement of it, or for the recovery of property parted with in pursuance of it. *Cf.* the maxim: *In pari delicto potior est conditio defendentis*. See § 127.

11. IGNORANTIA FACTI EXCUSAT, IGNORANTIA JURIS NON EXCUSAT

Cf. D. 22. 6. 9. pr. *Regula est juris quidem ignorantiam cuique nocere, facti vero ignorantiam non nocere.* See §§ 149, 150.

12. IMPOSSIBILIMUM NULLA OBLIGATIO EST

D. 50. 17. 185.

Otherwise: *Lex non cogit ad impossibilia*. Impossibility is an excuse for the non-performance of an obligation—a rule of limited application.

13. IN JURE NON REMOTA CAUSA SED PROXIMA SPECTATUR

Bacon's Maxims of the Law, 1.

A wrongdoer is not responsible for all the harmful consequences of his unlawful act. Liability exists only when the casual connection is regarded by the law as sufficiently direct. All other damage is said to be too remote.

14. IN PARI CAUSA POTIOR EST CONDITIO POSSIDENTIS

Cf. D. 50. 17. 128. pr.: *In pari causa possessor potior haberi debet.* Also D. 20. 1. 10, D. 6. 2. 9. 4.

Possession and ownership—fact and right—enjoyment and title—are presumed by the law to be coincident. Every man may therefore keep what he has got, until and unless some one else can prove that he himself has a better title to it. See § 110.

15. IN PARI DELICTO POTIOR EST CONDITIO DEFENDENTIS

Cf. D. 50. 17. 154: Cum par delictum est duorum, semper operatur petitor.

Identical in effect with the maxim: Ex turpi causa non oritur actio.

16. INTER ARMA LEGES SILENT

Cicero, Pro Milone, IV. 10.

This maxim has a double application: (1) As between the state and its external enemies, the laws are absolutely silent. No alien enemy has any claim to the protection of the laws or of the courts of justice. He is destitute of any legal standing before the law, and the government may do as it pleases with him and his. (2) Even as regards the rights of subjects and citizens, the law may be put to silence by necessity in times of civil disturbance. Necessitas non habet legem. Extrajudicial force may lawfully supersede the ordinary process and course of law, whenever it is needed for the protection of the state and the public order against illegal violence.

17. INVITO BENEFICIUM NON DATUR

D. 50. 17. 69.

The law confers upon a man no rights or benefits which he does not desire. Whoever waives, abandons, or disclaims a right will lose it. See § 125.

18. JURIS PRÆCEPTA SUNT HAEC: HONESTE VIVERE, ALTERUM NON LAEDERE, SUUM CUIQUE TRIBUERE

D. 1. 1. 10. 1. Just. Inst. 1. 1. 3.

"These are the precepts of the law: to live honestly, to hurt no one, and to give to every man his own." Attempts have been sometimes made to exhibit these three *præcepta juris* as based on a logical division of the sphere of legal obligations into three parts. This, however, is not the case. They are simply different modes of expressing the same thing, and each of them is wide enough to cover the whole field of legal duty. The third of them, indeed, is simply a variant of the received definition of justice itself: *Justitia est constans et perpetua voluntas jus suum cuique tribuendi*. D. 1. 1. 10. pr. Just. Inst. 1. 1. 1.

19. JUS PUBLICUM PRIVATORUM PACTIS MUTARI NON POTEST

D. 2. 14. 38. *Cf.* D. 50. 17. 45. 1.

By *jus publicum* is meant that portion of the law in which the public interests are concerned, and which, therefore, is of absolute authority and not liable to be superseded by conventional law made by the agreement of private persons. *Cf.* the maxim: *Modus et conventio vincunt legem*. See § 127.

20. MODUS ET CONVENTIO VINCUNT LEGEM

Co. Litt. 19a.

The general law may within certain limits be derogated from by the agreement of the persons concerned. Agreement is a source of conventional law between the parties. The term *modus* in this maxim means conditions, limitations, or restrictions imposed on the title to property by a grant, settlement, will, or other disposition. He who takes the property must take it *sub modo*—on the terms on which it is given to him. *Modus legem dat donatione.* Co. Litt. 19a.

21. NECESSITAS NON HABET LEGEM

Cf. Bacon's Maxims of the Law, 5: *Necessitas inducit privilegium.* A recognition of the *jus necessitatis*. See § 141.

22. NEMINEM OPORTET LEGIBUS ESSE SAPIENTIOREM

Bacon, *De Augmentis*, Lib. 8. Aph. 58. *Cf.* Aristotle, *Rhetoric*, I. 15. 12.

It is not permitted to be wiser than the laws. In the words of Hobbes (*Leviathan*, ch. 29), "the law is the public conscience", and every citizen owes to it an undivided allegiance, not to be limited by any private views of justice or expediency. See § 18.

23. NEMO PLUS JURIS AD ALIUM TRANSFERRE POTEST, QUAM IPSE HABERET
D. 50. 17. 54.

The title of an assignee can be no better than that of his assignor. *Cf.* the maxim: *Nemo dat qui non habet.* See § 166.

24. NEMO TENETUR SE IPSUM ACCUSARE

The law compels no man to be his own accuser or to give any testimony against himself—a principle now limited to the criminal law. See § 178.

25. NEMO DAT QUI NON HABET

No man can give a better title than that which he himself has. See § 166.

26. NON OMNE QUOD LICET HONESTUM EST

D. 50. 17. 144.

All things that are lawful are not honourable. The law is constrained by the necessary imperfections of its methods to confer many rights and allow many liberties which a just and honourable man will not claim or exercise.

27. NULLA POENA SINE LEGE

There must be no punishment except in accordance with the law. Penal laws must not be retrospective. See § 45.

28. NULLUS VIDETUR DOLO FACERE, QUI SUO JURE UTITUR

D. 50. 17. 55.

A malicious or improper motive cannot make wrongful in law an act which would be rightful apart from such motive. The rule, however, is subject to important limitations. See § 139.

29. QUI FACIT PER ALIUM, FACIT PER SE

Co. Litt. 258 a.

He who does a thing by the instrumentality of another is considered as if he had acted in his own person.

30. QUI PRIOR EST TEMPORE POTIOR EST JURE

Cf. C. 8. 17. 3: Sicut prior est tempore, ita potior jure.

Where two rights or titles conflict, the earlier prevails, unless there is some reason for preferring the later. See § 88.

31. QUOD FIERI NON DEBET, FACTUM VALET

5 Co. Rep. 38.

A thing which ought not to have been done may nevertheless be perfectly valid when it is done. The penalty of nullity is not invariably imposed upon illegal acts. For example, a marriage may be irregularly celebrated, and yet valid; and a precedent may be contrary to established law, and yet authoritative for the future.

32. RES JUDICATA PRO VERITATE ACCIPITUR

D. 1. 5. 25.

A judicial decision is conclusive evidence *inter partes* of the matter decided.

33. RESPONDEAT SUPERIOR

Coke's *Fourth Inst.* 114.

Every master must answer for the defaults of his servant as for his own. See § 152.

34. SIC UTERE TUO UT ALIENUM NON LAEDAS

9 Co. Rep. 59.

Every man must so use his own property as not to harm that of another. This is the necessary qualification of the maxim that every man may do as he will with his own. See § 157.

35. SUMMUM JUS SUMMA INJURIA

Cicero, *De Off.* I. 10. 33.

The rigour of the law, untempered by equity, is not justice but the denial of it.

36. SUPERFICIES SOLO CEDIT

Gaius, 2. 73.

Whatever is attached to the land forms part of it. *Cf. Just. Inst.* 2. 1. 29: *Omne quod inaedificatur solo cedit.* See § 153.

37. UBI EADEM RATIO, IBI IDEM JUS

This is the complement of the maxim, *Cessante ratione legis, cessat lex ipsa.* A rule of the common law should be extended to all cases to which the same *ratio* applies, and in the case of imperfect statute law extensive interpretation based on the *ratio legis* is permissible. See Vangerow, I. sect. 25.

38. UBI JUS IBI REMEDIUM

Cf. the maxim of the Civilians. Ubi jus non deest nec actio deesse debet. Puchta, II. sect. 208, n.b.

Whenever there is a right, there should also be an action for its enforcement. That is to say, the substantive law should determine the scope of the law of procedure, and not *vice versa*. Legal procedure should be sufficiently elastic and comprehensive to afford the requisite means for the protection of all rights which the substantive law sees fit to recognise. In early systems this is far from being the case. We there find remedies and forms of action determining rights, rather than rights determining remedies. The maxim of primitive law is rather, *Ubi remedium ibi jus.*

39. VIGILANTIBUS NON DORMIENTIBUS JURA SUBVENIUNT

Cf. D. 42. 8. 24: Jus civile vigilantibus scriptum est.

The law is provided for those who wake, not for those who slumber and sleep. He who neglects his rights will lose them. It is on this principle that the law of prescription is founded. See § 165.

40. VOLENTI NON FIT INJURIA

Cf. D. 47. 10. 1. 5: Nulla injuria est, quae in volentem fiat.

No man who consents to a thing will be suffered thereafter to complain of it as an injury. He cannot waive his right and then complain of its infringement.

APPENDIX III

THE DIVISIONS OF THE LAW

ENGLISH law possesses no received and authentic scheme of orderly arrangement. Exponents of this system have commonly shown themselves too little careful of appropriate division and classification, and too tolerant of chaos. Yet we must guard ourselves against the opposite extreme, for theoretical jurists have sometimes fallen into the contrary error of attaching undue importance to the element of form. They have esteemed too highly both the possibility and the utility of ordering the world of law in accordance with the straitest principles of logical development. It has been said by a philosopher concerning human institutions in general, and therefore concerning the law and its arrangement, that they exist for the uses of mankind, and not in order that the angels in heaven may delight themselves with the view of their perfections. In the classification of legal principles the requirements of practical convenience must prevail over those of abstract theory. The claims of logic must give way in great measure to those of established nomenclature and familiar usage; and the accidents of historical development must often be suffered to withstand the rules of scientific order. Among the various points of view of which most branches of the law admit, there are few, if any, which may be wisely adopted throughout their whole extent, and among the various alternative principles of classification, expedience allows of no rigidly exclusive and consistent choice. There are few distinctions, however important in their leading applications, which may not rightly, as they fade towards the boundary line, be replaced by others which there possess a deeper significance. We may rest content, therefore, if, within the limits imposed by the needful conformity to received speech and usage, each portion of the law is dealt with in such of its aspects as best reveals its most important characters and relations, and in such order as is most consistent with lucid and concise exposition.

1. *The Introductory Portion of the Law*

The first portion of the *corpus juris* is of an introductory nature, consisting of all those rules which by virtue of their preliminary character or of the generality of their application cannot be appropriately relegated to any special department. This introduction may be divided into four parts. The first of them is concerned with the sources of law. It comprises all those rules in accordance with which new law obtains recognition and the older law is modified or abrogated. It is here, for example, that we must look for the legal

doctrine as to the operation of precedent, custom, and legislation. The second part of the Introduction deals with the interpretation of law. Here we shall find the rules in accordance with which the language of the law is to be construed, and also the definitions of those terms which are fitly dealt with here, because common to several departments of the law. In the third place the Introduction comprises the principles of private international law—the principles, that is to say, which determine the occasional exclusion of English law from English courts of justice, and the recognition and enforcement therein of some foreign system which possesses for some reason a better claim to govern the case in hand. Fourthly and lastly, it is necessary to treat as introductory a number of miscellaneous rules which are of so general an application as not to be appropriately dealt with in any special department of the legal system.

2. *Private and Public Law*

After the Introduction comes the body of Private Law as opposed to that of Public Law. By general consent this Roman distinction between *jus privatum* and *jus publicum* is accepted as the most fundamental division of the *corpus juris*. Public law comprises the rules which specially relate to the structure, powers, rights, and activities of the state. Private law includes all the residue of legal principles. It comprises all those rules which specially concern the subjects of the state in their relations to each other, together with those rules which are common to the state and its subjects. In many of its actions and relations the state stands on the same level as its subjects, and submits itself to the ordinary principles of private law. It owns land and chattels, makes contracts, employs agents and servants, and enters into various forms of commercial undertaking; and in respect of all these matters it differs little in its juridical position from its own subjects. Public law, therefore, is not the whole of the law that is applicable to the state and to its relations with its subjects, but only those parts of it which are different from the private law concerning the subjects of the state and their relations to each other. For this reason private law precedes public in the order of exposition. The latter presupposes a knowledge of the former (a).

The two divisions of public law are constitutional and administrative law. It is impossible, however, to draw any rigid line between these two, for they differ merely in the degree of importance pertaining to their subject-matters. Constitutional law deals with the structure, powers, and functions of the supreme power in the state, together with those of all the more important of the subordinate departments of government. Administrative law, on the other hand,

(a) On the distinction between public and private law see J. W. Jones, *Historical Introduction to the Theory of Law* (1940) ch. 5.

is concerned with the multitudinous forms and instruments in and through which the lower ranges of governmental activity manifest themselves.

3. *Civil and Criminal Law*

Within the domain of private law the division which calls for primary recognition is that between civil and criminal law. Civil law is that which is concerned with the enforcement of rights, while criminal law is concerned with the punishment of wrongs. We have examined and rejected the opinion that crimes are essentially offences against the state or the community at large, while civil wrongs are committed against private persons. According to the acceptance or rejection of this opinion, criminal law pertains either to public or to private law. Our classification of it as private is unaffected by the fact that certain crimes, such as treason and sedition, are offences against the state. As already explained, logical consistency in the division of the law is attainable only if we are prepared to disregard the requirements of practical convenience. Greater weight is wisely attributed to the fact that treason and robbery are both crimes, than to the fact that the one is an offence against the state and the other an offence against an individual.

Just as the law which is common to both state and subject is considered under the head of private law alone, so the law which is common to crimes and to civil injuries is dealt with under the head of civil law alone. It is obvious that there is a great body of legal principles common to the two departments. The law as to theft involves the whole law as to the acquisition of property in chattels, and the law of bigamy involves a considerable portion of the law of marriage. The arrangement sanctioned by usage and convenience is, therefore, to expound first the civil law in its entirety, and thereafter, under the title of criminal law, such portions of the law of crime as are not already comprehended in the former department.

4. *Substantive Law and the Law of Procedure*

Civil and criminal law are each divisible into two branches, namely substantive law and the law of procedure, a distinction the nature of which has already been sufficiently considered.

5. *Divisions of the Substantive Civil Law*

The substantive civil law may be conveniently divided, by reference to the nature of the rights with which it is concerned, into three great branches, namely the law of property, the law of obligations, and the law of status. The first deals with proprietary rights *in rem*, the second with proprietary rights *in personam*, and the third with personal as opposed to proprietary rights.

6. *The Law of Property*

Although the distinction between the law of property and that of obligations is a fundamental one, which must be recognised in any orderly scheme of classification, there is a great part of the substantive civil law which is common to both of these branches of it. Thus the law of inheritance or succession concerns all kinds of proprietary rights whether *in rem* or *in personam*. So also with the law of trusts and that of securities. In general the most convenient method of dealing with these common elements is to consider them once for all in the law of property, thus confining the law of obligations to those rules which are peculiar to obligations; just as the elements common to civil and criminal law are dealt with in the civil law, and those common to private and public law in private law.

The law of property is divisible into the following chief branches: (1) the law of corporeal property, namely the ownership of land and chattels; (2) the law of immaterial objects of property, such as patents, trade-marks, and copyrights; (3) the law of encumbrances or *jura in re aliena*, such as tenancies, servitudes, trusts, and securities; (4) the law of testamentary and intestate succession.

7. *The Law of Obligations*

The law of obligations comprises the law of contracts, the law of torts, and the law of those miscellaneous obligations which are neither contractual nor delictual. It may be convenient to consider under the same head the law of insolvency, inasmuch as the essential significance of insolvency is to be found in its operation as a method of discharging debts and liabilities. Alternatively, however, this branch of law may be included in the law of property, inasmuch as it deals with one mode of divesting proprietary rights in general. In the law of obligations is also to be classed the law of companies, this being essentially a development of the law of the contract of partnership. Under the head of companies are to be comprised all forms of *contractual* incorporation, all other bodies corporate pertaining either to public law or to special departments of private law with which they are exclusively concerned. The *general* doctrine as to corporations is to be found in the introductory department of the law.

8. *The Law of Status*

The law of status is divisible into two branches dealing respectively with domestic and extra-domestic status. The first of these is the law of family relations, and deals with the nature, acquisition, and loss of all those personal rights, duties, liabilities, and disabilities which are involved in domestic relationship. It falls into three divisions, concerned respectively with marriage, parentage, and guardianship. The second branch of the law of status is concerned with all the personal rights, duties, liabilities, and disabilities, which are external to the law of the family. It deals, for example, with the

personal status of minors (in relation to others than their parents), of married women (in relation to others than their husbands and children), of lunatics, aliens, convicts, and any other classes of persons whose personal condition is sufficiently characteristic to call for separate consideration (b).

There is one class of personal rights which ought in logical strictness to be dealt with in the law of status, but is commonly and more conveniently considered elsewhere—those rights, namely, which are called *natural*, because they belong to all men from their birth, instead of being subsequently acquired: for example, the rights of life, liberty, reputation, and freedom from bodily harm. These are personal rights and not proprietary; they constitute part of a man's status, not part of his estate; yet we seldom find them set forth in the law of status (c). The reason is that such rights, being natural and not acquired, call for no consideration, except in respect of their violation. They are adequately dealt with, therefore, under the head of civil and criminal wrongs. The exposition of the law of libel, for example, which is contained in the law of torts, involves already the proposition that a man has a right to his reputation; and there is no occasion, therefore, for a bald statement to that effect in the later law of status (d).

(b) No small part of this branch of the law of status, however, may be conveniently dealt with in connection with various departments of the law of property and obligations. It may be best, for example, to discuss the contractual capacity of different classes of persons in the law of contracts, instead of in the law of the personal status of these persons.

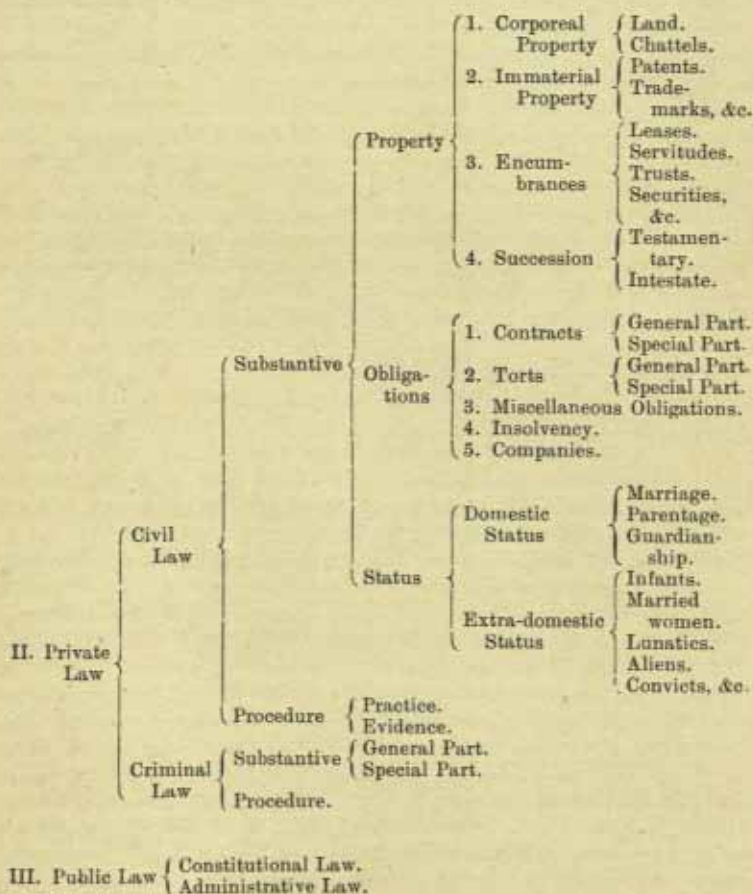
(c) Blackstone, however, is sufficiently scrupulous in respect of logical arrangement to include them in this department of the law.

(d) For a further discussion of the subject of classification see Hall, *Readings in Jurisprudence* (1938) ch. 14.

SUMMARY

THE DIVISIONS OF THE LAW

- Introduction { A. Sources of the Law.
B. Interpretation and Definitions.
C. Private International Law.
D. Miscellaneous Introductory Principles.



APPENDIX IV

THE FALLIBILITY OF THE HOUSE OF LORDS

[BY THE EDITOR]

It was said in discussing the binding force of precedents in the House of Lords that many such precedents pass with little or no judicial questioning though objectionable in point of policy, principle or justice. The following is a list of some of these decisions that have come under weighty criticism. *Jorden v. Money* (1854), 5 H. L. C. 185, was thus commented upon by MacKinnon, L.J., with quiet humour: "In that case the voices of infallibility, by a narrow majority, held that though a misrepresentation of fact may bind a man, a mere falsified statement of his future intention does not. We were told by Mr. Denning that the Law Reform Committee has had the audacity to propose the legislative abolition of this refinement, but for us [in the Court of Appeal] it remains binding": *Salisbury v. Gilmore*, [1942] 2 K. B. 38, at 51; cf. *Cheshire and Fifoot* in (1947), 63 L. Q. R. at 286. *Bank of Ireland v. Trustees of Evans' Charities* (1855), 5 H. L. C. 389 is another unfortunate decision which seems to excuse the customer of a bank in some circumstances of responsibility for careless conduct: see Williams, *Joint Torts and Contributory Negligence*, 211. *Blades v. Higgs* (1865), 11 H. L. C. 621 affirmed without relevant comment an extraordinary decision of the court below allowing the use of force by way of recaption against a *bona fide* purchaser; the decision is contrary to both medieval authority and modern public policy: see *Devoe v. Long*, [1951] 1 D. L. R. 203, where the Appeal Division of the New Brunswick Supreme Court refused to follow it. *The Khedive* (1882), 7 App. Cas. 795 adopted a most inconvenient rule of interpretation in maritime matters: see Williams, *op. cit.*, 466 *et seq.* *Mayor of Bradford v. Pickles*, [1895] A. C. 587 inhibited the development of torts of malice and a doctrine of abuse of rights. *Sinclair v. Brougham*, [1914] A. C. 398, which was castigated by Lord Wright in his *Essays and Addresses*, restricted the development of quasi-contract. *Admiralty Commissioners v. S.S. Amerika*, [1917] A. C. 38 was one of the few judicial decisions which moved Sir William Holdsworth to a spirit of criticism: see his *History*, vol. III, p. 676. *D. P. P. v. Beard*, [1920] A. C. 479 is thought by some to have been a retrogressive decision in the field of constructive murder: see Turner in Russell, *Crimes*, 10th ed., 556. *Fairman's Case*, [1923] A. C. 74 and *Jacob's Case*, [1950] A. C. 361 have been weightily criticised (see Goodhart in (1950), 66 L. Q. R. 374 and the Law Revision Committee, Cmd. 9305 of 1954, p. 9), and are due for elimination if the Bill on Occupier's Liability now before Parliament becomes law. *Roberts v. Hopwood*, [1925] A. C. 578 is generally regarded as an unjustified exercise of judicial control; for a long time it had little

effect on other cases, but it has now been followed in the discriminatory fares' case, *Prescott v. Birmingham Corp.*, [1955] Ch. 210 (C. A.); see commentary in 18 M. L. R. 161; 72 L. Q. R. 237; [1955] C. L. J. 135. *S.S. Singleton Abbey v. S.S. Paludina*, [1927] A. C. 16 has been condemned as an unduly restrictive interpretation of the consequences of a tort: see Eldridge, *Modern Tort Problems*, 212 n. 16. *Elliott v. Joicey*, [1935] A. C. 209, where it was held that an unborn child counted as issue under a will only where there was a direct gift to the child, is not in accord with the spirit of other decisions (see Winfield in (1942), 4 Univ. of Toronto L. J. at 279, reprinted in (1942), 8 C. L. J. at 77; (1952), 68 L. Q. R. 299). *Duncan v. Cammell, Laird & Co.*, [1942] A. C. 624, a case on discovery against the Crown, was weightily criticised in the law reviews, but, being favourable to the executive, it was in effect adopted in the Crown Proceedings Act. This would probably prevent its reversal by the House even if the binding rule of precedent were abrogated; but the House has refused to extend it to Scotland: *Glasgow Corp'n. v. Central Land Board*, 1956 S. L. T. 41. *Chichester Diocesan Fund v. Simpson*, [1944] 2 All E. R. 60, together with previous cases, decided that a gift for "charitable or benevolent purposes" was not charitable; the Charitable Trusts (Validation) Act, 1954, unfortunately does not affect this decision as a general principle of law. *Searle v. Wallbank*, [1947] A. C. 341, where it was finally settled that there was no general duty to prevent cattle straying on the highway, resulted in the setting up of a Committee which recommended a change in the law (Cmd. 8746 of 1953); its report has not been implemented. *London Graving Dock Co. v. Horton*, [1951] A. C. 737, a retrogressive decision, will disappear if the Occupiers' Liability Bill becomes law. *Howell v. Falmouth Boat Construction, Ltd.*, [1951] A. C. 837 was a decision arrived at in ignorance of important American authorities which lay down a rule that has much to commend it: see Williams, *Criminal Law: The General Part*, 395.

It has seemed worth while giving this list, which could be extended, because it is frequently assumed by lawyers that the House of Lords is not only legally infallible but in fact always right. When it becomes generally recognised that every human tribunal is fallible, we may be on the way to a modification of the present very strict doctrine of precedent.

INDEX

- ACCESSORY rights, distinguished from principal, 297
- Accident, 438
- Actio in rem and in personam, 287
- Actio personalis moritur cum persona, 443
- Acts, 399-407
- Acts in the law, 380. *See* Agreements.
- Acts of the law, 381
- Acts of Parliament,
public and private, 39
void if unreasonable, 141n.
See Legislation, Statute-law.
- Actus non facit reum, etc., 407-408, 525. *See* Mens rea.
- Administration of justice,
civil and criminal, 109-115
necessity of, 105-107
origin of, 107-109
penal and remedial proceedings, 128-129
possibility of, without law, 43
secondary functions of courts of law, 129-131
specific and sanctional enforcement of rights, 124-127
- Administrative tribunals,
precedents in, 174-175
- Aequitas sequitur legem, 82
- Agere non valenti non currit praescriptio, 478n.
- Agreements,
classes of, 385-387
coercion, effect of, 391
consideration, want of, 391-395
constitutive and abrogative power of, 136, 385-387
error, effect of, 390
formal and informal, 389
grounds of operation, 384
illegal, 389
importance of, as vestitive fact, 383
legislation, compared with, 385
nature of, 382
source of law, 89, 136
title to property, 479
unenforceable, 387n.
unilateral and bilateral, 383n.
void and voidable, 387-395
- Aghrens,
Cours de Droit Naturel, 10n.
definition of property, 452
proprietary rights, 289n.
- Alfred, laws of King, on private war, 109n.
- Alienative facts, 379
- Allen, Sir C. K., discussion of custom, 246n.
- American Law Institute's Restatement, 151
- American "realists," 46n., 127n.
- Analogy, source of judicial principles, 236
- Anglo-Saxon law, 45, 109
- Animals,
legal personality, 64, 351
liability of owner of, 351, 439
punishment of, in early law, 351
- Apices juris, 525
- Appeals of felony, abolition of, 109n.
- Aquinas,
agreement as a title of right, on, 384
distinction between jus naturale and jus positivum, 37n.
equity, on, 84
lex aeterna, on, 25
- Aristotle,
arbitrium judicis, on, 51
being wiser than the laws, on, 48, 529
law and equity, on, 83
law of nature, on, 28
- Assignment. *See* Transfer.
- Assumpsit, 501
- Attempts, criminal, 418
- Attornment, 338
- Austin,
definition of law, 23
general jurisprudence, 13
illimitable sovereignty, 519
legislation, use of the term, 139
public and private wrongs, 113n.
- Authority of law, 58-60
- Autonomic law,
product of autonomous legislation, 90
relation to conventional law, 143
- Azo, on equity, 84n.
- Bacon, Sir F.,
arbitrium judicis, on, 51
being wiser than the laws, on, 48n.
- Battle, trial by, 109
- Baudry-Lacantinerie,
corporeal and incorporeal possession, 342n.

- Baudry-Lacantinerie—*cont.*
 movable and immovable property.
 458n.
 proprietary rights, on, 266n.
- Beneficial ownership. *See* Trusts.
- Bentham,
 compulsory examination of accused
 persons, 515n.
 limitations of sovereign power, 519
 natural rights, 262
 objections to case-law, 147n.
 property, use of the term, 452
- Blackstone,
 civil and criminal wrongs, on, 113
 customary law, on, 233
 definition of law, 20, 57
 implied contracts, 498
 property, use of the term, 451
 supremacy of the Imperial Parlia-
 ment, on, 141
 written and unwritten law, on, 140
- Bodin, his theory of sovereignty, 517
- Bona vacantia, 483
- Bracton, on equity, 84n.
- Brown, W. Jethro, on sovereignty,
 524n.
- Bruns, theory of possession, 342n.
- Bryce,
 sources of law, on, 54n.
 sovereignty, on, 520n.
- Burlamaqui, on natural law, 10
- By-laws,
 a form of special law, 90
 void if unreasonable, 242
- CAMPBELL, A. H., 299n.
- Canon law, 36
- Capacity, double, 356
- Certainty of law, 181-183, 217
- Cessante ratiō legis, etc., 526
- Chancery, precedents in, 164. *See*
 Equity.
- Charge, 469-471
- Chattel, meanings of, 461
- Chose in action,
 history of the term, 489
 incorporeal thing, 305
 nature of, 489
- Christian Thomasius, on law of
 nature, 29
- Cicero,
 jus and aequitas, 84, 87n.
 law of nature, 28
 subjection to the law as the means
 of freedom, 48
- Civil law,
 different meanings of, 36, 110, 534
 positive law, superseded by, 36
- Civil law—*cont.*
 the subject-matter of jurisprudence,
 2
See Law.
- Civil wrongs. *See* Wrongs, Liability.
- Codification, 150
- Cogitationis poenam nemo patitur,
 526
- Coke,
 corporations aggregate and sole,
 360
 customary law, 247
 distinction between custom and pre-
 scription, 247
 ownership of the space above the
 surface of land, 456
 personality of unborn children, 354-
 355
- Common law, 95
 different uses of the term, 81, 97
 equity, and, 81-87
 special law, and, 95
See Jus commune.
- Communis error facit jus, 217, 526
- Compensation, one of the objects of
 civil justice, 126. *See* Penal
 redress.
- Complexity of the law, 50
- Compossessio, 336
- Conditions precedent and subsequent,
 315
- Conflict of laws, 88-89
- Conservatism of the law, 50
- Consideration, 391
- Constitution of the state, 99-103,
 extra legal origin of, 102
 unchangeable, 521
- Constitutional law,
 constitutional fact, and, 101-103
 nature of, 99
- Constitutum possessorium, 338
- Constructive delivery, 338
- Constructive intention, 428
- Contingent ownership, 313
- Contracts. *See* Agreements.
- Conventional law,
 created by agreement, 31, 89
 reasons for allowance of, 384-385
- Co-ownership, 306
- Copyright,
 nature and kinds of, 462
 subject-matter, 268
- Corporations, 359-372
 king a corporation sole, 374
 state not a corporation aggregate,
 372-374
- Corporeal property, 301, 304, 452,
 462n.
- Corporeal things, 304, 462n.

- Correality. *See* Solidary obligations.
- Court of Appeal, bound by its own decisions, 188-192
- Court of Criminal Appeal, precedents in, 173-174, 192-194
- Crimes. *See* Wrongs, Liability.
- Crown of England, claims against, 129
legal person, not, 374
- Cujus est solum, ejus est usque ad coelum, 456, 526
- Culpa, lata and levis, 427
- Custody distinguished from possession, 318
- Custom, 31, 88, 232-254
- Customary law. *See* Custom.
- DAMAGES, measure of, 449
- Damnum sine injuria, 405
- De minimis non curat lex, 50, 526
- De mortuis nil nisi bonum, 354
- Dead bodies, indignities offered to, 353
ownership, 353
- Decisions, judicial. *See* Precedents.
- Delivery of possession, actual and constructive, 337
attornment, 338
constitutio possessorium, 338
ownership, a mode of transferring, 473
traditio brevi manu, 338
- Dernburg, possession, 326n.
proprietary rights, 289n.
- Detention, distinguished from possession, 318
- Dicta, judicial, their nature and authority, 166
- Diligence, archaic use of the term to mean care, 421n.
- Diogenes Laertius, anecdote of Solon, 121n.
- Disability, 276
- Discretion, judicial, 43-53
- Distinguishing precedents, 178, 229
- Divestitive facts, 379
- Dolus, culpa lata, relation to, 438
meaning of, 416
- Dominant rights. *See* Encumbrances.
- Dominium, its significance in Roman law, 287n.
- Droit, ethical and juridical significations of, 38
loi, distinguished from, 37
Droit de suite, 481n.
- Duress, 391
- Duties, alleged distinction between absolute and relative duties, 264
correlation of rights and duties, 264
defined, 260
moral and legal, 260
of imperfect obligation, 260, 280-282
- EASEMENTS. *See* Servitudes.
- Ehrlich, 16
- Ejusdem generis rule, 159
- Electricity, deemed a chattel in law, 461n.
- Emphyteusis, 466n.
- Employer's liability, 441
- Enacted law, distinguished from unenacted, 135. *See* Statute law.
- Encumbrances, 293-297
incorporeal property, always, 303
often accessory to other rights, 297
ownership, distinguished from, 300
- Equitable rights, distinguished from legal, 297, 481
- Equitable ownership, 310
- Equity, 81-87
- Equity of a statute, 87n.
- Equity of redemption, 469
- Error, effect of, on agreements, 390
- Estate, distinguished from status or personal condition, 290-291. *See* Proprietary rights.
- Evidence, 509
- Ex facto oritur jus, 232, 475
- Ex nudo pacto non oritur actio, 391, 527
- Ex turpi causa non oritur actio, 527
- Executors, 482
- Expiation, as the end of punishment, 123
- Expressio unius est exclusio alterius, 155
- Expressum facit cessare tacitum, 156
- Extinctive facts, 379
- Extra-judicial enforcement, 127
- FACT, distinguished from law, 66-74
- Facts, difficulty of proving, 53
- Feud, 109
- Fictio juris, 72-73
- Fiducia, 471
- Finding, as a title of right, 324-325, 329-331
- Fixtures, 457
- Flexibility of the law, advantages of, 51-52
- Forbearance, distinguished from omission, 399

- Foreign law. *See* Conflict of Laws.
 Formalism of the law, 50
 Fraud,
 gross negligence, relation to, 428-429
 in law and in fact, 72
 meanings of, 416
 Freie Rechtsfindung, 53n.
 French law,
 possession, 342
 possession vaut titre, 481n.
 requirement of cause in a contract, 394
 precedents in, 162n.
 GAIUS, on natural law, 29
 General law, 87
 Generality of law, 38-41
 German law,
 malicious exercise of rights, 418n.
 mediate possession, 332n.
 precedents, 162n.
 Gierke, on the nature of corporations, 363n.
 Glanville, on equity, 84n.
 Golden rule, 157
 Goodhart, on possession, 330
 Good-will, a form of immaterial property, 463
 Grant, distinguished from assignment, 385
 Gurvitch, 16
 HALE,
 customary law, 233
 precedents, 163-164
 Hereditas jacens, 266-267, 352n.
 High Court, precedents in, 169-173
 Hobbes,
 bellum omnium contra omnes, 107
 definition of law, 23, 105
 definition of an oath, 515
 jus necessitatis, 420
 men and arms make the force of the laws, 105
 property, use of term, 451
 sovereignty,
 limitations of, 521
 theory of, 517
 Hohfeld, 270n., 285
 Holmes,
 act, definition of, 402
 intention, definition of, 410n.
 sanctioning rights, 127n.
 sources of judicial principles, 226
 Hooker,
 impartiality of the law, 48
 law, definition of, 20
 Hooker—*cont.*
 law of nature, 26, 29
 laws as the voices of right reason, 46
 House of Lords,
 bound by its own decisions, 175-188
 formerly a supreme judicature, 519
 Hypotheca, 471
 IGNORANCE of law, 21n., 435, 527
 Ihering,
 imperative theory of law, 58n.
 possession, 328n., 342, 343n., 345n.
 right, definition of a, 261
 Savigny's theory of possession, 326n.
 Illegality, a ground of invalidity of agreements, 389
 Immaterial property, 268, 461
 Immovables, 456
 Immunities, distinguished from rights, liberties, and powers, 276
 Imperative theory of law, 53-58
 Imperfect nature of rights against the State, 282-283
 Imperfect rights, 264, 280-282
 Imperitia culpae adnumeratur, 426
 Impossibilium nulla obligatio est, 527
 Inadvertence, not identical with negligence, 422
 Incorporeal ownership and property, 300, 451
 Incorporeal things, 304, 461
 Informality, a ground of invalidity in agreements, 389
 Inheritance, 482
 Injury. *See* Wrongs, Liability.
 Innominate obligations, 501
 Intention,
 actual and constructive, 428
 nature of, 410
 Inter arma leges silent, 528
 International law, 32-34
 form of imperative law, 23
 special law, 92-95
 Interpretation of contracts, 157n.
 Interpretation of enacted law, 151-160
 Intestacy, ownership of property of intestate, 266-267, 352. *See* Inheritance.
 Investitive facts, 379
 Invito beneficium non datur, 384, 528
 Italian Civil Code, definition of possession, 342n.
 JEWISH law,
 beasts, offences of, 351
 lex talionis, 114, 122
 vicarious liability, 440

Joint obligations. *See* Solidary obligations.

Judicium Dei, 109, 511, 515

Juris praecepta, 528

Jurisprudence, 1-17

Jury, questions of fact to be answered by, 68, 226

Jus,
ethical and legal meanings of, 38
lex, distinguished from, 37

Jus ad rem, 288

Jus accrescendi, 307, 482

Jus civile, 81

Jus commune,
in the sense of common law, 96-99
in the sense of natural law, 27

Jus edicendi, the legislative power of the Roman praetor, 146

Jus gentium, 27, 81

Jus in re aliena, 293-297. *See* Encumbrances.

Jus in re propria, 293-297. *See* Ownership.

Jus in rem and in personam, 284-289

Jus naturale... *See* Natural law.

Jus necessitatis, *See* Necessity.

Jus positivum. *See* Positive law.

Jus possessionis, 321n.

Jus possidendi, 321n.

Jus praetorium, 86, 146

Jus publicum, 389, 528

Jus scriptum and jus non scriptum, 27, 140, 233

Jus singulare, 99n.

Jus strictum, opposed to aequitas, 83

Jus tertii, defence of, 347, 474

Justice, 60-64. *See* Administration of justice and Natural law.

Justinian, on law of nature, 29

KANT, 11, 122

Kelsen, 138n.

Kenny, definition of crime, 113n.

King, a corporation sole, 374

King's peace, 109n.

Kohler, 11

Korkunov, 11

LAND, nature of, in law, 456

Language, uncertainty of, 161n.

Law,

abstract and concrete senses of term, 37

administration of justice, relation to, 37, 41

advantages of fixed rules of, 44-48

authority of, 58-60

defects of, 48-51

Law—*cont.*

definition of, 20, 41

equity, contrasted with, 81-87

fact, and, 66-74

generality of, 38-41

imperative theory of, 21-24

includes rules governing the secondary functions of courts of justice, 129

sources of. *See* Sources of the law.

Law merchant. *See* Mercantile Custom.

Law of nations. *See* International law.

Law of nature. *See* Natural law.

Leases, nature of, 296, 463

Legal ownership, distinguished from equitable, 310

Legal rights, distinguished from equitable, 297

Legislation,
act of the State, not necessarily the, 143

codification, 150

direct and indirect, 140

interpretation of statute law, 151-160

late development of the conception of, 145

legal limitations of the power of the legislature, 521

merits and defects of statute law, 145-150

nature of, 139-141

private, 39

supreme and subordinate, 141-144

Lex, distinguished from jus, 37, 145

Lex aeterna, 25

Lex talionis, 122

Liability,

civil and criminal, 109, 396

duty and disability, distinguished from, 275n.

measure of civil, 449

measure of criminal, 444 (*see* Punishment)

penal and criminal liability, distinction between, 126

penal and rem.dial. 126, 396, 397

penal, theory of, 397

remedial, theory of, 396

strict, 408, 433

vicarious, 440

Libel, on dead person, 354

Liberties,

powers, distinguished from, 274

rights in the strict sense, distinguished from, 271-274

rights in a wide sense, classed as, 270

- Libre recherche, 53n.
 Licence, revocation of, 274n.
 Lien,
 classes of, 472
 distinguished from mortgage, 468
 Lilley, on expiation as the purpose of punishment, 123
 Limitation of actions, 245n. *See* Prescription.
 Limited liability, of shareholders, 370
 Local law, 88
 Locke,
 classification of laws, 22n.
 necessity of fixed principles of law, 47
 state of nature, 108
 use of the term property, 452
 Lorimer, his Institutes of Law, 11
- MALFIDELITY,**
 corporations sole, 374n.
 nature of corporations, 362
- Malice,**
 meanings of the term, 415-417
 when a ground of liability, 415-417, 530
- Martial law,** 90
- Maxims,**
 legal, their nature and uses, 528
 list of, 528-531
- Mens rea,**
 a condition of penal liability, 408, 433
 exceptions to requirement of, 408, 433
- Mercantile custom,**
 need not be immemorial, 238-239
 whether possesses abrogative power, 240n.
- Mischief rule,** 159
- Mistake, effect of, on agreements,** 390
- Mistake of fact,** 437
- Mistake of law, no defence,** 435
- Modus et conventio vincunt legem,** 89, 240, 385, 389, 529
- Moral law,** 26-30. *See* Natural law.
- Mortgage,** 468-471
- Motives,** 417-419
- NASCITURUS pro jam nato habetur,** 354
- Natural law,** 26-30
- Natural and legal justice,** 60
- Natural rights,** 262; denial of, by Bentham and others, 262
- Nature, state of, transition from, to civil state,** 108
- Necessitas non habet legem,** 419, 529
- Necessity,** 419
- Negligence,** 421-431
- Negotiable instruments,** 237, 249-254, 481
- Nemo plus juris, etc.,** 480, 529
- Nemo tenetur se ipsum accusare,** 514, 529
- Non dat qui non habet,** 480, 529
- No rights,** 271-273
- Noscitur a sociis,** 153
- Nulla poena sine lege,** 147
- OATH, nature of,** 515
- Object of a right,**
 different uses of the term, 267
 its nature, 265
- Obligatio, significance of the term in Roman law,** 287n., 488
- Obligations,**
 contractual, 493 (*see* Agreements)
 delictal, 494
 innominate, 501
 law of, 488
 obligations defined, 488
 quasi-contractual, 498
 solidary, 490
- Occupatio,** 473
- Omission, meaning of the term,** 399
- Optima est lex quae minimum relinquit arbitrio judicis,** 51
- Ordeal, theory of,** 515
- Overruling,** 167-168, 199
- Ownership,**
 contrasted with encumbrances, 300
 contrasted with possession, 300
 co-ownership, 306
 defined, 300
 defined by Pollock, 303n.
 direct ownership, 307n.
 kinds of, 301
 legal and equitable, 310
 rights owned by *incertae personae*, 266
 rights without owners, whether, 266
 trust and beneficial ownership, 307
 vested and contingent, 313
- PANDERTENRECHT, nature of,** 9
- Parliament, Imperial, its supreme authority,** 141, 518
- Parliamentary debates, in interpretation,** 160
- Patent rights,** 269, 462
- Penal actions, nature of,** 111
- Penal proceedings, distinguished from remedial,** 128
- Penal redress,** 126
- merits and defects of the system,** 449

- Penal redress—*cont.*
 not justified except as punishment
 of defendant, 434
See Liability.
- Penalty. *See* Punishment.
- Personal law, 81
- Personal property, 460
- Personal rights,
 as opposed to proprietary rights,
 289-293
 as opposed to rights in rem, 284-
 289
- Persons,
 animals are not persons, 351
 dead men are not persons, 352
 double personality, 356, 483
 kinds of legal persons, 358. *See*
 Corporations.
 legal persons the product of per-
 sonification, 357
 natural and legal, 350
 nature of, 350
 objects of rights, 267-268
 rights of unborn, 266, 350
 subjects of rights and duties, 265
- Persons, law of, 290
- Petitions of right, replaced by actions,
 130
- Petitorium, opposed to possessorium,
 345
- Philo Judæus, on law of nature, 29
- Physical law, 24
- Plato, on vicarious liability, 440
- Plures eandem rem possidere non
 possunt, 336
- Pollock, Sir F.,
 acts in the law, 381n.
 definition of ownership, 303n.
 sources of law, 54n.
- Pollock and Wright, on possession,
 326, 328
- Pound, on sociological jurisprudence,
 16, 17
- Positive law,
 improperly used to signify civil law
 exclusively, 36
 origin of the term, 37n.
- Possession,
 acquisition of, 337
 animus and corpus, 321
 animus possidendi, 322
 commencement and continuance,
 339
 concurrent, 336
 consequences of, 317
 constructive, 318
 corporeal and incorporeal, 320
 corpus possessionis, 325
 delivery of, required for transfer of
 property, 479
- Possession—*cont.*
 detention, and, 316
 difficulty and conception, 317
 distinguished from ownership, 300
 incorporeal, 340
 in fact and in law, 318
 land, of, chattels thereon, 329-331
 mediate and immediate possession,
 332
 ownership, and, 343
 receptacles, 324-325
 remedies, possessory, 345
 seisin, 319
 titles, 472
- Possessorium, opposed to petitorium,
 345
- Possessory ownership, 473
- Possessory remedies, 345
- Power, political. *See* Sovereignty.
- Powers,
 classed as rights in wide sense, 270
 distinguished from liberties, 274
 distinguished from rights in strict
 sense, 273-276
- Practical law, 32
- Precedents,
 administrative tribunals, 174-175
 authoritative, 165
 authority of, absolute and con-
 ditional, 166
 Chancery, operation in, 164
 codified law, relation to, 150
 Court of Appeal, 188-192
 Court of Criminal Appeal, 173-174,
 192-194
 declaratory, 163
 declaratory theory of, 163
 disregard of,
 effect of, 167-168
 when justified, 199-221
 distinction between overruling and
 refusing to follow, 167, 199
 distinguishing, 178, 229
 Divisional Court, 170-173, 195-197
 doctrine,
 logic of, 167-188
 value of, 180-185, 228-230
 Dominions, in, 230n.
 hierarchy of authority, 168-175
 High Court, 169-173
 House of Lords, in, 175-188, 538-
 539
 importance in English law, 163
 judges and juries, functions of, 226
 Judicial Committee of Privy Council,
 165-166, 200
 lapse of time, effect on, 217-218
 obiter dicta, 166
 original, 164
 persuasive, 165

- Precedents—*cont.*
 rationes decidendi, 222-225
 retrospective operation of overruling, 167-168
 Scotland, in, 230n.
 source of law, not originally, 163
 sources of judicial principles, 225
 U.S.A., in, 230n.
- Prescription,
 immemorial custom, 246-247
 its relation to operation of, in case of mediate possession, 336
 nature of, 474
 origin of term, 474n.
 perfect and imperfect, 478
 positive and negative, 475
 rational basis of, 476
 rights subject to, 477
- Presumptio juris, 72, 510n.
- Presumptions,
 conclusive, 510
 rebuttable, 72, 512
- Primary rights, opposed to sanctioning, 124
- Principal rights, distinguished from, accessory, 297
- Private international law. *See* Conflict of laws.
- Private war, its gradual exclusion by public justice, 109
- Privileges. *See* Liberties.
- Privy Council, decision of, not authoritative in England, 165-166, 200
- Probative force, 509
- Procedure,
 distinguished from substantive law, 503
 occasional equivalence of procedural and substantive rules, 505
- Proceedings,
 actions against the state, 129
 civil and criminal, 109-115
 declarations of right, 130
 forms of sanctional enforcement, 125-127
 judicial administration of property, 130
 penal and remedial, 128
 secondary functions of courts of law, 129-131
 secondary functions included in civil justice, 131
 specific and sanctional enforcement of rights, 124
 table of legal proceedings, 128
- Professional opinion, as a source of law, 133
- Proof,
 conclusive and presumptive, 509
- Proof—*cont.*
 modes of, in early law, 515
 nature of, 506
- Property,
 corporeal and incorporeal, 304-306, 451
 different meanings of, 450, 535
 immaterial, 461
 material, 453-461
 movable and immovable, 456
 real and personal, 460
- Proprietary rights, 289-293
- Public and private law, 119
- Public mischief, 147
- Pufendorf,
 definition of law, 21
 Natural Law, treatise on, 10
 relation to modern English jurisprudence, 12
- Punishment,
 measure of, 444
 purposes of, 115-124
- QUASI-CONTRACTS, 498
- Queen, a corporation sole, 374
- Questions of fact,
 law, distinguished from questions of, 66-74
 sometimes treated fictitiously as questions of law, 228
 transformation of, into questions of law by judicial decision, 67, 222
- Questions of law, distinguished from questions of fact, 66-74
- Qui prior est tempore potior est jure, 298, 347, 530
- RATIO decidendi, 222-225
 "Realists," 46n.
- Real property, 460
- Recht, different meanings of the term, 37, 56
- Redress. *See* Penal Redress.
- Release, 385
- Remedial proceedings, distinguished from penal, 128
- Remedies, legal. *See* Proceedings.
- Remoteness of damage, 527
- Repeal of statute, 168
- Reputation,
 dead, of the, 354
 object of a right, 268
- Res,
 corporalis and incorporalis, 305n.
 meaning of the term in Roman law, 291
- Res judicata pro veritate accipitur, 168, 511, 530

- Respondent superior, 530
 Responsibility. *See* Liability.
 Retribution,
 Kant's opinion as to, 122
 one of the purposes of punishment, 120
 Revenge, its transformation into criminal justice, 120, 122
 Rights,
 ad rem, 288
 animals, of, 261*n*.
 characteristics of legal rights, 265
 contents of, 268
 correlation of rights and duties, 263
 defined, 261-265
 denial of natural rights by Bentham, 262
 dominant and servient, 295
 encumbrances and ownership, 293-297
 enforcement of, object of civil justice, 124
 equitable and legal, 297
 in personam, 284-289
 in re aliena, 293-297
 in re propria, 293-297
 in rem, 284-289
 legal and equitable, 297
 liberties, powers and immunities, distinguished from, 270-278
 local situation of, 459
 natural and legal, 259
 ownership and encumbrances, rights of, 293-297
 perfect and imperfect, 280-282
 positive and negative rights, 283
 primary and sanctioning, 124
 principal and accessory, 297
 proprietary and personal, 289-293
 relative and absolute duties, alleged distinction between, 263
 specific and sanctional enforcement of, 125-127
 state, against the, 282-283
 subjects of, 266
 titles of, 265, 378
 wide and narrow use of the term right, 269-270
 Rigidity of the law, 48-49
 Rigor juris, opposed to *aequitas*, 83
 Roman law,
 actio in rem, 287*n*., 460*n*.
 aequitas and *strictum jus*, 83
 constitutum possessorum, 338
 culpa and *dolus*, 428
 custom and enacted law, relation between, 233, 243
 dominium, 287*n*.
 emphyteusis, 466*n*.
 Roman law—*cont.*
 Hereditas jacens, 266-267, 352*n*.
 ius civile, 36
 ius commune, 99*n*.
 ius praetorium, 86
 ius scriptum and *non scriptum*, 140
 ius singulare, 99*n*.
 malicious exercise of rights, 416, 418*n*.
 obligatio, 287
 res corporales and *incorporales*, 305*n*.
 traditio,
 as a title to property, 479
 brevi manu, 338
 SAGA of Burnt Njal, 110
 Sanctional enforcement of rights, 125-127
 Sanctioning rights, 125-127
 Sanctions, nature and kinds of, 24
 Savigny,
 enacted and customary law, relation between, 243
 possession, theory of, 326*n*.
 system of modern Roman law, 9
 Scientific law, 24
 Scottish law, enacted and customary law, relation between, 243*n*.
 Securitics, 297, 468
 Seisin, its nature and importance in early law, 319
 Sententia legis, contrasted with *littera legis*, 152. *See* Interpretation.
 Servient rights, 294. *See* Encumbrances.
 Servitudes, nature of, 296, 466
 Shares in companies, nature of, 363*n*.
 Sic utere tuo ut alienum non laedas, 295, 530
 Sociology of law, 14-17
 Solidary obligations, 490
 Solon, on making men just, 121*n*.
 Sources of the law,
 legal and historical, 133-135
 list of legal sources, 135-136
 literary sources of the law, 138*n*.
 rights, sources of, 136-137
 ultimate legal principles without legal sources, 137-138
 Sovereignty, 141, 517
 Space, ownership of, 456, 461*n*.
 Special law, 87
 Specific enforcement of rights, 124, 397
 Spencer, H., on natural rights, 262
 State,
 constitution, 99-103
 legal personality of the state, 372-376
 rights against the state, 282-283

- State—*cont.*
 secondary functions of the state, 129
 will the sole source of law, 53
 Status, 290-293, 535
 Statute-law,
 case-law, compared with, 145-150
 interpretation of, 151-160. *See*
 Interpretation.
 typical form of law in modern times,
 145
 Suarez, his distinction between *lex*
 positiva and *lex naturalis*, 37n.
 Subject of a right, 265; no rights
 without subjects, 266
 Subjections, 275
 Subjects. *See* Citizenship.
 Substantive law, distinguished from
 procedure, 503
 Subtlety of law and lawyers, 51
 Succession, 482
 Summum jus summa injuria, 49, 84,
 530
 Suretyship, 468n.
- TAYLOR, JEREMY,
 men and wolves, 105
 uncertainty of natural justice, 47
 Territorial nature of laws, 74-81
 Textbooks, authority of, 166
 Things,
 corporeal and incorporeal, 305, 452
 different senses of the term, 291,
 304
 in action and in possession, 489
 law of, 291
 material and immaterial, 304, 452
 Thomasius, on the law of nature, 10,
 29
 Timasheff, 16
 Time immemorial, a requisite of par-
 ticular customs, 238-239, 244-246
 Titles, 265, 378-395
 Torts,
 nature, 494
 waiver of, 500
- Trade-marks, a form of immaterial
 property, 463
 Traditio brevi manu, 338
 Transfer of rights, 379, 479
 Trial by battle. *See* Battle.
 Trusts,
 animals, for, 351
 encumbrance, kind of, 297
 maintenance of tombs, for, 353
 nature, 307-310
 purposes, 369
- Ubi eadem ratio, ibi idem jus, 531
 Ubi jus ibi remedium, 281, 531
 Ultimate rules of law, without legal
 sources, 137
 Universitas, use of the term in Roman
 law, 361n.
- VERBAL controversy, 55n.
 Vested ownership, 313
 Vestitive facts, 378
 Vigilantibus non dormientibus, jura
 subveniunt, 477, 531
 Volenti non fit injuria, 531
- WAIVER of torts, 500
 War, private, 109n.
 Windscheid,
 nature of rights, 262
 ownership, 266
 possession of rights, 344n.
 relation between enacted and cus-
 tomary law, 243
 Witnesses, exclusion of, in early law,
 515
 Woolsey, on retribution as the essen-
 tial end of punishment, 122n.
 Written and unwritten law, 140
 Wrong,
 civil and criminal, 109-115
 definition of, 259
 moral and legal, 259. *See* Liability.



PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN
BY
THE EASTERN PRESS LTD.
OF LONDON AND READING

C✓

Law & Jurisprudence

D.G.A. 80.
CENTRAL ARCHAEOLOGICAL LIBRARY
NEW DELHI
Issue Record.

Call No.— 340/Sal/Wil.— 15280.

Author—Williams, Glanville.

Title—Salmond on jurisprudence.
11th edn.

Borrower's Name Date of Issue Date of Return

"A book that is shut is but a block"

CENTRAL ARCHAEOLOGICAL LIBRARY
GOVT. OF INDIA
Department of Archaeology
NEW DELHI.

Please help us to keep the book
clean and moving.